



**中国书画函授大学肇庆分校**

御天神帝

**RESEARCH DESIGN**

乱世狂刀◎著

# Imperial God Emperor

Chapters 121 - 160

---

**Author: Warring Blades**

**Translation: [Aran Translations](#)**

**Publisher: [Yuki](#)**

---

# Table of Contents

1. [Prologue – The Young Boy In The Cemetery](#)
2. [Chapter 001 – Four Year Champion](#)
3. [Chapter 002 – Shock: Hero's Badge](#)
4. [Chapter 002 – Shock: Hero's Badge](#)
5. [Chapter 003 – Does My Decision Need An Explanation?](#)
6. [Chapter 005 – Golden Meridians](#)
7. [Chapter 006 – The Shadow Of The Divine Ancient Mountain](#)
8. [Chapter 007 – Before, I Was Just Having A Joke With You](#)
9. [Chapter 008 – No Compromise](#)
10. [Chapter 009 – Bai Yuqing](#)
11. [Chapter 010 – It's Not That He Can't, But It's That He Won't](#)
12. [Chapter 011 – Entering The Academy](#)

13. [Chapter 012 – The First Lesson](#)
14. [Chapter 013 – Song Xiaojun](#)
15. [Chapter 014 – The Second Evaluation](#)
16. [Chapter 015 – My Temper Is Not That Good](#)
17. [Chapter 016 – The Serpentine Form Of The Eight Divine Stances](#)
18. [Chapter 017 – Terrifying Talent](#)
19. [Chapter 018 – Bear Form](#)
20. [Chapter 019 – Liu Lei](#)
21. [Chapter 020 – Direct Confrontation](#)
22. [Chapter 021 – The Battle To Defend The City](#)
23. [Chapter 022 – Selecting A Weapon](#)
24. [Chapter 023 – Inexorable Spear](#)
25. [Chapter 024 – The First Trip Outside](#)

26. [Chapter 025 – Training Till The Limits](#)
27. [Chapter 026 – Golden Clam](#)
28. [Chapter 027 – Bronze Book](#)
29. [Chapter 028 – I'll Wait For You In The Yellow River](#)
30. [Chapter 029 – Waves Spreading](#)
31. [Chapter 030 – Characters From The God Devil Age](#)
32. [Chapter 031 – Endless Title Chart](#)
33. [Chapter 032 – Falling Monthly Examinations](#)
34. [Chapter 033 – The Plot Behind The Matches](#)
35. [Chapter 034 – Humiliated Loli](#)
36. [Chapter 035 – Challenging Matches](#)
37. [Chapter 036 – Continuous Victory](#)
38. [Chapter 037 – The Number One Stage](#)

39. [Chapter 038 – Sharing The Limelight](#)
40. [Chapter 039 – Raising The Arena With A Single Spear](#)
41. [Chapter 040 – Breaking Through In The Midst Of Battle](#)
42. [Chapter 041 – Defeat of Wushuang](#)
43. [Chapter 042 – The Failure Of The Yuan Qi Kindling?](#)
44. [Chapter 043 – Such A Punishment](#)
45. [Chapter 044 – Excavating A Spirit Spring](#)
46. [Chapter 045 – Repayment Of The Ancient Book](#)
47. [Chapter 046 – The Four Stances Of The Golden Armoured King](#)
48. [Chapter 047 – Some News](#)
49. [Chapter 048 – Cheap Mouth](#)
50. [Chapter 049 – Heavy Handed](#)
51. [Chapter 050 – Is He Not Afraid That I'll Break The Legs Of His Dogs?](#)

- 52. [Chapter 051 – Azure Phoenix Academy, Is Merely This](#)
- 53. [Chapter 052 – White Deer Without Talent Has Lost His Antlers, The Azure Phoenix Intends To Subdue The Heavens](#)
- 54. [Chapter 053 – The Ye Mansion](#)
- 55. [Chapter 054 – Why Are You Still Here?](#)
- 56. [Chapter 055 – This All Belongs To The Ye Family](#)
- 57. [Chapter 056 – The Corners Of Her Mouth Curved Slightly Upwards](#)
- 58. [Chapter 057 – Fatty, Be Gentler](#)
- 59. [Chapter 058 – Dead Fatty](#)
- 60. [Chapter 059 – The Consequences Of Taking The Initiative](#)
- 61. [Chapter 060 – Returning Heavenly Fragrance Restaurant](#)
- 62. [Chapter 061 – Little Shang Sword](#)
- 63. [Chapter 062 – The First Spirit Weapon](#)



64. [Chapter 063 – Going In Search Of The Little Loli](#)
65. [Chapter 064 – The World’s Best Brother](#)
66. [Chapter 065 – Being Beaten Again](#)
67. [Chapter 066 – The Second Booklet](#)
68. [Chapter 067 – Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors](#)
69. [Chapter 068 – The First Round](#)
70. [Chapter 069 – The First Kill](#)
71. [Chapter 070 – Five Consecutive Kills](#)
72. [Chapter 071 – Entering Into The Battlefield](#)
73. [Chapter 072 – Choosing To Enter The Wilderness](#)
74. [Chapter 073 – Not Allowed To Leave](#)
75. [Chapter 074 – Sentry Guard](#)
76. [Chapter 075 – Double Kill \(1\)](#)

77. [Chapter 076 – Double Kill \(2\)](#)
78. [Chapter 077 – He Possesses A Rare Treasure?](#)
79. [Chapter 078 – Spear Broken](#)
80. [Chapter 079 – A True Genius](#)
81. [Chapter 080 – The Enhancement Power Of Fire](#)
82. [Chapter 081 – The Last Risk](#)
83. [Chapter 082 – The Blood Pool Of The Dragon's Den](#)
84. [Chapter 083 – A Dog?](#)
85. [Chapter 084 – Four Versus Four](#)
86. [Chapter 085 – Blood Red Gaze](#)
87. [Chapter 086 – I Have Something More Important To Do](#)
88. [Chapter 087 – The Final Move](#)
89. [Chapter 088 – He Wants To Murder Someone](#)

90. [Chapter 089 – Words Reverberating Throughout Ascending Heaven Pavillion](#)
91. [Chapter 090 – It Doesn't Matter](#)
92. [Chapter 091 – He Can Eat More Than Me](#)
93. [Chapter 092 – I Admit Defeat](#)
94. [Chapter 093 – Third Spirit Spring](#)
95. [Chapter 094 – The Four Moves Of The Unmatched General](#)
96. [Chapter 095 – The Change Within The City](#)
97. [Chapter 096 – The Female Sword Immortal, Wang Jianru](#)
98. [Chapter 097 – The Curses Emitting From The Taoxuan Pavillion](#)
99. [Chapter 098 – One Must Pay For A Murder With Their Life](#)
00. [Chapter 099 – A Spear](#)
01. [Chapter 100 – Go Back And Ask](#)
02. [Chapter 101 – Three Days](#)

03. [Chapter 102 – The Back Of That Silhouette...](#)
04. [Chapter 103 – The City Of Unmoving Darkness](#)
05. [Chapter 104 – I Will Come Find You](#)
06. [Chapter 105 – Surrounded In All Directions](#)
07. [Chapter 106 – Enemies On A Narrow Road](#)
08. [Chapter 107 – The Four Military Leaders](#)
09. [Chapter 108 – An Unexpected Invitation](#)
10. [Chapter 109 – A Shy Youth](#)
11. [Chapter 110 – A Letter Coming From The Front Lines](#)
12. [Chapter 111 – Before Leaving \(1\)](#)
13. [Chapter 112 – The Shadow Of The Bronze Asura](#)
14. [Chapter 113 – The Useless Words Are Finished; Go On Your Way](#)
15. [Chapter 114 – Before Leaving \(2\)](#)

# Prologue – The Young Boy In The Cemetery

---

“Little Yu, don’t cry, everyone had to die sometime. Me and your mother’s time has come, our comrades are waiting in the stars for us.”

“Haha, compared to our comrades that has gone first, to be able to see with our own eyes you growing from a little baby to a ten year old boy, we are already extremely lucky!

The colour of the sunset was like blood.

The battle to defend the city has ended.

In front of the solemn silence of the ancestral door, the tears of the thin young boy was like rain. Written on his face was the sorrow of tragedy, but also hatred and vengeance.

A middle aged couple was sitting in front of the door in a pool of blood.

Their bodies were filled with wounds.

The wife had a broken spear stabbed through her chest, her breath extremely faint with her life hanging on a line. The husband has already lost both his legs and an arm, a small sword the length of a finger stuck into his forehead.

But he was still miraculously alive.

As if he had come back from the dead, the man still retained consciousness.

The man used his only arm left to tightly hug his wife.

The young boy with his face filled with tears was the only son of the husband and wife.

The man looked at his son, his eyes filled with love and an indescribable emotion.

He smiled.

“Wipe your tears dry, you are a little man. Right now you have to listen clearly, I have something extremely important to tell you. Remember, you must remember, once me and your mother have left, you must guard our tomb for four year, you must guard it for the full four years without even missing a day, do you understand?”

The little boy nodded his head, his tears falling.

“I know what you’re thinking. You’re not allowed to do so, an anger without strength is completely meaningless. I know you’ve always wanted to go to White Deer academy, wanted to practice martial arts, wanted to become a strong martial artist. But my little man, you cannot do so, at least in the next four years you cannot do so...”

“Don’t ask me why, only remember, that in these four years, you must be like a grain of sand in the desert, unnoticeable. You must make the entire Deer city forget the existence of you... Of course, if in the eyes of some people you are like a mad man, than that is even better. But I believe, our little Yu, will not be bothered by this!”

“After four years, you can do the things you want. If one day, you can become a Bitter Sea expert, then you must definitely go to the royal palace of Snow country and take back something that belongs to you. At that time, this badge will tell you the truth behind everything!”

The man said, placing a brass badge with swords engraved on it onto the boy’s palm.

These words and this action, seems to have exhausted the last of his life.

Then the colour on the man’s face rapidly faded away.

The man’s face changed to a deathly white, without the slightest trace of blood. Fresh blood spurted from his mouth.

“Father...” The young boy screamed with despair.

“Also, remember the nameless breathing technique I passed on to you? In these four years of guarding the tomb, you must continue to train in it, turning it into a part of you. Can you do this?”

The little boy nodded his head obediently.

“Then that is good...” The man’s eyes lost his last shred of colour. Because of the heavy injury and blood loss, he already could not see anything any more.

He lowered his head and kissed the forehead of his wife, and in a voice only he could hear that was filled with unspeakable regret: “Yingying, I’m sorry.”

Then, the man closed his eyes, passing away.

The eyes of the wife in his hands, seemed to have sensed something. A crystal clear tear slowly formed and dripped down her cheek. At the same time, she also stopped breathing.

The young boy knelt within the pool of blood, hand holding the brass badge, crying until he lost his voice.

His name was Ye Qingyu.

From now on, in the northern poor district, in a deserted cemetery, there was an unknown little boy who waited for four years.

In these four years, he spent the majority of the time like a statue, sitting dumbly in front of the tomb, as if he was crazy.

Therefore, countless words of ridicule and mockery were thrown at him.



The majority of people were sure, that after experiencing the impact of the death of his parents, the extremely clever boy with exceptional talent, the person who was once called the number one genius by the Dean of the White Deer academy, had become a trash.

Ye Qingyu was completely driven to distraction, becoming crazy and dumb, turning into a pitiful worm.

An idiot that you can bully and deride as you want.

As a result of this, someone who was once a friend of the Ye family, using the lowest of prices, half conning half buying, took away the only treasured sword of the Ye family.

And also someone who used various methods to take away the Ye family properties.

And also a small noble family that used their position to take away the Ye family home.

The young boy, slowly lost everything he possessed.

He seemed to not have the slightest of strength to resist.

As if everyone could bully him as they wanted, as if everyone could spit saliva onto his face without repercussions.

But the little boy, seemed not to care about everything in the slightest.

Until the day that his playmate left him.

“Brother Qingyu, you’ve fallen. I’ve grown up. I’m sorry, the oath to be beside each other, let it fall and scatter in the winds. Don’t blame me for being too realistic, but...I’ve entered White Deer academy, see you — no, that should be, we should never see again!”

His childhood friend, the little girl who had always followed him around everywhere holding the back of his cloths, the little girl who had accepted his aid and protection countless times only said such words, and quickly turned away.

She went in a crowd of wealthily dressed people and did not turn her head back.

Her talent was shocking, her every attribute was excellent, she was fated to ascent to the heavens.

And him, he needed to stay in this deserted cemetery and accept the test of four lonely years.

# Chapter 001 – Four Year Champion

---

The time of 4 years quickly flew by.

Ye Qingyu was 14 years old. He was a youth that lived in the poor district of Deer City, which was part of the snow country.

4 years ago, within snow country's borders, the air moved restlessly and an apparition appeared.

Ye Qingyu's parents, during an unprecedented wave of demon attack due to an abnormal turn of events, died in battle. As a result of this, Ye Qingyu became an orphan and the Ye family deteriorated from then on.

Today, was the end of the four year promise.

“Father, Mother, the four year promise has been fulfilled!”

As the sundial pointed to the predetermined time, Ye Qingyu's face that was originally slack suddenly brightened up. His eyes opened wide and in it, you could see a lightning like glimmer.

In that instant, he seemed to turn into another person entirely.

In front of the grave, Ye Qingyu respectfully knelt down and bowed three times. Then, he started digging.

After uncovering the newly turned soil, three inches under, a black box was carefully hidden.

It was an extremely ordinary looking box.

The work outside was shoddy, without a lock and the long-time buried underground has caused obvious signs of rust to appear on the iron box. Ye Qingyu carefully took out and opened the box, where a bronze badge was lying within.

Under the bright dawn sun, the badge which depicted the crossing of swords, shimmered under the light.

This was the most important possession his parents had left him.

“Mother, Father, according to the promise, I can now do the things I want to do. Can I now return to a normal person? Haha, those folks who have laughed at me for four years, will they be so shocked that their chins will drop?”

When he finished speaking, Ye Qingyu thought of something and a strange smile appeared on his mouth.

After 4 lonely years, despite undergoing hardship and torment, this did not twist Ye Qingyu's personality at all.

He was still filled with optimism, still filled with confidence.

What he lost was just some unimportant things, but what he gained was truly valuable – a calm, unwavering, determined and rational heart and a pair of eyes filled with wisdom that could see through lies and falseness.

Only through experiencing hardship, can a person truly be moulded.

For Ye Qingyu, this four years could be comparable to a complete rebirth.

“Haha, for those who have laughed at Ye family for these four years, you guys are going to become extremely misfortunate. I’m a person who is extremely vengeful. Mother, Father, right now I’ll act freely, you will definitely not blame me, isn’t that right?”

Ye Qingyu’s expression was calm and peaceful, as if his parents were sitting in front of him.

Carefully, Ye Qingyu stored the badge away.

Then he suddenly thought of something.

“Also, what the Ye Family have lost, I will take it all back with my own hands. Dad, what you’ve said is correct, without strength all this anger is meaningless. So I’ve decided, I will go to the White Deer academy to learn first, you guys won’t object right? Wait until I’ve become strong, that sword, our property and the Ye Family mansion, I will take it all back!”

The teenager seemed as if he was swearing a solemn oath.

“Ah, that’s right, even though until death you didn’t want me to be involved in this issue, but I will definitely investigate clearly. What happened exactly in the battle to defend the city that caused you to fall ..... No matter who stands in my way, I will, one fist at a time, break through the sky and shine the light on the shady folks who will pay the price!”

Ye Qingyu looked at the still tombstone as if he could see his parents familiar faces.

His smile was filled with confidence.

In the distance, the golden ray of the dawn pierced the morning mist like a sword, and countless beams of light shined.

Ye Qingyu’s body was covered with light and he turned, walking towards the sun.

A legend, although late by four years, but ultimately unstoppable, began in the cemetery slums, quietly rising.

.....

.....

According to the rumours, there were countless time warped hidden

worlds and these could be divided into countless domains.

The number of domains were like the number of stars in the sky, inexhaustible.

But since the beginning of the world, through the chaos of millennium, the number of domains discovered by the strongest of each species were only eighty one, with the [Qingyun domain], [Aria domain] and the [Southern domain] being the most prosperous.

Every domain was extremely broad and vast, with each forming a small world, giving birth to endless races and countless lives.

The Heaven wasteland domain, was one of the extremely young domains and had only been excavated for less than a hundred years so the reputation was not high.

And within this Heaven wasteland domain, was Deer city, a comparatively remote town in this world.

.....

The time was summer.

Within the deer city, the annual White Deer academy selection process was currently undergoing.

As the best beginner martial training centre for thousands of miles\*,

since the White Deer college began sixty years ago, it was the dream of countless youths to attend this academy.

As a result of this, since the sun had risen, there were tens of thousands of crazed people, crowded into the entrance of the White Deer academy.

As the bell sounded in the academy, accompanied by countless cheers, the selection process for new students had begun.

Gradually, the bright glare of the sun continued to heat up, but this could not stop the enthusiasm of the teenagers.

In addition to the thousands of males and females of suitable age in Deer city, there were also countless youths who fulfilled the admission criteria that travelled here. Disregarding the thousand mile journey, they've set off from different villages and settlements, through mountains and rivers, accompanied by their loved ones for protection, to participate in the selection process.

Especially for the countless youths that originated from the poor, this was a chance to change their fates. —

Once you pass the selection process and became part of the White Deer academy, it represented that you had taken one step into heaven\*\*. After training hard and becoming a strong Yuan qi\*\*\* warrior, then you can begin changing the poor fates of themselves and their parents.

In this time, the whole Deer city seemed as if it was undergoing a holiday celebration.



“Ah, have you heard, the daughter of the president of the Cheongna commerce company, Song Qing Luo, who is only 12 years old, have successfully passed through the selection examination in her first try. Through all six appraisals, she was appraised as excellent and possessing first class talent! This time the Cheongna commerce company will produce a young genius!”

“That doesn’t mean much, the son of South district’s leader, Lee Seung Jin, has also been appraised as having first class talent and has long been look upon favourably by several Elders of the White Deer academy..”

“That not too strange, as part of the wealth family, from when they were small, their roads to become strong has already been prepared. Cultivation techniques, spirit medicines and resources have all been arranged for them. For those rich young masters, they were born with a set of golden keys in their mouth, and as long as they prepare a little bit, passing through the White Deer academy selection process how can it not be simple?”

“That’s right, compared to the lowly students, those aristocratic children won because of the difference in the starting line!”

“Its hard for a precious talent to be born of a poor family!

Outside the White Deer academy, everyone was discussing heatedly.

People was extremely emotional.

Because from the start of the examination to now, the majority of youths that had passed, came from a wealthy background. And for the poor students that had come to take part in the examination, out of a hundred there were only one or two that were able to pass, causing the small probability to shock everyone.

Those teenagers who had passed were cheering in celebration while those who had been eliminated were crying, their faces fill with despair. Some family were happy while some were filled with worry.

The air of noble young masters and the depression of the poor teenagers presented a stark contrast.

The martial road, has always been incomparably cruel.

The admission venue selection grounds, was at the entrance of the academy.

The entire selection process underwent under the eyes of everyone, in this aspect, it was at least fair. For countless poor youths, this was the only chance at changing their fate.

The crowds of people made the entire test area packed.

As the examiner endlessly announced the results, the crowd would emit a shocked exclamation and the despairing sounds of those eliminated would drift out, crying or begging.

At this time, the crowd split apart.

An imposing youth, his face filled with smiles, squeezed out from the crowd and walked towards the selection grounds.

Once the teenager appeared, it attracted the attention of many bystanders.

He looked to be around fourteen to fifteen years old, his clothing simple and his black hair was tied back with a simple rope, falling to the back to his waist like a waterfall. He had a slender physique filled with strength, with swordlike eyebrows and starlike eyes\*\*\*\*, possessing an angular face filled with confidence.

No matter who glanced at him, they would feel a surge of pressure due to his heroic atmosphere.

Although this youth wore a robe that was covered with patches and was evidently too short for him, it was extremely clean. A pair of straw sandals that looked as if it was about to break down was worn. He looked extremely shabby, but his atmosphere was like a victorious general returning from battle.

“Eh? Quickly look, isn’t that Ye Qingyu? That idiot... doesn’t he look... changed?”

“Oi, is that guy going to participate in the admission selection again?”

“Haha, he really came. I remember, that stupid child has already undergone quite a few of White Deer academy selections?”

“That’s right isn’t it? That guy is a bit crazy, I guess the shock of losing his parents has impacted him too much. Its been four years of continuous entry into the examination, and every time he can’t even pass the first appraisal. He has long since becoming the biggest joke of Deer city, and he has no sense of shame, he has even come here to be embarrassed again!”

“Hahaha, its all because the venerable Dean of the White Deer academy has once praised him, saying that he was a genius that had the potential to enter the Deer city ranking, even the hidden dragon rankings!

“Maybe the old dean was confused and misjudged...”

“I feel so too, however this poor Ye Qingyu stupidly thought it was for real, coming every time for the examination. Haha, it’s so pitiful, its funny!”

The crowd did not bother to disguise its discussion, and the discussion clearly passed into Ye Qingyu’s ears.

His lips carried a faint smile, not caring in the least.

“A bunch of fools, knowing nothing, if not for the... I would have long entered the White Deer academy.”

Ye Qingyu came to the outermost appraisal spot, obtaining the test nameplate.

According to the rules, only after obtaining the nameplate, could he participate in White Deer Academy's six appraisals. He had already taken part four times in the selection process so he knew about every aspect of the rules very well.

“Eh, isn't this the four year champion? He's coming again this year?” A teenager, cynically said, wearing purple silk clothing and suddenly stepping near Ye Qingyu.

“Hahaha...”

“After this time, he should be the fifth year champion? Ah, this is too fearsome...”

## Chapter 002 – Shock: Hero's Badge

---

Shock – hero's badge

The surrounding wealthily dressed youths started laughing in an extremely exaggerated fashion.

Due to the Ye family deterioration and the death of Qingyu's parents, according to the Snow Country's classification, meant that Ye Qingyu was the classical example of someone from the poor whose position in society was extremely low.

But the former dean of the White Deer academy, during one of his travels, coincidentally met Ye Qingyu who was then only six or seven years old. When he saw Ye Qingyu, he judged that boy was definitely not ordinary and would definitely enter the rankings of Deer city, even possibly joining the rankings of the Snow country's hidden dragon rankings...

Who was the old dean?

His position was extremely high, possessing countless students across the world. He was also Deer city's number one expert for twenty consecutive years. As such, his word was akin to the law.

Hence such an evaluation caused the then very young Ye Qingyu, to be thrown under the spotlight and scrutiny of countless eyes.

And as a result of the evaluation of the old Dean, the jealousy of many of the prideful nobles were invoked. He was only a child from a lowly poor family, how could he be evaluated as the number one young genius? Then what about them, the nobility?

Therefore this caused the nobility to create trouble for Ye Qingyu and their constant ridicule continued.

Four years ago, after suffering the death of his parents, Ye Qingyu entered the selection process for the first time. At that time, he was only ten but had already attracted the attention of everyone, and his selection was the most eye-catching event of Deer city at that time.

Many people thought the old dean's words would prove true, and that the Deer city would witness the birth of a genius, but...

Who knew, the truth would be the exact opposite.

Ye Qingyu's performance was a total mess, without even passing a single appraisal before being eliminated.

He created a record of the fastest candidate being eliminated, and also the worst result in the history of White Deer academy.

The result of the second and third year examination was the same.

After the second and third failure, the actions of Ye Qingyu became even more strange and crazy in the eyes of everyone. Everyday, apart from eating or sleeping, he was sitting in front of his parents' tombstone.

This caused the busybodies who were delighted at Ye Qingyu's suffering, to give him a nickname of 'four year champion'.

All these things, in an instant became a joke.

Right now, after hearing the laughter of his comrades, encouraged the wealthily dressed youth even more since he saw the agreement of everyone.

His face was filled with mocking laughter, blocking the way of Ye Qingyu, and with an expression that said 'what can you do about it'

"Scram." Ye Qingyu glanced at the teenager, impatiently waving his hand.

"Hahaha!" The wealthily dressed youth laughed exaggeratingly. "Scram? What if I don't scam, what can you do about it, I think it is you who should scam..."

Pak!

Ye Qingyu decisively gave the youth a very simple slap on the face, staggering the youth back several steps.

No one knew, how great Qingyu's strength was; it greatly exceeded any of his peers.

This was all due to the nameless breathing technique.



In these four years, when people thought he was merely sitting dumbfounded in front of his parent's grave, he was cultivating in this nameless breathing technique.

As time passed, the benefits of this breathing technique did not become evident, but Ye Qingyu discovered that his strength has become greater and greater.

It had become so great it was becoming slightly terrifying.

Of course, following the promise made, he did not show off his strength.

But today, there was no longer any need to hide.

The wealthily dressed teenager was not prepared in the slightest. He stumbled aside, and felt like he was being hit by an iron bar causing half his head to go numb...

He touched his face which was swollen like a rotten peach, an expression of shock and disbelief looking at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu laughed, and in a neutral tone "If you don't scram, then I'll slap you. Do you now understand?"

All the nobles breathed in exclamation.

“You dare to hit people here?”

The next instant, the nobles reacted, everyone being as enraged as if the slap was landed on their own faces.

They were as if they were cockerels who had lost their feathers, everyone sharply commanding their guards and surrounding Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu’s lip curled in a mocking smile.

He unhurriedly took out a round brass badge, and it sat gleaming in his palm. He laughingly looked at the surrounding guards and nobles and said “Open your dog eyes and have a clear look...If I want to hit, then I’ll hit, what can you do about it?”

“This is...”

When they all saw the brass badge, everyone was dumbfounded.

That was an army medal!

It really was the heroic brass badge!

From the beginning of the snow country, the first [Holy Emperor] , his majesty Ishiba Yu, in order to set a reward for those who fought in the battle against the wild tribes, created the brass badges. He begged the most talented rune master of Heaven wasteland, Master Mo, and using rare meteorites as raw materials, created one hundred and eight medals

of different insignias.

This was the history of army medals.

According to the snow country's laws, those who possess an army medal would have a position equal to that of nobles.

Within older generation of the aristocrats, they suddenly remembered that within the Ye family there was once a Spirit spring expert who appeared. In the battle to safeguard Deer city, thanks to their heroic feats, a brass heroic badge was awarded...

But since the Ye family deteriorated, and the badge failed to appear, many thought the rumours were false, who would have thought... that the rumours were real.

He had the heroic brass badge on him!

And he was standing at the entrance to deer academy!

Apart from the very top aristocrats, who would dare harm Ye Qingyu?

To disrespect the medal holders, was to disrespect that entire snow country; it was an extremely serious crime.

All those people including the wealthily dressed youth, did not have a title of nobility, and hence was still far from being a true noble. Therefore, when they saw the badge, their faces went pale and they

quickly knelt towards the ground.

And the guards, who were originally like wolves and tigers, were so scared that their stomach spasmed uncontrollably. They acted like a hyena with its tail between its legs, not daring to lift up their heads.

The laws of the snow country were strict, especially for nobles and any violation was a death sentence.

The wealthy dressed youth was dumbfounded. Only after half a second could he react, his face filled with resentment. His hand cradled his swollen, rotten peach on one side of his face and on the other side, he glared ferociously at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu did not back off, but flaunted his badge, his eyebrows perking up. “What? You’re not satisfied?”

The wealthy dressed teenager struggled briefly for a moment, then finally unwillingly knelt on one knee to the ground.

He was only a child from a wealthy family and not truly a noble. After seeing the brass heroic badge, if he did not kneel, then he was disrespectful towards the heroes and towards the royal family. It was a grave crime.

“What a cheap person, offering their face for me to slap.”

The words of Ye Qingyu angered the wealthy dressed youth so much that the shape of nose was about to change.

“I know you’re not satisfied, but you need to understand, all the suffering and humiliation you are having right now, is your own fault. Everyone has to pay for their own words and actions, right now I know in your heart you must be feeling hatred and resentment. Haha, no matter, when the day comes that you feel you are qualified, then you can come at me for revenge.”

Ye Qingyu said with a smile.

He did not disguise his domination in the slightest, enjoying humiliating and mocking these arrogant teenagers who were full of superiority.

In truth, through these past years, the wealthily dressed youth had already done quite a few bad deeds and this was far from his first time in provoking Ye Qingyu. Previously, because of a certain reason, he had always endured.

But today, he did not need to endure anymore.

Ye Qingqu knew long ago the uses and meaning of the heroic brass badge.

But to him, the greatest meaning of the badge was not this, so previously he had never shown it before.

But, when a suitable time arrived, he did not mind to use the badge for a bit.

After stowing away the heroic brass badge, Ye Qingyu smilingly came towards the large redwood table.

From a second year student responsible for distributing the nameplates, Ye Qingyu received the admissions nameplate.

“8888? This number is not bad.”

Seeing the wooden nameplate, Ye Qingyu smiled.

He waited in line in the queue, quietly waiting for the appraisal to begin.

And in the swollen face of the wealthily dressed teenager, there were both fear and hate.

His eyes shimmered with poison and perniciousness.

“Why is it? How can the trash waste be changed to a different person, and why does he possess the heroic brass badge in his hands? Damn, if it is known that I was hit by the publicly recognised trash and I did not retaliate, then I’ll become the joke of the entire Deer city!”

The wealthily dressed youth was about to go crazy from anger.

“Today’s humiliation, I’ll definitely pay back in the future...Eh? That’s not right, Ye Qingyu should be fourteen years old, if he still is not a

martial artist then doesn't it mean..."

The wealthily dressed youth suddenly thought of something.

A touch of excitement suddenly appeared in his eyes.

.....

.....

Waiting in line, was truly a long and pointless process.

After a total of two hours, Ye Qingyu finally arrived in the grounds of the first appraisal.

Within the Deer academy's six appraisal, the first appraisal tested the body and blood of the practitioner.

This was because to cultivate in the Heaven wasteland domain, no matter who, began with training the body. Only when the body was trained to the extreme, could you begin to experience qi in Heaven and Earth and cultivate, so the cultivator's body and blood was extremely important.

The more exuberant the blood, the easier it was to train the body, and hence the probability of cultivating succeeding was greater.

And the appraisal process to test the blood was extremely simple. In the selection grounds, there stood nine different ancient stone cauldrons\* and within these stone structures there were ancient runes engraved upon it. The examinee would lift up the stone cauldron, causing the stone cauldron and the runes to be activated and then the blood of the examinee could be tested.

This was the most primitive method but also the most effective.

One teenager after another followed the arrangement of the academy and underwent the testing.

As the cauldron was lifted, the runes on the cauldron glowed with a dim red light and the formation on the ground would enter the body of the examinee, causing their body to glow with a blood red light, shimmering in all directions.

The higher the brightness of the blood light and the larger the area it covered, represented the stronger the blood qi.

Through the talented blood of the examinee and through the power of the formation, they glowed with a light that was akin to a flame, dyeing the entire testing area blood red.

“Number 8677, Yu Long, the fourth cauldron, three hundred and twenty pounds of force....passed!”

“Number 8884, Zhao Gu, the first cauldron, eighty pounds of force... failed!”



“Number 8884,Xu Fei, the third cauldron, one hundred and eighty pounds of forced...passed!”

The examiner’s voice, through the use of qi, spread everywhere, clearly entering the ears of everyone.

## Chapter 002 – Shock: Hero's Badge

---

After successfully going through the appraisal both Yu Long and Xu Fei were filled with excitement. Both their body's dazzling blood red light could illuminate an area around them of around 10 feet. They both raised their fists and shouted in joy.

And as for the failed Zhao Gu, his appearance was ordinary, even slightly shabby, looking as if he was around fifteen years of age. His blood light had not even shone to more than a foot away, and was extremely weak.

Hearing the judgement, the poor youth looked as if he has lost his last strand of energy, collapsing on the ground with tears falling down his face.

He knew, that from now on, he no longer had any destiny with the martial way.

15 years old was the limit for entering the White Deer Academy. For the poor teenagers like Zhao Gu, who possessed no resources or cultivation techniques, failing the appraisal meant they would have to struggle an ordinary life akin to being an ant.

“Number 8888...”

It was finally Ye Qingyu's turn.

After handing his nameplate to the supervisor, he walked to the stone cauldron in the middle of the grounds.

In every previous appraisal, Ye Qingyu was eliminated at this stage.

Because even for the lightest eighty pounds cauldron, he could not budge it in the slightest, let alone lift it. His body would not emit the slightest hint of the blood red light, and hence he became the biggest joke of Deer city.

But in Ye Qingyu's heart, he was clear as to the reason why...

And today, let all the mockery and scorning end.

Because today, he no longer needed to hide his true power.

Ye Qingyu could almost feel the blood in his body burning.

If not for the promise, Ye Qingyu believed that he would have long shocked and amazed the entire Deer city.

But when his palm touched the handles of the rough, cold cauldron and he was yet to lift it, behind him suddenly came the bland voice of the supervisor. "Wait a minute, you're Ye Qingyu? Nonsense, who permitted you to enter the examination? Right now, you cannot go through the appraisal, just stand aside for now."

Ye Qingyu halted suddenly, turning behind him to look.

He saw in front of the appraisal ground, behind the big table, and under the cover of a rainbow canopy, a middle aged supervisor with a goatee. He sat on his chair, expressionlessly staring at Ye Qingyu.

This person was the blood qi appraisal ground's main supervisor.

“Why?” said Ye Qingyu, frowning.

The middle aged supervisor with a goatee did not have the slightest expression and said in a condescending tone:

“Why? Oh, if I let you wait, then you should just wait honestly. I'm the main supervisor here, does my decision need to be questioned by the trash who was consecutively the fastest to be eliminated for four years?”

Ye Qingyu was angered, and was about to say something.

But the next instant, a light appeared in his eyes and he saw a youth standing near the middle aged supervisor. The youth's expression was filled with mockery and contempt, and he was glaring with a poisonous expression at Ye Qingyu.

It was the wealthily dressed youth that he had slapped previously.

Ye Qingyu was suddenly cheered.

So it was this little bastard here causing trouble.

But this little kid was only the child of a merchant family and not a noble, how could he get a teacher of White Deer academy to help him? Ye Qingyu feared the situation was not as simple as it seemed, there was definitely someone acting behind the scenes.

Mindful of this, Ye Qingyu was not impatient anymore.

After enduring for so many years, was there still people in Deer city who had not let down their guards?

Ye Qingyu decided to play with them for a bit, to see who the person behind them was.

Deciding, Ye Qingyu calmly looked at the middle aged goateed supervisor, his eyes bright and laughingly said, “Are you sure you really want me to wait?”

The middle aged goateed supervisor could sense the challenge in the teenager’s voice.

As the supervisor, he felt an anger from being disrespected and coldly said: “You trash, letting you enter the appraisal is just wasting others’ time. Slowly wait, heh, as long as another person is still going through the selection process, then you will still wait until the end.

Ye Qingyu decisively nodded his head. “Okay.”

Then he folded his arms and stood there patiently.

This time, Ye Qingyu did not show his brass badge.

Because in his heart, he was clear that even if the brass badge could deter those wealthy teenagers without much experience, but it could not force the official supervisor of White Deer academy to lower his head.

After all, the academy supervisors did not fall under the rule of the royal family, and their position was relatively high.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu's mentality of a prankster had surfaced.

He needed to cause a big incident, to focus the eyes of all Deer city here and then he will announce to the whole city—

The real Ye Qingyu, has returned!

The other side—

“The next one, continue with appraisal...”

The middle aged goateed supervisor let out a victorious smile, and lazily announced that the appraisal will continue.

The power to change and manipulate other people's fate brought him such pleasure that he was intoxicated.

And the things that happened here, very quickly seemed to have grown wings, rumours quickly spreading out.

In truth, every year at this time, things concerning the 'Four year champion', idiot Ye Qingyu no matter whether it was an action or a word, would become a topic of heated discussion.

Originally, perhaps some people had some expectations for this youth.

But today, he had already become a total joke.

As the news spread out, and time passed, more and more people crowded into the blood qi appraisal grounds.

Everyone wanted to see, what kind of event Ye Qingyu would cause this time.

Countless eyes and stares was concentrated on Ye Qingyu.

Even the youths who were undergoing appraisal failed to attract the attention of the crowd.

From start to finish, Ye Qingyu really patiently waited.

In the blink of an eye, one day had already passed.

.....

The second day.

Ye Qingyu still appeared on time at the appraisal grounds.

On his face, there was no hint of anger but rather a mocking smile.

Numerous gloating glances, mocking stares and even pitying gazes endlessly focused upon Ye Qingyu but he seemed to be totally unmoved.

The appraisal process continued.

As the main supervisor announced the results, similar scenes of joy and despair endlessly acted out.

Another day had passed.

The fourth day...

The fifth day...

The sixth day...

The seventh day...



Only on the ninth day did the number of people entering the appraisal begin to lessen.

The originally packed selection grounds gradually began to thin out.

The majority of boys and girls had already finished their examination with the results differing. Occasionally, there would be some examinees that had come far from Deer City and after receiving their nameplate, quickly underwent the six appraisals.

Ye Qingyu as always, was waiting at the first appraisal grounds, blood qi testing.

This appraisal ground, because of the existence of Ye Qingyu, had long become the grounds with the largest spectators.

The middle aged goateed supervisor calmly sat on his chair.

He would occasionally look at Ye Qingyu, his eyes filled with contempt and mockery, and a very well disguised anger. Ye Qingyu's insistence to stay caused more and more people to come here to spectate, causing the middle aged supervisor to feel slightly uncomfortable. He had long forgotten that it was he who was originally making things difficult for the teenager.

Another day had passed.

It was finally the tenth day.

It was also the last day that the White Deer academy would accept students.

In the morning, only three youths came rushing to accept their nameplates and undergo appraisal and in the afternoon, no one had come to undergo appraisal.

“This middle aged supervisor has gone a little too far, no matter how much of a trash Ye Qingyu is, you still can’t take away his right of examination!”

“That’s right, furthermore Ye Qingyu’s father died in the battle to defend Deer city and was rumoured to possess a heroic brass badge. How can you treat the descendants of heroes like this? This is too cold hearted, isn’t he afraid of punishment from the Snow country’s royal family?

“In this aspect you are mistaken, his father has long died even if Ye Qingyu has inherited the heroic brass badge he is still not the original owner. Furthermore, he is also from a poor background, according to the laws of the Snow country, this badge can only protect him until he is fourteen. After that, the city district leader will take back the badge...”

“This Ye Qingyu really is a pitiful child who has a hard life.”

Everyone discussed heatedly, apart from the gloating wealthy aristocrats and some people with ulterior motives, the majority had some pity for Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu looked at the sundial far away, and seeing that the time was right, walked towards the appraisal grounds.

After walking a few steps, a sudden fragrance wafted across.

From the crowds, out walked a beautiful young girl.

She stood in front of Ye Qingyu.

This girl looked to be about thirteen to fourteen years old, wearing White Deer academy's fire red uniform of a fourth year student. The skin at her neck was like delicate white jade, her collarbone detailed, her face was like out of a painting and she had a beautiful nose and cherry lips. Through the accompaniment of the tight fitting swordsman uniform, her figure was even more exquisite, with long slender legs and a slim waist bringing with it a slight soul stealing desire.

She was definitely a real beauty.

"I've heard you are causing trouble again." The young girl stared at Ye Qingyu with a reproachful look.

Causing trouble?

Ye Qingyu hesitated and frowned, and said, "Xiaohan..."

The beautiful girl was named Jiang Xiaohan, and it was her, in the

most difficult time of Ye Qingyu's life, in front of the deserted cemetery, said to him: "Let's never meet again."

After three years had passed, she had become White Deer academy's official student, with outstanding results, she had become like a phoenix. She had become more beautiful and exceptional, and was not like the little braided girl who had always followed behind Ye Qingyu, needing his protection.

"Please don't be so intimate with me, call me by my full name, Jiang Xiaohan." The red clothed girl impatiently interrupted what Ye Qingyu was about to say and condescendingly said, "It's been four years, Ye Qingyu. Why don't you honestly accept your fate and willingly become ordinary? Without any martial talent, no matter how you struggle, all is useless. Rather than becoming a laughing stock, why don't you become a normal person and safely live your entire life."

So you really came here to speak like this?

Ye Qingyu laughed, suddenly not wanting to speak anymore, being too lazy to explain anything to her.

## Chapter 003 – Does My Decision Need An Explanation?

---

But Jiang Xiaohan, with a seemingly well-meaning attitude, continued preaching —

“From when we were small and were neighbours, I knew you were outstanding previously and you aided me a lot. However, no matter how outstanding you were, that was when we were children, now that we have grown, I am no longer the little girl who would exclaim in excitement after you help me get a bird’s egg. You also don’t need to use this method to catch my attention... Truly, Ye Qingyu, remembering the fact that we were once neighbours, I can give you a word of advice: accepting your fate is the best, don’t provoke those people who you cannot afford to provoke!”

Me?

Trying to catch your attention?

Ye Qingyu laughed at this.

Where did the self-confidence of this girl come from?

Too lazy to speak, Ye Qingyu walked past Jiang Xiaohan, directly towards the appraisal ground.

Jiang Xiaohan expression changed entirely, deciding that he was too

enraged, sighed with a pitying voice: “I know my words may be too straightforward, it might hurt your self-esteem but I really mean well. From the moment you failed your assessment, it was fated that we would not be people from the same world...”

Ye Qingyu continued walking without turning back.

He went straight towards the middle aged goateed supervisor, and said bitinglly, “Ah, right now, I can take part in the appraisal right?”

The goateed supervisor sat and slowly lifted his teacup, drinking a sip of tea and squinted. He did not answer the question but said, “Do you see the bystanders around the grounds? Why do you think they have come?”

“They have come to see someone be humiliated.” Ye Qingyu blandly said.

“I thought you didn’t know, so you did realise, they’ve come to see you be humiliated.” The goateed supervisor’s face had a mocking smile, his gaze was as if he was observing a little clown, and said, “If you understand, then why are you in such a rush to be humiliated?”

“Perhaps the person who will be humiliated is someone else?” Ye Qingyu said with a smile.

The goateed supervisor again lifted his teacup, drank a sip, then comfortably settled into his chair and said: “It looks like you are still not satisfied...then wait some more.”

“But I don’t want to wait anymore.” Ye Qingyu said opposingly.

The middle aged goateed supervisor only coldly laughed.

His face was filled with an expression of contempt when looking at Ye Qingyu, as if he had heard a joke. He did not both to respond; he was only a child from a poor family, akin to small worm like thing, how could he dare confront him?

“Just by looking at the attitude you have when speaking to the supervisors, you are not fit to enter the White Deer academy.” The wealthily dressed youth walked triumphantly from the crowd, his face filled with an expression of gloat and victory at his revenge succeeding.

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance: “It’s you again? Do you want to be slapped? Scram to one side.”

The wealthily dressed youth face darkened, subconsciously cradling half of his face, feeling the pain in his teeth even now.

In his eyes appeared a trace of fear, and he backed away a step but then he thought of something and said angrily, “Oi, do you really think I’m afraid of you now? Trash, why don’t you go and have a look at the rankings in the examination? In the rankings, I’m ranked one thousand three hundred and nine, that’s me, hahaha. Right now I’m officially a student of White Deer academy, what about you? What kind of thing are you?”

“Liu Ye is it not?” Ye Qingyu had a faint smile on his face. “Good, I’ve

remembered, very quickly you'll know what kind of thing I am. Remember, wash your face clean for me to hit.”

“You don't know death, you still dare to be so arrogant. Hehe, you think I don't know? According to your age, if you don't manage to enter the White Deer academy, then the city leader will quickly take back the badge. You damn clown trash, you are being played around by me, you still don't know fear...”

Liu Ye coldly laughed, his face filled with curses and hatred.

Ye Qingyu was too lazy to bother with him anymore.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to look at the middle aged goateed supervisor, his expression filled with contempt. In front of all the bystanders, he bitingly said, “For White Deer academy to have such a garbage instructor, is really humiliating.”

“You...What did you say? How insolent! The goateed middle aged instructor stuttered, he would never have thought that Ye Qingyu would dare insult him. Instantly, he was furious and outraged.

“It was only out of respect for White Deer academy that I was willing to wait ten days. Are you really so innocent that you believed it was because I was scared of you?” Ye Qingyu coldly laughed, and said: “Your not going to let me take part in the appraisal? Very well, later you will regret it. In a very short time, I will make you come to me to beg me to take the appraisal.



After finishing, Ye Qingyu promptly turned around and left.

“You...arrogant! Me come to beg you? I’ll regret it? Hahaha, it seems you’ve really gone crazy...” The goateed supervisor was so angry that his entire body was shaking.

He had never seen such an arrogant and ridiculous teenager. After being eliminated for four years running under his supervision, right now he still dares to threaten me?

At this time the crowd was heating up.

Ye Qingyu was really going to cause an event again?

As everyone knew, the White Deer academy would definitely not let those who exceeded fifteen years of age to enter the academy. So for Ye Qingyu, this was his last chance to enter the academy. After being eliminated for four years running, would this be his last crazed struggle or would he create a miracle?

Before, after every elimination, Ye Qingyu would always peacefully leave.

But this time, it was not the same.

“Where is that little kid going to go?”

“Haha, looks like there is going to be a show, lets follow and have a

look.”

“I don’t know why, but I feel that something is definitely going to happen today.”

The bystanders followed behind Ye Qingyu, everyone wanting to know what he would do. Apart from the normal bystanders who liked to watch the drama, there were also very many youths who had already passed the examination that also followed, forming a flood like torrent.

“Hmph, the last struggle before death. I’ll go and see what kind of waves a trash like you can make.”

The wealthily dressed youth’s facial expression changed many times and after hesitating for a bit, finally followed the crowd.

He did not know why, but in his heart there was the birth of a shred of unease.

And as for the goateed middle aged supervisor, he sat far away with a look of cold disdain.

“I’ll sit here and wait, we’ll see who’ll be begging whom!”

.....

The beautiful Jiang Xiaohan peacefully stayed where she stood.

In that instant, within her eyes, her image of her childhood hero who seemed as if he could accomplish everything, gradually faded away.

Right now, Ye Qingyu seemed like a clown who was fooling himself, and was undergoing his last crazed struggles.

She decided, what was waiting for him was his fifth failure, and after that, he would sink forever...

“Why don’t you understand my pains.” Jiang Xiaohan’s expression was filled with condescending pity, sighing and shaking her head.

“Who is the guy who is so unaware, that he doesn’t understand junior sister Xiaohan’s pains?” A tall handsome young man appeared without a sound right next to Jiang Xiaohan, his tone indifferent with a smile that was not quite a smile.

“Senior brother Xiaofei, you’ve come?” When Jiang Xiaohan saw this person, a smile appeared on her face.

On Xiaofei’s face, there was his signature bland smile.

He was one of the mover and shakers of the fourth year students in White Deer academy. Coming from a background of nobles, he was refined and handsome, charming and personable. Regardless of what you perspective you look at him at, be it family background, strength or talent, you could say that he was perfect.

In truth, he had always been the crush of countless female students.

His signature smile was like a spring breeze and bright sunlight, causing countless girls of Deer city to go crazy for him.

It was even said that there were some young female teachers who had also confessed to him. He was one of the most remarkable people in White Deer academy.

“Today is the last day of the academy selection process. I’ve come here to have a look, I hear this time our academy has managed to recruit not an insignificant number of young geniuses.” Han Xiaofei looked at the crowd of people dispersing towards one direction, and said “Is it that Ye Qingyu causing trouble again? A pity...I’ve heard that junior sister Xiaohan once had a crush on him.”

Jiang Xiaohan had a faint smile, and nodded her head. “This was when I was still a child and did not understand anything, I thought he was very amazing but I did not really have a crush on him...And now that I’ve grown up, me and him, we are not people in the same world... My world is just beginning, while his is destined to be ordinary. Everything of his, should just come to an end!”

“En\*, junior sister Xiaohan being able to see things clearly is very good. As a martial practitioner, one should look ahead and not be bothered by insignificant people. You are a phoenix who can fly in the nine heavens, and in the end he is just a loach who could not get past the gate.”

Han Xiaofei blandly said.

.....

Ye Qingyu's aim, was the second appraisal grounds.

The meridians\*\* examination grounds.

As it was the afternoon of the last day, the examination grounds was practically deserted, without even a single examinee.

The lead supervisor and several students who were responsible for recording the results was sitting aimlessly behind the large wooden desk having a conversation. After the sun had set, this year's examination, will have ended.

In the middle of the appraisal grounds, there stood a life sized bronze statue.

The bronze statue was extremely lifelike, as if it was a piece of art. In every inch of it's body, lines of varying thickness was engraved throughout, intersecting each other. Every single line was connected to a red acupuncture point. It seemed very strange and full of mystery, but what it represent was the body's twelve standard meridians and eight extraordinary vessels\*\*\*.

That statue was named as the [Bronze meridian human]

It was the tool used to test the grade of meridian of the examinees in White Deer academy's examination.

When undergoing the appraisal, all the examinee had to do was place their hand on the back of the [Bronze meridian human], and allow the

statue's energy from its spirit stones to enter their body, then the grade of the meridians could be determined.

Ye Qingyu came in front of the supervisor's table, handing them his nameplate.

“Number 8888, Ye Qingyu?”

The lead supervisor of the meridian was a white haired old man.

The old man looked at Ye Qingyu with a shocked glance; evidently he had heard about Ye Qingyu before. There was a flash of surprise in his eyes but he did not say anything and allowed the people behind him to review the results of the Jade scroll. After, he frowned and said, “This is not right, did you not enter the blood qi appraisal?”\*\*\*\*

“I want to first enter the meridian testing,” Ye Qingyu said calmly.

## Chapter 005 – Golden Meridians

---

At this time, the people following behind Ye Qingyu, also started discussing noisily.

Everyone wanted to enjoy the show, and it caused the entire testing grounds to become jam packed. The faces of all were filled with excitement, but the expressions in their gaze differed. Everyone wanted to know what medicine Ye Qingyu was selling in his gourd.\*

“What’s happening? Why is there suddenly so many people?”

Facing such chaos, the second year students who were responsible for maintaining order was astounded.

“Very well, young man, you can go through the appraisal. I wish you luck.” After a small consideration, the old man smilingly accepted Ye Qingyu’s request.”

“Thank you instructor.”

Ye Qingyu respectfully said a word of thanks, than turned around and walked towards the [Bronze meridian human] located in the middle of the grounds.

“This is against the rules of the academy...” Within the crowd, someone loudly protested. It was of course the wealthily dressed teenager whose eyes were filled with the gleam of hatred, trying to stop the appraisal.

Who would have guessed that the white haired old supervisor would not even spare him a glance.

The majority of their vision was settled onto Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was not nervous like the other examinees but slowly raised his hand and placed his palm on the back of the [Bronze meridian human].

Nearly at the same time, within the bronze statue a vibration began. A strange heat flowed into the arm of Ye Qingyu, and into his entire body.

It was an extremely mysterious feeling.

The next instant, changes began appearing on the [Bronze meridian human].

The two most important meridian seemed to be bursting with some sort of strange energy, suddenly brightening with a golden glow.

“This...” The white haired old man was about to sit down when he saw this change, his body suddenly freezing in place.

“Golden meridian?” The sophomores responsible for recording has eyes wide with disbelief and two of them uncontrollably let out sounds of shock.



The body's meridian could be separated into four classes, with the golden meridian being the highest and the rarest. The person possessing such meridians when training would find it much more easy and effective, truly a child beloved by the heavens.

This scene was witnessed by the crowd, and caused an explosion of sound.

“Heavens, golden meridian? Ye Qingyu really has golden meridian?”

“Is this really the trash that was eliminated four years in a row?”

“This is hard to believe!”

“Was the words of the Dean truly not wrong, today is his words going to come true?”

“What is happening in this year's White Deer academy selection process? There has already been four appearances of golden meridians, Ye Qingyu will be the fifth. You need to know that when admitting students, a person with golden meridians might not appear even within ten years!”

The entire crowd was excited.

No one would have thought, those who had come to witness a show would see such a result.

It was too shocking!

“Impossible, this is impossible, how can it be possible?” The wealthy dressed youth hidden within the crowd looked like he had seen a ghost, rubbing his eyes furiously as if he did not believe in what he saw.

The widely acknowledged trash by the entire White Deer city, the laughing stock, was he really going to change his fate today?

That poor garbage, how was it possible that he had golden meridians?

Liu Ye himself only possessed bronze meridians.

“Wait, what if his meridians are brilliant? There are still five appraisals, the passing mark is done by combining all six before you are allowed to enter White Deer academy...” Liu Ye said, not willing to accept this, grinding his teeth, his face hideous but in heart he was in turmoil.

HumHumHumHum!

The [Bronze meridian human] looked like it had come alive, endlessly producing sounds of vibrations.

Those who saw this were all tongue tied, then the abnormality happened --

The lines engraved on the [Bronze meridian human] representing the meridians, one after another began to brighten. The purest golden

colour, bringing with it a dreamlike radiance, began to spread out throughout the entire body of the statue, enveloping the entire appraisal grounds in its golden splendour.

In the blink of an eye, [Bronze meridian human], over eighty percent of the meridians was shrouded in a golden light.

The entire crowd was stunned.

There was a deathly silence.

“This is not right, if this continues, then all the meridians within the [Bronze meridian human] will be lighted. This is no longer simply golden meridians...” The white haired old man suddenly thought of something.

This old man remembered a legend he had once heard.

He squinted his eyes, an extremely shaken light emitting from his eyes. “This can’t go on, if this child performs too brightly, then when the news comes out, it will not go well for him...”

Mindful of this, the old man opened his mouth to speak: “The appraisal ended, number 8888 examinee Ye Qingyu, golden meridian, passed!”

His voice emitted across the entire grounds.

The golden light in the [Bronze meridian human] began to dim

gradually.

Ye Qingyu hesitated slightly, he had this feeling that the heat within the [Bronze meridian human] still had not reached its climax, it was still possible to go on but it was suddenly forcefully stopped. It was slightly perplexing.

But he did not think too much, stopping the appraisal and turned around to say thanks to the lead supervisor.

The white haired old man carefully examined Ye Qingyu from top to bottom, only after ten breaths of time did he smile and nod his head, saying, “Good, very good, extremely good, it looks like this year our White Deer academy will again produce a young genius!”

Ye Qingyu gave a slight laugh, and unabashedly said, “En, I too feel I am a genius.”

The white haired old man was slightly taken aback, then started laughing vigorously. He passed back the nameplate and said, “An extremely interesting fellow. Very well, your meridian examination results are recorded in your name plate, you can continue on to the next appraisal.”

Ye Qingyu respectfully said his thanks.

He had always felt that he was a young man who could separate love and hate.

Heart to heart, if someone gives him warmth, then he will return with sincerity. If someone treats me coldly, than I will repay with my fists.\*\*

The instant Ye Qingyu left the appraisal grounds, the crowds from their silent state suddenly exploded like a fryer when a handful of salt was tossed in.

Those who had previously verbally mocked Ye Qingyu, suddenly understood something.

Many people began to feel that, today, something mysterious was going to happen.

“Quick, follow, Ye Qingyu is going to his next appraisal.”

“The next test is to test his natural talent!”

“Is his natural talent going to be first class too?”

The crowd was like the magma in an exploding volcano, the atmosphere filled with a burning excitement. People quickly walked, impatiently following. At the same time, the events that happened here today, seemed as it grew wings and spread out across all directions.

The storm, was currently brewing.

The wealthily dressed youth was dumbfounded for a moment, then grinded his teeth and followed on.

...

After 10 minutes.\*\*\*

Within the natural talent appraisal grounds.

“Heavens, how can this be possible?”

“Natural talent of ninth grade?”\*\*\*\*

“This is not natural!”

“This...how did Ye Qingyu do this?”

Within the natural talent appraisal grounds, a noble pale golden light spread out like a surging wave the radius of over a hundred metres. And this golden light was emitted from a four metre high obsidian structure.

[Talent torch!]

This was the treasure that White Deer academy used to test for natural talent.

The [Talent torch] was said to have been made with materials outside Heaven wasteland, and the mysterious scriptures within was from the hands of Snow country’s royal family rune masters. The torch was

extremely effective, as long as the examinee held the torch, through the rune engraved, the torch could test the how high the natural talent of the torch holder was.

When Ye Qingyu held the end of the [Talent torch], even the nine stones flame flowers embedded on the torch began to emit a golden light.

The blossoming of the night flame flowers, meant that Ye Qingyu was a ninth grade talent.

It was highest natural talent in the history of White Deer academy.

Everyone surround was tongue tied, after seeing the shabbily dressed handsome teenager with straw shoes hold the torch. In the golden glow of the torch, they had this feeling for an instant that they were in the presence of the War God of the human race holding a divine artefact.

“Number 8888 Ye Qingyu, natural talent classification ninth grade first class, successfully passed the appraisal.

The head supervisor swallowed a mouthful of saliva and loudly announced the results of the appraisal.

This was the third time this year’s examination someone was able to make the nine flame flowers bloom on the [Talent torch].

He had already seen the previous results of the appraisal on Ye Qingyu through the nameplate. Golden meridians plus ninth grade first class talent, this result even without undergoing any more testing was too

frightening. Even if Ye Qingyu did not participate in any more appraisals, he was already well qualified to enter White Deer academy.

“Who would have thought that our White Deer academy, will have another genius seedling!”

In his heart he had already decided, that in the future he would have to give more attention to this teenager.

If no accidents happen, this child was destined to be this year White Deer academy selection process's star pupil. It was a pity that this youth came from a poor background, his cultivation was fated to be a little harder than normal.

Ye Qingyu thanked the head supervisor and left for the next appraisal.

The crowd stared at the back of this youth. From now on, no one will ever look on Ye Qingyu with mockery, scorn or contempt.

Because they understood, from today onwards, the entire Deer city will revise their judgement of this teenager.

“How can this possibly be?”

The wealthily dressed youth was dumbfounded, his vision going black and as if he had gone crazy, kept repeating the same phrase.

.....



The name of the middle aged goateed man was named Liu Heng. \*\*\*\*

He had already been in the White Deer academy for over thirty one years.

Thirty one years ago, Liu Heng with the worst results, managed to enter White Deer academy. His natural talent had always been average, and he had not been hard working at all when cultivating so he has always been unknown.

His classmates had already successfully graduated, all except for him where he finally managed to use ten years of time to finish the four year course.

Luckily the Liu family was a large merchant company in the city, where their financial power was not low. Relying on the family's resources and money, and through lot of thought and attention, he had finally managed to stay on at White Deer academy as a supervisor.

He was a miscellaneous supervisor, and was not responsible for teaching, but was only responsible for back line operations.

Liu Heng did not have much of a position within White Deer academy but he still liked to rely on his position to bully the students. When facing people from outside the academy, he was very arrogant, not daring to do large wrongs but constantly performing small misdeeds. Because of the relationship between the Liu family and the White Deer academy, the higher ups of White Deer academy had always turned a blind eye to the actions of Liu Heng.

## Chapter 006 – The Shadow Of The Divine Ancient Mountain

---

This time hindering Ye Qingyu, was partly to help Liu Ye take out his anger.

The wealthily dressed youth was also part of the Liu family. If you thought about it, he could be considered Liu Heng's nephew.

The other part was because someone had secretly instructed him to do so, and the person who instructed him to do so was an important figure that he had always wanted to ingratiate himself with.

Liu Heng naturally allowed the boat to flow along with the water\*, and did a big favour for this person. Besides, in his eyes, Ye Qingyu was nothing but a trash that he could easily manipulate.

“Haha, the world has always been realistic. A trash should have the self-awareness of a trash...”

Liu Heng sat on his chair, lifted his teacup and sipped a mouth of tea. His eyes were almost shut, patiently waiting for Ye Qingyu to come back and beg him.

He dared to threaten the head supervisor, he really thinks of himself as a big shot?

A garbage from the poor, if he didn't let him go through the appraisal,

what could he do to me?”

This feeling of casually deciding someone's fate from far above gave great pleasure to him.

At this time—

“Supervisor, supervisor...” A hurried voice travelled over, it was the recording student who he had sent over to investigate. On the student's face, was a strange expression.

“What is it?” Liu Heng casually asked.

The student's expression was slightly odd, hesitated for a bit, then related all that he saw about Ye Qingyu's actions later in detail.

Pak!

Before the student had finished, the purple teapot in his hand had fallen to ground and shattered to pieces.

The purple teapot was once his treasured possessions and normally he would treat it like a precious pearl where if even a small mark appeared he would fuss over it for the majority of the day. But right now, Liu Heng whose heart was hammering like mad, did not have the heart to worry about the shattering of the purple teapot.

“You...what did you say?”

Liu Heng's voice was inexplicably croaky, his face pale. He reached out for the chair to support him standing up, his entire body quivering.

An enormous wave of fear and regret, nearly drowned him.

He had actually refused someone with golden meridians and ninth grade first class talent to enter the blood qi appraisal?

Heavens, even if you only used your toe to think\*\*, such an error, when discovered by the higher ups of the academy, would definitely affect his position which was inherently unstable in the first place.

How could things develop in such a way?

That Ye Qingyu, was he not a useless trash?

“You...Did you look clearly?” Liu Heng sank to his seat, powerless.

The student with a pitying gaze, seriously nodded his head.

Within Liu Heng's heart, a low moan was emitted.

At this instant, he finally understood something —

At that time Ye Qingyu was not wrong, he would really have to go beg him.

This time, no matter what costs he had to pay, he had to go bitterly beg Ye Qingyu to enter the blood qi testing before the higher ups found out.

If not...

“I am really regretful, I should never have fucking participated in this ...  
Liu Ye you little bastard, I’ll definitely beat you to death!”

Liu Heng ferociously thought.

.....

Perseverance examination grounds.

Ye Qingyu’s was sitting cross-legged, as if he was in meditation.

Within the examination grounds, the green-grey stone floor had already been activated, waves of invisible energy surging out. Above Ye Qingyu’s head in a thirty feet radius, a mirage of a mountain appeared. Layers and layers of mountain, it was towering and majestic like an ancient divine mountain.

This mirage, was as if Ye Qingyu was carrying countless mountains.

If you look carefully, there were nine layers on the ancient divine mountain.

“Nine layered ancient divine mountain mirage...Nine overlapping peaks, this is the symbol for ninth grade first class perserverance.”

“For the examinees, the divine mountain mirage is not an illusion. In reality, their consciousness is now enduring the true weight of the divine mountain!”

“This appraisal tests for perseverance. The higher the perseverance, the more divine mountain mirages can you withstand. Being able to withstand three is a pass, enduring five can be counted as good, enduring seven is excellent, and the mirage is only complete when you can endure nine. This is extremely rare, even throughout the entire history of the test!”

“This Ye Qingyu is too terrifying, he has been silently enduring the divine mountain mirage for over ten minutes. Such perserverance, he can already place in the top three of this year’s selection test!”

“Nine peak mirage has appeared, too frightening!”

Everyone discussed animatedly.

Right now, the bystanders were not solely composed of people who had come to enjoy the show.

As the news spread out, more and more people of status had some here. Seeing this incident, and combining it with what they heard about Ye Qingyu’s meridians and natural talent results, they instantly realised an

event that would shock the entire Deer city was about to happen.

The prophecy of the old Dean, was it going to come true?

“Number 8888 Ye Qingyu, withstanding nine peaks of weight, ninth grade first class talent...” The head supervisor of the perseverance examination loudly announced the results of the appraisal, recording the results into the nameplate.

Ye Qingyu said thanks, receiving the nameplate.

The bystanders already numbered well in the hundreds, and their eyes were locked onto Ye Qingyu.

Within this crowd, there were people from the city leader, from various aristocrats, from different merchant companies, from different mercenary groups. Of course, there were also people wearing a white robed with silver antlers embroidered, the high class teachers of the White Deer academy. They were all unmovingly regarding Ye Qingyu.

In reality, every year that the White Deer academy recruit students, for those groups entrenched within White Deer academy, was an extremely gluttonous feast.

This was a world where the strongest rules, where the rules were written using fists and weapons. Apart from cultivation techniques and treasures, a youth possessing extreme talent was a resource treated with great attention by all groups.

Therefore every year when the White Deer academy recruitment process began, many interest groups would place great attention onto this process.

They did not possess the terrifying calling power of White Deer academy, able to summon teenagers everywhere from thousands of miles to take part in the selection. But what they could do, was in the White Deer academy's selection process, take in these genius youths as part of their group.

Because White Deer academy was not a sect, nor a family clan, they would not place too many restrictions on the students or prevent them from joining the interest groups within the city — Quite the opposite, White Deer academy has always encouraged their students to choose their own paths and learn for themselves so they could sooner learn the rules of this world.

So a large part of youth who exhibited prodigious talent within the selection process, apart from those who came from noble backgrounds, the majority would join big or small interest groups within Deer city.

After both sides had signed a contract, these interest groups would provide for free resources for the student's cultivation. After graduation, the student would become part of the interest group and work for them.

After all, the path to martial cultivation was a journey that needed to expend a vast amount of resources and money. Even for those above average wealth families, even if they spent their entire wealth, they may not be able to support the needs of someone cultivating.



So for the students, this was an important choice.

A mutually beneficial relationship.

Of course, if after graduation, the students would exhibit even greater talent like Yi Ling-er and be selected by sects with colossal resources and become a disciple, this was another matter altogether.

At that time, the contract between students and the interest groups would automatically be nullified and they would regain their freedom.

And these interest groups would receive suitable compensation from these sects.

In this scenario, everyone was happy.

In this year's White Deer academy selection process, in the previous nine days, all the interest groups had already recruit not an inconsiderable number of youths that they were satisfied with. At this time, they should have been heading back, feeling pleased.

But the talent that Ye Qingyu exhibited was too great and caused these peoples to be attracted here.

The previous three appraisals, were all the very best results.

For such a result, even if you did not take part in the other three appraisals, entering the White Deer academy was no longer a problem.

And these results were also enough to cause the major groups of the city to go wild.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu was a well-known child from the poor. He had no one to rely on and thus making him easier to recruit.

“Little brother, I am a guard from the Qing Luo merchant company, Luanping. This is our president’s invitation.” A tall, skinny middle aged man with a horse face containing a faint smile, handed over an gilded card and said, “Would little brother Ye be willing to find some time to have a conversation?”

After his words, the surrounding people exclaimed and chatted excitedly.

The financial power of Qing Luo merchant company, could be ranked in the top five of the entire Deer city. And what was given out was the president’s invitation gilded with gold, this was definitely a sign that the most precious spot of this selection process would be given to Ye Qingyu.

Under the gaze of countless eyes, Ye Qingyu only faintly smiled: “I want to first enter the academy, then return and think about such things.”

The guard from the Qing Luo merchant company hesitate for a bit, then nodded his head. “That’s fine too.”

He retrieved the invitation.

Ye Qingyu said this blandly, but anyone could see this was a refusal to

Qing Luo merchant company.

Everyone thought he would consider it for a bit, no one thought that he would reject it so crisply.

“Haha, little brother Ye is really a person with ambition. A mere merchant company, how can it be fit for such a young genius.” An exaggerated laughter travelled across.

From the crowds, came a short and fat person like a winter melon. He held a gilded fan and had a pale face with a bearded jaw.

The fatty came closer, and said with a smile: “I am from the northern military leader, General Wei. I am a warrior under his command, Lam Dong. Little brother Ye, my master admires you very much...”

Ye Qingyu did not wait for him to finish when suddenly a cold smile appeared on his face. “The northern military leader? Lam Dong? Haha, I remember you damn fatty but I also remember four years ago when I entered the academy selection process this was not what you said...”

Lam Dong’s face was filled with awkwardness.

Ye Qingyu was a person who remembered his grievances.

Four years ago, Lam Dong has already said the same compliments to Ye Qingyu.

Because at that time, the Northern city leader like many other groups, also believed in the old Dean's prophecy. To recruit Ye Qingyu, they spent a large amount of money.

## Chapter 007 – Before, I Was Just Having A Joke With You

---

However after Ye Qingyu had been eliminated, he immediately desisted in his recruitment. He even coldly laughed and left a few words: “So you were just a stinky trash, wasting my time”...

“Haha, people have to look forward into the future, remembering grievances isn’t a good thing...” Lam Dong smiled blandly, but his tone carried with it a shred of threat.

“Fuck your ancestors\*...Scram!”

Ye Qingyu insulted him straightforwardly.

“You...” Lam Dong’s expression was frozen. Being insulted in front of so many people, he became incensed.

Ye Qingyu did not even spare him a glance, turning around and clasping his hands together, saying: “Everyone, before entering White Deer academy, I don’t want to think about anything else, please be understanding.”

This was making things clear, that he temporarily would not accept any sort of recruitment from any of the groups.

After saying this, Ye Qingyu walked onwards towards the fifth selection grounds.

This was Ye Qingyu's temperament, he would never be soft and yield to others.

In the past, the fatty changed his attitude quicker than flicking a page through a book. Afterwards, he mocked Ye Qingyu multiple times and now he wants Ye Qingyu to work for them?

There was no way that was going to happen.

Such a decisive and unyielding action, made people exclaim with shock.

Lam Dong was the staff of the northern military leader and right now one side of his face was red and the other side was green with anger. He was so livid that his beard was about to float.

In so many years, who did not give him face? Who would have thought that today that he would be slapped in the face by a little trash who had managed to change his fate slightly...

In comparison, Luanping from Qing Luo merchant company laughed happily.

“Quickly, continue to follow, let's have a look at the other results of Ye Qingyu.”

“This Ye Qingyu, no wonder it is said that youths have the bravery of a tiger. He is too straightforward, in a moment he has already offended

Northern military leader. The northern, eastern, southern and western city leaders are akin to an existence like the city ruler, offending any one of them is not a good idea!”

“Brittle steel can easily snap. This attitude is not too good, even if he a genius. If anything happens to him before he reaches his full potential, in the end when he dies, he is just soil!”

The discussion continued on and everyone followed.

Within the bustling crowd, the wealthily dressed youth was grinding his teeth. When he was about to follow, suddenly something happened.

Behind him a shadow came rushing at him, and from his back gave him a hard slap on the face. The slap was enough to make him see golden stars and after spinning around two times, he finally managed to stabilise...

Liu Ye was enraged, heat rushing to his head and swore loudly: “Who’s the mongrel that hit me...”

“You dare speak? I need to hit you little bastard who caused trouble for me...” An extremely familiar and angry voice said.

Liu Ye hesitated, seeing the person who had slapped him, was the head supervisor of the blood qi testing, and was someone from his own clan, Liu Heng.

Understanding the reason, his entire body shrunk in size.

“Where are the people? Where’s Ye Qingyu?” Liu Heng said angrily and impatiently. “What’s the result of the third appraisal?”

Liu Ye cradled his face, reported the test results and pointed to far away, saying “He went to participate in the fifth appraisal...”

“What? Another ninth grade first class talent?” After Liu Heng heard this he began to feel a headache, his legs shivering.

The better the results of Ye Qingyu, the more trouble he would face.

Once the higher ups of the academy knew how he attempted to suppress such a genius, the result would be akin to a catastrophe.

“Damn this is going to drive me to death with anger! You little good for nothing mongrel, causing trouble for me!”

The enraged Liu Heng was driven crazy, but it was a pity that there was no medicine in this world for regret. He could only continue to fiercely slap Liu Ye for a few momemnts, then he quickly followed in the direction of Ye Qingyu.

According to his calculations, today he might have to bow down and call Ye Qingyu his father\*\*. He needed to beg Ye Qingyu to return to the blood qi testing grounds.

“I...I...”



The wealthily dressed youth's face was swollen like a pig, spitting out blood. He was filled with anger and hatred but there was nothing he could do.

.....

Liu Heng could not care about the demeanour of a head supervisor anymore. Under countless strange stares, he ran wildly after, quickly reaching the fifth appraisal grounds.

This was the bone structure testing grounds.

But there was no sign of Ye Qingyu.

Nor was there too much people.

“Where are they? Where is Ye Qingyu?” Liu Heng was extremely impatient, grabbing a second year student who was responsible for maintaining order.

The student after seeing the supervisor's clothing, did not dare to respond slowly. He said: “You’ve come to chase after genius Ye too? He came, the bone structure testing has already ended, genius Ye effortlessly activated the bone structure stone. The golden light emitted by the stone illuminated over a hundred metres, and it was determined by the great teacher of first years to be ninth grade first class bone structure.

“What? Its ninth grade first class again?” Liu Heng was about to go crazy.

Heavens, are you playing with me right now?

The student did not notice his expression and said enthusiastically: “That’s rights, I heard junior brother Ye previous appraisals had obtained ninth grade first class for everything. This is really hard to believe, our White Deer academy will really produce such a big genius...”

Liu Heng felt his vision going dark, nearly fainting.

What he feared has finally come. The great teacher of the first years has finally shown himself?

White Deer academy was largely divided according to the years of the students and the students you taught. Under the Dean was the four head teachers of their years, and ranking beneath that was namely the great teacher of the first years.

Such an existence, his strength much very least be upper average of the Spirit Spring\*\*\* stage. This was a person that had real power, when compared to a trash teacher like Liu Heng, one word from him was enough to make him disappear from White Deer academy.

“Looking at your expression, you must be so happy that you’re shocked right?” The student was a chatterbox, not stopping at all. “Our White Deer academy has produced such a genius, and when added to the others who have made top ten in the rankings, I believe in the upcoming ten

schools battle. I believe that we can definitely get a good result, and this event will be something that we can be proud of!

Liu Heng started crying but without tears, turning to head on towards the sixth appraisal.

“I hope I am in time to fix this.”

He was praying in his heart.

...

The sixth appraisal grounds.

It was to test the martial mind and personality of the examinees.

Ye Qingyu stood where he was.

“Who would have that your divine idol\* would be the killing Asura idol!” A middle aged man with a face like white jade and a noble air, laughed heartily to the heavens his eyes gleaming with light: “Good, killing decisively, fearing nothing, this is the true meaning behind the Asura idol. This kind of personality is tyrannical, I like it, hahaha!”—

Ye Qingyu was in the middle of the appraisal grounds.

In front of him was seven idols of divine deities, each of them different.

Some of them was human shaped, others was plant like or beast like. Everyone one of them was like it was vividly alive, each bringing a different atmosphere and pressure, starting in all directions at the crowd.

And one of the human shaped idols had a strange appearance, possessing seven limbs each holding different weapons. An killing pressure emitted from it, as if it was a War God, and the beams of light gradually faded across the entire grounds. A terrifying killing intent gradually began to be hidden again within the idol, this was namely the Asura idol.

It was also the idol that Ye Qingyu had manage to resonate with.

Within the selection process of White Deer academy, the personality testing was not that important and was not a hard requirement. It was only used, on some level, for testing the examinees martial heart.

The martial heart was also a person's conscience.

Within this world, some people were kind, some people were weak, some people were timid, some people were killers, some people were tough, some people were cautious, some people were brutal, some people soft, some people were passionate like an intense flame, while others were like a slow breeze, some people planned while some people only acted on impulse...

Different people, possessed different martial hearts.

Different martial hearts, within the selection process would activate the

glow of different idols.

The idol that Ye Qingyu activated, was the killing Asura idol. This represented decisive killing, vengeance and clearly differentiating between kindness and enmity. It was a mentality that was exceptionally extreme.

Those who possessed such a martial heart, once he had finished cultivating, would definitely be an decisive killer and a lord who would inspire awe.

The only drawback was that for such a person, killing was a decision too easily made and would cause some moral people to look down upon him.

Once the results was announced, the surrounding began to discuss animatedly.

Ye Qingyu's previous meridians, bone structure, natural talent examination results had long exceeded the ordinary. But right now, the killer personality that he displayed, one could imagine in the future he would be a double edged sword, being able to hurt the enemy but also oneself.

But the middle aged great teacher seemed to admire Ye Qingyu's martial very much, continuing to compliment him.

“Hahaha, not bad, very good, I didn't think on the last day of the selection, our White Deer academy was able to obtain such a treasure.”

The great teacher said in barely disguised excitement.

He said laughingly: “You’re called Ye Qingyu? I know about you, it seems the old Dean’s judgement was not wrong. You really are a genius, although four years has been wasted but with your talent, catching up is not impossible. I welcome you to White Deer academy.”

Ye Qingyu has finally entered White Deer academy.

All the mockery and laughter that had begun four years ago were put to a stop now, disappearing like clouds and smokes.

The faces of countless people in Deer city will be mercilessly slapped by the result of today.

“Thank you great teacher!” Ye Qingyu bowed in thanks, than shook his head. “But disciple still has an appraisal, I fear I cannot enter the academy just yet.”

“Eh? There’s still more? Personality test is the sixth appraisal, how can there be one that you have not gone through?” The first year great teacher frowned, and a serious pressure began to be emitted. He said, “What exactly has happened?”

Ye Qingyu was about to speak...

“Your subordinate Liu Heng, greets great teacher Kong.” The goateed blood testing supervisor said as he ran here, his body heaving as he tried to breath. Then, he ignored everything else and was all smiles when he

looked at Ye Qingyu. He said, “Brother Ye, I’ve looked for you for half a day already, previously I was just joking with you, quickly come with me to undergo the blood qi testing...

He gave a wink to Ye Qingyu, his entire face filled with flattery with the previous pride and arrogance all gone.

Ye Qingyu only coldly smiled but did not say anything.

“You are the head supervisor of the first appraisal?” Hon Kong, as the great teacher of the first years, was extremely experienced and could see something was wrong in a glance. He pointed at Liu Heng, and in an unaccepting tone said, “You speak, why have Ye Qingyu come here without participating in the blood qi test?”

## Chapter 008 – No Compromise

---

“This ...this...” Liu Heng’s vision was totally black and his legs gave out, with a cry toppling to the ground in shivers.

Ye Qingyu crossed his arms, and did not even spare him a glance.

“Brother Ye, can you spare me...” The solution to a problem was the problem creator. Liu Heng was driven to tears, rushing in front of Ye Qingyu like a pitiful dog.

Ye Qingyu still did not speak.

He turned his head to look the activated Asura idol.

The Asura way, has always been to repay grievances and good deeds in a suitable fashion and not to become a holy mother. Everyone had to pay for their actions, if Liu Heng only begged and said a few words and Ye Qingyu pardoned him, this was not suitable for his martial heart.

“This... Brother Ye, if you just forgive me this time, from now I will be responsible for the resources for the next four years of your cultivation. Everything is negotiable...” Liu Heng was desperate and could not afford to be stingy, throwing out such a term.

Ye Qingyu heard and shook his head: “I’m not going to do any transaction with you, I don’t want my martial path to be constructed by using money from people like you.



Liu Heng hesitated.

He did not imagine, that Ye Qingyu would not accept the carrot or the stick.

“I’ve already said, you need to bow down and beg me.” On Ye Qingyu’s face, a faint smile appeared.

Seeing that Liu Heng was really about to bow down in front of him, he walked to the side continuing: “However, even if you kneel down in front of me right now, I still won’t participate in the blood qi testing. Apart from not wanting to be a snake as fake as you, I feel that a person like you is not fit to be a teacher of White Deer academy. Allowing you to stay would perhaps cause other poor students to be bullied and oppressed.”

Liu Heng’s face was frozen, one side green and the other side red.

He knew that no matter what he did today, the teenager would not compromise.

“Don’t make things so final,” Liu Heng said bitingly. The goateed face became fierce, a poisonous gaze appearing in his eyes. He lowered his voice and said, “I am still part of the Liu family after all. Don’t be absolute in case we meet again in the future.\*”

“I am a person who likes to do things absolutely.” Ye Qingyu said bitingly.

At the same time, on the other side.

Hon Kong was listening to a recital of the entire situation from a student.

The great teacher eyes were filled with rage, his gaze was as if it was a sharp sword that landed on Liu Heng. He said, “As a supervisor who was brought up by the academy, you don’t even try to recruit talent but instead privately ruin the selection process of the students! You have nearly caused us to lose a genius, this is unforgivable, just resign yourself!”

Liu Heng seemed as if he was struck by lightning, his body quivering then quickly opened his mouth to speak. “Senior Kong, I’ve been in the academy for over thirty years even if I did not have any accomplishments, I have still worked hard, I...”

“Go!” Hon Kong was like a rumbling thunder, a terrifying energy emanating from him.

Liu Heng was directly sent flying.

His fate, in that instant, was completely decided.

Hon Kong looked elsewhere onto Ye Qingyu, and the original seriousness turned into a warm smile. He said: “The way you handled it was not bad. If you had forgiven him, I would have looked down on you. As a martial artist, you have to know how to repay grievances and good

deeds. If you had pardoned him because of a few begging words, then that really would have been a waste of the true meaning behind the Asura idol. Your future and success will be inevitably limited if so.

Ye Qingyu knew, that this great teacher of noble status was given him valuable advice. He was touched in his heart, and he respectfully bowed to him, saying, “Thank you teacher Hong for guiding me.”

The fact that White Deer academy had been immovable in White Deer city naturally had its own reasons. A part of this reason was the noble characters within the teachers.

“Your results, is by far enough to enter the White Deer academy. This blood qi test you don’t need to go through anymore, just return and prepare for a bit and report back tomorrow.”

Hon Kong left his last words, giving Ye Qingyu back his name plate. He then turned and instructed a few words to the teacher beside him then promptly turned at left.

At the same time, the entire crowd was boiling with excitement.

Only going through five appraisals yet being accepted by the great teacher, this was the first time in the academy’s history. Only just considering this simple point was enough to make Ye Qingyu famous.

One could imagine how quickly the things that happened here would spread. The rumours would be as if it had grown wings, flying rapidly across the entire Deer city.

Ye Qingyu, the youth who had endured four years of mockery and contempt, was he finally going to soar to the skies?

Four years without any sounds, was his first sound going to shock everyone?

.....

.....

Night time.

The dim lights caused the pedestrian's shadow to become extremely long.

“Strange, why did teacher Hon not allow me to enter the blood qi appraisal?” In Ye Qingyu's mouth was a piece of leaf, his hands cradled behind his head and idly strolling around.

The ancestral mansion had long been sold off and he had no possessions. He did not need to prepare anything but just turn up and report in at the academy in the early morning.

Out of six appraisals he had only entered five. Despite obtaining the top results in all five, but as a consequence of this, there would definitely be no way he would be able to enter top twenty in the rankings. Even though these rankings were only just rankings and did not possess any

sort of monetary prize, but at least it was a proof of strength.

Ye Qingyu originally wanted to enter all six appraisals and obtain this year's number one student in the White Deer academy selection.

“Perhaps great teacher Hon was worried that I was attracting too much attention, he was afraid that the tree that stands above others in the forest will get destroyed by the wind?\*\*”

Ye Qingyu could vaguely guess at the reason.

He had the intuition that this great teacher Hon, seemed to pay special care and attention to him.

And this special care and attention seemed not to be because of the prodigious talent he displayed. He seemed to be acting from the perspective of a concerned elder looking after relatives and the younger generation.

But the problem was, Ye Qingyu was sure that today was the first time he had ever seen the great teacher Hon.

With muddled thoughts in his head, Ye Qingyu unwittingly had again arrived in front of his parent's tomb.

In these four years, this small cemetery was the only spot that Ye Qingyu would hang out in. He casually lied in the pile of hay in front the tomb, smelling the slight fragrance of the grass...

Everything here was so familiar that it made Ye Qingyu be incomparably comfortable.

“Mother, Father, your child has done. Tomorrow I will enter the White Deer academy. Hehe, I’ve already said, your child is a genius. What the white haired old man said a long time ago was not wrong, I will astonish the entire Deer city.”

Ye Qingyu revealed a proud smile on his face.

“Mother, Father, I will in the shortest time graduate from White Deer academy. Then I will leave and according to your instructions, bring the badge and go to the royal family of Snow country to search for what belongs to me.”

“No one can block my way...”

“The secret that you said was behind the heroic badge I still have not discovered but I will discovered it sooner or later. Rest assured, I will complete everything recorded in there...”

“Of course, in the battle to defend the city, even though you did not mention it but I know your deaths is definitely not that simple. I swear, I will absolutely investigate clearly.”

Looking at the night sky, Ye Qingyu was considering a myriad of thoughts.

He continued to ramble on, as if his parents were still alive and he was currently having a conversation with them.

The night sky became darker and darker.

But Ye Qingyu could not sleep no matter what.

He sat in a meditative stance, his hands clasped in front of his abdomen\*\*\*. His tongue was touching the top of his mouth, his eyes focusing on his nose and his nose was observing his heart. Only concentrating on one thing, he was suddenly like an old monk, and began breathing in a mysterious rhythm.

At first, there was nothing out of the ordinary.

But after ten breaths, despite not seeing air flow from the long steady breathing of Ye Qingyu, something happened. The grass from within ten feet of him began to come alive, moving neatly undulating waves, as if it was bowing down to its monarch.

A stream of warmth began to move within the four limbs of Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was currently imagining that with every breath, he would endlessly bring the fresh air from the outside world into his body. After, when breathing out he would expel all the impurities and murky air outside his body.

This was the nameless breathing technique that his father had passed on to him.

From his earliest memories, as a martial artist, his father had not passed on any cultivation techniques on to him. He did not request anything apart from strictly instructing him to follow this breathing technique for two hours every day and no matter what happens, never stop this routine.

Afterwards when his parents died in the battle to defend the city, Ye Qingyu's heart was filled with sorrow but he still followed instructions continued on cultivating with the breathing technique.

This breathing technique, it seems was neither a body strengthening technique nor a technique used to absorb qi.

Through many years of cultivation, the only benefits that Ye Qingyu could feel was that his strength had improved and he did not have any illness or sickness. Apart from that, there was nothing special.

In his heart he had guessed that this was not any kind of matchless divine technique or anything like that.

But many years ago, the White Deer academy's Dean, in a trip outside saw the Ye Qingyu who had just finished cultivating with the breathing technique. Who knew what he saw, but he could not hold his words of shock and claimed he saw an unparalleled genius.

Such inadvertent words of shock, when it spread out pushed Ye Qingyu in front of the wind and waves.



Afterwards when the old Dean knew he had misspoken but and on the sly helped compensate Ye Qingyu, but these were all things that had already happened.

Under the night sky, time slowly flowed on.

Ye Qingyu practiced this breathing technique for a total of two hours before stopping, then lay on the bed of hay and went to sleep.

.....

.....

When Ye Qingyu was sleeping in front of his parent's tomb, a small midnight banquet was happening in the fourth year area. It was held in [Residence of Heaven's will].

[Residence of Heaven's will]!

This villa with an ancient appearance was the most noble and distinguished private club in the entire fourth year.

It was founded by several legendary aristocrats, former students of the White Deer academy. It was intended to recruit and develop the most talented aristocrats, and it was also a way for nobles to network and social.

After when the legendary aristocrats graduated, [Residence of Heaven's

will] continued on. Only those who really came from a noble family, and displayed exceptional talent within White Deer academy, had the requirements to appear here.

## Chapter 009 – Bai Yuqing

---

After numerous years of tradition, an atmosphere of legend and mystery enshrouded the [Residence of Heaven's Will].

In the minds of the students it represented an indisputable and unattainable status. Other students groups and clubs could hardly compare. In these past years, even the higher ups of White Deer academy gave it a significant amount of attention.

For every White Deer academy student, to be able of enter the [Residence of Heaven's Will] once, would become a symbol of status.

The moonlight was bright.

Today the [Residence of Heaven's Will] was especially active.

The previous year's fourth year students were just graduating and the new fourth year students were about to become the new senior students of the academy. The leaders of the [Residence of Heaven's Will] had also passed on the control of the residence by relinquishing it to the three most exceptional aristocratic students.

The banquet was held namely for this occasion.

The energy formation separated this water garden from the outside world. In the night, it glimmered with a dazzling brightness, making it seem glorious and beautiful.

As a student passed by here and could faintly hear the sounds of dance and music, they could not help but display an expression of admiration and envy.

It was a pity that to enter here, the requirements was too high. Even for a typical person from a small noble family, they did not possess the rights to enter here.

In the same night, Jiang Xiaohan's mood was not bad.

Because this was her first time entering the [Residence of Heaven's Will]

From the first moment on when entering the White Deer academy, one of Jiang Xiaohan's goals was to be able to enter the [Residence of Heaven's Will] and to become a member of this top group.

For this she had sacrificed a lot, being rejected numerous times and mocked.

She hated the fact that she did not come from a noble family, she hated her parents who were only the lowly poor.

She evidently had exceptional talent in the martial path, greatly exceeding a typical noble child. But she had to endure the shame of her background, she had to put in hundreds, thousands of times the normal effort to achieve recognition.

And the reason that she was able to appear in the [Residence of Heaven's Will], was not due to her own efforts and talent making the group recognise her. It was only due to the fact that Han Xiaofei had gifted her tickets to the banquet tonight.

See, this was the laughable reality.

People from a noble family could casually gift tickets that children from a background could never obtain, even if they put in a thousand times the effort.

Within Jiang Xiaohan's heart she felt sorrowful, but she still wore her most beautiful outfit to make herself seem dazzling. On her face, she had her more beautiful and sincere smile, linking arms with Han Xiaofei and appearing in the banquet.

She was able to tell that the instant she appeared, in the banquet numerous eyes of male students brightened.

Those lofty noble female students, none of them could compare with her.

"Xiaofei, you're late, you must be punished to drink..." A tall noble student came over and greeted Han Xiaofei. Then his gaze fell upon Jiang Xiaohan, saying "Your female partner is very beautiful, which family does she come from...She seems slightly familiar..."

Then, another few people who were familiar with Han Xiaofei came over to socialise.

“Let me introduce you, this is junior sister Xiaohan who was able to enter the top twenty in the Deer city rankings.”

“Jiang Xiaohan? Eh, I’ve heard...” The tall noble students seems to have thought of something, frowning.

Jiang Xiaohan could be counted as a significant figure within the fourth year. But due to her family background, she originally did not have the right to appear in the [Residence of Heaven’s Will]. Who would have thought that Han Xiaofei would bring her here, disregarding the rules slightly.

But after thinking for a bit, one of the current leaders of the [Residence of Heaven’s Will] was Han Xiaofei’s cousin, Han Shuangfu. With this connection, he estimated that Han Xiaofei would not be punished or blamed.

In a short while, a considerable amount of people had gathered near Han Xiaofei.

Jiang Xiaohan put out all the stops and very quickly these haughty aristocrats were talking and laughing with her, she rapidly becoming a hit. One could not deny, that this beautiful girl had exceptional charisma and allure.

“I heard that senior brother Xiaofei and junior sister Xiaohan went to the selection grounds today? Did you encounter any interesting things?” Intoxicated by liquor, the tall noble student casually asked.

Han Xiaofei had a faint smile; “Nothing much, but junior sister Xiaohan managed to meet with someone from her past...”

“Eh? Who is this person, let’s hear it.” Some people encouraged.

Jiang Xiaohan lowered the goblet in her hand and with a beautiful smile, casually said: “It was only one of my childhood playmates. He had entered this year’s selection process, but maybe because of impacts from these past years, his brain has become a bit abnormal. He keeps thinking that he is a genius, going insane after reaching his limit. I saw he was so pitiful, I only went to try and persuade him with a few words...”

“These kinds of trash without any shred of self-awareness is plenty everywhere. Junior sister Xiaohan you are kind, you did not need to interfere at all.” A noble girl with large eyes said.

“Oh, I just could not bear it...” Jiang Xiaohan sighed, displaying a extremely regretful appearance.

“Junior sister Xiaohan’s playmate from her childhood? Then does this mean, he is already fourteen or fifteen years old? Haha, in so many years, still not being able to enter the academy, he is definitely garbage...” The noble students loudly laughed.

After finishing laughing, the noble students casually asked: “Does this idiot have a name? Come, say it for everyone to listen, haha!”

“That’s right, this is an extremely interesting event.” Han Xiaofei with

a faint smile, saying. “That’s right, what’s the name of the loach again? Junior sister Xiaohan.”

Jiang Xiaohan heard that said with a full smile: “Thinking about it, this fellow is pretty famous within Deer city but it is not the good kind of fame...He’s called Ye Qingyu!”

Before the voice had fully dispersed.

The smiling expression of the tall student and the other nobles had frozen.

“Ye Qingyu?” The tall student’s tone has changed slightly, saying: “That fellow, is your childhood playmate?”

Jiang Xiaohan did not manage to notice the change in attitude of the group. She said with a smile, “That’s right, it was the person who was once named the number one genius. The joke of the previous Dean, he actually believed! Speaking about it, he is rather pitiful...”

After leaving the blood qi appraisal grounds today, to prepare for tonight’s banquet she was accompanied by Han Xiaofei to select her outfit for tonight. Therefore the things that happened after, she certainly had no knowledge of.

To be able to enter the [Residence of Heaven’s Will] evening banquet for a girl drunk in status like her, was absolutely the most important thing to happen to her after entering White Deer academy. She had diverted her entire attention and immersed herself in enjoyment and joy



of being able to attend this event, completely not considering Ye Qingyu's affairs.

And the Han Xiaofei who was accompanying her all along, naturally would also not know what happened afterwards.

But the noble students and the other fourth year students, were extremely clear in what had happened and Ye Qingyu's terrifying performance.

Using only five appraisal, not only entering White Deer academy, but also managing to rank number twenty one in the examination rankings. This kind of person, how did he become the pitiful person Jiang Xiaohan was describing.

Within the entire White Deer city, it was unknown how many people's faces were ferociously slapped until swollen tonight. It was even more unknown, how many people hoped to become a 'pitiful' person like Ye Qingyu!

"Ah, senior brother Han, concerning this Ye Qingyu...do you also feel that he is a pitiful worm?" A noble student with a good relationship called Gao Shenghan, coughed twice to hint at something lest he say something wrong.

Han Xiaofei did not manage to catch the signal, casually saying with a smile: "What's wrong with that appraisal? A loach dreaming of becoming a genius, fantasising about becoming a carp leaping over the dragon gate\*. He has dreamed too much, he is quickly going insane!"

Jiang Xiaohan continued on with a smile, saying: “That’s right, this Ye Qingyu is already crazy. After becoming the laughing stock of White Deer city, in his fifth attempt to enter the academy, the head supervisor in order to not let him be embarrassed, intentionally allowed to him to wait to go through the test when no one was there. Who knew he would not appreciate the thought behind this, but would instead cause trouble in the testing area? Because I remembered our shared history, I went to give him a few words of advice but he mocked me instead...”

Before she had finish, suddenly a voice was heard—

“Hypocrisy! Laughable! Pitiful! Ignorance!”

These words were said bitingly and clear, bringing with it an undisguised contempt and disdain. It was obviously targeted at Jiang Xiaohan and Han Xiaofei.

Han Xiaofei’s expression darkened.

What kind of person would dare to be so arrogant in front of him?

He turned his head to look with a face filled with rage, and in the far away light saw a student wearing robes as white as snow walking towards him.

The next instant, the anger on his face disappeared entirely.

The figure walking towards him was an extremely beautiful girl.

With a graceful posture and a slim waist, she had a thick cloud of black hair which set off her white jade like skin even more. What was originally an ordinary student robe, when she wore it, it became like something sacred. She managed to bring out what normal people could not in the robe, and the robe accentuated her long legs.

She came from under the moonlight, as if she was an aloof ice fairy.

“So it was senior sister Bai yuqing!”

“We greet senior sister Bai!”

“No wonder, the person who did not give face to Han Xiao Fei was her. She is currently the fairy of White Deer academy, the number one Bai Yuqing and also one three leaders of [Residence of Heaven’s Will].”

“The influence of the Bai family is definitely not weaker in the slightest when compared to the Han family.”

At this instant, everyone chattered with excitement. Every student stood and greeted the white robed Bai Yuqing, evidently showing the high status she had within White Deer academy’s fourth year student.

Even Han Xiaofei dared not tarry, standing and greeting Bai Yuqing with his hands clasped.

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head slightly, a hint of anger flashing

through her eyes. She knew that this girl was insulting her, but she could not show the slightest trace of dissatisfaction.

This girl called Bai Yuqing, the position and status that she possessed had always been a figure that Jiang Xiaohan admired and envied at the same time.

## Chapter 010 – It's Not That He Can't, But It's That He Won't

---

Jiang Xiaohan could be counted as a goddess within White Deer academy, possessing abundant admirers but when compared to Bai Yuqing, it was like the difference between the sky and the earth.

Bai Yuqing of White Deer academy!

She was truly a goddess that can affect the entire Deer city.

“What is the meaning behind senior sister Bai's words, can it be that you are familiar with a trash like Ye Qingyu?”

Bai Yuqing was like ethereal frozen moonlight. She gave him a glance, but did not say anything.

But Han Xiaofei understood the meaning behind that glance—

It was a type of lofty disdain and contempt that naturally exhibited itself. As one of the top four handsome men within the academy, within the eyes of the number one goddess of White Deer academy, he was not any different from a flea.

This caused Han Xiaofei to be unspeakably furious.

But there was nothing he could do.

“Haha, junior brother Han may not know, but the trash that you mentioned in today’s examination rankings achieved a shocking result. Just by relying on the results of five appraisals, he was able to enter the top thirty of the rankings. Furthermore, he was personally admitted by great teacher Hon, becoming the first in history who obtained the right to enter the academy just by doing five appraisals.”

A noble carrying a fan walked out from beside Bai Yuqing, said with a faint smile.

Once the noble had finished speaking, Han Xiaofei instantly realised what had happened and the rage in his heart instantly turned into consternation.

And Jiang Xiaohan’s expression at the same instant, underwent a huge change.

“What did you say? How is this possible? Only going through five appraisals but placing in the top thirty, does this mean...” Han Xiaofei thought of a difficult to believe explanation.

“That’s right.” The noble carrying a fan confirmed with a smile. “The results of Ye Qingyu’s five appraisals, was the top results possible...”

After saying this, he hesitated for a bit feeling that his words were not impactful enough. “According to rumours this was because of limits in the testing apparatus of White Deer academy, perhaps, Ye Qingyu’s performance is even more terrifying and is in a realm we cannot hope to comprehend.

Han Xiaofei was dumbfounded.

“How is this possible?” Jiang Xiaohan involuntarily shouted. “That trash, how can he reach this stage? If he was really so gifted, then in the previous four examinations how did he perform so badly? He... must have cheated!”

Numerous eyes concentrated on her.

The fan carrying students still retained his faint smile, but the gaze he used to look at Jiang Xiaohan was now filled with a slight mockery.

“Cheating? How is that possible, the instruments used to examine the students in the selection process are made by experts of the Bitter Sea stage. It has never failed before. From the time since White Deer academy was founded, no one has successfully cheated before. Besides, within the appraisals there were hundreds if not thousands of people spectating, with great teacher Hon personally supervising. Ye Qingyu is but a commoner, what kind of method could he use to cheat?”

“Since senior brother Zhou Yu has judged that he did not cheat, then naturally he did not cheat.” Han Xiaofei recovered his posture, looking embarrassed.

The fan carrying noble student was called Zhou Yu and was similarly from a noble family. From when he was small, he read all sorts of books, claiming that he has an eidetic memory, reading over 10 thousand scrolls. He possessed profound wisdom and never made a mistake and was also skilled in the art of divination where it was rumoured that he

could understand Heaven's Will. An air of mystery surrounded him and he was known as [Little Wizard] within the students.

Within the fourth year students, Zhou Yu was one of the top five in the rankings, considerably higher than Han Xiaofei.

There naturally could be no objection to his words.

Han Xiaofei secretly gave Jiang Xiaohan a signal, indicating that she should no longer speak about Ye Qingyu. Being laughed at was one thing, but offending Bai Yuqing and Zhou Yu would be a great loss.

Furthermore the events tonight was evidently caused through the fact that they did not pay attention to the news, saying wrong things and becoming a laughingstock.

But the mental state of Jiang Xiaohan had already been devastated by this piece of news.

Her brain was a complete blank. At this instant, even she herself was not clear on what her emotions were – was it regret, was it rage or was it something else entirely? In the end, this emotional turmoil caused this clever, beautiful girl to entirely miss Han Xiaofei's signal.

If it was her on any other day, she would definitely shut her mouth. But at this instant, she had already lost all reasoning. She again questioned in a loud voice: "Impossible, completely impossible, if he did not cheat... Then how do you explain his previous four performances"



Zhou Yu seemed as if he had already predicted this question.

He waved his fan, and with his signature smile, said: “Idiots are always fooled by the scenes in front of him. Wise people can see the truth behind the scenes. Ye Qingyu’s performance in the last four years, the only reason he could have performed so badly can only be due to one thing: Its not that he can’t, but it’s that he won’t.”

“He won’t?” Jiang Xiaohan hesitated.

“I guess that Ye Qingyu has some sort of special reason that he doesn’t want to enter White Deer academy. He intentionally failed his examination so that was the reason why he performed so poor. He pretended he was dumb, so people naturally wouldn’t suspect anything. And this time where he shocked everyone, was because this time he finally wants to enter the White Deer academy, so he showed his true ability.”

Everyone who heard this could not help but be dumbfounded.

If that was really true, than this Ye Qingyu was really too terrifying.

A person, how confident does one have to be, to make such a crazy choice?

He consecutively gave up four times the chance to enter the White Deer academy. This kind of chance was extremely rare – even for the youths from small noble families or merchant families.

In an instant, the originally festive and bustling evening banquet, became silent.

When Jiang Xiaohan had recovered her mental state a little, monstrous waves was crashing in her heart.

Then if what he said was real, then the boy who stole chicken eggs for her when she was who she regarded as a hero, the boy who she had already judged as an insignificant laughingstock, had already become a true hero.

But her choice was...

At this instant, Jiang Xiaohan's heart was filled with regret.

But this regret, was very quickly and forcefully dispersed by her.

Her heart was covered with anger and hatred.

Ye Qingyu must have done this intentionally!

He must have done this intentionally, choosing to enter White Deer academy at this time, making her a joke in her first time appearing in the [Residence of Heaven's Will]. This kind of person, was too shameless and despicable.

After a long while, this rare silence was finally broken by a sound.

“So what? Even if he is more confident, to waste 4 golden years, adding in his poor background without the support of spirit medicines, Ye Qing no longer has anything to look forward. You have to realise that cultivating has long been the choice of wealthy people. It’s truly a pity, with his talent, it’s truly a waste of a treasure!”

This voice ringed across the hall.

The person who spoke was Bai Yuqing.

The number one goddess of the academy would rarely open her mouth and evaluate other students.

But this time, she broke from the norm and evaluated Ye Qingyu.

At this time, everyone could not make clear from what perspective was this goddess standing at. Previously when she spoke she was defending Ye Qingyu, but this time she was demeaning him with her evaluation.

Hearing these words, without knowing why, Jiang Xiaohan’s heart began beating happily.

But the next words of Bai Yuqing caused her to freeze like a statue.

“The [Residence of Heaven’s Will] is not a place where people like you can come. Please leave.” Bai Yuqing looked at Jiang Xiaohan.

Her glance was from a lofty position, like she was a queen who decided

everything. Currently she was looking at a servant, directly dismissing her.

“But...I came here because I received an invitation card.”

Jiang Xiaohan felt the naked mockery and insult. She grinded her teeth, forcing herself not to react because she did not possess the requirements to react. But in her heart, the anger and hatred within, was like the eruption of a volcano.

Bai Yuqing flicked her hand.

A strange energy emitted from her, the air fluctuating. Before Jiang Xiaohan could react the invitation in her hands flew out, landing within the hands of Bai Yuqing. With a flash of white light, it turned into dust, scattering into the night.

“Right now you no longer have an invitation.” Bai Yuqing said calmly.

Tyrannical!

Overbearing!

Powerful!

The strength of the number one goddess of White Deer academy was demonstrated fully.

“Senior sister Bai, junior sister Xiaohan was invited by me...” Han Xiaofei could not endure it anymore, speaking up for her.

Bai Yuqing turned her head, her gaze landing on the smile on Han Xiaofei’s face. She seemed to have thought of something, saying “Oh, you can leave too. Within three months, you are no longer permitted to enter [Residence of Heaven’s Will]”

Han Xiaofei’s expression changed in an instant.

It was an extremely strict punishment, from now on he could no longer hold his head high in front of the other noble students.

He was about to argue when a bland male voice from behind him spoke. “Did you not hear leader Bai’s words? Quickly leave.”

“Brother cousin?” Han Xiaofei turned around to have a look.

A white robed student with an angular face appeared from behind him.

This person had thick eyebrows with large eyes, his bronze coloured skin seeming to hint at his explosive power. Compared to people of the same age, he was taller by a head and he possessed bulging muscles as if he was flexing it.

The instant he appeared, his tall body like the peak of mountain, it was as if the moonlight from the sky was hidden by him. Many people’s vision went dark, their breathing stopping.

Han Shuangfu!

One of the strongest students within the entire fourth year of White Deer academy and was also one of the leaders of [Residence of Heaven's Will].

The object of admiration of many students.

“Brother cousin, I...” Han Xiaofei seemed as if he wanted to say something.

“Quickly leave.” Han Shuangfu said blandly.

Han Xiaofei was taken aback. He did not imagine that his brother cousin would not help him but would rather tell him to leave. But he always treated his cousin with the utmost fearful respect, so he did not dare say anything more. Accompanying Jiang Xiaohan, they left [Residence of Heaven's Will] in a shameful fashion.

These two people could be said to have made a big blunder today.

Within a night, their actions would spread out across the entire White Deer academy, becoming a joke.

“My cousin is too insensible, my apologies for bothering junior sister Bai.” Han Shuangfu said with a smile, clasping his hands.

Bai Yuqing, with an expressionless face: “If he is not sensible, than you should spend time to teach him.”

## Chapter 011 – Entering The Academy

---

The bright ray of moonlight was unknowingly obscured by the grey clouds by half.

The light of the moon became blotchy.

Outside the Residence of Heaven's Will.

Han Xiaofei's face was filled with hatred and viciousness. In the muddled light of the moon, he was like a hurt wild beast.

“Ye Qingyu... it's you who made me undergo such humiliation. I swear, from now on I definitely won't let you live in peace.”

He bitinglly screamed.

And beside him, in the heart of the beautifully dressed red clothed girl, was also packed with hatred.

She did not dare to offend a person like Bai Yuqing, but for Ye Qingyu, 'the original perpetrator', she can definitely do as she pleases...

.....

At the same time.



At a different location.

Liu family.

Liu Ye was kneeling down outside the entrance of management room, his entire body shaking.

Also kneeling down with him, was the normally arrogant trash instructor, Liu Heng.

The Liu family heritage was not poor, and the Liu family's company had already operated for decades as one of the top four merchant companies. In these years, it had flourished and developed its strength. It had business with every major noble family in the city, with a deep rooted influence. It was definitely a force that you cannot afford to ignore within Deer city.

Liu Ye was the eldest grandson of the third branch of Liu family. His talent being not bad, and was normally very popular and spoiled by the elders of the third branch. As time went on, his personality slowly became twisted and domineering.

“Grandfather, Ye-er\* knows he was wrong.” “

Liu Ye loudly begged.

After continuing kneeling for four hours, even if he had a background

from training, at this time he had nearly lost all feeling within his legs. He soon could not endure it anymore.

“Where did you wrong?”

An ancient and dignified voice came out from the management room.

“Ye-er shouldn’t have caused trouble by provoking Ye Qingyu...” Liu Ye said, his entire body trembling.

“Idiot, what matter does a mere Ye Qingyu make! It looks like you still don’t understand what you did wrong!” The old and dignified voice started shouting.

Liu Ye did not speak but just knelt, shuddering.

“The Liu family was founded from a merchant company. The reason that the rain and winds of these years did not managed to topple us was because of our connections. I have always told you younger generation to be more low key, but you don’t listen and go provoke people...” The old dignified voice continued. “A mere Ye Qingyu, he is already past the age most suitable for cultivating. Even if his natural talent is even greater, he can no longer threatened the Liu family. Today the reason I’m making you kneel is because you are stupid. A merchant cares about incentives, a thing that has no benefits but only drawbacks we definitely cannot do. If your tendency of provoking everyone is not changed, then there will be a day that you will provoke someone you cannot afford to provoke. At that time, to calm their rage, I can only choose to sacrifice you. Even though I have always spoiled you, I cannot go against the family’s incentives...Do you understand?”

“Ye-er understands...” Liu Ye said haltingly.

“Stand up then.”

Liu Ye stood up shakily, holding the chair next to him for balance.

Liu Heng seeing this, quickly said: “Third uncle, I...”

“Shut your mouth!” A voice filled with anger shouted from the management room. “All these years I’ve spent countless money and resources to allow you to remain within White Deer academy, protecting your position as a useless supervisor. I had my intentions for you, but who knew that you would be so idiotic to lose your position over such a small thing. Wasting my efforts, you deserve to die!”

“Third uncle forgive me, third uncle forgive me! This was instructed by that person, otherwise...” Liu Heng quickly begged.

“Hmph, luckily this time Ye-er managed to enter the academy and things can still be fixed. I’ll punish you with the fine of one year’s salary. Leave now, the insider knowledge that you have, you are not allowed to tell anyone, or else you will die a horrible death.”

The old and dignified voice threatened.

“Yes, yes, yes...” Liu Heng let out a breath of relief.

After a short while.

Liu Heng and Liu Ye held onto each other for support to leave the mansion, feeling utterly dejected.

“This cannot be allowed to stand!” Liu Heng said, grinding his teeth completely filled with hate of Ye Qingyu.

Liu Ye did not say anything.

But his eyes, was glimmering with revenge and hatred in the darkness.

.....

.....

White Deer academy.

Today was the first day after the selection process has ended.

A large amount of first years reported in impatiently in the early morning.

According to the rules of the academy, the parents and guards of the students could only accompany them until the entrance and could not enter. Because of this, it caused the main entrance to become extremely crowded, filled with anxious parents wishing their children well and

impatient teenagers.

Every year that the White Deer academy began their academic year, this strange and bustling sight was seen.

Besides both sides of the academy entrance, there was a 10 metre tall stone mirror.

The stone mirror was made from a rare type of mineral, white cloud stones. The surface of the mirror was as smooth as ice and under the illumination of the sunlight, exhibited a touch of silver shimmer and you could detect the slight movement of the energies. If you look in detail, than you would realise, on the white surface of the mirror, there were characters written in black ink.

Stone mirror rankings.

This was the method that White Deer academy used to announce the examination results.

Around the two stone mirrors, was packed with people.

“Number one in the ranking is of course Qin Wushuang. As the son the city leader, Qin Zhan I hear that he is a genius with a body with bloodline inheritance. When he was not yet ten years of age, he was already at the peak of the ordinary martial stage. This time ranking in number one, is absolutely deserved.”

“Qin Wushuang definitely has a terrifying background. From the day he

was born, the Qin family has already paved the path for him. This type of genius was fed many types of Treasures of Heaven and Earth like sugar snap peas, how could he not be a genius? But the second ranked Yan Xingtian is the person that is truly shocking!”

“That’s right, from a background as a commoner, to be able to exceed Song Qingluo, Liu Lei, Nan Tianya, and other students from a noble background is definitely something terrifying.

“In the top twenty, there is only Yan Xingtian.”

“Eh? What about Ye Qingyu? Did he not enter the top twenty? Was it not said that he returned like a king, and in the selection process performed brighter than any others? How come he is only ranked twenty one?”

“I hear that Ye Qingyu did not participate in one appraisal?”

“What? How is this possible? Don’t joke with me, if it was really like so, to have one less appraisal and being able to place in rank twenty one is too frightening...”

“It’s true, I heard it personally from great teacher Hon, he said that Ye Qingyu only needed to go through five appraisals.”

“Heavens, he is too monstrous!”

“If Ye Qingyu was to go through six appraisals, would it not mean that he would surpass Qin Wushuang and Yan Xingtian, to become number

one?”

Everyone discussed heatedly, each possessing their own opinion.

Ye Qingyu was stood outside the crowd. After hearing such words, he was pleased but also a little depressed.

See, it was such a good opportunity for him to be in the limelight and impress people. If he had taken the blood qi test then he would have definitely placed number one in the rankings. Qin Wushuang, Yan Xingtian, Song Qingluo, all of them would have been beneath my foot...

But this kind of opportunity, after he had entered the academy, would slowly come.

After thinking of this, Ye Qingyu carrying a bag of assorted items, walked towards the entrance of White Deer academy.

The second year student seeing the lonely figure of Ye Qingyu, and seeing his shabby clothes, his gaze was filled with caution and suspicious.

Ye Qingyu smiled and handed over his nameplate.

The student inspected the nameplate, and after seeing the name and results, changed his expression entirely. The gaze that he looked at Ye Qingyu with was now filled with smiles. He returned the nameplate, respectfully allowing him to enter.

One foot was across the boundary.

It was his first time entering White Deer academy.

The path was made of white marble, intersecting each other and leading to different general directions.

Dotted between the middle of the grassland and trees, there were also fake mountains with rivers and fountains spurting water. There were structures and structures of beautiful statues and figures appearing everywhere in the stunning landscape.

There was an extremely fresh fragrance coming towards him.

It was as if just by breathing the academy's air, would cause someone to become relaxed and happy.

White Deer academy covered an extremely large area, over ten thousand acres and could largely be split into six main areas.

For a first year student like Ye Qingyu, before entering the second year, he could only cultivate in the outermost areas. But even in this outermost area, it was still extremely majestic and enormous, with endless sights as if it was a palace.

This beautiful sight was something that definitely could not be seen and experienced from the entrance.



Next to the path there were signs everywhere. Adding to this, there was always a second year student there to lead the way. Ye Qingyu followed the crowd of new students, and very quickly came to the place where you had to report according to the numbers of the nameplate.

This time White Deer academy recruited over two thousand new students, and adding to this those who did not manage to graduate to the next year, became twenty one classes of a hundred each.

After the splitting into classes was done, Ye Qingyu discovered that the class he was in was the lowest numbered twenty first class. There was a hundred people in this class, with eleven being repeaters and was placed in residential area 5A.

As this was the first day of reporting, everywhere it seemed was slightly frantic and busy.

Ye Qingyu obtained his own school uniform and by relying on a book called <Compass for new students>, after searching for a long time, finally managed to arrive in residential area 5A.

After entering the third floors of the dormitory, inside there were already three stranger roommates who were busy.

Ye Qingyu greeted all three with a smile.

But the three people only gave him a glance, and after seeing his shabby clothes, had an expression that said they couldn't care less. Ye

Qingyu did not get angry, only shook his head and entered his room.

The student dormitory of White Deer academy was pretty interesting.

Residential area 5A had three floors, and was made of stone. On each floor there were around ten living rooms and each living room was connected to four small rooms. In that way, each student could each have a private room that belonged to themselves, with all the living facilities you could think of.

This is as cultivating for anyone was an extremely secretive thing. During this process, you were not to be disturbed by anyone so a private room prepared with everything in it was necessary.

After closing the door, Ye Qingyu examined his own private room.

The room was around forty square metres, with a bed and table made of stone. It was extremely hard and ice cold, with a window facing the sun. Outside, there was a strain of poplar tree and you could hear the rustling of the leaves when blown by the wind. On the walls of the room, there were runes imprinted that could be used for strengthening and defence.

## Chapter 012 – The First Lesson

---

The lock on the door was also replaced by runes, where it can freely lock or unlock. Only by using the Ye Qingyu's nameplate was it able to be opened.

In this world where martial power was highly developed, the majority of people's life were inextricably linked to runes and yuan qi formations.

From Ye Qingyu perspective, this private space was the most important area in his upcoming student's life.

Ye Qingyu did not have much possessions, placing some assorted items into the storage cupboards.

After, he carefully placed a little red plant pot on the windowsill. Within the plant pot, was a lone little Chrysanthemum.

This was the only item that he brought from his parents' tomb.

Ye Qingyu would wait until the Chrysanthemum would bloom, then he would bring the freshly bloomed flowers in front of his parents' grave.

At the same time—

Within the living room, Ye Qingyu's roommates were also currently discussing something.

These three people were evidently from a noble family. They were wearing silk clothing, lavished with luxury. Previously when they saw Ye Qingyu they only gave him a glance and looked away, without the slightest intention of greeting him.

However they were clearly not part of the noble families within Deer city. Therefore, they were not aware of the actions of Ye Qingyu, nor the results he obtained during the selection process.

They were obviously from noble families outside of Deer city.

They were all a bit confused.

How was it that a commoner would be able to live together with the three of them, and live in one of the best rooms within this dormitory?

.....

Ye Qingyu was in his own room, lightly tidying.

He read the entire <Compass for new students> over once and cleared up a lot of issues. Then, he sat in a meditative stance near the window, beginning to cultivate using the nameless breathing technique.

Tomorrow he would begin his student life, he must be in his most optimal condition.

The aim of Ye Qingyu, was definitely not just to simply graduate.

.....

The second day.

The student life officially began.

Ye Qingyu woke up early, finishing training with the breathing technique and put on the white robe school uniform. His bushy black hair was tied casually with a rope, and bringing with him some school items, he went to attend the morning lesson.

When he went out, he realised that his three other roommates had already left.

After leaving the dormitory and breathing in the fresh air, figuring out the direction, Ye Qingyu walked towards the classroom.

On the way he encountered many boys and girls, most of them around the ages of ten. They were chattering endlessly, like canaries just released from the cage. In their eyes, were infinite visions regarding their future...

Ye Qingyu was fourteen year old, and being naturally tall and muscular, was taller than others by a head. Within this group of kids, he especially stood out.

At first they thought he was an upper class student, but after when they

saw his first year uniform, did people began to greet him.

“Hey, you are Ye Qingyu? You’re the guy who entered through only doing five appraisals and was personally let through by great teacher Hon, isn’t that right?”

A little loli walked over, her large eyes flitting curiously over Ye Qingyu. The expansive uniform of the academy, when worn by her, was like an opera gown. She carefully lifted the robe in front of her, with the back of the robe trailing behind looking particularly cute.

Ye Qingyu laughingly nodded his head.

When facing people from the same year, he can’t help but feel he was talking to a bunch of little children.

“You’re so awesome! That’s right, I’m called Song Xiaojun.” The little loli gave him a thumbs up, then introduced herself. But then she clumsily stepped on her own robe, and staggered for a bit, nearly tripping.

She stuck out her little tongue, her face filled with anguish, complaining: “This robe is really too long for me, this is so terrible, there wasn’t a size suitable for me, what shall I do in the future...”

Ye Qingyu was amused by her appearance and said: “You can try and change it a bit, it’s quite easy to do.”

The little loli’s face went red and she looked down. “I don’t know how to fix clothes!”

A large majority of children from wealth families were young masters who never needed for anything. Apart from martial cultivation, their practical living ability was basically zero.

After entering White Deer academy, without their family servants or guards, from their perspective, this coming months would be a tough time for them.

Ye Qingyu smiled and said: “After class, come to residential area 5A, room 303 and come find me, I’ll help you change it.”

He felt a special goodwill towards this little loli.

“You know how to change clothes?” Song Xiaojun widened her eyes with a look of worship on her face. Then she nodded her head like a chick pecking a grains, saying “Okay, okay, I’ll definitely come.”

At this time, a voice from far away shouted Song Xiaojun’s name.

Song Xiaojun stuck out her tongue and said: “My sister is looking for me, I’ll leave first.” After saying this, the little loli held her robe and hopped away like a little rabbit.

Encountering this little incident on his way to the class placed Ye Qingyu into a good mood.

Very quickly, he arrived at the classroom.

In the huge amphitheatre, it was long filled with people.

Everyone had their arranged seating using their nameplates. After searching for a while, Ye Qingyu discovered that his seat was in the middle of the first row. This is undoubtedly the best position, was his luck truly that good?

Under the envious gaze of many eyes, Ye Qingyu sat in his own position.

The voices in the classroom chattered endlessly, creating a bustling atmosphere.

But as the classroom bell rang, the lesson was about to begin.

Under the attention of everyone, a female teacher around forty years of age slowly stepped onto the platform. As she did so, the classroom gradually quietened down.

The appearance of this female teacher was comparatively normal, with long black hair tied back and wearing a normal teacher's robe. She did not emit a strong air and power did not fluctuate around her.

In the eyes of many wealthy students, such a woman did not even wear something better than the servants they had at home, and they became slightly disappointed.



This was the first lesson of the first year students.

Many people were expecting the Dean of the academy or one of the head teachers, even great teacher Hon would do. But who would have known that the person who came was just a normal teacher.

After a moment of silence, the classroom very quickly began to fill with the voices of discussion again.

“How is everyone, I am the first year teacher responsible for foundation knowledge ,Wang Yan. Let’s begin our lesson now...” The middle age women began without any expression.

Without any speech to welcome the students, without introducing the academy, without wishing them well for the future, without motivating them, without describing them their beautiful feature...

Even the name Wang Yan was an extremely normal name, not raising the slightest of interest in anyone. The middle aged teacher used the most simple and direct method, and began their first lesson in White Deer academy.

“Training one’s body was the foundation in cultivating energy, being extremely important.”

“Training one’s body, means to turn your own body into its physical peak. Since ancient times, our ancestors have created countless techniques to train one’s body, which can turn the human race’s weak blood and flesh to reach the peak of Houtian\* that can combat with

demons and monsters, that can split apart stone with just their body...”

The gaze of middle age teacher swept across the entire crowd and continued, “But, only training your body to reach the peak of Houtian is by far not enough. To survive in this cruel world and pass on your genes, you must become an even stronger existence .Therefore after training one’s body, is the Xiantian stage – this means the Spirit spring stage then the Bitter Sea and so on...”

“These stages from your perspective, is still too far away, we won’t mention it right now...”

“I am responsible for teaching the theory and techniques for training your body. Refining one’s body can be split into six stages, splitting into skin, flesh, bone, blood, marrow and organs. As these six stages are collectively described as the ordinary martial stage, these stages can be described as stage skin one, second flesh stage, third bone stage ...and so on!”

“The first skin stage, is the basics of training one’s body. A tough layer, where if swords are struck onto the skin, would be like striking leather....”

“The second flesh stage. Strong muscles can make swords or spears unable to enter you.

“The third bone stage, causes bone to be like steel. Able to withstand the strongest of impacts without breaking, able to release the most explosive strength...”

“The fourth blood stage, changing your bloods. Purifying the impurities within your normal human body...”

“The fifth marrow stage...”

“The sixth organs stage...”

The middle age teacher enunciated and pronounced each word extremely clearly and relying on her internal energy, clearly transferred her voice to every corner of the classroom.

Even those sitting at the very back, was able to hear her clearly. The knowledge contained within was organised very simply that was easily understood by all.

But the problem was, that a majority of first year students had already, before going through selection, knew all about the stages of training one's body. And of this group, a great number of them was already at the high stages of the ordinary martial stage\*\*, especially students ranking in the top hundred. Some students may have already reached the peak of the ordinary martial stage, and was only half a step away from the Xiantian stage...

For these types of students, to hear these types of theory that they were already familiar with, held no meaning.

The voices of people talking and chatting became even louder.

Many of the students began to feel bored of the lecture, directly began

talking. As for this ordinary teacher, she did not command any respect at all and thus the classroom's atmosphere became slightly chaotic.

The middle aged teacher seems to not have noticed in the slightest, and continued on without changing her pace.

Ye Qingyu listened very clearly. All his knowledge about cultivating was only gained from hearsay, his basic knowledge equalling zero. He had never had any systematic knowledge about cultivation. The words of the middle age teacher was like words from heaven, with many theories and methods being completely new to him. For him, this lesson was incomparably brilliant.

Besides him in the first row filled with students, apart from one or two students who were already tired of listening, the majority was listening seriously, displaying an respectful expression.

Time slowly passed on.

“So only by training one's body to its peak can you enter the Xiantian stage. And only by controlling the energies with Heaven and Earth can you plant a seed of energy into your body. Only this can be counted as truly entering the door into the martial way...”

The middle aged teacher finally finished lecturing about foundation knowledge of body refining, her voice stopping.

Two hours had already passed.

The voices of the classroom slowly quieted down, all the students waiting for the bell to announce the end of the class.

At this time, on the serious expression of the middle aged teacher, a faint smile appeared.

On her originally plain face, because of this faint smile, took on an air of mystery.

## Chapter 013 – Song Xiaojun

---

Her gaze swept across the large amphitheatre and coughed, saying: “There are still five minutes till the end of the class, I’ll talk a little more with everyone. At the time of my self-introduction I forgot to mention, my name is Wang Yan and I am currently the head teacher of the first years. I believe in the upcoming days, I will interact with you a lot...”

Just as she finished speaking.

Boom!

The entire amphitheatre was as if it had just been attacked by an invisible bomb, the entire atmosphere turning explosive.

Students who were originally snoozing were dumbfounded.

“What? The head teacher of the first years?”

“Heavens, such an ordinary female teacher...is really the head teacher?”

“I’m dead, I’m dead, I dared to sleep in the middle of a class the head teacher personally taught...”

“Damn, I must have left a bad first impression on head teacher Wang Yan, this is not good...”

“I should have seriously listened in this lesson. Head teacher Wang Yan personally describing the stages of body strengthening is an extremely rare occurrence. Even those noble families in the city may not receive the same treatment!”

The students did not even think that the teacher who was like a middle age housewife, was actually the strongest expert for the first years. Thinking back to their previous actions, everyone was suddenly remorseful and filled with regrets.

Ye Qingyu was also slightly taken aback.

Who would have thought that such an ordinary looking teacher would possess such a high position, even higher than the great teacher Hon that he saw.

But why did she appear so normally, and teach such a normal lesson?

According her position and status, she was at least an expert in the upper level of the Spirit Spring stage. This type of expert, was definitely in the top ranks of White Deer city. Her appearance and clothing was so normal, it nearly made peoples eyeballs pop out.

On the platform, Wang Yan continued —

“Through this lesson, I’ve reached a better understanding of everyone. This lesson is the first collective lesson that we will do, and is also the only lesson we will do in the upcoming month. This is as in the upcoming month, after this lesson, people will be separated into different

groups. After all, the foundations of everyone is different, White Deer academy will teach according to the student.”

The voices in the amphitheatre disappeared.

Every student silently and seriously listened to Wang Yan’s words.

No one dared to show the slightest neglect.

Dividing the class into different groups had long been predicted by Ye Qingyu. Those little geniuses from wealthy families, already possessed a sturdy foundation and did not need to learn anymore. By teaching according to the weaknesses of each student and adjusting the content, only in that way could you teach effectively.

“However, there is still an extremely important announcement that I will have to make here – Because of the battle between the ten academies that will happen later this year, I will select ten students that I will personally teach.”

Wang Yan said slowly.

Her eye swept across the students below her, sparks of light appearing in her eyes.

At this time, she gradually demonstrated the respect a head teacher commanded. Her body seemed as if it had grown larger, saying “Originally I was slightly hesitant about the list of students, but after this lesson and seeing everyone’s performance, I have reaffirmed my



selection.”

Pak!

Once these words were said, the still silence of the amphitheatre was broken and replaced by the heated discussions.

Similar training grounds like White Deer academy existed in Snow country. There were nine other academies and together they were known as the [Ten academies].

Every year between the academies, a match would be held that was known as the [Glorious battle of the ten academies].

This battle would concern the distribution of resources among the academies so it was extremely important. It was also an event that received great attention from many young geniuses. Many experts worshipped by many as idols in Snow country, emerged in the glorious battle of the ten academies and became famous through this.

In these years, White Deer academy produced not an inconsiderable number of geniuses, but their performance in the battle of the ten academies had always been less than ideal.

In this year's selection for first years, rare geniuses like Qing Wushuang, Yan Xingtian appeared. This was regarded as the most exceptional class in decades so the academy placed great expectations upon them.

Wang Yan as one of the six heads of the academies, decided to use her position as head teacher to personally select ten students that she would carefully cultivate. And, in the glorious battle of the ten academies one year later, completely change their situation and making White Deer academy respected once more.

Under such a situation, one can imagine exactly how lucky was the ten students that would be selected.

They would receive the greatest amount of attention from the academy, and would also receive the personal teachings of an expert like Wang Yan. This kind of treatment was extremely rare to encounter. Disregarding the inexperienced students of the first year, even geniuses from the upper years would crack heads to obtain such an opportunity.

Once you entered this list of ten, you were basically placed on a shortcut to becoming an expert.

After hearing Wang Yan's announcements, all the boys and girls began chatting excitedly.

From their perspective, they had a feeling that their fates was about to be decided.

Countless eyes stared fixatedly at the stage, their eyes staring heatedly at the middle aged teacher who was previously disregarded by them. If not for the classroom rules, there would already been numerous boys and girls jumping up and shouting, "Pick me, pick me, pick me..."

Only a few students had a confident smile on, sitting in their seats peacefully without the slightest impatient.

They were confident, that they would definitely be on the list of ten.

“Silence.” Wang Yan spoke.

The large amphitheatre abruptly became so quiet that you can hear a pin drop.

She nodded her head, about to announce the results when an unnoticeable current of air passed near her ear. Wang Yan’s expression changed slightly, widened her lips then gave the students a glance, saying, “The list of ten will be announced by my teaching assistant.”

Saying this, she left in a rush.

After roughly ten breaths, another figure appeared on the stage.

It was a girl with a dress as white as snow.

The girl looked to be around thirteen or fourteen, wearing the fourth year swordswoman dress of White Deer academy. Without any make up applied, her skin was like white jade, her collarbone exquisite, her face like from straight out of a painting. Walking up the podium she was like a fairy that appeared from the moon.

At this time, the gaze of countless boys were fixated by her.

Ye Qingyu also felt his vision brighten up.

From the girls he had seen, just judging by appearance, this girl with a white dress, definitely could be placed in the top three.

But this young woman's atmosphere was slightly too cold, as if she was an ancient icy mountain. Even just by giving her a glance, you would feel as if your soul was about to be frozen.

The general temperament of such a person, would have arrogant and conceit in their very bones and not be easy to make friends with.

Wang Yan's assistant, was also not a normal person.

"My name is Bai Yuqing, a fourth year. Head teacher Wang Yan has some business she has to take care of, allow me to replace her in announcing the list of ten." Bai Yuqing stood on the stage, and calmly said: "Those who hear their own names, please come up on the stage and let everyone see you."

After these words were said, the temperature of the entire amphitheatre seems to have dropped by several degrees.

Several people cried.

"So she's Bai Yuqing!"

“The number one goddess of White Deer academy!”

“The rumours does not lie!”

“I hear that her strength, also lies in the top of the ranking in White Deer academy. Possessing a bloodline inheritance, she has already garnered the attention of several big sects. If not for her insisting to complete the entire four years at White Deer academy, she would have long graduated!”

“No wonder she is the girl that has attracted the gaze and attention of everyone, she is only a bit too cold!”

The freshman students all gossiped animatedly.

Ye Qingyu only just found out, that this girl who was like ice, was so famous in the academy.

On the stage.

“The first person is...” Bai Yuqing hesitated for a moment, then expressionlessly said the first name: “Qin Wushuang.”

Her voice travelled out.

In the first row, a handsome young teenager slowly walked towards the platform.

His expression did not show the slightest hint of shock, his lips carrying a faint smile. It was as if he had long predicted this happening and did not feel the slightest hint of pride at this happening.

And no one in the first year expressed any major surprise.

This was a long predicted result. Coming from a noble background, obtaining number one in the examination results, Qin Wushuang. If he did not enter the list of ten, then no one was qualified to enter the list.

“The second...Yan Xingtian.”Bai Yuqing continued to announce the second person’s name.

A youth with a rather thin figure, slowly stood up and walked towards the stage.

Ye Qingyu gaze landed on Yan Xingtian. This was his first time seeing this genius commoner that had been evaluated so highly by others.

Yan Xingtian looked to be only around eleven or twelve, his appearance slightly strange. His face was angular with sharp slanted eyebrows and possessing a righteous air. His ears was extremely large and could almost rest on his shoulders and his arms was much longer when compared to an average person. When his arms dropped down, his fingers could almost reach his kneecaps.

Standing on the stage, Yan Xingtian was frowning as if he had something on his mind. He was solemn and silent.

There was nothing to argue about regarding these two choices.

Yan Xingtian was ranked second, his position was well deserved.

But the third announcement, caused people to stir slightly and was outside of people's estimation.

“Song Qingluo!”

A young girl with long black hair hanging to her waist stood up, evidently extremely excited but suppressing her emotions. She pretended to be calm and walked on the stage, walking very quickly. She was the daughter of the president of Qingluo merchant company, ranking number six in the selections and could be counted as a little genius.

The classroom began to fill with the sounds of discussion.

The sixth ranked Song Qingluo was the third announced name. This was an obvious sign – when Wang Yan selected people, she did not do so according to the rankings. This caused several students who were full of confidence to display signs of unrest.

And the next name, caused people to be even more shocked.

“Song Xiaojun.” Bai Yuqing announced the fourth name.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, an image of the cute little loli appearing in his mind.

## Chapter 014 – The Second Evaluation

---

The next instant, it was really the little loli that stood up. Her face was filled with astonishment and confusion, looking around in all directions seeing if there was someone with the same name as her.

After spending a long time confirming that it was indeed her, she cheered and rushed towards the platform. Because she was too excited, she clumsily tripped on her long robe, landing on the ground with a thud, a swollen little red lump appearing on her forehead.

Amidst the burst of laughter in the classroom, the little loli tearfully held her robe and quickly walked to the stage.

A smile appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

This little loli was really too cute and clumsy. No one would have thought that this little girl's talent would be so exceptional, that one of the four head teachers would select her.

But other people did not think in that way.

“What's happening? How could it be her?”

“Song Xiaojun? Have you heard of her name before?”

“That's not right, the little girl is sitting in the fourth row. She is



evidently not in the top hundred of the rankings, how can she be selected?”

“Eh, I remember now. Song Xiaojun is part of the Qingluo merchant company but she is only an illegitimate daughter. In the selection rankings, she is only ranked number four hundred and sixteen.”

“Four hundred and sixteen? Illegitimate daughter? This kind of person, how can she make it in the list?”

“Has a mistake been made?”

Everyone discussed heatedly, some people questioning loudly.

The conversation started becoming louder and more angry, with the spear pointing at Song Xiaojun. No one thought she deserved a position on the list.

The little loli was originally excited but seeing this situation, she was slightly scared by it. The excitement slowly became timidness, her large eyes misting up. She silently lowered her head, and did not argue back at all, her hands still tightly clenching her robe...

Ye Qingyu frowned, and was about to say something...

At this time—

“Silence.”

Bai Yuqing finally opened her mouth.

She did not raise her voice, but her words were like thunder, clearly reaching the ears of every student.

The students who had a weak constitution was stunned by this voice, seeing golden stars. Instantly, the heated sounds of discussion disappeared. Every freshman looked up in shock silence at the girl in the white dress, their tongues frozen and with a heart filled with fear.

At this time, the freshman finally realised that the person standing in front of them was a fourth year. A fourth year genius whose strength could easily place in the top five.

“This is the head teacher’s decision. If you are not satisfied with her decision, then go discuss it with head teacher Wang.”

Bai Yuqing’s tone was extremely cold, her gaze extremely fierce. She looked at the crowd of people below her and bitingly said these words.

Below, Ye Qingyu nodded his head slightly to himself.

One must admit, that the Bai Yuqing standing in front of him, no matter whether in terms of temperament or strength, was first class.

Within Bai Yuqing icy demeanour, there was a type of lofty grace and sacredness. This was one of the reasons that she had become the number

one goddess of White Deer academy. When compared to other female students who were like blooming flowers laughing brightly, she could more easily arouse a man's desire.

Not knowing why, at this time, Ye Qingyu suddenly thought about the Jiang Xiaohan, the girl that thought she was so clever. She was also girl that had ambition and talent, but when compared to Bai Yuqing, there was still a large distance.

Ye Qingyu smiled, lightly shaking his head.

But somehow, not knowing why, in his heart he had a feeling that this list did not have him in it.

After this shocking scene, Bai Yuqing quickly announced another couple of names.

Those selected teenagers continued to excitedly stand on the stage.

But the previous discussions and arguments appeared again.

Because within those selected, there was another three that was like Song Xiaojun. Their examination results was ordinary, their background average causing people to not understand this decision especially those geniuses who were ranked in the top twenty but not selected. They were especially infuriated.

In the blink of an eye, the list had been announced.

Ye Qingyu's name was not on it.

The sounds of protest could not be suppressed any longer, causing the second explosion of objection.

A tall young man from the first row stood up, his face filled with dissatisfaction and anger and said loudly: "This result is not fair, I need to know the criteria for selecting them."

"He's Xia Houwu, the son of the southern city leader. This time he ranked number four in the selection process, not being able to enter the list of ten is really quite strange. His strength and talent is not bad, nor is there any problem with his background, no wonder people are questioning this decision

"Hehe, this Xia Houwu is so prideful. Not being able to enter the list for him, is an unacceptable matter."

"Good, this way we can use Xia Houwu as our mouthpiece, and question this decision. I think the criteria to select the ten people is slightly peculiar!"

Voices of dissent reached Ye Qingyu's ears.

Ye Qingyu only just found out the identity behind the skinny and tall teenager.

Within White Deer city, the two giants were the White Deer academy and the city leader. Under them, was the Northern, Eastern, Southern and Western generals\*, each responsible for commanding the soldiers in the four main areas. They have all been appointed by the royal family of Snow country, and was part of high nobility.

The four generals only accepted the command of the city leader and their status could be said to be above everyone except him.

Seeing Xia Houwu standing up and protesting, some people immediately stood up and started shouting—

“That’s right, young master Xia is right. We are not satisfied, we want to know the selection criteria!”

“We are not satisfied, young master Xia is not picked, we are definitely not satisfied!”

The amphitheatre instantly turned into a scene of chaos.

Bai Yuqing’s face turned serious.

The freshman felt something blink across their eyes, then the cold girl moved and in a flash, appeared in front of the front row. Her entire body emitted a terrifying aura, letting out an indescribable feeling of pressure.

Her gaze was as bright as lightning in a dark sky.

This was Bai Yuqing. She was like a war god that was provoked.

She stared at Xia Houwu, her tone serious and said: “You’re not satisfied?”

Xia Houwu felt that he could not breathe, a cold feeling gradually entering his body and spreading throughout his four limbs. He ground his teeth and said, “That’s right, I’m not satisfied. I ranked fourth in the selection, why can’t I enter the list of ten?”

Bai Yuqing coldly sniffed, saying: “This is head teacher Wang’s decision, do you still dare to question it?”

“The heart of the martial artist should be firm and determined and not be submissive to anyone. Even if it is head teacher Wang’s decision, if it is not fair, then of course I will question it.” Xia Houwu said, biting his teeth.

Bai Yuqing only coldly smiled.

Even if it was only a cold smile, it was beautiful enough to astonish anyone. The smile was like a flower that bloomed in winter, making the eyes of everyone brighten.

“I originally didn’t want to point this out, but if you must ask... Do you feel that someone who have relied on spirit medicine and outside help to get rank four, deserves to be in the list of ten? Do you really think that head teacher Wang is like those supervisors of those appraisals grounds, and compromise when it concerns the battle of the ten academies?”

Xia Houwu's furious face was fixed in place.

He was like a poisonous snake that was pinched seven inches from its neck\*\*.

Indeed, a large part of him gaining rank four was through false means.

Xia Houwu's expression underwent many changes, half of his face green and the other red. His breathing was rapid, finally settling on an expression of embarrassed anger.

Then he suddenly thought of something.

The next instant, Xia Houwu suddenly turned around, pointing at Ye Qingyu.

“Even if I, Xia Houwu, does not meet the requirements, then what about him? Ye Qingyu, is in the entire history of the White Deer academy, the only person to undergo five appraisals and still be able enter. With one less appraisal, he managed to get the ranking of twenty one. Hehe, if he had went through six appraisals, then the place of number one would surely be his? From my knowledge, he has a poor background and has not relied on any outside help. This type of person, why can't he enter the list?”

Once he had finished, countless eyes gathered onto Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu frowned slightly.

This Xia Houwu was clearly changing the point of conflict.

In this situation and saying such words, instantly made several enemies for Ye Qingyu. At least, the gazes of Qin Wushuang and Yan Xingtian was unfriendly.

“If this commoner went through six appraisals, then he would have definitely obtained number one. Even Qin Wushuang and Yan Xingtian would be beneath his foot, hehe...This type of person, does he still not possess the requirements to enter the list?”

Xia Houwu coldly laughed.

Bai Yuqing's gaze also fell upon Ye Qingyu.

In her cold eyes, there was not the slightest trace of surprise.

“Him?” Bai Yuqing hesitated unnoticeably for a moment.

In reality, even she found it slightly strange.

Because at the start, Bai Yuqing could clearly remember Ye Qingyu's name was in the list. Head teacher Wang Yan praised his talent endlessly, clearly wanting to focus lots of attention in cultivating him. But without knowing the reason why, at the last moment, head teacher Wang Yan took his name off the list and selected another person.



Despite severely evaluating Ye Qingyu last night at [Residence of Heaven's Will], but this evaluation was done with a long term perspective. She did not have an optimistic view of Ye Qingyu's future prospective, but even she must admit, Ye Qingyu had his strong points. At least, to enter the list, the problem was not big.

However head teacher Wang Yan, at the last instant, erased Ye Qingyu's name.

Perhaps she had some special considerations.

“Ye Qingyu is already fourteen years old, his age slightly too high. He also does not have the slightest basis in training his body and does not have any history in martial training. Even if his talent is exceptional, but in the path of cultivating, wasted time cannot be obtained back. He can be counted as half wasted already, so the academy does not have faith in him.”

Bai Yuqing gave a reason.

Even she did not know, why she would speak so much about this situation.

Then she did not even spare a glance at Ye Qingyu, returning to the podium. Retrieving her belongings, she directly left the classroom.

“If there are people still not satisfied with this decision, then you can go and find head teacher Wang. Of course, this is not the final decision. At

the end of every month, there will be an elimination match within your year. If there is someone among you that can eliminate any of the ten people on the list, then you can take their place and be among the ten members.”

This was the last words the Bai Yuqing left in the classroom.

## Chapter 015 – My Temper Is Not That Good

---

At that time, the numerous gazes and expression people looked at Ye Qingyu with, changed and became more complicated.

Clearly many people agreed with Bai Yuqing's reasoning.

Perhaps Ye Qingyu had remarkable talent, but he began cultivating too late and wasted four years of time. Being late one year on the martial path, could possibly entirely extinguish a genius.

Adding to this, was the fact that the starting point of Ye Qingyu was too low. He was a commoner, without resources for cultivation. If he wanted to catch up, there was basically no hope.

It was really a waste of such natural talent.

Within the crowd, the three roommates of Ye Qingyu after discovering who Ye Qing was, changed their expressions entirely. They were about to discuss how to become close to Ye Qingyu, but at this time they looked at each other, changing their minds.

Since it was a person who was fated not to have a future, then there was no need to waste time and resources in becoming friends with him.

Bai Yuqing seemed to have done this intentionally.

She evidently borrowed the incident of the list to throw out such an explanation. By doing this, she destroyed the aura of Ye Qingyu after his shocking performance in the examination.

Unquestionably, this incident would quickly pass into everyone's ears.

At that time, the entire Deer city will have another stance on Ye Qingyu.

It would be an average evaluation and a negative outlook.

The crowd gradually dispersed.

The morning's lesson, after these words, ended.

Faced with everyone's peculiar gaze, Ye Qingyu seemed as if he had not noticed anything unusual. He was at the back of the crowd, slowly walking towards the exit.

On his face, was no trace of depression or sullenness.

It was as if nothing had happened.

Suddenly someone from behind him lightly tugged at his clothes.

Looking back, it was the clumsy little loli, Song Xiaojun. Her face filled with concern, said in a light voice: "Brother Qingyu, don't be sad. I think

what senior sister said was not right, otherwise, I can go and find the head teacher, to give you my place on the list...”

Ye Qingyu laughed heartily.

At that time, the Xia Houwu next to him heard his laughter. His voice filled with mockery and disdain, said “Lowly idiot, you can still laugh...”

His voice was not loud, but it was enough for everyone nearby to clearly hear.

The little loli was suddenly anxious, glaring at Xia Houwu. She said angrily: “How can you say that...”

Ye Qingyu lightly held the little loli back, shaking his head.

Seeing this action, Xia Houwu and people nearby, laughed at him with contempt. This Ye Qingyu was so fearful and cowardly, that even when he was humiliated during the lesson and after, he did not dare to strike back...

This type of person, would definitely not become successful.

Xia Houwu with a cold laugh, was about to turn and leave with his friends...

At this time, Ye Qingyu cleared his throat. Facing Xia Houwu’s back he said with a smile: “Hey...”

Xia Houwu stopped, turning his back to look.

Within his vision, a fist was becoming larger and larger, quickly arriving.

It was Ye Qingyu's fist.

From the viewpoint of Ye Qingyu, striking back with words was often a pointless endeavour. Sometimes, there were only some words that a fist can say.

This rapid transformation made everyone unable to react.

Including Xia Houwu.

But he was only stunned for a moment.

The next second, an aura expanded from Xia Houwu. He lifted his hand, and with lightning speed counterattacked, grabbing Ye Qingyu's fist.

Suddenly the scene stopped.

At this time, many people reacted to this development.

The Ye Qingyu who everyone thought would swallow such humiliation,

chose to strike back in such a way?

It was a pity, that this decision was too rash.

Xia Houwu was at the peak of the fifth stage in the ordinary martial level and Ye Qingyu had not even began training. Even if his talent was greater, it was pointless, they were not in the same weight class at all.

By directly striking Xia Houwu, it only gave Xia Houwu an excuse to humiliate Ye Qingyu.

“Haha, hahaha...” Xia Houwu began to laugh. “Why have you attacked me sneakily?”

“Attacked you sneakily?” Ye Qingyu also laughed. “You’re wrong, before hitting you, I gave you a warning.”

He really did say ‘Hey’ as a warning.

“So what if you warned me? You poor little trash, you really dared to strike me?” Xia Houwu’s expression slowly became fierce.

“When you previously used me to prove your point, you should have been aware this would happen. I’m the type of person that acts without caring about the consequences. If there is a grievance, than it should be repaid on the spot and not in the future.”

“Hahaha.” Xia Houwu laughed loudly, his expression becoming

ferocious. “You really are an idiot, incomparably foolish. Revenge? Pitiful, how are you going to avenge yourself? Trash!”

Saying this, he started to apply force to Ye Qingyu’s fist.

Xia Houwu would take out the humiliation that he suffered from Bai Yuqing onto Ye Qingyu...

The peak of the fifth stage of the ordinary martial level, cleansing your marrow.

After entering such a stage, you at least have over five thousand pounds of strength.

This kind of strength, can instantly flatten a piece of steel, not to mention flesh and blood?

Faced with the Ye Qingyu who had not even properly started training yet, it was an absolute steam roll.

Many people thought they could hear the sounds of bones cracking, see the sight of Ye Qingyu’s fist being shattered, blood spurting everywhere...

However...

“The one who is an idiot...is you?”



Ye Qingyu's expression suddenly became sharp, taking a large sudden step. On his fist, a force like an powerful river streamed out.

Pak!

There was faint sounds of explosions in the air.

Everyone's ears began to burst.

Xia Houwu felt as if his right palm had been hit by a battering ram, instantly going numb. His entire person was sent flying by the impact, everyone letting out scream of shock. Only by crashing into the wall of the classroom, was he able to stop.

“This...”

There were only the sounds of people releasing their breaths.

Everyone's eyes was as if they had seen a ghost.

Figures of everyone transfixed by this scene.

This scene turned around too quickly, causing nearly no one to be able to react.

“You...you...how is it...possible...that you were able to do this?” Xia Houwu leaned his back against the wall for support, humongous waves

crashing in his heart, incomparably shocked. He even forgot to strike back.

Ye Qingyu stretched his arm a little, and said blandly: "I'm sorry, I used a little too much strength."

The other people watching were like fossils.

Little too...much strength?

Heavens, this was far more than using a little too much strength!

One punch to send someone in the fifth stage flying, this...No matter how you looked at it, it was not something a person without basic training can do!

Everybody's gaze when looking at Ye Qingyu was as if they were watching a monster.

There was a brief period of silence.

Ye Qingyu pulled along the dazed little loli, walking outside.

After walking to the door to the classroom, he suddenly thought of something. Turning back, he said to the crowd standing behind him with a gentle smile.

“That’s right, for those students who may have some thoughts about me, I need to remind them of something. I’m a person that doesn’t have much patient, and is pretty violent and straightforward. I’m also extremely petty and like to talk things out with my fist. In the future it’s best if you don’t aggravate me. If you really need to aggravate me, you need to really think it over before you do, if your strength is greater than mines.”

Finishing his sentence, he turned and left.

Only after Ye Qingyu had disappeared in the distance, did the last of the people in the classroom manage to recover.

Xia Houwu tightly held his lips together, a spurt of blood nearly coming out.

Within Ye Qingyu’s fist, he could sense a terrifying and vast power. It was extremely abnormal, even defeating his power of the fifth stage, jarring his internal organs.

This was the reason he did not immediately strike back.

This...what is this kind of power?

Xia Houwu was filled with both hatred and shock.

And at the same time, the hearts of other students was terrified and shaken.

Especially Ye Qingyu's roommates, looking at each other. They would never have predicted, that the shabbily dressed roommates, would be so strong.

They three, although part of the nobility and was filled with arrogance, did not even place in the top one thousand five hundred of the examination rankings. They naturally could not compete with Xia Houwu. Since Ye Qingyu can send Xia Houwu flying with just one punch, then dealing with these three was surely a simple matter?

Thinking back to the words of Ye Qingyu, that he was an extremely petty person, made them feel extremely apprehensive.

.....

There was a canteen in White Deer academy.

While the public canteen's food could not be counted as delicious but the good point was that it was free. Therefore Ye Qingyu's lunch was eaten in the canteen.

Those from wealthy or noble families naturally wouldn't appear in such a place. Only those from poor families would insist to eat in the canteen.

Only after eating four portions of food in a breath did he leave the canteen. Amidst the stunned stares of everyone, he left for the dormitory.

In the afternoon was the martial cultivation class.

Ye Qingyu decided to practice the breathing technique back in the dormitory before heading to class.

In reality, when fighting with Xia Houwu, Ye Qingyu's arm was hurt by the recoil of the impact. The reason why he had such explosive power was all thanks to the nameless breath technique, perhaps it had other uses.

But not matter what, without undergoing true body refining when compared to a fighter at the fifth stage of the ordinary martial level, there was still a considerable distance.

He definitely must begin training soon.

However, Ye Qingyu did not regret in the slightest over the conflict with Xia Houwu.

He knew very well what his current situation was. On the surface, everything was peaceful after entering White Deer academy, but in reality he had already garnered the attention of countless eyes, with many things moving behind the scenes.

So that was why must be like a hedgehog, decisively striking back against all those who provoked him. Only by doing this, could he truly protect himself. He had to make those who wanted to act against him think better of it.

Ye Qingyu was planning in his heart.

At that time, when he was passing through a small silent path, an abnormal image appeared—

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised the surrounding lighting was as if it had solidified. Even a falling leaf was hanging in mid air.

Before he could react, he felt a blur in his vision.

An unexpected figure appeared in front of him.

The head teacher of the first years, Wang Yan.

“Are you confused as to why, within the list, there was not your name?”  
Wang Yan’s words contained a bland smile.

## Chapter 016 – The Serpentine Form Of The Eight Divine Stances

---

Ye Qingyu was shocked

He did not know what to say.

He was confused about not being able to enter the list. But, in reality, he really did not care about entering the list of ten. To receive more, you had to give out more. He did not want too many fetters tying him down to White Deer academy.

Ye Qingyu had unshakeable confidence in his own talent.

This type of confidence was as if he was born with it. He firmly believed even if he did not join the list of ten, his accomplishments in the future would greatly exceed all ten.

On some level, he had never treated Qin Wushuang, Yan Xiantian as his opponents.

He has never thought about wasting four years staying in White Deer academy practising basic martial cultivation.

Ye Qingyu would use one year of his time, to finish walking the road that others took four years.

He would only compete with time and not with people.

“In reality, from the start the number one person who I picked to be on my list, is you. The reason for this, apart from the evaluation from great teacher Hon, I have actually observed you in the selection process. I’ve heard numerous compliments and praises from different supervisors. To be honest, if I was to pick only one person instead of ten people, that person would be you, Ye Qingyu.”

Wang Yan said, sighing.

A small smile appeared on Ye Qingyu’s face, respectfully nodding his head. “Thank you.”

For a certain person who was extremely vain, this way of explaining things to him was extremely effective.

“However, at the time of my announcement of the list, suddenly the Dean sent an acoustic message to me. Because of a certain reason, you are not allowed to enter the list of ten.” After every word she said, she would carefully observe Ye Qingyu’s expression.

She discovered that Ye Qingyu’s facial expression did not change at all because of her words, with no expressions of anger or excitement. It was as calm as a still pond under the sunlight. She knew, at that moment, she had still underestimated this teenager.

“For compensation, I can give you some special privileges.” Wang Yan said with a smile and when she saw Ye Qingyu starting to shake his



head, she held up a hand to stop him. “Don’t reject it first, it is a nameplate that can allow you to enter the second year and third year areas. You can rely on this nameplate to enter the upperclassman’s libraries and borrow the martial manuals inside.”

Ye Qingyu hesitated.

If it was really this, then there was no need to reject.

Because these special privileges, was exactly what he needed right now.

“Thank you head teacher Wang.” He respectfully bowed to her, receiving the nameplate.

A smile appeared on Wang Yan’s face and when she turned around to leave, she said: “Do you know why I expect great things from you?”

Ye Qingyu quickly shook his head.

“You will know in the future.”

Wang Yan smiled at him teasingly causing Ye Qingyu’s to feel extremely speechless, black lines appearing on his forehead\*. Without any signs, her figure suddenly disappeared like a bubble popping in the air.

The solidified light from all around, became normal again.

The leaf floating in mid-air, finally drifted to the ground.

“As head teacher, she would tease her students? Ahem...is this power from the Xiantian stage? Her energy can freeze an area of over a hundred metres?” Ye Qingyu did not know whether to laugh or cry.\*\*

After experiencing Wang Yan’s power, his desire to pursue the martial way was strengthened, but also his urgency.

Only by possessing power, could he solve the mysteries around him

Only by possessing power, could he control his own fate. Only then, could fairness and justice that has been gathering dust for many years, be shown.

.....

.....

Afternoon.

Seventh sparring grounds.

“The first skin layer stage, is to first make your skin so tough that when you are hit with a sword, it will be as if it was hitting leather. This part of training, is done solely by relying on external martial arts with no shortcuts, only through hard training can you achieve this...”

In the martial cultivation lesson, a tall and muscular instructor was currently passing on the techniques to cultivate in the ordinary martial stage.

The efficiency of White Deer academy was extremely high.

In the morning, the head teacher Wang Yan said they would split the class into groups according to their foundations. In the afternoon martial cultivation class, they had already been split up.

Ye Qingyu along with eighty other students, began receiving the most basic martial teachings.

Those without any foundations in the martial way, was practically all the commoners hoping to change their destiny.

Of course, geniuses like Yan Xingtian who already had a deep foundation, would not appear in this type of lesson.

The burly coach began to teach.

His every word was expressed in the form of a shout, vibrating the grounds like thunder.

“In the ordinary martial level, there are six small stages. Skin, muscles and bone does not have any sequencing to it, you can train it in any order you wish.”

“But after that in the blood, marrow and organs stage, then you have to be careful about the particular order. Because after, as you go deeper into the martial way, blood, marrow and organs already touches upon internal martial arts\*. And these internal martial arts are what decide whether you are Houtian or Xiantian, if you train in a wrong fashion, it could very well threaten your life!”

“Right now I will pass on the method to train your skin, muscles and bones. Right now you don’t need to understand, only recite it. And when you’ve memorised it, then you can slowly understand it. If there is any areas that you don’t understand after three or five days, you can ask me for assistance, do you understand?”

The burly teacher yelled.

“Understood!” The students responded in a similar fashion.

“Good, then listen carefully...External martial arts are only about one word, practice! How to practice, the most basic point is... Apart from this you have to practice until your shoulder and waist moves as one, your knees and arms moves as one, your hands and feet moves as one...your heart moves with your will, your will moves with your qi, your qi moves with your power...Yin and Yang flowing in a straight line, only then you can practice!”

The burly instructed, shouted out the training mantras.

The students copied him, repeating the mantras after him.

Training in the martial way, the first step was to take note of your air around you. The air around you; that is qi. In the training process, you must make yourself be excited, loudly roaring so you can get your blood pumping, turning yourself into an animated state.

Ye Qingyu was within the crowd, similarly shouting.

Even though he had self confidence in his natural talent, but he also understood the martial path was walked step by step. Even the best of natural talent needed to train hard, so at this time he could not be the slightest bit lazy but should rather put in a hundred times the effort than normal.

“What I passed to you right now, is the cultivation mantra. What I am going to pass on to you next, is serpentine form of the [Eight divine forms]. And this [Eight divine forms] is the culmination of countless experts of White Deer academy. This is extremely suitable for training one’s body at the ordinary martial stage, and the serpentine form is known as the form to train your skin, being extremely profound...”

The burly teacher after finishing these words, loudly shouted and moved his body, demonstrating the serpentine form.

“The first stance, the Golden snake moves across land!”

The burly teacher’s figure changed. His original muscular body suddenly seemed as if it was boneless, stepping forward. His palm was as if it was a snakes head, incomparably agile and his whole body was like a golden snake suddenly appearing on land.

There was faint sounds of ‘sss, sss’ in the air, as if there was a huge snake swallowing a bird, causing people to shiver.

Every student widened their eyes, carefully observing the burly teacher’s every move.

“The second stance, the Teng snake\*\*\*\* in the fog!”

Half the body of the burly teacher was already on the ground, twisting in a strange way. It was as if there really was a Teng snake slithering on the ground. It seemed slow, but in reality was extremely quick and mists seemed to appear.

This scene, seemed really as if a Teng snake was slithering within the mists, mysterious and frightening.

Ye Qingyu was deep in thought.

The serpentine form was the most suitable for training one’s skin, was because the snake move across the ground when it travelled. This would cause endless friction with ground, and to imitate a snake would mean to cause endless frictions using your skin. This would cause your skin to toughen and along with the serpentine form, is definitely the best method to train the skin.

“The third stance, Horned snake facing its tail!”

The burly teacher changed his figure again, as if he really was a like snake, performing vividly.

“The fourth stance, mysterious snake on a rock!”

“The fifth stance, White snake’s tongue!”

“The sixth stance, Wind snake on a tree!”

“The seventh stance, a Viper’s poison!”

“The eighth stance, Divine snake moon!”\*\*\*\*\*

The burly teacher constantly changed his forms.

Without knowing how long had passed, in Ye Qingyu’s eyes he could no longer see the burly teacher. Before him, it was as if there really was an ancient snake moving, sometimes hissing, sometimes striking explosively, sometimes still as a rock, sometimes spitting out poison...

A vicious aura of a snake came at him, making Ye Qingyu feel as if he was in a crowd of ancient snakes.

“Good, today I will pass on these eight forms to you. Don’t underestimate them, the forms are definitely not simple. Great things are made from simple things. Little kids, if you can successfully understand the essence of these eight stances within half a month, then you will definitely see the door to the first skin stage!”

The burly teacher finished demonstrating, loudly shouting.

His eyes swept across the students. He discovered that the majority of students were thinking furiously about something, with a few impatient fellows already beginning to imitate him.

He smiled and nodded his head.

They were geniuses selection from tens of thousands of people, and had managed to imitate to a level that was quite similar.

“Eh?”

His glance, landed on Ye Qingyu, suddenly taken aback and letting out a gasp of shock.

He could see Ye Qingyu’s body as if it was really a snake, utilising the serpentine form.

Under the sunlight, Ye Qingyu stretched. The first stance [Golden snake moves across land] had already been exhibited by him, with every action and detail being done superbly. Clearly, he had already understood the insights of the first stance.

“This is a bit interesting, to have understood so quickly...”

The burly instructor nodded his head silently. Ye Qingyu was an important seedling, he naturally had noticed him before.



The first stance of the [Serpentine form] seemed simple but major insights are simple. Contained within were the pure, profound understandings of countless experts who formed this stance from countless trainings. And the version of the [Serpentine form] in White Deer academy, was different from the shortened versions outside. It was more profound, and to complete every stance you had seen was extremely taxing.

## Chapter 017 – Terrifying Talent

---

From the memory of the burly teacher, there were extremely few students, who in their first training of the [Serpentine form], would be able to perform it so perfectly.

This Ye Qingyu, no wonder he had ninth grade talent and was able to cause the flame flowers on the talent torch to bloom.

The burly instructor gaze was full of compliments, about to say something. But very quickly, his gaze was frozen with shock again!

Because Ye Qingyu started to practice the second stance.

It was another perfect performance.

The burly teacher could even feel the aura of a vicious snake emitting from Ye Qingyu...”

“This...he not only has imitated the form, but he seems to have grasped the true essence of the stance!”

The burly instructor at this moment, was astonished.

This Ye Qingyu, did he study the [Serpentine form] before? Otherwise how was it possible ... Was this really the terrifying talent of someone who activated the nine flame flowers?

Afterwards, when Ye Qingyu started to practice the third stance, other students began to notice his actions.

Ye Qingyu body was like a snake, sometimes hiding, sometimes arching up violently, his body so flexible it was as if he possessed no bones. In this moment in time, it seemed as if he had really transformed into a real snake, moving along the ground.

When he practiced until the six stance, he was like flowing water, completing every move in one breath. It was as if he had practiced this thousands, if not tens of thousands of time before!

“A Viper’s poison!”

Ye Qingyu loudly shouted.

As his hands moved, hisses started appearing in the air. There seemed as if there really was a humongous viper swallowing prey and spitting poison, causing people to feel fear.

“Divine snake moon!”

Ye Qingyu performed the last move.

The burly teacher was so shocked he was about to bite of his own tongue.

He had been teaching the basics of training one's body for over ten years in White Deer academy. He had seen various geniuses and strange talents, but he had never seen anyone like Ye Qingyu. Someone like Ye Qingyu, who by only observing the [Serpentine form] of the [Eight Divine forms] once, and was able to replicate and grasp the true essence of it, this was his first time seeing such a monster.

If this teenager did not practice the [Serpentine form] beforehand, then this was really too frightening. Did he have an eidetic memory? His ability to understand could be titled as prodigious.

This type of teenager, seemed to be born for the martial path.

The gaze of the other teenagers around, were also filled with complicated expressions of shock, of jealousy and of admiration. Several adolescents who possessed incomparable confidence in themselves, when they realised they could not even complete the first stance of the [Serpentine form], was thunderstruck when they compared their efforts to Ye Qingyu.

The burly instructor gave the teenagers a glare, sternly shouting: "What are you looking at, quickly go practice! Try and understand it on your own, if you have any areas you don't comprehend, then come back tomorrow and ask me."

The teenagers snapped out of their dumbfounded states. Ye Qingyu's performance stimulated them, making everyone concentrate and work even harder.

When Ye Qingyu finished performing all eight stances of the

[Serpentine form], he felt that his entire body was hot, filled with a type of heat that was trying to escape, his blood boiling.

He slowly inhaled, adjusting his breath.

Then, he started his second iteration of the form.

The burly teacher did not say anything more, silently standing at the sides of the practicing grounds. He gazed seemed to look around at every student, supervising their training, but the majority of time and attention was focused on Ye Qingyu.

The more he observed, the more shocked he was.

When he practiced the [Serpentine form] for the fifth time, the burly teacher was certain that the youth had already completely understood the essence of this form. It was as if he was a martial artist that had practiced this skill for tens of years, every move perfect, no matter whether you considered the form or rhythm.

What was even more unbelievable, was that as Ye Qingyu continued to perform the [Serpentine form], under the sunlight the teenager's skin seemed to produce a golden reflection.

This was a sign of the first stage of the ordinary martial level!

The burly teacher could not believe the sight before his eyes, he felt his understanding of martial arts being completely broken by this teenager — In the seventh iteration of the [Serpentine form], he had already

managed to achieve some success in the first stage of the ordinary martial level?

Supernatural!

How was this possible?

This could no longer be explained by just natural talent.

Just what of kind of secret, was this teenager hiding?

.....

Ye Qingyu continuously went through the motions of the [Serpentine form].

If at the start his body was slightly tentative, then now as time passed, he was already completely immersed in the process of training his body.

As the eight stances became smoother and smoother, Ye Qingyu felt every inch of his body, every muscle, and bone and every inch of skin become activated through the stances of the Serpentine form.

Within his body, there was a flame like thing that was originally buried deep within but at this moment, it seemed to be stimulated.

Ye Qingyu could feel his body become hotter and hotter, his blood was

as if it was burning. He could feel a type of energy that wanted to escape through the pores of his skin.

Ye Qingyu's mind was extremely clear.

He suddenly remembered the words that that the burly teacher said early, the chant for training in the [Ordinary martial level] that was less than a hundred words. The words that was not quite understood, suddenly became clear, his actions becoming more coordinated.

The mysterious energy that wanted to gush out of his body was subconsciously stopped.

A strange feeling spread out through his entire skin.

It was an extremely comfortable feeling, filled with excitement.

Ye Qingyu repeated stance after stance of the [Serpentine form].

Near the end, he did not follow the order that the burly teacher taught but randomly mixed the sequence of the stances. He moved according his will, his heart deciding on the order of the stances.

Time, under the shedding of sweat by the teenagers, quickly flowed by.

Ye Qingyu did not know how many times he practiced the [Serpentine form]. Only when he started to feel strains of fatigue did he stop, his mental state awakening from cultivating.

“Eh? You guys...what are you doing?”

Ye Qingyu only just noticed that the teenagers had already surrounded him, forming a small circle with the burly teacher at the front.

Everyone was staring at him unblinkingly.

Their gaze, was as if they were looking at a monster.

The teenagers were speechless.

The burly teacher did not say a word, only walked over and grabbed Ye Qingyu's right arm, observing carefully. In his eyes, a strange light appeared, and he even carefully felt Ye Qingyu's exposed skin in detail.

“The first stage of the ordinary martial level, the skin stage you have already full completed...How did you manage to do this?”

The burly teacher reached his conclusion, staring steadily at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu himself was also slightly confused. He shook his head, saying: “I...don't know!”

The burly teacher was taken aback.

He could tell, that Ye Qingyu was not lying.



At this moment, he did not know what to say.

The teenager in front of him, only by training in the [Serpentine form] for two hours caused his entire skin to clear and smooth, his skin as if it was a layer of pale gold, incomparably soft and flexible. This evidently was the peak of the first stage of the ordinary martial level.

What is monstrous?

This was!

At the start, when the burly teacher saw Ye Qingyu being able to perform the enter [Serpentine form], he was already extremely shocked, but right now...He was very nearly going numb.

Disregarding Ye Qingyu, the burly teacher took a deep breath to recover. He turned around and look at the surrounding youths.

“After watching for thirty minutes, I’m sure that even the most stupid out of you should be able to see some insights in the stances, and can obtain something from this. Ye Qingyu has monstrous talent, being able to see me demonstrate the Serpentine form once and remembering it all. Instantly learning it his ability and also your good fortune, to be able see a grand master performing and for half an hour too...”

The teenagers quietly listened to the teacher’s lecture.

“Of course, you don’t need to be impacted by this. Ye Qingyu’s monstrous talent is his own business, you don’t need to compare yourself with him. You only need to remember, that everyone one of you has gone through the strictest of examination before being selected, each of you is a real genius. You are exceptional when compared to your age group and the martial path does not care about who is first, or last, only about those who can finish walking this path – right now Ye Qingyu is walking faster than you, but who says you cannot overtake him?”

The burly teacher’s gaze swept across the teenagers who were disheartened from Ye Qingyu’s performance. His tone was filled with encouragement.

The teenagers loudly shouted in reply.

A smile appeared on the burly instructor’s face, then he nodded his head, saying: “End of class!”

Then he did not look at Ye Qingyu, directly leaving.

But Ye Qingyu knew, the things that happened here today, the burly teacher would definitely report it to the higher ups of the academy in the shortest amount of time.

Ye Qingyu could feel that the burly teacher was a good person.

The burly teacher did not neglect the other students because of his shining performance. And at the end, the words that he said, partly was to encourage and inspire the students to prevent them from being

dispirited but it was also to help Ye Qingyu, to stop the other students from isolating him.

Within White Deer academy, there were still good people.

Trash instructors Liu Heng, was still in the minority.

.....

After eating dinner at the canteen, Ye Qingyu returned to the dormitory.

He was thinking about what had happened in the afternoon.

He had only repeated the [Serpentine form] ten times before reaching the peak of the skin stage. This was slightly hard to believe. Even if the [Serpentine form] was the ideal method to train your skin, but to reach such a level, this could not be the only reason.

For a normal person to reach the peak of the skin stage, not only would they have to cultivate in the correct technique, but they would also have to use medicinal baths. If they were slow this would take several years, if they were fast, several months. Even a genius needed one or two months to reach this stage, and this was already extremely shocking...

But he himself...

Ye Qingyu had always had unshakeable confidence in his own talent,

but the things that happened here today could not be explained by his talent alone. It was too ridiculous.

So what was the reason?

After long thought, Ye Qingyu could identify two reasons as to why this might be.

The first was the nameless breathing technique his father has passed on to him. The second...was the heroic brass badge?

The nameless technique background was extremely mysterious. He had already trained in it for over ten years, but he could still not see the benefits to him apart from making him have herculean strength.

## Chapter 018 – Bear Form

---

The second reason, the brass badge came from a normal background. However before his father died, he had constantly reminded him that the badge had secrets that he needed to discover on his own.

However, it was a pity that both reasons were just guesses.

Ye Qingyu had no way to tell whether they were true.

He carefully examined his skin. Just from a quick glance it seemed nothing had change, but if you examined it in detail, there seemed to be a pale gold layer appearing on the skin. He brought a kitchen knife, lightly slicing it across his skin but it could not pierce the skin, as if he had sliced it on leather.

This really was the peak of the skin stage, of the ordinary martial level.

This was exactly as described by Wang Yan in the theory lesson.

“No matter what, to be able to cultivate this fast is a good thing. Especially when I am currently in a rush...” Ye Qingyu was not the type of person to become fixated on one thing, since he can’t find a reason, he would not think about it.

He stood up to stretch his body.

Ye Qingyu could feel that the Serpentine stance did not only toughen his skin, but also after entering the first skin stage, he could feel his strength had increased.

He slowly swung his fist, feeling as if such a casual punch could break apart a boulder to pieces.

The martial realm, was indeed profound.

As he was about to continue training in the dormitory, a knocking sound came from outside.

Tap, tap, tap!

“Excuse me...is this brother Qingyu’s room?”

Outside, there was the voice of the little loli, Song Xiaojun.

Ye Qingyu stopped, then remembered that he had promised the little loli to help her change the robes that was too large for her.

He opened the door, inviting her in.

Ye Qingyu could feel his vision brightening up.

After changing from the large academic robes into a fitting purple dress, the little loli seemed to be a completely different person. Her thick

black hair was combed with her fringe hanging neatly over her forehead, and her hair forming two little buns with intricate braids hanging from it.\* Her large eyes were as pure and clear as a crystal, with delicate facial features giving people an impression of perfection.

This was not a type of stunning beauty, but rather an extremely cute little girl who was like a little porcelain doll.

“Brother Qingyu, I’ll rely on you.” The little loli laughingly lifted up her large robes, passing it over.

“Sit.” Ye Qingyu pointed at the stone seat, then took out a needle from the cupboard he used to store his things.

“How did brother Qingyu learn how to sew clothes?” The little loli curiously asked.

“When you live on your own, you have to do everything by yourself.” Ye Qingyu said this with a smile, carefully inspecting the little loli’s figure and calculating the length of cloth that he needed to change.

For some unknown reason, he had a special goodwill towards this little loli.

Is it because within the eyes of the girl was a pure innocence that made him feel warm inside?

“That’s right, this afternoon, head teacher Wang personally came and taught us martial arts...” The little loli thought of something, saying

excitedly: “She’s really awesome, many areas in which I don’t understand through just from a few pointers from her, instantly becomes easy to comprehend. Today I learned a lot!”

The little loli was part of the list of ten, along with Qin Wushuang, Yan Xingtian. Their martial lessons, were taught personally by head teacher Wang Yan.

“Qin Wushuang is really amazing, head teacher Wang says his strength is the strongest of the freshmen. He already has a spirit kindling within his body...”

“But Yan Xingtian is only a little worse. Today, head teacher Wang Yan personally gave him a [Growing spirit manual], and said that he could hope to attempt to reach the Spirit spring stage in three months!”

“Of course, my sister cousin Qingluo is also awesome, she is already at the peak of the ordinary martial level. Head teacher Wang said she also had the requirements to attempt to reach the Spirit spring stage in three months.

The little loli spoke about everything, and was like a little chatterbox.

Ye Qingyu listened with a smile.

Through the little loli’s words, he began to have a clear understanding of Qin Wushuang and the others. Just from judging through the current situation, there was still a considerable gap of strength between him and them.



“That’s right, brother Qingyu, I have an extremely fun thing that you can look at.” The little loli seemed to have suddenly thought of something, looking mysterious. From her pouch, she took out a black booklet, handing it over.”

Ye Qingyu laughingly received, taking a look and was slightly shocked.

“Hm? Xiantian growing spirit manual?”

It was a martial arts manual.

From the name, it should be a manual that taught you how to develop your yuan qi.

The peak of the ordinary martial level, was also known as the peak of the Houtian stage. This was a barrier, and after passing through this barrier, the next stage was Xiantian. What was Xiantian, was to grow a spirit kindling in your body, and link it with the yuan qi within Heaven and Earth. And within days, this would turn into a spirit spring, flowing with yuan qi.

Although Ye Qingyu had not yet read the book but just from the two words, ‘Growing spirit’, he could already guess the contents of the manual.

This booklet was inky black with a shade of purple, evidently extremely precious and not something a normal student would be able to obtain.

Ye Qingyu through a little consideration could tell that this [Xiantian growing spirit manual] was the cultivation technique given to the little loli by head teacher Wang Yan. It should not be something that was passed to outsiders.

He smiled and patted the head of the little loli saying, “I don’t need this at the moment, quickly put it away.”

“But, it’s extremely important. Why don’t you have a look, maybe in the future you will have a use for it.” The little loli insisted, not wanting to give up.

“When I need it in the future, then you can show it to me, is that okay?” Ye Qingyu seemed as if he was coaxing a little child. If Wang Yan knew that the little loli had passed on this manual to others she would definitely be punished.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu was currently only in the first stage of the ordinary martial level, and did not yet have to worry about reaching Xiantian just yet.

The little loli sullenly stored away the booklet, her mouth so flat it could hang an oil bottle.

After a short while though, the little figure seemed to have thought of something again, her eyes shining with sneakiness. She playfully stuck her head out and said, “Brother Qingyu, I heard that you have an eidetic memory, everything you’ve heard, you can remember?”

Ye Qingyu after hearing this, already knew what was about to happen. He felt slightly helpless when facing this strange and quirky little loli.

As predicted, the next instant the little loli began reciting.

What she recited, was the contents of the [Xiantian growing spirit manual].

Ye Qingyu only smiled and did not say anything.

After he had finished changing the robe, the little loli had already recited the [Xiantian growing spirit manual] over ten times.

Under this time of force fed indoctrination, Ye Qingyu managed to memorise over eighty to ninety percent of the manual.

“Fine, fine, you little cunning brat, if you want to thank me next time you should use some other methods. If not, if head teacher Wang found out, then you would be heavily punished!” Ye Qingyu handed over the adjusted robe, flicking the little loli’s head.

“Annoying.” The little loli’s face flushed red, sticking her little tongue out.

.....

After the little loli left, Ye Qingyu continued practicing the [Serpentine form].

After this afternoon's training, every move and its meaning of the [Serpentine form] was deeply ingrained within his brain, and now it was almost a natural instinct.

And hence when he practiced in the small dormitory, he did not feel stifled at all.

It was an extremely strange feeling.

After every time he finished performing the eight stances of the [Serpentine form], Ye Qingyu was able to feel his own body undergoing a mysterious change. There was a strange and mysterious heat that was stimulated from within, changing his body.

After an hour, he finally started to feel tired.

He stopped and fixed his breathing. Ye Qingyu emptied his mind, and then sat on a meditative posture on the stone bed, continuing his training with the nameless breathing technique.

His breathing was slow and deep.

After vaguely realising the value of this breathing technique, Ye Qingyu began to pay more attention to it.

After approximately one hour.

Ye Qingyu ended his breathing meditation.

The fatigue on his body had disappeared entirely. He felt his vitality improve many times over. The time was already midnight, but it was as if he had just woken up, filled with energy and not feeling tired in the slightest.

This was the effects of the nameless breathing technique.

Then he continued training in the [Serpentine form]/

This entire night, was spent repeating this cycle.

This continued on until the sun started to rise. Only then, did Ye Qingyu end his training.

At this time, he could confirm that he has absolutely broken into the first skin stage of the ordinary martial level. This type of speed, apart from making Ye Qingyu surprised, also made him extremely excited.

What the cold Bai Yuqing said was not wrong. He was later than others by four years, and this meant there would be a chasm between him and the others. But if he could continue to cultivate at this kind of speed, then no matter how big the chasm, it could be overcome!!

.....

Dawn.

The fragrance of flowers filled the air.

Ye Qingyu had just finished eating breakfast, exiting from the canteen.

He discovered that after training in the [Serpentine form], something in his body seems to have been stimulated. Not only was his training speed extremely rapid, his appetite also seemed to have greatly increased.

Just then he had eaten over twenty mantous\*\*, ten bowls of congees\*\*\* – at least six portions of a normal person’s meal.

“If this continues, I’ll eat myself poor...”

He burped loudly.

In today’s morning lesson, it concerned the essences behind the [Serpentine form]. For those students who had only begun to learn this technique, it was naturally immensely important.

To absorb the previous experiences of those who had gone through this path before in a lesson, was an unavoidable shortcut for many of the students.

But for the Ye Qingyu who had already thoroughly digested the [Serpentine form], today’s lesson held no meaning at all.

After considering for a while, he headed straight for the practicing grounds.

The burly instructor was currently teaching another class.

“Why have you come...eh?”

The burly instructor saw Ye Qingyu, casually asking. But at the next instant, he was like a rabbit that had its hairs plucked out. In a flash, he was in front of Ye Qingyu, carefully inspecting him, his mouth forming an ‘o’ shape.

“The perfection of the skin stage, and you already have one step in the second muscle stage. You motherfucking... are you the reincarnation of the martial god?” The burly teacher was so shocked that he couldn’t help but swear.

Ye Qingyu smiled and just laughed.

“Hmph, fine, I know what you little bastard has come here for. In the [Eight divine forms] the [Serpentine form] is more beneficial for refining that skin, but there effects on the muscles is average.” The burly teacher considered for a moment, quickly understanding Ye Qingyu’s intention.

He nodded his head, saying, “After, I’ll pass on the [Bear form] to you. Out of the [Eight divine forms] it is the one most suitable for training the muscle.”

## Chapter 019 – Liu Lei

---

“Thank you teacher.” Ye Qingyu thanked him respectfully.

The burly instructor waved his hand, allowing Ye Qingyu to enter the practice grounds.

Then he walked to the middle of the grounds, shouting at the other students. “Okay now, little fellows stop for now. In this class, the majority of the students have already reached the first skin stage, now I will pass on the [Bear form], the form best for training your muscles. Watch closely...”

The burly teacher stood with his feet wide apart, his entire aura changing. He was suddenly completely serious, as if he was an ancient bear, instantly emitting an aggressive atmosphere.

“The bear, has the slowest personality but also the most majestic. They have the strongest muscles, even stronger than tigers. You have to remember seven key words ‘knock’, ‘pounce’, ‘tear’, ‘lean’, ‘hold’, ‘roar’, ‘jolt’. Look carefully...”

The burly teacher began to move.

Ye Qingyu observed extremely carefully.

The muscles of the burly teacher suddenly bulged and expanded, as if he was really a real bear. Although his movements were slow, but every



move was filled with strength, demonstrating the seven keywords perfectly.

The movements of the bear form seemed to be simpler than the snake form. But the essence of the bear form was not in the movements of the body but in the movements of the muscle. Every move needed to be coordinated with the actions of every major muscle group. To be able to truly grasp it, the difficulty was definitely above that of the serpentine form.

After going through all the stances, the burly teacher hid his aura and gave everyone a glare: “Have you all seen it clearly?”

Every student’s reaction was different.

The foundation of these students was better than the class Ye Qingyu was previously in, with the majority being in the first skin stage of the ordinary martial level. The burly instructor also utilised this opportunity to teach the [Bear form] to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu after seeing it once, immediately began practicing it on the side.

Very quickly, he was able to perform the entire [Bear form] once.

“This is really more difficult than the [Serpentine form]. To move the entire muscles of the body in a coordinated fashion, needs a great amount of practice...” After finishing the first iteration of the [Bear form], he did not instantly begin the second iteration like yesterday but rather

thought for a while before continuing.

Seeing this, the burly teacher nodded to himself.

Teachers also treated those students who were better at learning with bias, this was human nature. If the students performed well, it would make the teacher feel successful.

This was what the burly teacher was feeling right now.

This was the reason why he paid special attention and care to Ye Qingyu.

When Ye Qingyu went through the fourth repetition of the [Bear form], the burly teacher could not help but sigh in his heart with admiration.

Was this a monster's talent?

If the previous three repetitions only looked like the real deal but did not have the essence of it, not yet truly grasping the spirit of the [Bear form], then this time was different. In this iteration, there was no longer any errors or mistakes, every muscle groups coordinating with the seven key words and creating perfection.

Time passed on.

In the entire morning, the burly teacher spent his time mostly in a state of astonishment.

Because when the time was noon, not only had Ye Qingyu fully perfected the [Bear form], he had also reached the second muscle stage of the ordinary martial level.

Even though after seeing the incident yesterday, the burly teacher had already prepared his heart, but he still could not help but be stunned.

It was not yet two days. If he continued at this speed, then would this little bastard only need tens of days, to reach the peak of body refining and enter the Xiantian stage?

What kind of monster was he?

The training continued.

The training of the [Bear form] was different from the training of the [Serpentine form]. To truly grasp the seven keywords, some equipment needed to be used.

Within the centre of the practice grounds, there was some walls and pillar made of steel. The students would 'strike', 'pounce' and 'lean' against these steel equipment to speed up the effectiveness of the training.

This type of training, was extremely painful.

The stronger the impact, the more likely was that bruises will be

formed.

Luckily, white Deer academy had already prepared medicine for treatment of bruises and a medicinal bath. When they needed it, the experienced eyes of the burly instructor would pick out the students who showed signs of injury and request for them to stop.

Very quickly, there were tens of figures in the medicinal bath in the centre of the practice grounds.

Bang!

Ye Qingyu hit against a steel wall ferociously.

It produced a huge sounds, as if a hammer was striking it.

He did not seem to show the slightest of expression, as if he did not feel pain.

He was topless, sweat oozing from his tanned skin. The sweat looked like jewels under the bright sunlight, causing Ye Qingyu to emit a primitive sort of magnificence.

In these type of impacts, the muscles in his shoulder and back received endless refining.

Following the method of the [Bear form] could greatly lower the risk of injuries. It would cause the muscles in your body to be like steel, the

constant impacts removing any impurities in your body and becoming steel.

Pounce, lean, hold, strike...

Different movements, trained different muscles.

PangPangPangPang!

Loud sounds of impact was endlessly produced.

Other students was starting to feel numb.

When they saw Ye Qingyu's crazy method of training that was akin to torture, they were all shocked. There were sure that this method was paramount to suicide, and that he would definitely not be able to keep it up for long. But when Ye Qingyu continued to endure with an expressionless face, in their minds they were sure that this teenager was not a human being.

What was even more shocking, was that in the entire process of the torturous training, Ye Qingyu did not even jump into the medicinal bath once to get rid of his bruises.

There were several times that the burly teacher wanted to forcefully stop Ye Qingyu's training. But every time, after inspecting his body, he could discover no hint of bruises within his body.

Ye Qingyu's body was as tough as a demonic beast.

Apart from Ye Qingyu, after an hour of training in the [Bear form], there were no students who did not use the properties of the medicinal bath to get rid of their bruises.

Time passed on.

It was nearly midday.

“Okay, today's training will end here.” The burly teacher gaze moved away from Ye Qingyu, clapping his hands and shouting: “There is still around half an hour till the next lesson, everyone can stop and spar with each other a little...”

This was one of the specialities of lessons within White Deer academy.

When the lesson was about to end, they would allow the students to spar each other. This had the effect of deepening their understanding and was a beneficial supplement to the lesson.

It was also an activity that caused the students to feel the most excited.

Ye Qingyu also stopped what he was doing.

Because he was surrounded by the most people.

The students were not idiots. They could long tell, that Ye Qingyu's understanding of the [Bear form] was quickly approaching master level. They would naturally seek to receive pointers from him, wanting to know what insights he has about this body training technique.

Ye Qingyu did not hide anything, demonstrating all his insights...

At this time, suddenly—

“Haha the little trash has started to teach others. It looks like you are pretty self confident...” A loud voice filled with provocation travelled over.

Everyone looked over to see the source of the voice. Five or six students that did not belong in this class, had already unknowingly came to the practice grounds.

Liu Ye was one of the people in this group.

These six students with faces filled with arrogance, entered the practice grounds.

The teenager leading them had a long thin figure. He had a hook nose with long eyebrows, and in his eyes, was the dangerous glare of a wild beast.

“You are Ye Qingyu? The teenager with the arched nose asked, staring at him.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “And you are?”

“I’ve heard you are very arrogant and don’t care about noble students.” The hook nose student licked his lips, then said with a smile: “I only want to know, who are you, that you dare to be so arrogant?”

Ye Qingyu was about to say something but the little kids around him were already reacting. Feeling the tension in the air, their tone became unfriendly.

“What class are you guys?”

“We are currently in a lesson, you dare interrupt us?”

“Whether he is arrogant or not, what does this have to do with you? We are in the middle of a lesson, please leave!”

The students in the class were all protective of Ye Qingyu.

This was partly due to the fact that they were impressed by Ye Qingyu’s efforts during the training and partly due to the fact that Ye Qingyu showed them his insights regarding training without reservation.

“Haha...” The hook nose teenager laughed lightly, his glance passing through the crowd. He said, “A group of trash, the weakest and most pitiful worms of White Deer academy, dares to bark in front of me. No medicine can save you from your own idiocy...”



Before he had finished...

The hook nose teenage fiercely punched.

Boom!

One of the steel pillars used to train the [Bear form] was as if it was struck by lightning, violently shaking. A clear imprint of his fist was clearly marked three fingers deep on the steel pillar.

“This...”

“A terrifying strength!”

“Could this be the strength of a spirit spring expert?”

The originally angry students was stunned, everyone with their mouths opened wide, their expressions dazed.

This kind of strength had already exceeded their understanding.

Just by casually striking he had left such a deep imprint on the steel pillar. The fist of the hook nose teenager was unmarked and unblemished; this was definitely not the level of strength of the ordinary martial stage.

“How about it? You over confident little trashes, are you starting to feel

scared? That's right, the little trash called Ye Qingyu, I hear you are very cocky and confident; right now do you want to have a spar with me?"

The hook nose student laughed, provocatively gesturing at Ye Qingyu with his finger.

"That's enough Liu Lei, stop now." The silent voice of the burly instructor suddenly spoke. "Don't cause trouble, this is the classroom, and is not the place where you can go rabid."

So the name of the hook nose teenager was called Liu Lei.

The burly instructor seemed to recognise him.

Liu Lei was ranked seven in the examination results and was one of the talents that the White Deer academy placed great attention on. He was from a wealthy background and was also mad about martial arts. He was young but he did not know how to pull his punches.

His had a brutal personality. Before entering the academy, he had already killed or caused major injury in over forty people in various competitions. When he goes crazy, he cared about nothing.

## Chapter 020 – Direct Confrontation

---

It was said that in yesterday's afternoon class, that Liu Lei had already injured a commoner student during sparring. Thankfully, the instructor present at the time managed to stop him, before more damage could be done.

The student from a common background, needed to rest for one month before he could recover.

The burly teacher admired Ye Qingyu and did not want him to get injured.

“Eh? Teacher Wen, what are you saying? Liu Lei let out a laugh and said, “The last thirty minutes of a lesson, hasn't the academy always encourage students to spar with each other?”

He said this while looking at Ye Qingyu.

In his glance, there was evident mockery and contempt. Liu Lei laughed: “Haha, what about it? Causing such a big scene at the selection, aren't you very cocky? Why have you now turned into a turtle? Not even daring to accept such a ordinary sparring match, and hiding behind the backs of others...”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything, instead looking at the Liu Ye who was hidden inside the crowd.

Liu Ye was standing behind Liu Lei, his face showing a poisonous and devious smile.

It was an expression that said his plan had work.

This time, although he was slightly afraid, he did not avoid Ye Qingyu's gaze. On the contrary, he returned the gaze challenging him, soundlessly mouthing something.

But from the shape of the mouth, one could obviously tell that it said six words, "You are definitely going to die!"

Ye Qingyu understood.

This was definitely not a coincidence.

Liu Ye had definitely done something behind the scenes, to make the hook nose youth cause trouble with himself...That's right, they had the same family name, they should be relatives.

It looks like that he was too light last time, this idiot didn't have a good memory!

He wanted to borrow someone's else sword to kill someone?

But I'm afraid your sword is not sharp enough!

After thinking this thought, Ye Qingyu looked at the fist imprint on the steel pillar. He had already calculated the power in that fist.

The lips of Ye Qingyu curled in a smile.

He looked Liu Lei up and down and said with a laugh: “A spar? Fine but I fear that your body is too thin, it’s so similar to a thin gibbon. I’m afraid that you won’t be able withstand my strike, and I might accidentally kill you with one punch!”

“What?” Liu Lei was slightly taken aback, then laughed as if he had heard the greatest joke in the world. He said: “You...kill me? Haha, hahahaha...”

Liu Lei along with several youngsters that he came with all started laughing.

“I’m laughing to death, he said to would be able to injure senior brother Liu Lei...”

“Does he even know how many people that senior brother Liu Lei has beaten to death before?”

“The retard yesterday also said similar words, and the result? Right now he is still lying on his bed, the doctor saying that he would need a month before he could walk again...”

“Hahaha, arrogant, too arrogant!”

Liu Ye and the others laughed.

“Good, I originally didn’t have much of an interest in you, but who would have thought you are so arrogant.” Liu Lei laughed like a madman, licking his lips. “A commoner as conceited as you is so rare...If you have the abilities, even if you kill me, I can guarantee that the Liu family will not take any action.”

“Since you are looking to die, then come...”

Ye Qingyu slowly walked to an unoccupied area of the practice grounds.

The burly teacher was anxious, wanting to stop this but he saw Ye Qingyu shaking his head.

In Liu Lei’s eyes there was a dangerous glare like that of a snake about to swallow its prey. Step by step, he walked till he was ten metres apart from Ye Qingyu.

“I’m about to ...start!”

Before the last word, ‘start’ had already been finished, Liu Lei had already taken action.

His footwork was extremely agile, and in nearly a blink had close the gap between him and Ye Qingyu, striking his fist out.

The air exploded like thunder.

The air moved violently, currents of wind blowing.

This entire process was as fast as lightning.

The bystanders gasped with unsuppressed shock.

Too quick!

It was so quick that it was impossible to react to.

Ye Qingyu in that instant he was about to be hit, suddenly moved. It seemed like it was just luck or he had calculated the trajectory of the punch, but he avoided the strike by a hair's distance.

“Hehehehe....”

Liu Ye's wrist moved, his punch becoming a claw. There was a faint red glow on the fingertips, as it was a red hot steel claw, relentlessly clawing at Ye Qingyu's shoulder.

This time it was even quicker.

“This is ... battle technique!” Someone shouted with shock.

“This is not fair, Liu Lei has already learnt how to use techniques while

senior brother Qingyu has only begun to train...”

“This is bad, both the [Serpentine form] and the [Bear form] are methods to train one’s body and not techniques used in battle. They don’t have any practical use...senior brother Qingyu is in danger!”

Within these exclamations, Ye Qingyu looked as if he was extremely lucky once again, narrowly avoiding Liu Lei’s second move.

The face of the burly teacher was also anxious, breathing quickly. When Ye Qingyu could not endure it anymore, he would stop this match no matter what.

Boom!

Liu Lei once again missed his strike, hitting the ground.

The ground slowly cracked, spreading out in a spiderweb pattern on the stone tiles. The centre of the stone tiles had already been turned into smithereens. One could imagine, if that strike had landed on a person, what the consequences would be.

Liu Lei evidently was looking to kill!

The group of teenagers were covering their mouths, with those who were afraid covering their eyes.

If this continued on, within ten moves, Ye Qingyu definitely could not



avoid any longer.

“Haha, aren’t you very cocky? Why are you evading...”

“Little trash, you don’t dare to receive one of my moves?”

“Haha, look at you, what is the difference between you and a frightened mouse...”

“Don’t run, you’re like a dog, so shameful. Quickly let me kill you with one of my punches...Hehehe!”

Liu Lei became more and more crazy.

His footwork became more and more bizarre, his hand constantly changing from a fist to a claw. He was evidently utilising an impressive battle technique that utilised his entire power with terrifying results. The air around them exploded with the unceasing sound of thunder, and the wind around them was like a stormy sea breeze.

Ye Qingyu’s figure also kept changing his position with difficulty.

Every time he would nearly be hit, and be sent flying.

But every time he manage to avoid at the last second, as if he had the most ridiculous luck in the world. He mysteriously avoided these life threatening strikes, managing to survive.

Astonishment slowly began to appear in the burly teacher's eyes.

And those students who had covered the eyes had already opened them again.

“This...It looks like the [Serpentine form]”

“Senior brother is using the [Serpentine form] to evade...how is this possible, can the [Serpentine form] be used in this way?”

“How can a technique used for basic body training, be used in a real battle?”

Gradually, the students began to secret of how Ye Qingyu was able to evade.

They would never have thought, that the basic body refining technique [Serpentine form], could be used in battle. Ye Qingyu's body was like a snake, incomparably agile and flexible as if he had no bones in his body. He utilised the [Serpent form] to its fullest, and the brutal strikes of the battle technique of Liu Lei could not even harm Ye Qingyu in that slightest.

Was this what a genius was?

Even the worst techniques, in his hand, could bloom with such incredible brilliance?

“Time to end this.” Ye Qingyu moved his body, using the [Teng snake in the mists] stance, appearing four or five metres away. Widening the distance, he said: “You’re technique I have already entirely seen through. There is nine punches and six claws, there is no need to compete anymore. Next, I will defeat you in one strike!”

“Defeat me in one strike? Hahaha, little trash, I will kill you in one strike!”

Not being able to hit his target, Liu was already mad but hearing this made him even more furious.

When had he been treated with such disregard?

Slamming his foot into the ground explosively, Liu Lei was like an eagle catching his prey, as fast as lightning. His left hand was a claw and his right hand was a fist, striking a killing blow against Ye Qingyu.

Using claw and punch at the same time!

It was his strongest technique!

Ye Qingyu did not move from his position, a bright light appearing in his eyes.

As the body was about to land onto him, he ducked rapidly. Liu Lei’s claw and fist both impossibly missed and went past him and in that instant, Ye Qingyu’s shoulder moved upwards like lightning.

This move, was part of the [Bear form]'s keywords, the 'knock'.

Simple and unpretentious.

But at this instant, Liu Lei was as if he was facing the most frightening technique in the world. Because, he found that he could not avoid this move at all.

An indescribable ability to grasp the opportunity.

Boom!

The Liu Lei who was in mid-air seemed to stop for an instant, then it was like he was attacked by a battering ram. Letting out a smothered grunt, he flew away.

Gasps of shock could be heard.

Liu Lei staggered about, looking flush. He fiercely bit his lips together, managing to not spurt out blood, his chest heaving ...

This strike, was like a mountain had fell on him. There was a huge pain in his chest, as if he had broken several ribs. This type of strength and impact was enough to make him feel frightened.

In reality, even Liu Lei did not understand how he was defeated in a instant.

Because he had practiced in both the [Serpentine form] and [Bear form], and having mastered it entirely, he had completely disregarded it. But in Ye Qingyu's hand, it became incomparably unfamiliar, even his [Nine moves of soul stealing talon and fist] could not withstand it!

At this time, Liu Ye and his friends were all dumbfounded.

They could not believe what had happened in front of their eyes.

Liu Lei was...sent flying?!

He was defeated by such a simple stance in the [Bear form]?

Was this a joke?

"Haha, hahahaha..." Liu Lei also began laughing, his eyes shining with the dangerous light of a wounded best. "You've actually injured me, actually injured me...This is not over until one of us dies, haha, I will definitely tear you to pieces?"

"Eh?" Ye Qingyu laughed. "Wasn't this just a spar? How did it turn into a fight to the death?"

"Fuck your mother, who's sparring with you, I'm going to beat you to death today..." Liu Lei crazily laughed, tears appearing in his eyes. "I'm going to beat you till you die..."

This person had gone crazy!

“Pretending to be crazy after being injured slight, his personality is really poor...” Ye Qingyu provocatively waved his finger. “You’ve really scared me to death, come then, beat me to death!”

“You motherfucker...you scumbag trash, if you dare than don’t avoid me!”

Liu Lei could feel that he was being made fun of, swinging his fists with his entire strength.

This fist, after being enraged with anger, was definitely stronger. Sounds of thunder could be heard and one could vaguely make out air currents being warped around the fist. Compared to the first that had indented the steel pillar, this was more terrifying many times over!

## Chapter 021 – The Battle To Defend The City

---

This time, Ye Qingyu did not evade.

He stood where he was, and swung his fist in a similar fashion.

The next instant, the two punches collided.

“Hahaha, direct confrontation? Fine, I despise retarded rich people like you. I’ll let you know with one fist, who’s a fucking trash!” Within Ye Qingyu’s eyes, a gaze similar to that of a violent wild beast also appeared.

Liu Lei’s heart, at that instant, suddenly constricted.

The next instant.

Boom!

Blood was everywhere.

The layer of skin on Ye Qingyu’s fist suddenly broke apart, exposing the flesh and blood spurted out.

But at the same time, a series of cracking sounds emitted from Liu Lei’s arm.

One could see the arm that could warp steel suddenly curving in an unnatural manner, a shard of bone piercing out.

“Ahhh...”

In the hideous scream that followed, Liu Lei was sent flying.

His right arm, in the moment of contact with Ye Qingyu’s fist, had no way to bear such a torrent of power. In an instant his bones were broken... There was a sense that his arm was being devastated.

It was a feeling that Liu Lei had never experience previously.

Without saying anything more, Liu Lei spurted out blood, landing on the floor and fainted.

There were sounds of cold inhalations from all directions.

Under the eyes of numerous stunned gazes, Ye Qingyu examined his hand. He could see the bloody right fist and the exposed white knuckles. It was slightly disconcerting.

He lightly breathed out, then attempted to move his fingers, discovering that the bones were not broken.

This kind of injury he had already calculated that he would suffer, and it was within the bounds of acceptance.



It looked like he would have to hurry and quickly finish the six stages of body refining.

His strength was higher than Liu Lei, but because of the fact that his body was still in process of refinement, he also suffered injuries in the clash.

Ye Qingyu was clear, that if he was at the sixth stage of the ordinary martial level —no, even the fifth stage of the ordinary martial level, and he had clashed with Liu Lei's punch, something entirely different would have occurred. He would have caused Liu Lei's right arm to burst open entirely, and not just break his bones.

But after experiencing this battle, Ye Qingyu had obtained a clear understanding of his own battle prowess.

Using his brute herculean strength, he could crush those who were at the fifth stage and compete with those on the sixth stage. However, if he encountered those like Qin Wushuang who were already half a step in the Spirit spring stage and could already sense the qi in Heaven and Earth, then there was no way he could oppose them.

It seems like there were even more secret than expected in his own body.

At the same time.

The surrounding people were dumbfounded.

“I hear he heavily injured a student yesterday? Tut tut, karma has come so quickly!” Ye Qingyu looked at the Liu Lei who had lost consciousness, and pretended to lament over his injuries. “With his injuries, I fear he will have to rest in bed for at least two or three months?”

“You...you...you...” Liu Ye recovered, pointing his finger at Ye Qingyu and stuttered. “You really dare injure senior brother Liu Lei, are you crazy? You...”

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, and could not help laughing. Step by step, he walked closer.

“Look at you, you’re still speaking such malicious words. It looks the lesson last time, was by far not enough!”

This type of smile, in the eyes of Liu Ye, was even more frightening than a devil.

He gave out a shrill shriek. “You...What are you going to do, don’t come near, you...”

“I’ve come to spar with you.” Ye Qingyu said with a righteous laugh. “The reason you’ve come here, wasn’t it to spar with me?”

“I ... No...”Liu Ye realised what was about to happen, terror evident on his face. He was about to turn and run.

“You only remembered to run now? It’s too late!”

Ye Qingyu would not be soft hearted. He moved, utilising the footwork that Liu Lei had just used, and in an instant appeared behind Liu Ye. His hand took the form of a claw, latching on to Liu Ye's shoulder.

“Aaaaahh...” Liu Ye began squealing like a pig, feeling a pain like his body was being cut to shreds. He turned his head, about to speak...

Ye Qingyu directly gave him a slap.

He landed on the ground with a thud.

Accompanied by the gasps of the bystanders, golden stars appeared in Liu Ye's eyes. His ears ringing, his vision went black and he directly fainted.

“Eh? He fainted? But I only beat him lightly ... Er, no, that's not right, I meant I only sparred with him lightly!” Ye Qingyu threw away Liu Ye, then gave the other teenagers who had come with Liu Lei a glance. He laughed, “I'm sorry I've neglected you guys, who else wants to spar with me?”

The five other teenagers gave each other a stunned glance.

They knew that this time Liu Lei had kicked a steel board. Thinking back to Ye Qingyu's brutal actions previously, their legs began cramping. They could feel a chill travelling from their spine into their brains, as if their souls were about to depart.

“No, no, no, how could we be your opponents!”

“We only came by coincidence, and just came here for a look and not a spar...”

“This... you guys are busy, we won’t disturb you any longer...”

They smiled lightly, without any shred of fighting spirit. They ran off like dogs with tails between their legs. After running for a few steps, they thought of something, and ran back carrying the Liu Lei and Liu Ye who were both passed out. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared into the distance.

Birds of a feather really flock together!

Those who followed Liu Ye, naturally wouldn’t be any decent people.

“Yes! Victory!”

“We’ve vented our anger!”

“Senior brother Qingyu, how did you manage to produce that kind of punch? It was really too cool!”

“I have some medicine for wounds here, senior brother Qingyu quickly come bandage your injuries!”

The other teenagers began cheering, faces filled with excitement and triumph surrounding Ye Qingyu. They chattered incessantly, admiration and worship in their gazes when they looked upon Ye Qingyu.

The burly teacher also let out a sigh of relief.

“Okay, today’s lesson will end here. If you have any questions, you can ask them in the lesson.” The burly teacher clapped his hands, announcing the end of the lesson. He then pointed at Ye Qingyu, saying, “You little brat, follow me!”

.....

After a short time.

In the secluded lakeside pavilion.

“You were a bit too heavy handed. The influence of the Liu family is not small, it’s not a good idea to aggravate them.” The burly teacher stood with both of his hands behind his back, gazing at the sparkling distance.

Ye Qingyu was stood beside him.

“What about it? It was he who forced me. That guy is a crazy dog, he wanted to have a battle to the death with me.” Ye Qingyu said with a aggrieved tone. “Do you want me to stand there and be beaten to death by him?”

The burly teacher was speechless for a moment.

“These years, the White Deer academy is decaying from the inside through these noble and wealthy families. Liu Lei only entered the academy for a few days and he is already so cocky, he does deserve to be taught a lesson.” The burly teacher sighed a little, then said: “However, the one who should teach him a lesson is not you. You don’t have any forces backing you up, and you are different from Liu Lei and Liu Ye. They are truly members of the wealthy, they will not let this go so easily!”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

After ten breaths, the burly instructor seemed to have thought of something. He said, “From the start, you’ve already judged that Liu Lei was not a match for you, isn’t that right? The strange strength in your body...then why did you fight in such a prolonged fashion with him?”

“Oh, it’s been quite a while since I’ve had a fight, so I’ve been itching for one.” Ye Qingyu said with a straight face.

“You...” The burly teacher gave him a glare and then said angrily, “You have to be a little more careful, you really think I can’t see through you? You’re trying to steal his techniques right?”

Ye Qingyu laughed. “Don’t describe it so badly. I only thought the madman’s fist and claw technique was pretty interesting and wanted to try and use it for myself. I let him use it as he pleases and only observed for a bit and did my best to imitate him, hehe!”

“Although the [Nine moves of soul stealing fist and talon] is not any special high level techniques, but within the rankings of ordinary battle techniques, it can be counted as above average. Liu Lei only demonstrated the moves twice, you not only remembered it entirely but also used the most basic [Bear form] to break his technique...” The burly teacher sighed again. “Previously I did not believe, that there could be such a genius that exists in this world!”

“Hehe, don’t praise me so much, I’ll become proud.” Ye Qingyu’s laugh was like a weasel that had managed to steal a chicken.

“Smooth talking little kid.” The burly teacher gave a small reprimand, then asked: “The [Nine moves of soul stealing fist and talon], how much did you understand?”

“Not bad I guess, around seventy to eighty percent.” Ye Qingyu casually said.

“Oh, then that means you’ve completely grasped it.” The burly instructor nodded his head saying, “You have to remember, this type of technique most important point and essence is these words ‘Advance courageously, without returning.’”

Ye Qingyu had a blank stare for a moment, then realised that the burly teacher was giving him advice. He cupped his hands in thanks, saying “Thank you teacher Wen.”

Previously when Liu Lei had challenged him, he had said that this teacher was named Wen.

The burly teacher nodded his head, “You little brat, look after yourself. Apart from the Liu family, there are still many people targeting you. Who asked for your family name to be Ye...if you really encounter trouble you cannot handle, then you can come find me. I’m called Wen Wan.”

Before he had finished speaking.

The burly teacher took a step on the shining waters of the lake. In the blink of eye, he was several hundred metres away.

“In the battle to defend the city, I was fighting side by side with your parents.”

The voice of the burly teacher came from far away.

His entire figure, finally disappeared.

“Uh, why do you teachers always have to appear and disappear in such a dramatic fashion? Can’t you just walk normally? Don’t tell me that experts must be cool?” Ye Qingyu looked at the lakeside pavilion.

He originally wanted to ask, why did the burly teacher treat him so well.

But it looks like, there was no need to ask anymore.

Exactly what happened in the battle to safeguard the city, perhaps the burly teacher Wen Wan would not. But Ye Qingyu would not ask him



right now; because he knew, that with his present strength, he was still not qualified to know.

.....

The several days after this, Ye Qingyu rarely attended the theoretical lessons. Instead, he devoted his entire time and energy to practice with Wen Wan, training in the [Eight divine forms] and refining his body.

He had already reached the grandmaster level in the [Bear form], breaking firmly past the second muscle stage.

The impurities and old injuries in his body was entirely gone. The strength of muscles had improved several times over, making Ye Qingyu better able to control his herculean strength.

Of course, for Ye Qingyu, this was by far not enough.

## Chapter 022 – Selecting A Weapon

---

“[The tiger bone form], can be split into eight stances. Within the [Eight divine forms], it is the training method most suited for training your bones. Refining your bones is different from refining your skin or muscles, you must pair it up with a mantra\*. Watch closely...”

Under the sunlight, the burly teacher Wen Wan was topless. Every time he performed a stance, his muscles would bulge and there would be the faint sound of a tiger’s roar coming from his body.

Apart from the movement of these eight stances, he also taught Ye Qingyu and the others a mantra that was meant to be used alongside the [Tiger bone form].

This mantra, was surprisingly similar to the nameless breathing technique that Ye Qingyu had always insisted in training in. It was also trained through meditative practice.

“So this is what a mantra is...then the nameless breathing technique I was training in, was also a mantra?”

Ye Qingyu speculated.

But normally speaking, mantra were always paired up with a suitable set of martial stances. Only by combining the two, could the greatest effect be produced. So why did his father not pass on a suitable set of moves along with this breathing technique?

This thought passed through his mind.

But Ye Qingyu did not think too deeply, concentrating in his training.

The [Tiger bone form] compared to the [Serpentine form] and the [Bear form] was more complicated. Ye Qingyu had already trained for an entire day, and could only barely produce the sounds of a tiger's roar when he performed the stances.

This already made Wen Wan extremely astonished.

From within the memories of the burly instructor, the most exceptional in the history of the White Deer academy took them at least half a month to achieve this result.

Time, amidst the shedding of sweat in the practice grounds, rapidly passed.

In the blink of an eye, four days had passed.

Ye Qingyu had finally trained till he reached the grandmaster level in the [Tiger bone form].

In his every move and every stance, a thunder like roar would emit from his body. This was the result of his bones vibrating in his body. His entire skeleton, through these continuous vibrations, gradually became like steel.

As for the mantra that Wen Wan had taught him, Ye Qingyu had long abandoned.

Because he discovered, when compared to his nameless breathing technique, the [Tiger bone form]'s mantra was too rough and simple. The effects of it in refining the bones was by far not comparable to his own breathing technique.

Hence Ye Qingyu decided to use the nameless breathing technique to match with the [Tiger bone form]; as expected the results were even better.

Apart from training the [Tiger bone form], Ye Qingyu would also stealthily practice the [Nine soul stealing claw and talon].

This was the only battle technique he possessed, and was also the only hidden trump card that the other students were not aware of.

According the Wen Wan's evaluation, the proficiency of Ye Qingyu in the [Nine soul stealing claw and talon] had already exceed Liu Lei. If he had the opportunity to exhibit his prowess, he would definitely shock the entire first year.

.....

Time passed quickly through these hard training sessions.

Not only Ye Qingyu, but the other students also did their utmost during training.

Everyone understood, that the four years spent in White Deer academy would decide their futures. No one showed any signs of laziness, everyone utilising every second of every minute to train hard.

Ye Qingyu's lifestyle, became very simple.

Every day he would have breakfast, training, lunch, breakfast dinner... then it was training as usual.

Because the nameless breathing technique was able to relieve fatigue and restore his energy, he often did not sleep at night to rest, instead spending it training instead.

Of course, there were things that did not follow this routine. Sometimes, the little loli Song Xiaojun would come to converse the Ye Qingyu, complaining about the boredom of training and other small things.

The little girl had complete trust in Ye Qingyu, making him feel slightly touched. She treated him with near blind worship and admiration. Every time they talked, she would reveal the training progress of the geniuses in the list of ten.

Several times, the little loli again used different methods to tell Ye Qingyu the cultivation methods head teacher Wang Yan had given her. She would even sometimes bring him some of her cultivation resources

for example like spirit stones or pills, but every time she would be firmly refused by Ye Qingyu.

The incident of Liu Lei being heavily hurt also caused a stir among the first years, with many people re-evaluating Ye Qingyu's strength and the threat he posed.

But because Liu Lei and his group pulled the bow but did not release\*\*, and there were not any further developments, this incident quickly passed.

Ye Qingyu also felt surprised, that the retaliation of Liu Lei and his gang did not happen.

In the blink of an eye, since the beginning of the academic year, twenty days had already passed.

On the twenty first day, head teacher Wang Yan announced in the assembly of the entire year something that made all the freshmen feel very excited.

The freshmen's first wilderness training would begin!

According to the tradition, after the freshmen were slightly prepared, they would be split up into different groups. These groups would then be placed in the wilderness of differing danger levels and battle with the dangerous wild beasts, experiencing five days in the wilderness.

This was an extremely good opportunity to win academic points.

The white deer academy was a school that had an academic points system. In the academy, money was not the only denominator of wealth —

In reality, there were many cultivation techniques and cultivation resources that money could not obtain. But, if you managed to save enough academic points, you could use these points and exchange it for these rare resources.

The reality was, that the truly wealthy people of the academy, was those who possessed high academic points.

For the freshmen's perspective, after experiencing a somewhat boring twenty days, to have an exciting opportunity to obtain academic points would make anyone feel motivated.

Before departing, nearly all the students were in the midst of preparation for the wilderness test.

Within the limits set by the academy, the students could prepare different kinds of weapons and tools, and other things they felt like they would need. These were all done in order to obtain a good result within the training.

Within the White Deer academy, there was a commercial area. Somewhat famous weapon shops with a long history would sell various types of weapons and armours with runes carved on it.

These runes could activate automatically, absorbing the energy in Heaven and Earth. Even people who were of the ordinary martial level and could not yet control the energy in Heaven and Earth, could challenge those of a higher strength through activating these weapons.

For Ye Qingyu, these high class weapons were not part of his consideration all.

One reason for this was because he was far too poor and could not afford to have such high class equipment.

The other reason was because that he had absolute confidence in his own strength. He had always firmly believed, that a truly strong person was made step by step through sweat and blood and always relied on his own strength. If he relied on outside equipment from the start, then there would be no way that this training would have its intended effects.

Of course, going without a weapon was out of the question.

After all, in this world, many battle techniques needed a suitable weapon to be performed effectively.

In this area, the White Deer academy was very generous. It would provide some weapons for commoners, free of charge.

This evening.

After Ye Qingyu had finished training for the day, he went to the canteen to stuff his stomach. Then, he went to the public free armoury,



selecting his weapon.

Because the time was comparatively late, the majority of poor students had already selected their weapon and left. Those who were still in the process of selecting was not many.

Ye Qingyu carefully observed for a bit.

“These types of weapon provided for free, although they aren’t spirit swords by any means, their craftsmanship is good and is made from high quality steel. Compared to what you would find in the market, the quality is a lot better...”

His eyes fell on a sword with a thick back.

On the body of the sword, was two grooves that were one inch thick grooves for the blood to flow and it had a long handle. It made the blade look slightly sinister. It was extremely brutal and straightforward, matching with Ye Qingyu’s personality. Interested, he grabbed the sword.

“Eh? This is not right...this is too light!”

The sword with a thick back was around sixty pounds of weight. In Ye Qingyu’s hands, it was as light as a straw. He casually swung it around, as if it was a blade of grass in his hands.

Returning the blade to its original position, Ye Qingyu resumed his selection.

Originally, he did not have a clear idea of what he wanted for his weapon. But after trying the sword once, he suddenly had a plan – he must find a weapon that was suitable for his herculean strength, a weapon that could exhibit his battle prowess fully.

Hence there was only one attribute that he needed from his weapon.

Heavy!

After a while, Ye Qingyu's gaze again fell on a bronze staff, around a hundred pounds, emitting a fierce aura.

But when he placed it in his hands and twisted his wrist, swirling the staff around, he found that the staff was like a noodle being swung. Ye Qingyu shook his head with disappointment, returning the weapon.

It was not heavy enough.

In the next fifteen minutes, he tried axes, cudgels, cavalry swords, and hammers...everything that looked like heavy weaponry, he would give it a try.

But it was still not enough!

The weapons that the other students could barely lift, for Ye Qingyu, was still too light!

“Fine, if I really can’t find anything, then I’ll take this pair of hexagonal hammers!”

Ye Qingyu was slightly disappointed.

Together, the hammers weighed over three hundred and twenty pounds. He stood there carrying it, not exerting any effort at all. The nearby students around him were all staring with blank expressions. This kind of strength, was too terrifying, far exceeding the strength of the ordinary martial level.

Just when Ye Qingyu was about to leave in disappointment, a familiar figure appeared in front of him.

“What? Why do you have a face like you have constipation? Have you not chosen a suitable weapon yet?” The burly teacher stood at the entrance with a smile.

“Old Wen, don’t tease me, I’m in a bad mood.” Ye Qingyu said, grinding his teeth.

Wen Wan began laughing loudly. He waved his hands. “Hahaha, I know why. Come, follow me.”

Saying this, he turned and walked towards the backyard of the armoury.

Ye Qingyu hesitated for a bit, then quickly followed.

The two arrived at the backyard.

The area of the back was not too large, not exceeding three acres. There were a few tiled roof houses, and a small practice grounds. In the grounds, there were a few young people with bare arms training, not looking like White Deer academy's students.

A tall and slim black bearded middle aged man was standing at side supervising.

“Old Cao, the master has come. Quickly bring out your treasure.” As soon as Wen Wan arrived, he began shouting at the black bearded middle aged man.

The black bearded middle aged man turned his head to look.

His gaze ignored Wen Wan entirely, noticing Ye Qingyu immediately. He carefully evaluated him, as if he was judging something. Finally, only when his gaze landed on Ye Qingyu casually carrying those huge hammers, did he imperceptibly nod his head.

“Follow me.”

## Chapter 023 – Inexorable Spear

---

He turned around, walking towards the tiled roof house located deepest in the backyard.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat puzzled, but under the grinning direction of Wen Wan's gestures, he followed the two towards the tiled roof house.

It looked like Wen Wan and the black bearded man knew each other from before and had mentioned Ye Qingyu in their previous conversations.

Within the tiled roof house, the lighting was dim.

Within the house there were tens of weapons holders, displaying an assortment of weapons.

Just from a glance, there were swords, spears, axes, tridents, all eighteen different kinds of weapons. The model of each weapon was not ordinary with each weapon emitting a cold, dense light. Compared to the weapons placed outside in the armoury, the craftsmanship was evidently better by several times.

“It's this one. Little fellow, if you can lift it, then you can take away.

The black bearded man said, pointing to a dim corner.

Ye Qingyu's gaze followed in the direction of his finger. Leaning against the corner, was a black coloured weapon. It was a spear, longer than a normal spear with it being around three metres tall. There were two blades sticking out from the head and bottom of the spear, with the length of the blades being around half a metre.\* It was truly a strange looking weapon.

What kind of weapon was this?

Ye Qingyu walked closer, holding the spear with one hand.

The instant he touched the spear, he felt a warm feeling as if he was touching a smooth piece of jade. This caused him to be taken aback for a bit. The rough and shoddy appearance was in reality carefully engraved grooves and carvings, able to increase the friction of the grip and prevent it from slipping due to sweat.

Much attention was placed in the details.

He exerted some strength onto his wrists, lifting up the strange spear.

The next instant, an excited expression appeared on Ye Qingyu's face. "Good, good, haha, this kind of weight is perfect."

"Inexorable spear, weighting one thousand two hundred and eighty eight pounds with a length of three metres and forty centimetres. With blades at both end, the blades being around two feet long, and the body of the spear is around two metres..." A strange light suddenly appeared in the black bearded man's eyes. He suddenly said: "This spear was made

from ore from the cold mountain causing the weight to far exceed a normal weapon. It's such a pity that the creator of this spear, before he could engrave any runes on it, passed away. This can be counted as a half completed product..."

Ye Qingyu heard this, and observed more carefully.

Then he discovered it was a two pointed spear, with a blade on top and bottom.

He carried the spear into a free area outside of the tiled roof house. With a flick of his wrists, suddenly the thunder like whooshing sounds of the spear emitted. Through the movement of the body of the spear, both ends of the spear created spinning circles in the air, blooming like a black flame!

"Great spear!"

Ye Qingyu felt that this kind of weight was the most suited for him. It really was the weapon that was most comfortable for him, in all the weapons he had tried today, causing him to uncontrollably laugh with excitement.

At this time, those who were training in the backyard also gathered over. Seeing this sight, they were all stunned, their chins wide open in shock.

"There was really someone who was able to use this spear through pure physical power!"

“This is herculean strength, where did this little fellow come from?”

“This is frightening. Last time I tried to use this spear, I had difficulty just lifting it up, let alone swinging it!”

“According to what master said, the last time someone was able to swing this spear using purely physical power, was ten years ago!”

“It’s a pity, that the spear is not a completed product. If it was, many experts of the Spirit spring stage would definitely fight over this. But since its only an incomplete weapon, it has no attraction for those of the Spirit spring stage, and people of the ordinary martial stage cannot swing it. Today, will it finally meet its master?”

The young men with bare arms surrounded Ye Qingyu, discussing heatedly.

Ye Qingyu did not know any spear techniques, so he only swung it wildly about for a while before stopping. The colour on his face remained the same, evenly breathing. He turned to look back at the black bearded middle aged man: “This [Inexorable spear], is also a weapon provided for free?”

“No.” The black bearded man shook his head.◦

Ye Qingyu faltered.



“But since you can swing it, then I’ll gift it to you.” The black bearded man gave off a smile. He waved his hands and threw a pale blue scroll, landing in Ye Qingyu’s hands.

“This is a basic spear technique, return and go play with it for a bit.” The middle aged man smiled.

“Thank you.” Ye Qingyu bowed with sincerity.

“No need to thank him, that is something he should do.” The burly instructor Wen Wan did not treat himself as an outside at all, laughing.

In this regard, the black bearded man had obviously seen Wen Wan’s ‘shameless face’ before, rolling his eyes.

“But this spear is too long, it’s inconvenient to carry...” Ye Qingyu was a little worried. Did he really have to buy interdimensional pouch just to store the spear? He really did not have that much money.

Seeing through Ye Qingyu’s thoughts, the black bearded man gave a small smile. “Because the cold mountain ore is so heavy, a normal interdimensional pouch cannot hold it. However, if you look closely, you can see that the spear can be split apart in the middle...”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback. He examined the spear in detail, really finding a small catch.

The middle of the long spear was indeed a bit thicker than the other two ends. With a twist and a pop, the spear split into two with each end

of the spear having a handle.

“So it had that kind of design. Excellent!”

In each of Ye Qingyu’s hand was a half of the spear. Because of the two foot long blade, it looked like that in each hand he was holding a peculiar sword. Each half of the spear weighed six hundred and forty four pounds, and when swung, would seem even lighter.

In this way, the two halves of the spear would each be one metre and seventy centimetres in length. If it was carried on his back, then it would no longer be so eye-catching.

.....

Exiting from the free armoury, on Ye Qingyu’s back was the two halves of the spear carried in a wild beast holster. It made him look especially heroic.

He was only fourteen years old, but he was already one metre and eighty centimetres tall. With a naturally muscular physique, and having this kind of equipment, made him seem particularly valiant.

“Thank you old\*\* Wen, I’ve caused you trouble.” Ye Qingyu slapped Wen Wan on the shoulder.

These days, the two people had gotten extremely close to each other. The original relationship of teacher and student quickly became a relationship between scoundrels, and the way they spoke to each other

became even more casual.

“Haha, its only a little thing. I only borrowed flowers to present it to the Buddha\*\*\*, that’s all.” Wen Wan said, immensely proud of himself.

Ye Qingyu only smiled but did not say anything.

But he knew, Wen Wan had long considered the problem of the wilderness test. The spear was evidently a result of his hard efforts in searching for a suitable weapon for Ye Qingyu. Otherwise, today in the backyard, the black bearded man would not have given him the spear so easily without Wen Wan’s help.

Ye Qingyu could tell that the relationship between Wen Wan and the middle aged man with the surname Cao was not trivial.

He did not know what kind of position the group of men had in White Deer academy that they were able to live in academy buildings.

But since Wen Wan did not say anything, Ye Qingyu did not ask.

After saying farewell to Wen Wan, Ye Qingyu returned to the dormitory.

When he was at the entrance to the dormitory, the white haired janitorwho usually spent the majority of the time snoozing on the chair at the entrance, suddenly opened his eyes. He said, “Ye Qingyu?”

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback.

The old crabby janitor had never spoken to the students before and was always extremely strict. Everyone had assumed that he was a mute, but today he would actually call his name for the first time?

After being shock for a while, he quickly nodded his head. "I am."

"There are some thing for you. The little loli delivered it, she said she had something to give you but after waiting for half the day, she left it with me to hand it to you." The old janitor handed over an exquisite little pink pouch, then promptly ignored Ye Qingyu, closing his eyes and resuming to snooze.

Ye Qingyu looked at the fragrant interdimensional pouch, recognising it as something that Song Xiaojun would normally carry with her at all time.

This little girl.

He opened the pouch, and inside it was a mess. There were snacks and braised meat, two jars of strong alcohol, two or three pairs of washed clothes, boots, tents, flint stones, washing soaps, and several signal flares...

Ye Qingyu did not know whether to laugh or cry.

This little girl, had already thought of all the things he might need. But the items she packed were clearly items that was used in a holiday, and not for a dangerous wilderness survival test.

But looking at this interdimensional pouch, Ye Qingyu could imagine the little loli going back and forth deciding what to buy for him. These things look as if it was worth far less than the [Arctic pelt] Ji Lin gave him\*\*\*\*, but in Ye Qingyu's heart, the value was the same!

This represented a young girl's heart.

It was the concern of a true friend.

“Eh? There's also a piece of paper...” Within the interdimensional pouch, was a carefully folded piece of paper.

He unfolded it...

“Brother Qingyu, I can't wait for you anymore, my sister dragged me away...There's an extremely important thing I have to tell you, in your wilderness training you must be extremely careful. That scoundrel Liu Lei has already recovered, he will definitely target you...”

The words were written down in an extremely hurried fashion, evidently something that the little loli had quickly written before being dragged away by her sister.

After Ye Qingyu had finished reading, he carefully considered.

Liu Lei was it?

That madman...If he really came looking for trouble, then he should not blame him for being merciless!

Ye Qingyu coldly smiled.

He returned to the dormitory and inside, his three roommates were in the midst of discussing something excitedly. Hearing the sounds of Ye Qingyu coming back, their discussions immediately stopped.

Ye Qingyu ignored the three, heading straight to his room. He began training, to keep him at his most optimal condition.

Time quickly passed.

When it was around midnight, he opened the spear technique manual.

After reading the general gist of it, Ye Qingyu could not help but laugh.

“Today, the black bearded man, when he handed it over said it was a basic spear technique. I thought those were just modest words, but who would have thought that these words were true. This really is a basic spear technique! It’s the basic of basics!”

On the blue scroll there were some of the most simple spear stances recorded and some common knowledge about spears that everyone knew. It was not a specially designed manual just for the [Inexorable spear].

“But this is fine tool. As the saying goes, every path begins from a

simple step. Every type of martial path, begins from the most basic of training. Old Wen has said before, that there indeed exists legendary martial art manuals in this world. But if the foundation of the martial artist is not stable enough, even if these legendary martial arts manual were in front of him, he has no way of cultivating in it!”

Ye Qingyu was not disheartened.

.....

.....

The second day.

Ye Qingyu continued to train like he had in previous days.

After practicing several repetitions of the spear techniques in the practice grounds, and eating breakfast at the canteen, he returned to the dormitory for a quick wash. The sun had just risen, creating a white sky in the dawn.

## Chapter 024 – The First Trip Outside

---

The details of what groups the first years would be split into, was already written on the stone mirror in the number one practice grounds.

By the time Ye Qingyu arrived, the practice grounds were packed fill with students, all busy checking their groupings.

When they saw Ye Qingyu, their expressions were a little strange.

This made Ye Qingyu slightly baffled.

But after he discovered his group, he finally understood why people would look at him with such strange expressions. He was in the same group as the mover and shakers of the first years – Qin Wushuang, Yan Xingtian and Song Xingluo.

“I’ve actually been placed in the number one Heaven group?”

This was a little peculiar.

Even though his performance in the examination was outstanding, but his basic foundations were still too little. In the previous twenty days, he did not have much interaction with any of these people.

Qin Wushuang was already half a step in the Spirit Spring stage, and was about to enter the Xiantian stage.



According to the rules of the White Deer academy, the grouping for the Wilderness test was not done according to your potential, but rather to your strength. Differing strength levels would be assigned to different areas in the wilderness.

“Does the teachers really think I have a strength comparable with Qin Wushuang and the others right now? Or is it because...”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze landed on one of the name in this group.

Liu Lei!

That madman, was in the same group as him?

Coincidence?

Or did someone arrange this?

After being so heavily injured by him, with his entire right arm nearly being shattered, he was still able to participate in the Wilderness test. Was his injuries already fully recovered?

Ye Qingyu remembered the information written on the piece of paper the little loli had left him last night. His lips curled in an imperceptible smile.

He did not stay around the practice grounds, instead leaving straight

for the group meeting point specified on the stone mirror.

Every group had twenty people in it, and each group was supervised by a teacher.

The number one Heaven group's meeting place was very noticeable and was easily found. It was located at the periphery of the practice grounds, under an almond yellow flag fluttering in the winds. Under the flag, there were already a group of people gathered. The group was clearly split into two further sub-groups, each led by Qin Wushuang and Yan Xingtian.

These were the members of the number one Heaven group.

The arrival of Ye Qingyu attracted the gazes of many members in the group.

Especially the spears that he carried on his back. This attracted the speculations of many people, everyone curious to know what kind of weapon the person who had caused so many incidents would use.

Liu Lei was also within the group.

He was in the same sub-group as Qin Wushuang, staring steadily at Ye Qingyu. His gaze was so calm that it was slightly strange; it was as if he had already forgotten the episode that had occurred previously or as if he was staring at a dead person.

At the same time, Ye Qingyu also observed the group.

He did not see the figure of the little loli, Song Xiaojun. Within the list of ten, seven were evidently not within this group. It seemed like the criteria for dividing students into group were not based purely on one attribute.

At this time—

“Ah...achoo, the people have finally already arrived? I’m so bored already, lets just set off.”

A young man with sky blue hair walked over, yawning and looking as if he still hadn’t woken up properly yet.

The young man looked to be around twenty years of age, with a tall figure. He had a golden hairband around his head, with a jade pendant hanging from his waist. He also had a sword with a jaded, golden hilt. The demeanour of the young man was extremely lazy, and he was filled with a noble aura, handsome and full of elegance.

“Let me introduce myself. I am the supervisor for the survival training this time around. I am called Blue Sky, the girls within this group can call me brother Sky.” The young man smiled lecherously, showing off his white teeth. He seemed to have a very amiable personality.

So this lazy and lecherous fellow was the supervisor for the number one Heaven group. He seems... slightly unreliable.

At this time, everyone member of the number one Heaven group felt

slightly apprehensive.

“Lets go!” Blue Sky lifted his hand, waving the almond yellow coloured flag in the air. He led the way towards a teleportation rune formation.

For security reasons, the airspace around Deer city was out of limits. No matter what form of flight it was, be it human or flying machines, it was strictly forbidden.

Therefore the students needed to first pass through a specific teleportation formation first to outside the city, then travel towards the training spot.

A buzzing could be heard as soon as one stepped on the teleportation formation.

Ye Qingyu and the other members felt there vision going blurry. After a number of seconds, everyone was transferred to a place hundreds of miles away, already outside the city.

“Haha, after being bored in the city for so long, I was nearly ill from it. I finally have an opportunity to come out...” The supervisor, Blue Sky, had an excited expression. He looked more and more unreliable with every second that passed.

“Go!”

He lifted his hand, and a strange silver light shined from his palm to the yellow coloured banner.

A mysterious transformation began happening.

The banner slowly expanded, with complicated runes glowing and activating. In the end, it became over tens of feet wide. As if it was a ship, it carried the twenty members of the group and headed towards the deep areas of the wilderness, quickly becoming a blur of light.

Not long after the group of people had left, another light appeared. It was another person.

It was a middle aged teacher with a strict face.

“Ah ah ah, damn that Blue Sky! He stole my supervising banner and dared to pose as me. Where has he brought the children of the number one Heaven group? This trouble making bastard, when he returns I will definitely thrash him!”

The middle aged teacher shouted in rage, but there was nothing he could do.

After a long while, he bitterly shook his head. “Fine, that Blue Sky, although he is a little bastard, but his power is definitely terrifying. To protect those little fellow shouldn’t be much of a problem for him...I only hope that he treats this seriously!”

The middle aged teacher shook his head, returning to the city.

.....

.....

The Heaven Wasteland domain had been excavated for less than a hundred years.

Compared to the thousands of worlds and domains, the Heaven Wasteland domain was still far too young. There was a still a very large area of Heaven Wasteland that was in chaos and was shrouded in fog.

Throughout these years, there were countless crazy pioneers that tried to go through the chaotic mist, trying to constantly discover new areas. But even through their efforts, it only expanded the safe area of Heaven Wasteland by less than a hundred thousand miles!

However, these newly developed regions were only comparatively safe.

From the perspective of the human race, the only truly safe place was the inhabited cities.

But even so, occasionally there would be tragic news of demonic beasts or alien races conquering one of the inhabited cities. Along with mountains of bones and rivers of bloods, the cities that immeasurable effort had been put in, would turn into ruins.

Deer city could be counted as the largest inhabited city for tens of thousands of miles. It was also one of the more important strategic points for the Northern plains of Snow country.

Because of the existence of Deer city, the number of safe areas that could be used for survival training was rather wide. With the accompaniment of supervisors, everywhere within five thousand miles could be used as a training area.

Within such areas, students would do battle with strong wild beasts, acquiring practical battle experience. After killing the beasts and obtaining their endowment bones, this could be exchanged for academic points when they returned to the academy.

This was the entire contents of the practical wilderness training.

Xiu!

The almond coloured banner was like an arrow, tearing through space.

A extremely bright layer of energy enveloped the entire flag, including Ye Qingyu and the others, causing them not to be affected by the wind. It was an extremely stable ride.

This was the first time that Ye Qingyu had experienced flying through the sky.

Two clouds zipped past them. The wasteland below was like a chessboard, making people feel as if they were at the apex of the world from viewing the entire Heaven and Earth at once.

“Little freshmen, let’s have a discussion about where we should hold our wilderness training?”

The fake teacher Blue Sky smiled at the students behind him.

The impostor Blue Sky wore a white robe, standing at the very forefront of the banner. His blue hair blew back in the wind like a waterfall, hanging down to his waist. There was an indescribable aura of romance and confidence that surrounded him, but the lazy and lecherous tone that he had, spoiled this image entirely.

Without waiting for people to give him a reply, the fake instructor continued speaking: “Since no one has any opinions, then let me make the decision for you, hahahaha”

Black lines appeared on everyone’s head.

Shameless person, at least give us the time to reply.

“The wilderness training area for first years can be split into four classifications: B, C, D and T. With T being the area with the least amount of difficult and B being the one with the highest...I’ve decided, we are going to area B9! Haha, the difficulty of that place is the highest and so is the mortality rate, it’s the one most suitable for the prodigies of the freshmen to play around in!”

The fake teacher became excited as he spoke.

The almond yellow coloured banner seemed as if it was replying to him,



buzzing and vibrating to his words. Using the fastest speed, it set off towards the designated area like wind and lightning.

The hardest area?

Ye Qingyu was also excited.

It was the place that he also wanted to go the most.

The other members also became excited. To be part of number one Heaven group, one had to have exceptional talent. Those teenagers with confidence and even a little bit of arrogance, naturally wanted to challenge the area with the highest difficulty.

The choice of Blue Sky naturally suited the dispositions of these teenagers.

Within the crowd, only Liu Lei frowned slightly but he did not say anything.

.....

.....

An hour later.

The almond yellow banner landed on a strange rock in a hilly area.

Blue sky beckoned his arm, the banner returning to its original size and landing in his hand.

The fake supervisor shouted with a laugh: “We’ve finally arrived at our destination! Everywhere within a hundred miles is a part of the wilderness training area. As long as you don’t step out of this area, you can do what you want and play around. If you encounter danger you can’t handle, then shout for help... wahaha, I finally have a rare free moment, I’m going to play around too!”

Before he had finished speaking.

The fake teacher was like a released wild dog, turning into a stream of light that headed towards the sky, disappearing without a trace.

Everyone looked at each other.

Roars of beasts came from all directions. There was a unique wild atmosphere coming from all around them, causing a looming feeling of danger.

Before even ten seconds of time had passed since the teenagers arrived, the dangers of the wilderness were already baring its sinister teeth.

## Chapter 025 – Training Till The Limits

---

Ye Qingyu carefully observed the surrounding terrain.

The surrounding terrain could be classified as being fairly open, with boulders and rocks scattered about. Strange unknown trees were sparsely grown on top of the thorny grey grass, stretching out into the distance...

There was a surrounding buzz of mosquitoes, carrying with it a fishy, bloody smell.

From the distance, one was able to see the faces of the ugly jackals devouring a half rotten corpse, surrounded by flies. It would occasionally glance at the group, growling and revealing its bloody fangs. The attitude of these jackals were definitely not friendly.

Death, was something that could happen anytime in this wilderness.

This was the wilderness.

Death and killing, are the laws that govern this place.

Compared to the Deer City that was wrapped in flowers and silk, the atmosphere here was the true reality behind this world.

“I have a suggestion. I think we need to work together to overcome the danger in this place, so we can successfully complete the wilderness

training!” Yan Xingtian, who had remained silent throughout, slowly opened his mouth. His tone had a determination that inspired trust in people.

This suggestion received the agreement of part of the group.

But the other leader of this group, Qin Wushuang, only faintly smiled. He did not say anything, but turned around and walked off into the wilderness. His robe drifted about, his black hair flying around in the wind. There was an indescribable sense of confidence and ease emitting from him...

The next instant, there were people behind Qin Wushuang, automatically following him.

Within this following, was Song Qingluo and Liu Lei, and several other students from noble families. They obviously long regarded Qin Wushuang as their leader, not even sparing a glance for Yan Xingtian.

“Haha, a bunch of commoner scraps. What kind of people are you, to want to work together with us?” This noble young student gave Yan Xingtian a glare, his face filled with contempt and disdain. He spat a mouthful of saliva on the floor and walked away.

“You...”

A student that stood beside Yan Xingtian could not endure this. Enraged, he was about to rush forward.

But the expression on Yan Xingtian face was calm, without even the slightest trace of anger or resentment. He held the student beside him back, lightly shaking his head.

“Junior brother Ye, I wonder what your plans are?” Yan Xingtian gestured to Ye Qingyu, saying: “Do you want to act together with us?”

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then shook his head. “I’m more suited to acting alone. I won’t bother you guys, thank you senior brother Yan for your kind intentions.

“Ye Qingyu, what does this mean? You are also a commoner student, and you reject senior brother Yan?” The dark and thin student that had been suppressed by Yan Xingtian angrily said: “You think that your talent is so good, that you can treat everyone with a scowling face? Hmph, senior brother Yan only wanted to protect you. Look at your cultivation, its only at the second stage of the ordinary martial level. If you encounter danger, then you won’t fare well!”

The other students gaze when they looked at Ye Qingyu, were also filled with dissatisfaction.

Yan Xingtian held up his hands, signalling for everyone to be calm. He said, “Junior brother Ye has his own plans. I only ask that you be careful and don’t go too far. If you encounter danger, you can set off the signal flares and me and the others will quickly come to your aid.”

“Thank you.” Ye Qingyu cupped his hands in thanks, than turned and walked away, in a North-west direction.

Yan Xingtian lightly sighed, then suddenly thought of something. He said: “Junior brother Ye?”

“Hm?” Ye Qingyu turned back.

“You have to be careful of... Liu Lei.” Yan Xingtian said in a suppressed, low voice.

Ye Qingyu was startled, then thankfully nodded his head. “Thank you senior brother Yan, I know what to do.”

Yan Xingtian also nodded his head, not saying anything else. He led the other eight students, walking off towards the North.

This commoner genius who would never smile, had quite clearly become the centre and leader of many commoners. In this academy dominated by the wealthy and the nobles, the commoners would huddle together, holding each other for warmth.

Within the history of White Deer academy, there had been a significant number of exceptional commoners that went on to become famed throughout the entire Snow country. This was one of the reasons why commoners were still permitted to enter the White Deer academy.

Yan Xingtian had long been recognised as the future leader of the commoners.

It was rumoured that the instant he entered the academy, he attracted the attention and support of many significant members of this

demographic.

Since the deterioration of the Ye family, Ye Qingyu could also be counted as a commoner.

But he did not want to waste his precious time, on the conflict between commoners and nobles. He did not automatically get close with the commoner organisations, and in this wilderness training, he also did not want to have too much interactions with either of the groups.

He had long accustomed to being lonely, so he preferred acting by himself.

.....

Walking on the deserted wilderness, Ye Qingyu could feel a surge of excitement building within him.

It was a kind of feeling that you made you think you can dive freely in the ocean and soar at will in the sky.

A two metre green backed wolf followed behind him for several hundred of metres. Perhaps finally sensing that this youth did not pose much of a threat, the green backed wolf decided to attack. As quick as a lightning, it pounced towards the back of Ye Qingyu!

The smell of blood emitted from his gaping, bloody mouth.

The claws of the wolf could easily crush boulders.

Ye Qingyu only took a small sidestep, backhanding the wolf with a punch.

The enormous force created a boom like sounds. The head and the claws of the green backed wolf exploded immediately, blood and bone scattering everywhere. The broken body sailed away, not even having the time to cry out.

“This is only a normal wild beast. It does not have any endowment bones, and its fur is not worth money. From my perspective, it is worthless!”

Ye Qingyu flicked through a book that he obtained from the academy, [The encyclopaedia of dangerous things in the Arctic plains]. On it, was detailed information regarding different wild and demonic beasts.

A creature like the green backed wolf had strength comparable to a practitioner at the muscle stage of the ordinary martial level. In front of Ye Qingyu, it really could not even withstand one single blow.

Ye Qingyu continued walking east for an hour, repeatedly being attacked by tens of different wild beasts and all being easily resolved by him.

Not long after.

In front of him, came the sound of sound of the roaring water.



A river that was over a thousand metres wide appeared in front of Ye Qingyu, like a dragon coiling about on the Arctic plains. The magnificent sounds of the rumbling water thundered through the air, the air surging with heavy mist from the crashing of the river!

“Boundless river, one of the three great rivers of the Arctic plain. It flows for over ten thousand miles, and is one of the most important sources of water for the Arctic plains... Haha, the next several days will be passed here.” There was a faint smile on Ye Qingyu’s face.

He sat on the shore of a small stone hill, observing in all directions. Using the encyclopaedia, he recognised the name of this surging river.

Water was the source of life.

Where there was water, there would definitely be a large number of wild beasts that would appear.

This had always been Ye Qingyu’s aim. For him, the objective of wilderness training was not to just survive in the wild. It was to unceasingly battle and battle, constantly raising his strength and killing demonic beasts to obtain endowment bones and to obtain academic points when he returned.

Instead of searching passively for the beasts, it was better guard a tree stump and wait for the rabbits to appear\* by the river.

No matter the type of the demonic beast, every day it had to come here

to drink water. Only by acting then, would he be able to obtain a reward.

This kind of action, in the eyes of many people, would be seen as the actions of a crazy person.

Because, previously the academy had already strictly warned the students. Within the wilderness, a water source was a dangerous area that they must not go near. Once surrounded by wild beasts and demonic beasts that had lost all reasoning, even an expert of the Spirit spring stage, had the possibility of dying.

The actions of Ye Qingyu was extremely risky.

“However, before starting hunting, I must first find an ideal place that I can attack and defend at the same time...” Ye Qingyu walked alongside the river, looking for a suitable place.

After walking approximately ten miles along the river, the red sun had already set, the sky gradually growing dark.

“Hm? This place, is not bad...”

Ye Qingyu was looking at a shoal in front of him that was comparatively calm and gentle. His eyes brightened. This shoal measured around hundreds of metres, with an open line of sight everywhere around. And, further on, was a strange stone forest\*\* that stretch for several miles all the way to the lush vegetation. It was a place that was suitable for hiding, as well as for fleeing.

Ye Qingyu carefully considered, entering the stone forest to observe for a bit.

The ground was dry, with no sign of decaying vegetation. Therefore, the likelihood of there being poisonous insects were extremely low. To his surprise, under a weird looking stone, he discovered a relatively wide cave with two openings.

It was a perfect hunting spot.

Ye Qingyu settled at this cave.

.....

Time quickly passed.

In the blink of an eye, two days had already passed.

Within these two days, Ye Qingyu was constantly in a role of both hunter and prey.

There were several times that he had chosen the wrong target and nearly lost his life. Being chased by powerful demonic beasts, only by hiding in the stone forest could he escape the danger that these beasts posed.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu encountered another target that was hard to deal with.

On the shallow riverside—

“Die!”

Ye Qingyu's body was covered with blood, turning and punching the golden python's head directly. It immediately caused the python to fall back, and using this opportunity, he quickly retreated to avoid being wrapped around by the golden python.

“Golden dragon python, two star demonic beast. It's venomous fluids is well known, and its speciality is constricting it's prey and strangling it to death...” Information regarding the golden python quickly flashed through his mind.

Two star demonic beast had a battle ability comparable to a Spirit spring expert.

But the intelligence of beast were not high. Only by relying on it's battle instinct, there was still a considerable difference between the beast and a true Spirit spring expert.

This was also one of the reasons that made Ye Qingyu dare to challenge it.

The other reason was that Ye Qingyu's cultivation had already reached the fifth stage of the ordinary martial level and he needed to cleanse his bone marrow of impurities. The technique that he was training in was the [Dragon form], and the blood of this dragon python had an extremely

beneficial effect on his training.

Ye Qingyu had already noticed this dragon python for over a day.

This python was extremely tyrannical around this piece of the river, as if it was the overlord of this piece of land. It had already appeared for quite a few times previously, entering the churning waters to hunt, evidently liking the taste of freshwater fish. After eating it's full, it would lie on the beach, basking in the sun!

Through the battle of the dragon python with other creatures, Ye Qingyu had already estimated the highest battle strength of the dragon python. With this in mind, he had chosen to taken action today.

The strength of the dragon python was extremely high.

There were several times that Ye Qingyu were nearly constricted and strangled to death.

But only through fighting to your limits, till you you were at the boundary between life and death, could you truly raise your power.

## Chapter 026 – Golden Clam

---

In the previous two days, Ye Qingyu had already underwent over a hundred battles of various dimensions. He had killed numerous strange wild beasts and demonic beasts causing his body to be littered with injuries. There had been several times where his bones had fractured and he had vomited blood, very close to being dead.

Thankfully, he was mostly recovered due to his nameless breathing technique. Not only could it help him rapidly replenish his energy, it also allowed him to have an extremely shocking rate of recovery from injuries. Otherwise, he would have long died if not for this fact.

Of course, the constant killing and fighting also brought huge benefits for Ye Qingyu.

Before setting out from the academy, Ye Qingyu was at the fourth stage of the ordinary martial level after training in the [Gliding eagle form] that teacher Wen Wan passed onto him. After changing the entire volume of blood in his body and cleansing the impurities present within his blood, he was finally at the blood stage. When cultivated along with his nameless breathing technique, the progress was excellent.

Two days of battle had made Ye Qingyu break past the fourth stage, and into the fifth stage – bone marrow stage.

In less than one month of time, without having any foundations in the martial path, to enter into the fifth stage of the ordinary martial could not be described as progressing quickly anymore. The advancement was

so fast that it was preposterous.

Thankfully the monthly testing of first years had not arrived yet, and Ye Qingyu did not show his true level yet. Apart from the burly instructor Wen Wan, no one else knew what stage he had already reached.

Otherwise, it would cause a huge commotion.

And the way to train in the fifth stage of ordinary martial level, was to change the bone marrow. This was a part transforming your very essence, making your body go from a Houtian state to a Xiantian state.

Of the [Eight divine forms], the [Dragon form] was the one most suitable for this type of cultivation.

Before coming to the Arctic plains, Wen Wan had already taught Ye Qingyu the [Dragon form].

After killing the golden dragon python and obtaining the blood of the reptile, it would allow the training speed of Ye Qingyu to go even faster.

“Ssss...Tssss”

The golden python stuck out its tongue, hissing. After being struck by Ye Qingyu, it seemed slightly dazed and did not continue to attack.

But it's twenty metres long body, slowly started to surround him. The blood like scent in the air that it emitted was poisonous and could cause

a normal person to faint or vomit.

It was an extremely formidable prey.

Ye Qingyu was topless, and on his tanned muscles were lines upon lines of scars, looking extremely fearsome.

These scars were all obtained through the battles he were in these two days. Some were from scratches and some were from bites. Some scars had not yet fully healed yet, and reopened during the battle, dripping fresh blood everywhere.

“The dragon python is descended from the divine dragon, and has within it a hint of the dragon’s bloodline. It has the opportunity to truly evolve into a dragon in the future, but the dragon python in front of me...” Ye Qingyu carefully observed his opponent.

He had already judged that this golden dragon python did not have any possible chance of transforming into a dragon. The dragon bloodline was too thin, and this python’s blood was too impure.

“Even though it is impure, but even a tiny strand of Dragon’s blood can aid me in mastering the [Dragon form] and allow me to transform my bone marrow entirely...Furthermore, this python is a demonic beast, it must contain an endowment bone within its body.”

A determination to battle burned within Ye Qingyu’s eyes.

His entire body was splattered with blood and his aura was already



vaguely giving off a killing pressure.

“SssSss...” The golden dragon python was enraged, preparing to attack again.

Ye Qingyu decided not to drag this battle out any longer.

Using the footwork that he learnt from Liu Lei, his movements were like lightning and easily avoided the strike of the python.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu was already tens of metres away. One hand reaching behind his back, he took out the [Inexorable spear] from its black holster.

In both hands, he held the two parts of the spear facing in an opposing direction.

With a snap, the mechanism activated. A three metre long spear was formed.

Xiu!

The spear stabbed forward.

A cold tip, fast as lightning.

The golden python was still in mid air, and had no way of avoiding the

strike. The spear penetrated through the python, seven inches down from its neck. The steel like scales were pierced like tofu, and the enormous impact sent the thousand pound body of the python directly flying back.

One strike one kill!

The golden python was nailed to the ground. The large body spasmed for a few second then stopped. It was completely dead.

Ye Qingyu pulled his spear from the ground.

His battle power had exponentially multiplied since obtaining a suitable weapon.

Demonic beasts whose classification were under two stars, once Ye Qingyu decided to use the [Inexorable spear], could always nearly be killed in one strike. In front of the terrifying herculean strength of Ye Qingyu, the demonic beasts actions were akin to walking to its doom.

Ye Qingyu stabbed the spear into the ground and took out a blue edged dagger, beginning to dissect the corpse.

The dagger was named [Cold Steel], and was gifted by Wen Wan. It seemed like it was once a Spirit weapon, but the rune formation on it had long been destroyed. The material of the dagger was excellent though, and could cut through steel like mud. It was perfect for dissecting demonic beasts.

A jade vial of the purest python blood was extracted from the corpse.

After experience two days of dissecting countless corpses, Ye Qingyu's actions were extremely competent and practised.

“Dragon python's brain? It's only about the size of a fist, and can be used to resist poison. It can be counted as a good object...”

“The snake skin also need to be carefully preserved, it can be exchanged for some academic points...Hm?”

“The snake meat has within it the essence of spirit energy from Heaven and Earth. It is definitely a nourishing supplement, I must not waste it...”

“The fangs of the dragon python, hmph, I guess it has some value...”

“Haha, the poisonous venom of this python can also be exchanged for academic points!”

Ye Qingyu began to grow excited.

The corpse of a two star demonic beast was filled with treasures. In the [Encyclopaedia of dangerous things] it listed all the riches that each demonic beast possessed which Ye Qingyu had long memorised.

In this world, the reason why there were so many crazy people attempting to go into the chaos of the dangerous areas and discover new regions was because countless wealth and riches was born from danger.

In a world where everything revolved around the martial way, even the corpses of Demonic beasts were a treasure, not to mention the countless treasures of Heaven and Earth that would be found in these dangerous areas.

The White Deer academy through using this method of exchanging items for academic points, began to prepare the students for the rules of this world.

“Hm? Why is there not an [endowment bone], how is this possible Little [endowment bone], where are you, quickly come out...”

Ye Qingyu complained, muttering to himself.

Suddenly—

“Eh? What is this? Such a large...This is...Ah, so this fellow swallowed a clam previously...”

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback.

Within the stomach of the golden python, he discovered a bump. After slicing it open, he found it was a golden clam that was already dead. It was about two metres wide, and although the other shell had already been digested a little by the stomach acid of the python, it was still brilliant looking as if it was a golden sculpture.

So this was why he felt that in the previous battle, the dragon python was not as agile as what was described in the Encyclopaedia. The python

had swallowed the golden clam into its stomach not long ago and hence this had an effect on its agility.

But...

This golden clam also looked slightly strange.

In the [Encyclopaedia of dangerous things in the Arctic plains], there was not any mention of such a clam. It only said that within the river there were over ten thousand species of river lifeforms, and over a hundred species of clams. The majority of clams were either black or yellow, without the book mentioning a clam that was gilded by gold like a rich person.

“Haha, could it be that this clam, is a king among clams?”

Ye Qingyu began laughing loudly.

He was curious and wanted to open the clam shell, to see if there were any night pearls or anything similar. This type of clam, could also be counted as a demonic beast, perhaps it had an [endowment bone] in it?

The clam shell was extremely sturdy. Ye Qingyu's arm could at least lift ten thousand pounds of weight, but only after exerting all his strength could he manage to pry the shell open.

Suddenly, a jewel like radiance shined through the crack of the shell.

Ye Qingyu lowered his head to peer through the opening that he had created. He saw three pearls, around the size of a chicken's egg, rolling around in the inside of the clam's shell. It shimmered with a peculiar light, and there was an indistinct energy fluctuation that Ye Qingyu could not make heads or tails of.

Ye Qingyu reached in and took all three of the pearls out.

“Eh?” He was taken aback again.

This was due to the fact that the sensation of each of these pearls were different from one another. One was extremely cold, one was slightly hot to the touch and one was warm like jade.

After observing in detail, the hot pearl was tinged with red, while the cold pearl was shaded in black and the warm pearl was translucent like a beauty's skin.

Ye Qingyu could not determine what the value or uses of these three pearls were, but he could definitely sense it was not ordinary. After fiddling with the pearls for a bit, he stowed it away, deciding to ask someone when he returned to White Deer academy.

After considering for a bit, he resumed his search for an [endowment bone] within the clam.

An [endowment bone] was the Xiantian bone within a demonic beast's body. On these bones, there were marks and patterns of Heaven and Earth that were naturally formed. Through these marks and patterns,

one could control the Spirit energy within the air and activate different powers and abilities. It was an extremely wondrous item.

It was one of the key differences between a wild beast and a demonic beast.

Due to the existence of [endowment bones], demonic beasts became strong. It was said that the runes and scriptures of the human race were formed from observing the pattern on [endowment bones]. Through generations and generations of development and discovery, these renowned runes then became famed throughout the entire human race.

[Endowment bones] had always been one of the most precious and fundamental materials for the runes that the entire human race utilised.

It was said that there were not two of the same [endowment bone] anywhere in the world. Even if an [endowment bone] was obtained from the same species, it would not be alike. Sometimes, it was possible that a weak demonic beast's [endowment bone] could give birth to a powerful rune.

And according to legend, apart from its uses in experimentation, [endowment bones] were also an important resource for cultivation. Some truly strong experts, through using different [endowment bones] in a formation, could demonstrate strength comparable to a killing god.

Therefore, the value of an [endowment bone] had never been low.

Perhaps within this golden clam, there was also the existence of a

valuable [endowment bone]. Then, he could exchange it for a significant number of academic points...Hehe, after thinking about this, Ye Qingyu could not help but giggle with excitement.

But after searching for a while, he discovered that there was nothing like an [endowment bone] within the clam.

He then carefully examined the clam shell, confirming that there were not any patterns or marks on the shell.

“It looks like I was too greedy...”

The golden clam was originally extremely peculiar and definitely not normal. It was hard to determine whether it was even a demonic beast, so as for whether it possessed an [endowment bone] was even more out of the question.

When Ye Qingyu was about to give up, his hand in the shell suddenly touched a hard object.

“Eh? This is...have I finally found it?”

Ye Qingyu was immediately overjoyed, grabbing hold of a corner of the object and dragged it out.

But after seeing it, Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.



## Chapter 027 – Bronze Book

---

It was not an endowment bone.

Under the sunlight, it gleamed with a bronze glow. This was different from what Ye Qingyu had imagined. This was not an [endowment bone], but it was a bronze object. It was rectangular in appearance, six by three inches and was less than two inches thick...

“This is...a bronze book?”

Ye Qingyu examined it in length and discovered that this object really was a very finely crafted bronze coloured book. The outside appearance was extremely miniature, about the size of a palm but the weight was definitely significant. It weighed at least five hundred pounds and was made from an unknown material since it was definitely not bronze if it was that heavy.

Of course, the most peculiar point was that it from the shell of a clam. How was it possible that a clam could produce such an object?

This was really strange.

Ye Qingyu began to feel that this was really too coincidental. If the dragon python did not dive into the river and swallow the clam, there was no way that he could have entered and obtained this object.

And as for where the golden clam had obtained the bronze book, this

was even harder to guess.

He thought for a while, then returned the shell of the golden clam back into the turbulent waters. Then using the fastest of speed, he finished dissecting the dragon python. Carefully erasing all traces of the battle and hints about the golden clam, he then left.

After ten breaths of time.

Ye Qingyu returned to the cavern within the strange stone forest.

He blocked the two entrances of the cavern using boulders to prevent wild beasts from entering. He then took out the strange bronze book, and using the cracks of light from the blocked entrance, began examining it in detail.

The book was about the size of a grown adult's palm, and the book did not have any patterns or inscriptions. On the cover, there were five strange, ancient characters engraved. It did not seem like it was the writing of the Snow country, and Ye Qingyu was not able to recognise what language the writing was.

When Ye Qingyu was about to open the bronze book, he discovered that the book was like a solid block of metal. It could not be opened at all.

After trying for several times, he gave up.

“Can it be a divine book?”Ye Qingyu said with a laugh.

When he was small, he had heard his parents tell him stories about divine books. It was rumoured that a divine book knew everything five thousand years in the future and five thousand years in the past. A divine book was born from Heaven and Earth. But it was only a passing thought, the possibility of it being a divine book was not high

Ye Qingyu stored away the bronze book. He decided that he would investigate the five characters when he returned to White Deer academy before deciding on anything.

He took the blood of the dragon python, and along with the [Dragon form], started to try to break through to the consummate fifth stage of the ordinary martial level.

The application of the dragon python's blood was to ingest it through the mouth.

The purest dragon python's blood smelled bloody but once it entered the mouth, it gave off a sweet fragrance. After, a strange warm energy began to flow down the esophagus and throughout all four limbs.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative stance.

The [dragon form] was different from the [serpentine form] or the [bear form]. It was not trained through stances, or movement but was instead cultivated through an internal manner. It needed a special way of breathing that vibrated the blood within the body, and through these vibrations, it refined and strengthened the bone marrow.

In reality, when one reached the fifth or sixth stage of the ordinary martial level, training changed from refining your externalities to your internal body. It focused on the internal power, and only through doing this could you when you reached the peak of the ordinary martial level, sense and activate the Xiantian energy within you. This would allow you to comprehend a higher level of spirit power.

As Ye Qingyu breathed in and out, an indistinct low growling sound seemed to emit from his body. It was as if it was the roar of a dragon that cried unceasingly, bringing it with an aura of might and power that made it seem as if there really was a dragon hidden within his body.

This was the [Dragon form].

Time passed second by second.

Outside the cavern, the sun had already set and a sea of fog had descended throughout the plains.

The dragon's roar within Ye Qingyu's body began to become clearer and clearer.

His thick black hair started shifting without any gusts of wind. Strand by strand, it slowly floated. Occasionally there would be small pebbles and debris that would fall from the roof of the cavern, but when it was a foot away from Ye Qingyu, it would rebound away like it had encountered an invisible barrier!

Finally—

Ang—-!

As the loudest dragon's roar so far sounded, Ye Qingyu's body trembled once. Then a series of sounds akin to beans popping began. There were droplets of black impurities that began to emit from the pores of his skin, his body slowly being cleansed...

Ye Qingyu opened his eyes.

His face had a smile that was filled with satisfaction.

“Haha, the blood of the dragon python is definitely not ordinary. It has helped me reach the consummate stages of the fifth stage. I already have one foot in the sixth stage! Haha, if someone with a strength similar to that of Liu Lei encountered me again, I could destroy them with only one of my hand!”

Ye Qingyu's confidence was greatly boosted.

His current strength could be said to have explosively grown by passing through a small stage in the ordinary martial level. Just through using his fists, he could easily defeat anyone of the sixth stage in the ordinary martial level. If he used the [Inexorable spear], then he could even fight with someone at the Spirit spring stage.

“Before the end of the wilderness training, there are still three more days. I have to hurry and achieve some success in the sixth stage before

returning to White Deer academy — if I'm at the Organ stage, then in the upcoming monthly examination, I will definitely have a chance!"

Ye Qingyu calculated in his mind.

Of the [eight divine forms], the [Tuo\*\* form] was the training method most suited for refining and training the six major organs in the human body. A Tuo, according to legend, was a creature that was similar to a tortoise and an alligator. It was born in the ocean and had an extremely long lifespan, and had the best method to care for and protect its internal organs. It was said that this type of creature, even if it did not move and turned into a fossil, the internal organs would still be functioning!

Before leaving, the burly instructor also taught Ye Qingyu the [Tuo form].

During the leftover days, Ye Qingyu could begin training in it.

He began organising the things he had within the cavern. He had already collected over thirty one [endowment bones] that were obtained from different demonic beasts. His loot was extremely respectable, and adding to the other items that he had obtained from the demonic beasts, his interdimensional pouch was nearly full.

"I have already completed the practical battle segment of the wilderness training, and there is no longer a need to do battle. I have accumulated enough practical battle experience..." Ye Qingyu carefully considered.

He believed that until today, the other members of the group, would definitely not recklessly seek out and hunt demonic beasts like he had done. Even if they added all their battles together, it would still not compare to how many fights he had encountered.

The next three days, what he needed to do was to meditate and cultivate with the utmost care. On one hand, beginning to train in the [Tuo form] and on the other hand, to reflect upon the battles he had during the previous days.

“But before this, I should go to the river and collect water and prepare food...”Ye Qingyu was about to seclude himself in the cavern.

Under the moonlight, Ye Qingyu moved the boulder away from the entrance. Using the light of the moon, he had just exited the cavern when suddenly the sounds of footsteps travelled over.

People?

Ye Qingyu’s heart thudded.

At this time, voices could be heard.

“Motherfucker, that little trash. Where has he ran to, we’ve searched for three days and we still can’t find him...” A loud and angry voice carried over.

It was Liu Lei’s voice.

Ye Qingyu hesitated, instantly erasing all thoughts of going out and greeting the people. He retreated further into the shadows, completely hiding his presence into the long foliage.

Song Xiaojun and Yan Xingtian had warned that Liu Lei would try to enact vengeance on Ye Qingyu during the wilderness training. It looks like this warning was true...

Ye Qingyu carefully inspected the group.

Under the moonlight, he could see three figures slowly approaching.

The one in the lead, had a tall and lanky figure, with a face filled with rage. It was Liu Lei. The two beside him, seemed to be slightly older and according to their clothing, seemed to be second year students. Why did they come to the first year training area?

Could it be?

“Young master Liu, don’t worry, there are still three days within the training for me and Yuandong. During that time, we will definitely accompany you and find Ye Qingyu. To take care of a first year freshmen, is definitely easily achieved!” The slightly chubby figured second year spoke.

“Yes, wait till we find him. I’ll personally break his four limbs! Then, you can humiliate and play with him all you want young master Liu, to take out your anger!” The second year student with short, fire red hair



had a cruel smile.

“Motherfucker, I will definitely torture him, I will definitely torture him till he dies!” Liu Lei said, grinding his teeth.

Under the lighting of the moon, his young face had an indescribable sinister and malevolent quality to it. It was as if he was a spiteful ghost that had crawled from his grave for revenge.

“Haha, if young master Liu wants to play with him till he dies, isn’t it even easier than crushing an ant?” The chubby second year student started laughing loudly.

“That’s true. This is just the perfect opportunity, I’ve heard the supervisor Blue Sky has gone crazy again during these past few days. He directly went to the source of the boundless river, and turned the holy ground of the demonic beasts [Golden water palace] upside down. It even forced the golden dragon king to deal with him personally! Everyone is chasing Blue sky right now, to retrieve the treasure that he stole from the [Golden water palace]. Haha, that crazy person!”

“That’s right, I estimate that Blue Sky is fleeing right now like a dog. He definitely does not have the energy or time to care about the safety of the students!” The fire-red hair student said with a smile.

Liu Lei nodded his head: “This is an opportunity sent by the heavens. I must kill Ye Qingyu this time, or I will never be able to rest!”

“As long as we do it cleanly, the academy will not be able to link this to

us. Hehe!” The chubby teenager fanned the flames.

“A bunch of commoner scraps, they dared to provoke me...”Liu Lei said hatefully and resolutely. “After I’ve killed the trash, I will go to the tomb of his parents and dig it up! I will make them all turn into lonely souls!”

From far away.

After hearing this, Ye Qingyu murderous intent exploded.

No one could touch his parent’s graves.

It was you that who provoked me without reason, and said that it won’t end till one of us dies. Last time I already went easy on you, and now you are so vicious to bring people to kill me... Liu Lei, you are courting death yourself!

Ye Qingyu slowly held the two parts of the [inexorable spear].

“Haha, rest assured young master Liu. Me and Dongchen have already broken through and have one step in the Spirit spring stage. Although we have not yet established the source of a Spirit spring in our Dantian\*\* , but we are already well qualified to deal with a little scum that only knows how to use brute strength!”

“That’s right, that’s right. When we’ve found him, we will definitely slowly torture him to death!”

The three people discussed calmly and blandly, as if they were really going to kill an ant.

At this time.

Under the moonlight, from far away, a teenager approached without fear.

“Is that really so? No need to find me. I’ve already come.” Ye Qingyu appeared, his eyes cold. Both his hands held a spear each. He was like a killing god under the moon, coming straight for them.

The three people was shocked by his sudden appearance.

## Chapter 028 – I'll Wait For You In The Yellow River

---

When they recovered and was able to recognise the person in front of them, Liu Lei was dumbfounded for a moment then starting laughing maniacally. “Ye Qingyu? You’ve heard what we said...Haha, a thing that doesn’t know what death is, you’ve actually come out. Good, today I will make beg for life and death!”

“He is Ye Qingyu?” The chubby second year’s gaze swept past him, his face sinister. “Why speak so much with such a commoner trash, capture him then we’ll speak.”

Before he had finished.

The slightly chubby teenager charged.

His footwork was profound and his figure extremely agile. His hands grabbed at something from the air, and suddenly a sword giving off a cold light appeared in his hands. His sword move was like lightning, stabbing straight for Ye Qingyu’s throat.

Fast!

Accurate!

Ruthless!

These three words were demonstrated fully within this sword strike.

The chubby teenager deserved to be a second year student. He could already sense the energy within Heaven and Earth and his strength was extremely powerful. As the saying goes, 'Once a veteran makes a move, then you'll know whether he has it.' His strength was definitely much stronger than a normal first year!

If it was a few days earlier, to face such an opponent, Ye Qingyu would definitely be hard pressed.

But right now...

Boom!

A huge noise was produced.

Ye Qingyu's wrists moved, swiping the spear across and counter striking, meeting the sword in mid-air. All of a sudden, bright orange sparks appeared in the moonlit night.

The chubby could only feel a heat between his thumb and forefinger. Then, the spirit weapon in his hand was bent forcefully till it resembled a snake. With an explosion of sound, the sword shattered, pieces of it stabbing into his body!

“Wa....”

He spat out a mouthful of blood, his complexion as terrified as a dog, quickly retreating.

But in the next instant, Ye Qingyu pressed forward. The spear in his left hand again swept forwards, causing a violent turbulence in the air, as if there were the power of a surging river behind the strike!

The chubby teenager did not have time to avoid and was struck in the stomach. Instantly, there were the cracking and snapping sounds of ribs. His entire person was like a kite that had been cut, soaring through the air and landing on a boulder far off in the distance.

“You...” The chubby teenager stared dumbly at Ye Qingyu, his face filled with disbelief

He could not even formulate a whole sentence. His whole body spasmed, the bones in his body were nearly all broken. All five of his internal organs suffered internal bleeding, and his breathing was irregular. It seemed he would not live for much longer!

The series of moves, was too fast.

In the time of a spark, like a hawk catching a rabbit, Ye Qingyu completely crushed the chubby teenager with the force of roaring thunder. It gave no time for Liu Lei or the youth with the fire red hair to react.

“This...”

“How is it possible?”

The two were completely dumbfounded.

They had never thought that this would happen to the three of them. Originally they were like hunting a lamb when they searched for Ye Qingyu, a simple task. But who would have thought that their weak prey did not turn into a lamb but instead into a vicious wolf, turning their roles around!

Seeing his strike succeed, Ye Qingyu did not hesitate. He threw the spear in his left hand like a javelin.

A cold light flashed.

The spear was like black lightning under the moonlight.

Instantly goose bumps appeared on the fire red haired teenager. It was the premonition of death. This made him react in quickest time, instinctively swinging his weapon!

Boom!

Another huge impact.

When the sword hit the spear, it did not do as the red haired teenager imagined. Instead of sending it flying, it only altered the course of the projectile slightly.

The spear stabbed through the left breast of the red haired teenager.

With the accompaniment of sparks, cracks appeared on the sword. This could demonstrate how great the impact actually was. The spear carried with it a huge residual force, sending the fire red haired teenager several tens of metres back and nailing him on a towering stone pillar far off in the distance!

Blood flowed everywhere!

The fire red haired teenager's eyes were filled with despair, howling like a jackal.

And nearly at the same time, the spear in Ye Qingyu's right hand was like a torrential rainstorm, coming towards Liu Lei.

Within the dark night, killing intent was everywhere.

From when he started to act, Ye Qingyu had already decided that he would leave no one alive. He did not want to give the three time to breathe and recover at all. First he would destroy the strongest two of the group, the second years. Then he would take care of Liu Lei, who was not his opponent at all!

“Aaaaaaaaaa.....”

Liu Lei screamed like a madman. The sword in his hands swirled in



patterns, wanting to block the meteorite like strike of the spear.

But very quickly, the steel sword became steel debris that scattered throughout the sky.

In Liu Lei's hand, only a bare sword handle was left.

Even if it was only half of the [inexorable spear] it still weighed over six hundred pounds. Pair that up with the explosive herculean power of Ye Qingyu, the combat power that it can produce was at this moment, invincible.

This type of power, was completely impossible to withstand for Liu Lei.

It was also not something that a steel sword was able to withstand.

Pu!Pu!Pu!

Crimson blood starting spurting from wounds on his body.

In the blink of an eye, he had been hit by ten spear strikes!

“You...dare kill me?” Liu Lei screamed hoarsely, retreating backwards frantically.

“To kill you, is like killing an ant!” Ye Qingyu advanced, the spear in his hand swinging as if he was about to kill an insect.

These words were said by Liu Lei and the others and now Ye Qingyu repeated their words.

“The supervising teacher is near. Hahaha, you dare kill your fellow students, if the academy knows then you are dead for sure...” Liu Lei screamed mournfully, trying to use words to affect Ye Qingyu’s mentality. He was trying to delay his death.

“Really? I’ve heard from someone that the supervising teacher has encountered some trouble, and can’t pay attention to the group members...” Ye Qingyu coldly smiled, not being moved in the slightest.

If not for this news, Ye Qingyu would never have decided to fight with them. This was due to the fact that White Deer academy was extremely harsh towards killings between students.

“Aaaaaaaa...intricate spirit cover, open...” Liu Lei screamed frantically.

At this time—

Suddenly, the jade pendant that Liu Lei had on his waist, glowed with splendour. It formed an arc like barrier and with a clunk, blocked the killing blow of Ye Qingyu!

Ye Qingyu’s facial expression did not change. His second killing blow struck out again like a bolt of lightning.

He had long calculated that wealthy students would have items that would protect their lives in critical moments. But it could not stop Ye Qingyu's burning killing intent. When Liu Lei had said that he would dig up his parents' graves , Ye Qingyu had decided, he would not give any chance for Liu Lei to live on in this world. No matter the sacrifice or price that he would have to pay!

Ding!Ding!Ding!

The [inexorable spear] was like a hammer weighing over ten thousand pounds. It repeatedly struck the barrier, the terrifying impact sending Liu Lei stuttering back several steps and flying backwards.

“You commoner slave...You have guts...” Liu Lei continued to try and threaten Ye Qingyu.

“To kill a trash, why do I need guts?” Ye Qingyu strength increased explosively. His spear stabbed out, violently advancing. The crude and rough metal tip caused sparks to appear in the air from the friction with the barrier.

Crack!

As if an invisible glass had shattered, the rune formation around Liu Lei was finally broken.

Liu Lei's face turned pale, and was about to say something...

Ye Qingyu's spear stabbed out, blood flowing as if crimson flowers were

blooming. With a few snaps, he broke the limbs of Liu Lei.

“Aaa, Aaaaaaaa...”Liu Lei howled

Ye Qingyu stepped forward, the tip of the spear touching Liu Lei's throat.

“Aaaaa, aaaaaaaa ...” Liu Lei spurted out a mouthful of blood, then began laughing maniacally. “You...You won't dare to kill me, the Liu family will not let you go...I have a peerage, if you kill me, then you'll become a prosecuted criminal of the entire snow country!”

“If I don't kill you, I won't be able to rest in peace.” Ye Qingyu's tone was calm and peaceful. He said, “Previously, it was you who intentionally provoked me in the practice grounds. You wanted to use that sparring opportunity to cripple. I only broke one of your arm and that was me going easy on you. Who would have thought you would go and find people to kill me...”

“Haha, I am nobility! Since you have dared injure me, you deserve to die!” Liu Lei said biting.

“Really? Since if you live, then you will use various means to attempt to kill me, then if I just kill you, no one will bother me.” Ye Qingyu began to laugh. “To take care of a crazy dog like you, you must exterminate it, without a shred of leniency!”

After saying this, Ye Qingyu could suddenly sense something. He coldly snorted, swinging the spear and hitting a boulder near him.

Boom!

The mountain like boulder was hurled away by the explosive impact. Like it was Mt Tai, is pressed down on the red haired youth that was trying to escape, trapping him under the boulder. It crushed him into pulp, with only one leg outside the boulder, twitching.

This second year student, after being stabbed through the chest was still not dead. The life force of someone who had half a step in the Xiantian stage was definitely astounding. Through a moment's carelessness, Ye Qingyu had nearly allowed him to escape!

"I've already killed two, it doesn't matter if I kill one more." Ye Qingyu had already decided. He would not leave any trouble unresolved.

"You..."Even though Liu Lei was crazy, he was still at the most a youth at his teens. He finally began to feel fear. "You can't kill me, at the most I will never seek to trouble you ever again!"

"Haha, you say people are stupid, but what about you? You are the true idiot here, I've already killed two of your dogs, would I spare you?"Ye Qingyu's gaze held contempt as he looked down. He said: "You must know what is killing someone to silence them forever right? Even if I believed that you will not bother me again in the future, I would still kill you!"

Liu Lei was speechless.

For the first time, fear appeared on his face.

That's right, Ye Qingyu had already killed two second year students. To prevent news of this leaking, he will definitely not let me go...It was a situation where he was sure to die.

"I'm sorry, you forced me." Ye Qingyu did not want to say anything more. To prevent a 'long night with many dreams\*', his spear acted. Before Liu Lei could say anything more, the spear stabbed him through the left chest directly into his heart.

"You...will die painfully...I have a marking on my body, by killing me... The Liu family will find out in the first instant. Haha, I'll wait for you by the yellow river road\*\*!" At his last moment, Liu Lei cursed Ye Qingyu, filled with despair and fear, his eyes staring unblinkingly at him.

Ye Qingyu frowned.

He had already heard, that some noble families would place a Spirit marking on their children. If their children were killed, then the marking would transfer onto the body of the killer. The marking could not be washed off, so the perpetrator could be found sooner or later.

If it really was like that, then it would be troublesome.

Ye Qingyu looked at the grey and dull sky. It looks like a storm was going to arrive. He needed to erase all traces of evidence and leave.

## Chapter 029 – Waves Spreading

---

Deer city.

Liu family's mansion.

The head of the mansion, Liu Yuanchang, could be counted as one of the main powers of Deer city. He had received a title of nobility from the royal family of Snow country, and could be counted as a true noble. The Liu family was also one of the biggest families in the city, and Liu Yuancheng was trusted by the city leader, holding a position of high status and power.

Today—

“The sky is falling down. Not good, not good. Young master Liu Lei's life plaque is broken...” The servant who was in charge of looking after the ancestral plaques, suddenly squealed like a pig who was about to get slaughtered, breaking the silence of the Liu mansion.

Very quickly, all the important members of the Liu family were alerted.

“How can this be? Didn't Lei-er go to participate in the practical battle training? What happened...” Liu Yuancheng was about fifty years of age, and looking cultured and elegant. He had three wisps of hair in his beard that grew to his chest. When he was young, he could be counted as a handsome man.

To be able to become a subordinate of the city leader office, the strength of the Liu Yuancheng was definitely great. The way he did things were also flawless and conniving, without displaying joy or anger. But at this time he was shocked and angry, as furious as thunder.

Liu Lei was a son that he had in his later years, and was also his only son. He had always been spoiled causing him to have a warped crazy personality, where he did things without fearing the consequences. Liu Lei had always had the protection of Liu Yuancheng, so even if he caused any trouble, Liu Yuancheng would block it for his son.

During this time in the wilderness training, Liu Lei was accompanied by geniuses like Qin Wushuang. He also had a treasure that could broke one full strike from a Spirit spring expert, and the protection of the supervising teacher of White Deer academy. From Liu Yuancheng's perspective, his son was definitely safe without any possibility of encountering danger, so why...

“Who killed my Lei-er? Quickly activate the ancestral altar, I need to see what happened. No matter who it is that killed him, I will turn his bone into ashes...”

To activate the ancestral altar was an extremely serious matter, and it also utilised a lot of resources.

But Liu Yuanchang was already enveloped by sorrow and rage, furious as rumbling thunder. His entire body was encircled with a killing intent and he did not take into consideration anything other than vengeance.

Very quickly the ancestral altar began to activate.



Runes after runes began to glow on the altar, with a strange energy emitting from them. A ray of light began to emit from the top of the altar towards an empty space, forming a light screen.

“This is area 9B of White Deer academy, it is the area with the highest difficulty. Lei-er and the others actually went there...Eh? Nothing is showing, what happened?”

Liu Yuanchang was incomparably flabbergasted and livid.

Within the light screen, an indistinct image of where Liu Lei had went showed up. But at the last moment, the screen was fuzzy and unclear, not being able to indicate what Liu Lei had last experience. There was a chaotic fog that appeared in the screen, as if there was some kind of energy preventing them from seeing what happened.

“What is happening? Could it be someone that is acting from behind the scenes?”

The ancestral altar was gifted by the royal family of the Snow country. It was said to come from the hands of rune masters at the Bitter sea stage, and only people with titles of nobility could possess them. It had never been wrong before, but today it failed to clearly witness the process of Liu Lei's death?

Liu Yuancheng was both vexed and angry.

“No matter who it is, once I discover him, I'll make him beg for life and

death. I will definitely turn his bones to the ashes, and kill everyone that he knows...Aaaaaa, Wuwu, my Lei-er...”

Within the Liu mansion, a sound like the sorrowful and hateful curses of a ghost resounded throughout.

A ray of light shone on the sky, heading straight for White Deer academy.

The livid Liu Yuancheng, did not care that flying was not permitted in the city anymore. He headed straight for White Deer academy, the furious sounds of Liu Yuancheng’s anguish resounding throughout the entire Deer city.

“White Deer academy, my son is dead! I demand an explanation!”

.....

.....

One day after.

Ye Qingyu had already appeared in a training area a hundred miles from where the incident happened.

He had been there for half the day already.

He threw the bodies of Liu Lei and the two second years into the turbulent boundless river. He then erased all signs and evidence that he had once appeared in that area. Ye Qingyu believed that the torrential rainstorm that had occurred not long after he left, would also aid him in hiding his tracks.

This way, even the top martial experts would not be able to find anything that would link back to him.

Ye Qingyu did not know what happened in the Liu family mansion a thousand miles away. He also did not know that he was able to hide from the observation of the ancestral altar thanks to a mysterious reason.

There was still one day till the end of the practical battle training.

Ye Qingyu did not demonstrate too strong a strength again. He continued to operate in a small area, sometimes killing wild beasts, but he did not hunt demonic beasts again. The majority of the time he spent hiding and continuing to cultivate in the [Tuo form].

The sixth stage of the ordinary martial level, the most important aspect was to train and strengthen your organs.

According to the [Tuo form] techniques, one needed to activate the purified blood and bone marrow from the fourth and fifth stage, and use that to continuously nourish the organs with the body. Only by transforming the organs till they are translucent and clear, ridding it of any Houtian impurities, could it be counted that he had reached the consummate stage of organ stage.

This was a process that required him to be slow and deliberate.

Ye Qingyu did not rush. Every day he would calmly and steadily continue to cultivate.

Midday, when Ye Qingyu had just awoken from his state of mediation from training in the [Tuo form], and was about to practice his spear form, when suddenly—

Xiu!

A sharp explosion reverberated throughout the air.

On the blue sky, a humongous image of the White Deer academy appeared, that was extremely realistic. Everyone from hundreds of miles away, would be able to see this image clearly.

“This is the academy’s assembly order!”

Ye Qingyu stood up, thinking.

According to his original estimation, it should have been tomorrow before the wilderness training would end. But since the academy had given the assembly order earlier than expected, something must have happened. The greatest possibility for this change was the death of Liu Lei and the others had finally been discovered.

Ye Qingyu smiled. After stowing away his things, he set off, heading

towards the gathering point.

His heart was without fear.

.....

.....

“What? Liu Lei died?”

After hearing of this news, a stunned expression appeared on Qin Wushuang’s face.

He could hardly believe what he had just heard. He looked towards the students beside him, and seemed to suddenly have thought of something. His head lowered towards the ground, countless ideas and speculations floating inside his mind.

Yan Xingtian and the others, who were rushing to get here, were also greatly stunned by the news.

During the group training of White Deer academy, there had always been a certain element of danger. Heavy injuries had occurred before since this was an exercise used to train their practical battle abilities. But in the last forty years, there had been no deaths that had appeared during this exercise.

And when everyone thought about the status of Liu Lei, everyone

realised that the ensuing storm would definitely be big.

How did Liu Lei die?

No one knew.

The atmosphere around was as if it was frozen solid. There was an indescribable seriousness and chilliness.

Four respected elders from the academy had rushed here from Deer city, to control the situation. On one side they asked information about Liu Lei and on the other side, they reassured members of the number one Heaven group.

The other side.

Liu Yuancheng was standing with a cold fury on his face.

He was like a crazed lion that had lost its cub. He stood there silently, observing every member that was worthy of suspicion. Perhaps Liu Lei did die at the hands of a demonic beast, but these students were also suspects.

Liu Yuancheng was like a volcano that was about to erupt.

Beside him, twenty experts from the city leader's office and the government stood there. They were as fierce and imposing as flames, standing there waiting for their orders.

In reality, in the passed day, they had already investigated the entire 9B area. There did not let go of any suspicious aspects, especially the fact that the light screen of the ancestral altar was blocked and made them unable to investigate Liu Lei's last moments. Everything was investigated.

Every member of the number one Heaven group was not alerted to this fact. Instead, they secretively observed them for a period of time, but it was pity that they had not yet discovered any clues.

Liu Yuancheng who was enraged to his limits, once again took it out on White Deer academy.

What made the teachers of the White Deer academy embarrassed and awkward, was the first person to discover the death of Liu Lei was the city leader office and not the supervising teacher. Unquestionably, this placed the entire White Deer academy in an unfavourable and defensive position.

And what made the academy even more passive, was up until now, they had still not yet discovered the corpse of Liu Lei. They did not even know how he had died.

Time passed on.

The members of the number on Heaven group returned one by one. When they heard this news, they were all speechless.

Ye Qingyu was the last one to appear.

He came alone, and attracted the gazes of everyone.

“What? Liu Lei is dead?” When Yan Xingtian told the news to him, his eyes opened wide in shock and astonishment. He had an extremely stunned expression, as if he was a rabbit that was petrified.

This made the suspicions of Qin Wushuang and Yan Xingtian to evaporate.

Could it be that Ye Qingyu really did not know anything?

Liu Yuancheng's gaze rested on Ye Qingyu's figure. His eyes were like dissection knives, wanting to inspect every inch of Ye Qingyu's body, from the inside to the outside.

In the process of the interrogation, he had already gathered from the mouths of Qin Wushuang, Yan Xingtian and the others that this teenager once had a grudge with Liu Lei. And Liu Lei also secretly planned to deal with this teenager.

If the perpetrator really was hidden within the students, then unquestionably, the commoner named Ye Qingyu had the greatest suspicion.

But after thinking for a bit, Liu Yuancheng could see the flaws in this assumption.



Ye Qingyu's strength was only at the beginning stages of the sixth stage of the ordinary martial level. Even if he had a greater strength than normal and was able to win against his son, it was impossible that he was able to win against the two students that his son had recruited. It was even more impossible that he possessed the power to block the observation of the ancestral altar.

After thinking this, his anger was even greater than before. Who could it possibly be?

The night arrived.

The interrogation and investigation continued.

Every student was asked three or four times where they had been, with Ye Qingyu being interrogated the most. Not only was he the one with the greatest suspicion, he was also the only person that had always acted alone without other students vouching for his whereabouts.

But in the end, no matter whether through the investigation of the White Deer academy or the Liu family, no clues were discovered.

The fake teacher Blue Sky came wrapped in bandages like a mummy, bumping and hitting against everything on his way. When Liu Yuancheng saw Blue Sky, the anger he had been suppressing finally erupted.

The freshmen students were concentrated within their tents, and

everyone was not able to sleep.

When half the night had passed, they were able to hear the shouting of angry voices and heated discussions. After that, they could hear the terrifying clash of energy, evidently there were true qi experts who were fighting. This continued on for a long time...

When the morning arrived, an old teacher announced with an expressionless face that the training had ended.

By the time it was noon, everyone had returned to Deer city.

On the surface, everything seemed peaceful.

## Chapter 030 – Characters From The God Devil Age

---

Afternoon.

It was a sunny day.

In the practice grounds of the first years in White Deer academy.

“I would never have thought that you were able to reach the sixth stage of the ordinary martial level in such a short time. Motherfucker, you little bastard, how were you able to do this?” After inspecting the Ye Qingyu’s cultivation when the lesson was finished, the burly instructor could not help but swear.

“Eh, you just practice and practice and then it just naturally became like this...” Ye Qingyu had an innocent face, trying to be endearing.

Wen Wan suppressed the impulse to strangle Ye Qingyu’s neck.

He suddenly suppressed his voice, sneakily looking around, then said, “Hey, speak the truth. That madman Liu Lei, did you take care of him? Don’t worry about me telling everyone and tell the truth. In reality, your father I have long disliked that crazy person!”

“Its not me.” Ye Qingyu honestly shook his head.

Wen Wan was taken aback, then he let out a hmph.

But very quickly, he thought of something and said: “Its best if it wasn’t you. But, the Liu family will not let you go so easily since you are the one with the greatest suspicion...”

Ye Qingyu casually shrugged his shoulders.

Wen Wan was again irritated by his bland attitude, saying, “This time, you really have to thank the person called Blue Sky...”

“Him?” Ye Qingyu was slightly perplexed.

Wen Wan gave him a look of scorn, saying: “What? You don’t know? At that night in the wilderness, Liu Yuancheng since he couldn’t find the killer or the corpse of his son, he was driven crazy with anger. Under his rage, he wanted to place you under torture and interrogation with the intention of completely breaking you. He would rather mistakenly kill off ten thousand, rather than let on get away. In the end, it was the wild Blue Sky, who insisted on protecting you no matter what. Ultimately, this made both parties fight each other...”

“Ah?” Ye Qingyu was completely astonished.

Did this really happen?

“Ah? Ah your fart! Young man, you are really too inexperienced, and have underestimated the dangers of this world!” Wen Wan with an exaggerated expression of disappointment, sighed theatrically. “Liu Yuancheng is a noble appointed by the royal family. In his anger, both

the city leader office and the academy needed to give him an answer. If he really was determined to cripple you, you would really have been finished. But who knows what medicine that lunatic Blue Sky ate that day, he was like a king eating a weight\*. He resolutely decided to protect you, and in a moment of anger, he killed three experts from the government and injured Liu Yuancheng till he spat blood and fled. Only through doing this, were you protected...”

“Ah?” After hearing what had happened behind the scenes, Ye Qingyu was incomparable shocked.

“Ah your father! Apart from ah do you have any other phrases?” Wen Wan covered his face with his hand and scolded Ye Qingyu. “After explaining so much, do you finally understand?”

“Understand what?” Ye Qingyu continued to be in a state of blankness.

“I. Fuck. You...” Wen Wan continued to swear exasperatingly. “Your current situation is very dangerous. So during this time, be on your best behaviour and don’t give the Liu family any chance at all.”

“En.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head absently.

Wen Wan was completely speechless.

He regretted saying so many things, it was basically akin to playing a lute to a cow.\*\*

But he could be certain, that the little bastard Ye Qingyu was extremely

deceitful. On the surface, he pretended to be in a daze, but underneath he was even craftier than a ghost.

“Oh, that’s right, who would have thought that this teacher Blue Sky, was such a fierce person...”Ye Qingyu said, deeply moved. “As the person in charge of supervising the students he not only did not take care of his duty but also refused any responsibility for the death of Liu Lei. Who would have thought, that instead of apologising to their family, he would beat Liu Lei’s father until he spurted out blood. Isn’t this too tyrannical?”

“Him?” Wen Wan pressed his lips together. “You really don’t understand him. Compared to the things that he did in the wildness, what he did here was just child play...”

Ye Qingyu was suddenly extremely curious about this fake teacher.

“But what he has done, won’t the academy punish him?” Ye Qingyu said worryingly.

“Of course they’ll punish him. The Dean of the academy has already taken care of it, he is punished to be confined in the [Grievance Hall] for three days...” Wen Wan said with a chuckle.

“Eh?” Ye Qingyu was blank for a bit. “Although I don’t really know what the [Grievance Hall] is, but this punishment seems far too light!”

“It’s more than just light.” Wen Wan had a similar sentiment. “It’s so light that it makes one’s hairs stand up. The Dean is evidently protecting that child. The [Grievance Hall] is the bedroom of Blue Sky, the Dean

only grounded that lunatic in his bedroom for three days. Hahahaha! That is too shameless!”

“Fuck.” Ye Qingyu was completely shocked by the unprincipled actions of the Dean to protect Blue Sky. “This really too shameless, too shameless!”

Wen Wan patted Ye Qingyu on the shoulder and said with a laugh: “Are you jealous? Work hard, you little bastard, Wait until the day where you can shock everyone in the battle between the ten academies like Blue Sky. Wait until the day where you can enter the Bitter Sea stage before twenty like Blue Sky. If you are known as the number one genius in the entire history of the White Deer academy, then the Dean will also protect you no matter what happens.”

“So it was this.” Ye Qingyu suddenly understood the actions of the Dean, then said in a perplexed tone: “Then why did Blue Sky protect me?”

“This...” Wen Wan held up his hands to the air. “When you have free time, go personally ask that lunatic!”

After saying this, Wen Wan shook his head. “I think you must attract crazy people. One madman wants to kill you and ends up dying. One lunatic wants to protect you and ends up being confined. Ahaha...”

Ye Qingyu: “...”

Wen Wan continued to tease Ye Qingyu for a bit, before becoming

serious. “Fine, let’s speak of other things. What do you plan to do from now on? There is only a couple of days till the monthly examination of the first years, do you have any ambition?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “I have none.”

“What? You really don’t plan to participate in the monthly examination?” Wen Wan was taken aback.

“I will participate, but I won’t be in the spotlight.” Ye Qingyu said.

Wen Wan blinked, then rapidly understood. He nodded his head: “That’s fine, lie low for a bit...But, I’ve heard that both Qin Wushuang and Yan Xingtian received huge benefits from the wilderness training. They have both broken through, and have now stepped into the Spirit Spring stage. And as for Song Qingluo and the others, they are also improving rapidly. If this continues on, I fear that the people of the academy will soon forget about you...”

Ye Qingyu laughed. “Why are you so concerned about me?”

Wen Wan laughed. “Because I like you.”

“Disgusting.” Ye Qingyu said flatly. “That’s right, I have three pearls here that I obtained from killing a clam. It’s a little strange, can you help me find out the origins of it?”

Saying this, Ye Qingyu passed over the three pearls that he had obtained from the golden clam in the river.



Wen Wan fiddled with it for a bit, his expression becoming more serious. “This is quite interesting, even I don’t know what it is. How about this, I’ll bring it to my friends in the [Rare room], those people interact with strange and rare items on a daily basis!”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“Then it’s decided, wait for my news, haha...” Wen Wan suddenly laughed loudly like someone with a mental illness. Then his figure quickly flashed, with the same agility as a startled dragon. He stepped on the statues at the edge of the practice ground as if they were branches, fleeing lithely away.

“Sigh, every time he has to show off his lightness skill\*, is he unable to walk normally?” Ye Qingyu criticised.

.....

The second day.

Waiting till the queue of first years exchanging academic points had died down a little, Ye Qingyu brought the [endowment bones] he had obtained to swap for academic points. In this trip, he had managed to reap a lot, obtaining over fifty [endowment bones].

This number, when compared to the average of three or four that other students obtained, was as if Ye Qingyu had gotten rich in one quick day.

But Ye Qingyu was careful and cautious. This time, he only brought out six bones to be swapped, and adding to the items he harvested from the golden python like scales and fangs, he managed to obtain twenty academic points.

Accompanied by the envious gazes of the other students, Ye Qingyu nonchalantly left the administration area. He headed for the martial library of the first years, wanting to investigate something.

The library was the place where the White Deer academy stored scriptures, ancient books and martial manuals. It was one of the most important places of the academy.

And the martial library within the first year district was a white pagoda with two floors, ancient and unadorned. The scale could not be counted as large, holding less than a ten thousand books within, with the majority being some low class training manuals. But from the perspective of the first years, this was already enough.

It was said that there was once an abnormal genius, who managed to memorise every book within this library. In the end, he managed to amaze the world, become one of the most powerful people in the region.

This was the first visit of Ye Qingyu to the martial library.

The teacher in charge of guarding the library checked the nameplate of Ye Qingyu before allowing him to enter.

Within the stone pagoda, the lighting was extremely bright. On the

stone shelves, were all kinds of different books and scrolls. There were different types of martial manuals, there were memoirs about training in the ordinary martial level, there were spirit herbs encyclopaedias, there were historical records...

In a world where the martial path was prosperous, everything was related to the martial way.

Ye Qingyu searched carefully, finally arriving in front of the shelf written [Ancient characters and rare items], located at the second floor.

Comparatively speaking, this was a section that was neglected. Not many people read books from this shelf. In total, there were less than a hundred books and the books were covered with a fine layer of dust. It looked like it had been many years since anyone had opened these books.

Ye Qingyu could vaguely hear the lonely sighs of these books.

“En...Illustrated handbook of strange characters, it's this one!”

He had finally a book that suited his needs.

Ye Qingyu took out the book that was three fingers thick. It was a handwritten, string bound book and was not printed. On the front of the cover was written <<Illustrated handbook of strange characters>> and on the spine of the book, there were words saying ‘Compilations of Gao Shenghan’.

It looks like there was only one copy.

It was a pity that the contents of this book did not have much relation to cultivation, causing very little people to be interested in it. The only reason that Ye Qingyu was interested in this book was because he needed to investigate, the words on the bronze book and what it meant.

Ye Qingyu had an intuition, that the book he obtained from the golden clam was definitely not simple.

“Eh, this <<Illustrated handbook of strange characters>> is really detailed in splitting things into category, there is even an index...It really is a dictionary for all strange characters. The one who wrote this book, Gao Shenghang, just what kind of person is he, to be so knowledgeable?”

After only looking at a few pages, Ye Qingyu could not help but marvel at this book.

“It looks like, the words on the bronze book belongs to... En, its from the ancient...No that’s not right, its characters from the God Devil era. Heavens, how can it be from such an era that long ago!”

## Chapter 031 – Endless Title Chart

---

Ye Qingyu continued searching within the dictionary, finally finding some clues.

The Heaven Wasteland domain had only been in existence for a hundred or so years, and was one of the youngest in the countless domains. But it was rumoured that the history of these countless domains stretched extremely far back.

There had been historians who had categorised the past into various ages since time immemorial. These were split into the Primordial age, God Devil Age, Greater Ancient age, Far Ancient age, Upper age, Middle Age and the Near Ancient age. In every age and period, there had been an earth shattering event large enough to change the entire history and direction of the countless worlds.

The God Devil era was said to be an age almost as far back and as ancient as the Primordial age. From the legends, this was a period where Gods and Devils ruled for millions upon millions of years. At the time, both the Demon race and the Human race were just in their infancy, with their strength being far too small. They were just objects to be slaughtered or enslaved.

Ye Qingyu would never have thought, that the bronze book, was related to the God Devil Era.

He had originally thought that these strange characters belong to domains outside of Heaven Wasteland.

“If it is really this, then the meaning of these words using the translation from the God Devil era is... Endless...Title...Chart...Endless title chart?”

Ye Qingyu was slightly confused.

Endless title chart?

What did that mean?

Endless, did it refer to the countless domains? Then what did title means? Does it mean the titles of nobles? Or does it mean the titles of martial experts?

Ye Qingyu kept turning the name of the book over and over, but did not managed to figure out the meaning behind it.

Although he felt slightly disappointed, but Ye Qingyu felt more and more interested in the person that was able to write the [Illustrated Handbook of Strange characters]. What kind of person was able to write such a book, that they were even proficient in the words of the God Devil age?,

The next four hours, Ye Qingyu carefully read and inspected this book.

His memory was extremely potent, and nearly every word he read, he could remember.

By the time the martial library was closing and the sentry had chased Ye Qingyu away, he had already remembered the majority of the contents in the [Illustrated handbook of strange characters.]

“I suddenly feel, that to go to the martial library whenever I have free time, is a very good choice!”

Ye Qingyu stood outside the white pagoda, looking at the doors slowly closing. He abruptly felt somewhat reluctant to leave.

He suddenly realised, that previously he had neglected the significance and the uses of the martial library.

Within White Library, apart from the teachings of the instructors and your own training, the silent library was a treasure easily ignored by everyone. The riches and wealth within, could only be detected by someone with the necessary perception.

After eating his dinner at the canteen and returning to the dormitory, Ye Qingyu continued to train.

His other three roommates formed a group, with an extremely snobby attitude, not caring about Ye Qingyu in the slightest. Ye Qingyu was too lazy to bother with these so called elite students, similarly ignoring them.

In the blink of an eye, it was deep in the middle of the night.

The moonlight entered throughout the glass, turning the room into a frosty white.

Ye Qingyu who was sat on the stone bed in a meditative stance, slowly opened his eyes.

“The Tau form is indeed profound, but for some reason, I feel that it cannot be compared to the simple breathing technique my father taught me by far...” Ye Qingyu carefully considered.

These few days, his training speed was extremely rapid. He had already entered into the middle phases of sixth stage. The impurities in his organs were constantly being cleansed, and his organs were slowly becoming more and more translucent.

The purification of the organs seemed to have no direct relation to the growth of his strength. Apart from expelling the Houtian qi in his body and preparing himself for the Xiantian stage, this was a training for his mentality and mind.

A corresponding power level had to have a corresponding state of mind.

The foundations of the Ye Qingyu – especially his theoretical aspect was extremely weak. These days of training in the [Tau form] and meditating on the process of training in the ordinary martial level, had significant benefits for him.

Breathing out a breath of impure air, Ye Qingyu stood up, walking to the windowsill.



He took out the bronze book, inspecting it carefully under the moonlight.

The bronze book was only the size of his palm and yet strangely weighed about five hundred pounds. The peculiar words on the cover, under the illumination of the moonlight, gave off an indistinct and abnormal glow, emitting a sense that it had passed through countless years.

“[Endless title chart]. What does these words mean?”

Ye Qingyu mumbled to himself, repeatedly pondering.

He did not realised, that as he was constantly muttering the name of the book [Endless title chart], a change began to happen.

On the ancient and mysterious bronze book, on the cold to the touch and rough surface of the book, something began to appear. Under the shine of the moon, radiant ripples began appearing.

It was as if the words that Ye Qingyu constantly muttered, had a spell like power. Under the moonlight, his words unceasingly entered into the Bronze book.

“This is...”

Ye Qingyu finally realised the change that was happening.

Before he could react, his hand had gotten lighter. The mysterious bronze book had disappeared.

“What happened?”

Ye Qingyu was scared by what had happen.

This was really an extremely disturbing occurrence. When he looked around, the bronze book had completely disappeared. He could not find any traces of the book, as if it had never appeared in the first place.

What had just occurred?

The next instant, there was another abnormal occurrence.

Ye Qingyu could suddenly feel in his mind, a strange warm energy moving. Before he could react, his vision blurred and an expanse of a dark sky littered with stars appeared in front of his eyes.

“What kind of ghost is this?”

Ye Qingyu’s heart was beating wildly. He vaguely knew that the things that had happened, must be related to the ancient and mysterious bronze book. The heat in his brain, and the things he had seen just now, could it be...

Could it be that the starry sky in front of him was his sea of

consciousness?

Ye Qingyu vaguely guessed.

From rumours, it was said that once a martial artist reached the Xiantian stage, then he could observe inside himself, looking at the sea of Dantian\* and the sea of consciousness. The existence of these two was the fundamental reason for why martial experts were strong. It was said that the majority of the sea of consciousness for martial artists were endless starry skies.

And at the same time he was guessing, another strange thing happened —

Within his sea of consciousness, there was suddenly a strange beam of light, giving off a bronze shine. Line and lines of light shimmered in a strange fashion, forming a pattern. As if it was creating something from these light, a humongous bronze book began to appear from this pattern.

“This is the bronze book! Endless title chart!”

Under the shock of Ye Qingyu, he instantly recognised the object appearing in front of him. It was the bronze book that had strangely disappeared. But compared to the cold and dead bronze book in his hands, this bronze book seemed as if it was alive. Whether it was the strange characters or the patterns engraved upon it, they both gave off an air of vitality.

“So the bronze book really went into my sea of consciousness. But this

is really strange, according to normal reasoning I haven't entered the Spirit spring stage and hence not entered the Xiantian stage yet. I should have no way of seeing my sea of consciousness but right now..."

When there was something unusual happening, there was sure to be a demon behind it.\*\*

At this time, Ye Qingyu could not confirm whether this occurrence was good for him. But thankfully the bronze book shone with a bright and radiant light, not looking like a demonic object of evil at all.

"I wonder if this book can be opened..."

An idea appeared in Ye Qingyu's brain.

The next instant, as if sensing Ye Qingyu's ideas, the first page of this humongous book began to flip open...

As if it was a hologram, an image began appearing in front of Ye Qingyu.

Not only were there words, there were also pictures.

It was a very beautiful and detailed picture. There were scenes of Gods and Devils doing battle, there were scenes of wondrous treasures appearing, there were scenes of divine weapons subduing monsters, and also scenes of living creatures soaring through the skies...

Every scene, had a strange energy that could cause a person's soul to be submerged into it. It also had corresponding words with the scene.

Words from the God and Devil age.

“The meanings of these words...En, it also looks like an index. This [Endless Title chart] is also something akin to an encyclopaedia...and these diagrams are also from the God and Devil age, it means...”

Ye Qingyu attentively watched the book.

After reading the [Illustrated handbook of strange characters] in the martial library, he could vaguely understand the characters of the God and Devil Age. Right now, in his concentration, he could understand some of the words.

“It can be roughly divided into three categories, being... titled Gods and Devils, titled divine weapons ...and titled extraordinary objects!”

Ye Qingyu could understand some of what he read.

But these diagrams only glowed with a pale light, completely different from the bright and radiant shine of the cover of the book. What would the next page of the book hold...

Ye Qingyu thought, wanting to turn the next page of the bronze book to see the contents.

But this time, no matter how he willed, the bronze book did not automatically turn.

And when Ye Qingyu wanted to close the book, the next instant, the book closed.

It opened again.

It closed.

Ye Qingyu came to the conclusion that he could only open the first page right now, and was not able to open the following pages...was this related to his current level of strength?

Right now, Ye Qingyu could not determine exactly what the uses for this bronze book were and the power it had. But he could vaguely feel, that the mysteriousness of this bronze book far exceeded his imagination. An object from the God and Devil era, was definitely not normal or simple.

With a will of his thought, he left the sea of consciousness.

His sight returned to the scene of his room. It was as if time had stopped, and nothing had happened at all.

“Who would have thought that such a thing would happen. But the history of this bronze book is too mysterious. Since it can automatically enter the sea of consciousness, then this can be counted as a good occurrence since it will not be easily noticed by others.”

Ye Qingyu was an optimistic person, always thinking of the good side of everything.

He placed aside the things to do with the Brozne book and continued to meditate and train.

There was no difference between day and night for Ye Qingyu.

.....

Time passed day by day.

In the blink of an eye, the time for the monthly examination had come.

## Chapter 032 – Falling Monthly Examinations

---

The monthly examination, was something that every student had to go through per month.

For this examination, the questions were set by the teachers of the academy. The contents of the question would largely relate to the different forms they were taught during this month, to test their training progress. From the results of this, a new ranking would be made.

And within this monthly examination, the students had the right to challenge anyone on the list of ten. If they were able to win, then they had the right to take their place. For many students, this was an extremely precious opportunity.

Some could say, that the importance of the monthly examination was even greater than the wilderness training.

Because in the end, the rankings of the monthly examination would be announced to the entire Deer city. Those who scored well, would become the centre of attention and be someone the entire city would aspire to be.

People chased after fame, such is the way.

Of course, there were also students who wanted to just purely follow the martial way, and used the monthly examination as an opportunity for training and to prove their strength to themselves.



But Ye Qingyu did not have great interest in any of these two reasons.

Firstly was because this would waste time. The second reason was because of Liu Lei's incident; he did not want to reveal his true strength.

The current him, only displayed a strength comparable to the early phases of the sixth stage. That was the reason why people thought he was not the perpetrator; they thought it was impossible for him to kill Liu Lei and two other second year students. But once it was revealed that he had the strength to kill people of the Spirit spring stage, then Liu Yuanchang had an even greater reason to be suspicious of him. It would bring unnecessary trouble.

And plus, for him the rankings did not have much meaning.

True strength was not something that could be measured in terms of ranks.

So therefore in the monthly examination, Ye Qingyu performed just so so. Even in the martial arts duel, he did not display too great a strength. The final result was that he obtained one victory and two losses, quickly finishing the contents of the examination.

Apart from the time spent in the monthly examination, he would either be in the martial library or in his dormitory, cultivating in the [Tau form].

Ye Qingyu's strength, grew step by step.

He was like a caterpillar in his cocoon, waiting for the day he could finally emerge from his shell. On that day under the colourful sunlight, he would take flight, leaving only a beauty image that people could only admire!

Three days later.

The monthly examination of the first years finally ended.

A new ranking was quickly produced by the academy.

On the stone mirror in the centre of the practice grounds, name by name began appearing. When compared to the selection process ranking, there were new changes!

“Qin Wushuang is still number one. Too strong, no one can move him from his position!”

“A genius from the city leader’s office, how can people surpass him? The resources that senior brother Qin has, people dare not imagine...”

“That Yan Xingtian is not simple either. He managed to retain his number two spot. For a commoner student to achieve this, one cannot help but be impressed. It was even said that the strength he displayed on the battle stage was not in any way less than that of Qin Wushuang!”

“Song Qingluo is still within the top ten. En, this daughter of the Qingluo company really possesses exceptional talent, her future will definitely be bright... I’ve even heard that the Qingluo company is

discussing a marriage between them and the city leader's office..."

"But the one who rose the fastest, is Song Xiaojun. This clumsy little loli, managed to shoot up to the top fifteen, rising over a hundred ranks..."

"She is part of the list of ten, and received the personal teachings of head teacher Wang. Her improvement, is within the bounds of expectation!"

In front of the stone mirror, every student discussed heatedly

"Eh, that's right, what about Ye Qingyu? I've heard that his talent is outstanding, why can't I see him in the top fifty?" Someone just realised, loudly shouting.

"En, that's right, Ye Qingyu's names...top fifty...top hundred...it seems like he's not in it, what's happening?"

"He's also not in the top two hundred, has an error been made?"

"Quickly look, its here... number five hundred and seventy!"

"That can't be right? Eh? It's real!"

"This...to have dropped so many places...This Ye Qingyu, could he really have fallen? That's not right, did he not previously defeat people like Xia Houwu and Liu Lei who were near the top of the rankings?"

People finally discovered Ye Qingyu's rankings and found that it was near the bottom, numbering in the five hundreds. When compared to the ranking in the selection tests, he had fallen by a total of five hundred and forty nine places. It was a rapid rate of descent.

“Haha, so it really was a short lived fluke.”

“Trash will always be trash. Even becoming a student, don't think that a dead fish can flip around\*!”

“I thought that the previous number one genius was about to be reborn again, but it turned out like this... Haha, this is only the first monthly examination and he has fallen so many places. If he goes through a couple more examinations, Ye Qingyu will become the last!

A part of the crowd, the noble students, had always disliked Ye Qingyu from the beginning. They could not help but laughingly mock when they heard this result. Yan Xingtian was already a thorn in the sides for many of the noble students, and now there was Ye Qingyu. Previously, some people had even compared Ye Qingyu to Qin Wushuang. For them, this was unacceptable.

It appears that, this Ye Qingyu, was really a joke.

They did not need to worry at all.

There was a minority of commoner students that sighed and shook their heads with regret but would not say anything. During these days,

Ye Qingyu had always acted alone and would always be busy training, not really becoming friends with any of the other commoners students. It gave the impression to the others that Ye Qingyu was haughty and did not fit in with the pack.◦

Discussions continued unbounded everywhere. It seemed like Ye Qingyu was about to become a joke again.

After the rankings were announced, the attentions of everywhere starting shifting to the challenging matches for the list of ten.

This was the last event of the monthly examination.

The ten favoured children who were on the list, would receive a baptism and test. Every student in the entire first year that had confidence in their own strength, after receiving a simple test, had the right to challenge anyone of the list of ten.

Once they won, they were able to take their place.

“Haha, It’s been a month already. I’ve already waited for such an opportunity for too long! I will definitely be able to take a place in the list of ten!”

“The selection rankings does not mean anything. Only through real battle can something like this be determined. In this month, I have trained devoutly every day and night, with my strength increasing explosively. I can definitely win!”

“I will prove, that head teacher Wang, was wrong for not choosing me!”

“To pull someone from the list of ten down, is also an extremely entertaining thing to do!”

The young geniuses were all filled with confidence, preparing for battle.

In the centre of the practice grounds, the ten stages for the challenging match were set. It was grand and solemn. Rune formations surrounded the each rings, the ripples of the yuan qi\* indistinctly appearing in the air.

On every ring, there was a ring master.

The little loli Song Xiaojun, being one of the list of ten, was naturally also one the ring masters.

And around the ring, there were teachers from the academy there to maintain order. To challenge the ring master, you must first undergo a test to examine your strength and whether you were worthy. Otherwise, if everyone challenged, then the ring masters would definitely die of tiredness.

This kind of event, attracted nearly the entire first year to spectate.

The melodious bell started ringing. The challenge had begun.

Every arena started heating up.

The little loli, standing in the ring, was a little dazed. Although she had gone through the practical battle training, but she was still not accustomed to battle.

When faced with the excited faces of challengers, their eyes emitting a blood red light, the little loli felt like she was facing a pack of wild beasts. The senior brothers who had always seemed so caring and kind, seemed to turn into different people entirely. There was an indescribable sinister atmosphere around her.

Within the ten rings, Qin Wushuang was in the so called number one ring. From the start, no one had appeared to challenge him.

One reason for this was because of the fact that the strength of Qin Wushuang was too high. He was like a crane in a flock of chickens. The other reason for this was because of Qin Wushuang's background; no one dared to offend him.

The situation on every ring was different.

All sorts of cries and screams sounded in the practice grounds, the sound waves as if it were a tsunami, spreading out in all direction. This was definitely the most busting and exciting day the Academy has had since the beginning of the academic year.

All sorts of people surrounded each ring.

For the majority of the students, this was an opportunity where they

could spectate and learn. Perhaps they could get some inspiration and obtain some sort of breakthrough during this experience.

But for some people, the meaning behind the challenge of the ten rings was not this.

Where there were people, there were Jiang Hu\*\*.

Where there was Jiang Hu, there would be conflict.

Where there was conflict, there would be all sorts of schemes and plots.

And as for the hidden battles that was in the challenging matches, it originated from the conflict between the nobles and commoners that had begun since the White Deer academy began.

Even since the Heaven Wasteland domain was excavated and the forming of Snow country, these two groups had been there. The conflict had never stopped. From the royal court to a normal town, this conflict was everywhere

The nobles wanted to stabilise their own special powers and status. They had a natural born advantage, and could enjoy the benefits of more cultivation resources. For commoners to change their fates, they were from the start disadvantaged against the noble students. But for some reason, every ten or so years, from within the commoners, a strong and frightening character would appear and support the entire commoner demographic.



White Deer academy naturally could not be excluded from this struggle.

And within this year's freshmen, Yan Xingtian was unquestionably the leader of the commoners, and Qin Wushuang the leader of the nobles. During Ye Qingyu's reclusive training, the conflicts and struggles between these two groups, had already begun.

.....

Within the practice grounds.

“What’s happening? Why is there so many people challenging senior brother Yan, and they are all nobles...These despicable people, are they going to challenge him consecutively?”

From within the crowd, some commoner students began to feel as if something was wrong.

The people challenging Yan Xingtian, had never stopped. A long queue had already formed.

“Hmph, this group of damn nobles, this is too despicable! They want to use such an underhanded method to tire out senior brother Yan and kick him out of the list of ten!”

“They are not only targeting senior brother Yan. Within the list of the ten, another commoner student, Li Da, is also being targeted...”

“What do we do? We can’t just watch!”

“We should give them a taste of their own medicine. We should get the experts in the commoners to challenge the other noble students within the list of ten. At that time, at least we can drag a few down!”

“Not to reciprocate in kind is against etiquette!”

## Chapter 033 – The Plot Behind The Matches

---

The commoner students who had a strength comparable to Yan Xingtian gathered to discuss their strategy. Then, they began enacting it.

On the other side.

“Haha, those lowly idiots, they seemed to have realised.” Within the group of aristocrats, a tall and thin youngster with fair and clear face features spoke. On his expression, he had a mocking smile.

This fair faced teenager was evidently the centre of this group of nobles and had a fairly high status.

“Senior brother Yalin, do you need us to do anything?” One of the noble students asked.

“No need.” The fair faced teenager, Quan Yalin, shook his head. He said: “Just follow our original plan. These lowly commoner scraps, apart from Yan Xingtian, does not amount to anything. Haha, as long as we control things rightly, by the time these challenge matches are finished, not even one commoner will be left on the list of ten! Haha!”

“Senior brother Quan wisdom’s is indeed profound, we can only admire you!”

“Haha, with senior brother Qin’s strength to hold our position, and adding to this the schemes of senior brother Quan, we will definitely

humiliate this year's commoners!”

“That’s right, those commoner scraps, they dare to think they are equal to us, they really don’t want to live...they are only a group that has and always will be lowly servants!”

The surrounding nobles, unceasingly flattered Quan Yalin.

The lips of Quan Yalin, curled in a vain and haughty smile

He came from an average noble family and his cultivation talent could only be counted as slightly above average and was not shocking in any way. As a result of this, he was not in the list of ten at the start and did not hold much of a position.

But his mind was extremely agile and conniving, specialising in schemes and plots. Some of the things he did attracted Qin Wushuang’s attention. Later, using Qin Wushuang’s trust and position, he slowly emerged and became a role similar to that of a strategist. His prestige gradually rose, and now he was one of the leading figures of the nobles.

This time, the plan to deal with the commoner students through the challenge matches was also made by Quan Yalin.

He valued this scheme extremely highly.

This was unquestionably an opportunity for his prestige to rise to new heights.

In truth, this plan was not all that devious or clever. But this plan was a straightforward and frank plot; even if those stupid commoners saw through it, what could they do?

After all, in the first year, nobles held the absolute advantage in terms of quantity and quality. Even if they saw through it, they had no way to retaliate and hence no way of changing the outcome.

“Oh, that’s right, senior brother Quan, that Ye Qingyu, do we still have to keep an eye out for him?” A noble student suddenly asked.

In these days, apart from Yan Xingtian, the existence of Ye Qingyu was like a thorn to them, stabbing into the nobles’ heart. Especially after when Ye Qingyu defeated Xia Houwu, Liu Lei, their precautions against him had never diminished.

“That person...” Quan Yalin was silent for a moment.

He had a strange feeling that he could not see through Ye Qingyu. According to his previous judgement, Ye Qingyu could definitely place in the top twenty. But for some unknown reason, he had fallen so many places...

Had he really fallen, or was he hiding something?

Quan Yalin could not be certain.

“What is Ye Qingyu currently doing?” Quan Yalin asked.

“According to the people we sent to observe him, he did not come to the practice grounds and is instead at the martial library.” A noble student by him said.

“He went to the martial library again?” Quan Yalin frowned. Through these days of observation, he found that Ye Qingyu was nearly always at the martial library. What he did in there, was not clear.

“It looks like this Ye Qingyu, has some self-awareness. He does not dare to offend us. It is said that he does not have much interaction between the commoners; could it be that he wants to be a double agent?” the noble youngster sneered, saying, “This type of opportunist, we don’t need to care about too much. He won’t dare to interfere with our plan.”

There were quite a few noble students who shared the same sentiments.

But Quan Yalin shook his head.

Ye Qingyu was not someone who would be easily afraid, or else he would not beat Xia Houwu and Liu Lei, two noble experts, but...This fellow, what kind of medicine was he selling in his gourd?

Do I need to test him?

Quan Yalin’s gaze landed on a ring not far off.

When he saw a little figure doing battle on the stage, a thought suddenly appeared in his mind. He said with a considering tone, “The relationship between Song Xiaojun’s and Ye Qingyu is not bad?”

“You mean that silly and clumsy little girl? En, I think their relationship is good. Come to think of it, this is pretty strange. Ye Qingyu only has her for a friend in the entire student body, perhaps his taste is special and he took a fancy to this dumb little girl?”

“Haha, to speak truthfully, little loli’s are quite delicious too.” Instantly several noble students began talking maliciously.

“If it is really so...” Quan Yalin suddenly smiled.

He had a plan.

.....

Ye Qingyu stretched his back, placing a book he had already finished reading back onto the shelf.

Apart from only reading manuals regarding cultivation, Ye Qingyu would also read other books. For example, he would also read books about the customs and conditions of Snow country, books about various legends, biographies of famous people and unofficial history books.

As long as it was a book, he would read it.

He was born and raised in Deer city. Apart from the wilderness training, he had never left the city. Ye Qingyu had nearly no idea what the outside world looked like. Through reading these books, it was like a multi-coloured door slowly opening to him.

These days, Ye Qingyu spent nearly all his time reading.

He stood in front of the shelves, going through them shelf by shelf, not even missing any one of the books. Because of his potent memory, as long as he read it once, he was able to remember the contents.

If he was given another ten or so days, Ye Qingyu estimated that he could finish all the books in the martial library.

After finishing another book, Ye Qingyu stretched his body again.

Looking at the time, it was around time he returned to the dormitory for training.

Placing the book back on the shelf, Ye Qingyu walked outside.

When he appeared at the entrance of the martial library, the afternoon sun was still quite a hot. Pleasantly stretching, he was about to return to his dormitory when—

“Senior brother Ye, senior brother Ye...”



A hurried voice travelled from far away.

Very quickly a chubby figure came running over. When he saw Ye Qingyu, an expression of hope and relief appeared on his face. He hurriedly said, “Senior brother Ye, quick, quick, something has happened to Xiaojun...”

The chubby youth’s name was called Li Jin. He was a student from the first years and came from a family of merchants, with his strength being around the average category. He had a clean and fair appearance, looking like Buddha himself. He was always laughing and had a good personality.

Li Jin was a friend of Song Xiaojun.

Song Xiaojun was different from Ye Qingyu’s reclusive character. Her bewildering and clumsy personality made many people fond of her, and she had quite a few friends in the academy. Li Jin was one of her friends.

Because of Song Xiaojun, Ye Qingyu was able to recognise Li Jin.

“Speak slowly, what happened?” Ye Qingyu supported the chubby Li Jin who was gasping for breath.

“Senior brother Ye, I’ve searched for you for half the day already. Quickly go...to the practice grounds, Xiaojun has encountered trouble...” Li Jin had an anxious expression, dragging Ye Qingyu towards the practice grounds.

“What has really happened?” Ye Qingyu said, while running towards the practice grounds.

“Someone has plotted against Xiaojun, they want to drag her name off the list of ten. Xiaojun has been injured...” Li Jin said impatiently.

.....

“Little girl, why don’t you jump down.”

On the stage.

A haughty Xia Houwu laughed coldly.

In his hands, was a cold curved sword, with drops of blood sticking to the blade of the sword.

In front of him, the little loli Song Xiaojun had a shoulder cut, deep enough to see bone. She stood panting loudly for air. She was already extremely fatigued, having defeated over tens of challengers. Even though she was allowed to rest for fifteen minutes between each challenger, but she was still very, very tired.

For some unknown reason, two hours ago, the number of people challenging her increased explosively. And these challengers’ strength was extremely high, all being noble students. They were extremely heavy handed and did not show any mercy at all.

Xia Houwu was the seventeenth challenger.

He had the greatest strength and was also the cruellest.

Even if I lose, I won't lose in his hands. Song Xiaojun did not speak, but her snowy white teeth bit her lips, her gaze determined.

“Haha, if you don't see the coffin you won't cry\*. Previously you've already taken my spot in the list of ten. You think that just because you have the support of Ye Qingyu, that you won't have to worry about anything? Haha...” Xia Houwu licked his lips, a trace of excitement appearing in his fierce eyes.

That's not right!

The little loli angrily pressed her lips together. In her heart, she was saying, this position is mine, it originally belonged to me.

“Haha, right now the trash Ye Qingyu has already fallen. He is useless in the end...” Xia Houwu unceasingly mocked Song Xiaojun.

“That's not right.” The little loli finally spoke, her voice crisp and authentic. “Senior brother Ye, he did not fall...”

“Hmph, he fell five hundred places, he is useless!” Xia Houwu laughed crazily.

“You are useless, he defeated you before!” The little loli said stubbornly.

“That’s in the past. The him right now, is not my opponent at all...” Xia Houwu’s face darkened

“Senior brother Qingyu can defeat you with just one punch.” The tone of the little loli’s voice was extremely determined.

“You... Haha, I’ve placed number nine in the rankings this time, how can he be compared to me...” Xia Houwu coldly laughed.

“He can defeat you with just one punch.” The little loli repeated her words, her eyebrows arching up.

“You motherfucker...” Xia Houwu was about to be driven crazy.

“One punch.” The little loli swung her pink and tiny little fist about.

“You are fucking looking to die.” Xia Houwu was finally enraged. This incident was his weak spot, it was his humiliation, he would not let anyone mention it.

His blade like lightning, and carrying it with it Xia Houwu’s endless anger, it swung out.

The little loli sniffed. The sword in her hand started vibrating, shining with a silver light, swinging to clash with the blade in Xia Houwu’s hands.

## Chapter 034 – Humiliated Loli

---

DingDingDing!

There was a series of metallic impacts, sparks flying everywhere.

The little loli was forced to retreat several steps, her hand going numb.

Although her strength rose extremely quickly, her ranking was still not as high as Xia Houwu. Even after receiving the personal teachings of head teacher Wang, and learning profound and intricate martial techniques, she still could not prevail. Females had a natural born disadvantage in terms of strength and in this type of direct clash, she was still not Xia Houwu's opponent.

Furthermore, in the previous battles, the little loli had already expended most of her energy.

CheChe!

The blade passed by.

The cuff of the little loli was cut, a line of blood appearing on her jade like arm...

“You scoundrel!” The little loli's face turned red with anger, cursing him with the most vicious words she could think of.

“Ahahaha, what Ye Qingyu owes me, I’ll get the interest from you...” A sinister smile appeared on Xia Houwu’s face. He swung his blade again.

The little loli did her best to block.

Ding!Ding!Dong!Dong!

Amidst another series of metallic clashes, Xia Houwu’s blade barely avoided Song Xiaojun’s calf, cutting off a piece of skirt. It exposed her milky white little calf, faintly discernible through the gap.

“You...pervert! Scoundrel!”

Song Xiaojun was both embarrassed and angry. Xia Houwu laughed gleefully.

At this instant, his mood was unprecedentedly rejuvenated. The humiliation that he had suffered, in their first lesson, could finally be vented out.

“I...won’t compete with such a scoundrel anymore.”

Song Xiaojun’s face was beet red, cheeks bulging up, with frustrated tears flowing down her face.

But she knew, the her right now, was not able to defeat Xia Houwu.

If she continued to fight, she would only receive greater humiliation.

And she was even more clear, Xia Houwu's action, was an indirect challenge and provocation towards Ye Qingyu.

Although she was at times a bit muddled, but after following her sister cousin Song Qingluo around, she was able to interact with lots of noble students. She knew that the way these people acted was on the surface right and justified but in reality was unscrupulous and deceitful!

A women's terrifying intuition, made the little loli feel that if she continued to persist, it would go bad for Ye Qingyu.

At that time, she suddenly remembered a phrase that senior brother Qingyu had said when they were conversing—

“The best solution to when you can't win against someone, is not to fight!”

Therefore Song Xiaojun wiped her tears dry, and turned around, exiting the ring.

Even though this would lose her the special privileges being in the list of ten provided, there was still eleven months till the end of the year. In other words, she still had eleven chances. Song Xiaojun believed, she definitely could return to the list of ten.

These days of interacting with Ye Qingyu, who was always filled to the brim with self-confidence, had affected her in some ways. Especially after successfully passing through the monthly examination, this clumsy and ditzy little loli was changing. Her low self-esteem was gradually being changed to confidence.

Xia Houwu was taken aback in the ring.

He did not think that this girl would leave so crisply and decisively, giving up her place on the list of ten. Originally Xia Houwu wanted to use this match as an opportunity to humiliate Song Xiaojun, targeting Ye Qingyu and increasing his own reputation among the students.

In any case, this was Quan Yalin's idea.

Any opportunity that he could use to strike at Ye Qingyu, Xia Houwu would definitely not let it pass by!

The best scenario was that after Ye Qingyu found out about this incident, he would go into a rage and come looking for him. At that time, he had the perfect excuse to defeat and beat Ye Qingyu. It was a pity that the little loli gave up so decisively...

Xia Houwu thought regretfully.

At this time, from his high viewpoint on the stage, he could suddenly see two figures quickly closing...

Ye Qingyu, you've really come?



This is too good!

.....

“This is one of the chosen children of the list of ten? Why are you such a sorry sight?”

A mocking voice, came from the side.

Song Xiaojun turned her head to look.

A fair faced but slightly malicious teenager, slowly walked towards her from the crowd. The one who had just mocked her, was evidently him.

“Who are you? I don’t know you.” The little loli asked cautiously.

“Whether you know me, is not important.” The fair faced youth was Quan Yalin. His voice was bland and calm, bringing with it a slight laughter. He said: “How is it? Did the defeat today hurt you? You must not want to experience a humiliation like today right?”

“Oh, I’ve remembered, I’ve seen you before.” The little loli’s train of thought did not go according to what Quan Yalin would expect. She pointed at Quan Yalin, in sudden understanding and joy: “You are the attendant of Qin Wushuang, the person who likes hiding behind others and scheming, isn’t that right?”

It was very obvious that she had not heard his words, but was thinking hard about who he could possibly be.

Quan Yalin's face instantly darkened.

In reality he was Qin Wushuang's attendant, and he had gotten to his position and status through holding onto Qin Wushuang's thigh. But in Quan Yalin's heart, he had always thought that this relationship, was a relationship between equals.

"It looks like you still don't understand." Quan Yalin's eyes narrowed.

"Understand? Understand what?"

The little loli only just realised, what this person had said before.

"If you continue to walk so close with Ye Qingyu, such humiliation, such set backs, will continue to happen on you. I guarantee, your four years at the academy, will become your nightmare."

Quan Yalin said with a sharp and threatening tone.

He did not suppress his voice at all.

Because he wanted everyone around him to hear his words. The words that he said, was not only directed at Song Xiaojun, but at everyone. He wanted everyone to understand the meaning behind his words.

“Oh.” Song Xiaojun suddenly had a face of enlightenment. “I understand, so everything was done by you causing mischief behind the scenes! You scoundrel!”

The little loli’s train of thought continued on in an unpredictable fashion.

“These words that you’ve said, you are deliberately going against us?” Quan Yalin had a dark expression, words coming from his grinding teeth.

The complexion of the surrounding crowd also changed.

Song Xiaojun was about to speak when, at that time, a clear voice travelled over from far away. “Us? Who is us?”

Everyone’s facial expression changed.

Because the majority of the people could recognise who the voice belong to.

Ye Qingyu!

The main character had arrived !

“Senior brother Ye!” The little loli jumped up in excitement. “Why have you come?”

“I’ve come to watch your match.” Ye Qingyu came with a smile on his face, splitting apart the crowd. He placed a long robe over the little loli’s body, saying “How have you gotten hurt? Did someone manage to defeat you on the stage?”

“The next time, I will definitely win and get back my spot!” The little loli’s smile was like a blooming flower. She swung her fist, her morale suddenly rising.

Ye Qingyu patted the little girl’s head with a smile, then turned his gaze landing on Quan Yalin and the others.

Everyone knew that in this monthly examination, Ye Qingyu had fallen over five hundred places. However, for some reason, Quan Yalin and other, at this instant, felt a pressure in their chests, making them hard to breathe.

At this instant, countless thoughts passed through Quan Yalin’s mind.

This Ye Qingyu had really been lured over. As long as he correctly used this opportunity with his glib tongue to humiliate him, then Ye Qingyu would no longer have a footing within the first years...

After thinking this, a smile could not help but appear on Quan Yalin’s face.

“You...” Quan Yalin was about to open his mouth to say something.

Pak!

Ye Qingyu's hand, slapped across.

His movement were as quick as lightning, and before Quan Yalin could react, half his face had gone numb. Then he started seeing stars, a salty liquid being spurted from his mouth.

The crowd was in uproar, everyone's gaze staring dumbly at this sight.

Nearly everyone saw with their own eyes, the heart of the noble students in first year, Quan Yalin being slapped by Ye Qingyu. As if he was a doll made of cloth, he was sent flying!

Sent flying!

Too brutal!

Too violent!

This...what kind of scene was this?

People had expect that Ye Qingyu would shout, would coldly laugh, would mock, would point his finger in blame. But no one would ever have thought, that this devil incarnate, without even saying a word, would act directly.

“You dare to hit people?”

“This is too nasty!”

When the noble students had recovered after being dazed for a while, they were both shocked and angry.

Some people wanted to also hit back, But Ye Qingyu only raised his hand and gave a slap again. With a pak, as if a huge hammer was hitting a scarecrow, they were sent flying. He did not pull his punches in the slightest, nor did he have the slightest apprehension about hitting them.

Pa!Pa!Pa!

Five consecutive noble students, as if they were puppets, were slapped away.

At this time, the crowd finally reacted. There was an explosive uproar, everyone retreating with a crash.

Those noble students who were rushing forward also stopped in their tracks.

Even an idiot could tell, that Ye Qingyu's strength was slightly too terrifying. It was not something you could overcome merely by numbers.

This bastard, how dare he hit me?

How dare he?

And at the same time, the dizzy and woozy Quan Yalin finally recovered. He spat out a mouthful of blood, crawling from the ground. From his throat, he emitted a low growl, as if he was a wounded and furious beast.

“You dare hit me?” Quan Yalin was like a person who had lost all reasoning, shouting incoherently. “The person surnamed Ye, you fucking dare to hit me? Do you know what you are doing right now?”

“Do you know what you are doing right now?” Ye Qingyu’s eyes were filled with contempt and disdain. “A crowd of brats who has not even grown hair, playing at plots and machinations. Retards!”

“You...you...” Quan Yalin continued to rage on, hysterically screaming: “You’re finished! You lowly commoner scrap, you’re finished...You’ve offended the entire noble student body, you...”

“Hahah.” Ye Qingyu began to laugh loudly with disdain. “The entire noble student body? What kind of bullshit is that? I originally didn’t want to bother with you retards who would form groups and camps, but you came looking for trouble. The entire noble student body? Peh\* , so awesome, you’re about to scare me to death!”

“You...you...you...” Quan Yalin’s anger was almost burning.

## Chapter 035 – Challenging Matches

---

But vaguely in his subconscious, he suddenly felt a trace of regret. He should not have arranged such an incident, to provoke such a dragon\* like teenager.

This Ye Qingyu, was different from the other commoner students. He was a demon king who did not do things according to the rules.

“Haha, originally I just wanted to walk my own path, and leave you to play with your own retarded dog fart schemes. It has nothing to do with me. But in the end, you who think you’re so clever, insists on provoking me.” Ye Qingyu regarded Quan Yalin with disdain, as if he was a high and mighty dragon not willing to associate with a dog.

He coldly laughed: “Since you have provoked me, then you will have to pay the price...” After saying this, Ye Qingyu’s head turned to look at the stages. “Just have a look, a tiny list of ten have made you like wild dogs fighting over a piece of bone, willing to bite at anyone. Since it’s like this, then I will help you!”

After finishing saying this, Ye Qingyu headed towards the stage.

The crowd had no idea what he was about to do.

They only saw Ye Qingyu going towards the teacher in charge of maintaining order, and underwent the challenge requirement testing. After obtaining the right to challenge, he went straight towards Xia Houwu on the stage.



At this time, everyone understood.

So Ye Qingyu wanted to challenge for a spot in the list of ten?

All of a sudden, the moods of numerous students became excited.

They originally thought that the Ye Qingyu who had fallen over five hundred places, would be dejected and crestfallen, Who would have imagined that he would be so strong? Just through judging from the way he managed to repress Quan Yalin and the others, one could tell that his strength was deep and unmeasurable. Where was the slightest hint of him being dejected and crestfallen?

It looks like today, another big event would happen again!

.....

The other side.

The noble students surrounded the teacher responsible for maintaining order.

“Could you not see that Ye Qingyu was viciously beating people right now? How can you not interfere?” A teenager with a face like a swollen peach after being slapped by Ye Qingyu shouted loudly.

“We are only in charge of the order of the rings, and not conflicts

outside the stages. If you are not satisfied, then you can go complain at the year administration office.” The middle teacher said, his face without expression.

The angry, noble students was speechless.

“I’m going to complain, this is a dereliction of your position. This is favouritism, bare and uncovered favouritism...” Quan Yalin was nearly enveloped with wrath. One of his tooth was cracked from Ye Qingyu’s slap.

“Be careful of what you say. Your shouts are affecting the practice grounds. If you continue, then I can only do my duty and discipline you.” The middle aged supervisor said, a serious expression on his face.

The noble students were about to be driven crazy.

This was really strange. In the past, the supervisors would basically be biased towards the noble students. But how come the teachers in front of him, would be biased towards Ye Qingyu? The things that happened today, was really peculiar.

It seemed as if any incident, as long as it was related to Ye Qingyu, would become abnormal.

At the same time, on the ring, the battle was about to begin.

.....

“You’ve finally come. Ahaha, I’ve waited for this opportunity for too long. Ye Qingyu, this time, I will defeat you in front of everyone here...” Xia Houwu began to laugh excitedly

Of course he saw the scene of Ye Qingyu taking care of Quan Yalin and ther others.

But...

I am not Quan Yalin, a trash who only knows schemes and plots. I am Xia Houwu! Through my own strength and power, I managed to place in the top ten of the rankings!

He had absolute confidence in himself.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

He took off the holster that he used to hold his spear from his back, throwing on the grounds of the ring. Then he beckoned with his finger, saying: “Come, I’m busy.”

“You...Hmph, a thing that doesn’t realise his doom is coming. My strength has increased explosively. Today is not yesterday. You dare to be so arrogant, not even using your weapons!” Xia Houwu began laughing maliciously.

Ye Qingyu lips formed an uncaring smile. “To take care of someone like

you, there is no need.”

“You are looking for death yourself!” Xia Houwu’s eyebrows frowned balefully. With an angry shout, his blade swept out continuously like an autumn rain, bringing with it a cold wind that enveloped Ye Qingyu.

Ten fatal blades!

This was a sword technique that he had learned from a extremely strong guard from the Xia Hou military. Every stroke was a killing blow, cruel and ruthless.

Ye Qingyu’s footwork slightly changed, avoiding three strokes of the blade.

“Hahaha, you can only retreat. Do you feel despair? Such a profound sword technique, is something that a commoner scrap like you must never have seen before!”

“I had just used such a sword technique to defeat the little girl. Haha, on her delicate little body, I’ve left tens of cuts...”

“Are you angry? Do you want to strike back? ... Haha, what a pity, that you can’t do so. This ten fatal blades techniques, was specially learned to take care of you!”

Xia Houwu’s sword strokes was like lightning, unceasing.

Countless flashes of light from the sword, surrounded Ye Qingyu entirely.

“Why are you noble students, keep thinking that you are infallible, and are so long winded...” Ye Qingyu suddenly stepped forward, one fist striking out. “

Nine soul stealing fist and claw!

This was namely the technique that he had learned from Liu Lei on that day during the practice grounds. But compared to when Liu Lei had used this technique, the way Ye Qingyu utilised this set of technique was incomparably more brilliant.

The sound of his punch, was like thunder!

In a split second, there was suddenly an atmosphere of a powerful army fighting at close quarters in the ring. The punch was like a cavalry charge, advancing courageously, without retreat!

Ding!

This punch was extremely accurate, landing on the back of the blade.

Before Xia Houwu could react, the skin between his thumb and forefinger ruptured open. The veins in his fingers exploded, flesh splitting open and blood spattering over... He could not hold his curved blade anymore, the blade soaring away...

His smile froze on his face.

Bang!

Ye Qingyu's second punch landed on his abdomen.

“HohHoh...eee...ou...” Xia Houwu could not resist in the slightest anymore. He bent his body, his body not listening to him at all, kneeling on the floor. He began to twitch like a shrimp, yellow liquid being vomited from his mouth, nearly even ejecting his gall bladder.

This punch, made him lose his entire battle ability.

“Why...Why is...it...like....this...” From deep within Xia Houwu's throat, several words were gasped out.

He could not understand. It was evidently him who held the upper hand, and was about to win. But in a split instant, the roles reversed. The first time that Ye Qingyu had retaliated, he had lost.

“Ahah.” Ye Qingyu smiled. “Trash.”

He lifted his leg, kicking Xia Houwu out of the stage.

The last punch, he had already not used full strength. Otherwise, the force of that punch was enough to turn Xia Houwu into a pile of meat and bones. But even so, the force of that punch was not something that

Xia Houwu was able to withstand.

After finishing this, under the gaze of countless eyes, he jumped off the ring.

.....

“Ye Qingyu has won!”

“This... is too quick!”

“He only used one move?”

“Complete domination. The two are not in the same level at all... Xia Houwu already has half a foot in the Spirit spring stage, does that mean Ye Qingyu has truly entered the Spirit spring stage?”

The surrounding first years was very much shocked.

Even if someone had vaguely guessed that Ye Qingyu would win, but no one would have thought that he would win so completely and quickly. This kind of scene was not a scene of two students from the same year fighting each other, but a grown man crushing a child.

The battle prowess that Ye Qingyu displayed was hard to believe.

Is this really the youth that has fallen over five hundred places in the

monthly examination?

Don't make me laugh, if by falling five hundred places would make you able to have this kind of strength, then anyone would be willing to do so!

Those who had previously mocked Ye Qingyu for being crippled was driven crazy.

“Eh? Ye Qingyu has also jumped off the stage...This, what does he want to do?” Someone started shouting in surprise. According to the rules, once you defeated the ring master, you were the new ring master. He was able to enter the list of ten, why did he suddenly forfeit his right?

“What does he want to do?”

“He's walking to another stage?”

“Is he really...”

“Heavens, he's going to challenge again!”

“He's challenging another noble student again?”

When they saw Ye Qingyu walking towards another ring, after a short moment of deathly silence, there was a massive uproar. The students finally understood what Ye Qingyu was about to do—



He would continuously defeat the noble students!

Under the eyes of everyone, Ye Qingyu really jumped onto the next ring. The ring master was another genius student from the nobles, his name was Nie Yan. He was from the Western military leader, and his fame was similar to that of Qin Wushuang or Yan Xingtian. Countless people had high hopes for his prospects.

“You dare to challenge me?” Nie Yan’s will to fight was invoked. “Too good, I was in need of a stepping stone. After defeating Xia Houwu, then losing by my hands, that is a perfect story!”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything, only beckoned with his hand again.

“Arrogance!” Nie Yan’s weapon, was a blunt double edged sword that was even taller than him. Very evidently he was also a student that specialised in strength.

The huge sword swung.

Invisible gusts of wind dispersed.

Ye Qingyu only smiled. Specialising in strength? Then this is just perfect.

He took out a part of the [Inexorable spear], holding it in one hand. Casually he swung it out to block the huge sword in Nie Yan’s hand.

Boom!

As if an apocalyptic impact had happened in Heaven and Earth.

The huge sounds of metallic caused the ears of the surrounding students to ring, as if they have gone deaf.

The sword weighing three hundred pounds or so, was like a blade of grass. It was sent flying over twenty metres, then falling heavily to the ground. The students near the impact spot quickly rushed away as if they had saw a ghost. With a huge sound, a deep crater was formed in the ground. As for Nie Yan himself, he was also sent soaring out the ring.

He managed to forcefully stand up on the ground, shock and dejection on his face. The sleeves on his arms was torn apart, blood covering his arms. The skin between his thumb and forefinger had ruptured, and all the muscles in his arm had torn apart!

## Chapter 036 – Continuous Victory

---

“I...” He opened his mouth to say something, then spurted out blood. With a wobble, he fainted.

There was a deathly silence all around.

This was the Nie Yan who was famed for his incomparable strength!

One must be aware, that previously within the first years, there were very few people who could withstand even a casual strike from him. And yet today, Nie Yan lost in his strongest speciality—

The full power strike of Nie Yan was casually blocked by a swing of Ye Qingyu's spear. It even sent his sword flying, the impact injuring his arm and internal organs, spurting blood out and fainting!

Quan Yalin was both angry and frightened when he saw this scene. It was as if he was being viciously slapped in the face again. He was quivering with anger, but there was nothing he could do!

He suddenly felt, that today he had made an idiotic decision.

The noble students beside him were all livid but right now, their faces were white with fear. This kind of power, not only did they have no way to stand against it, but it was outside their realms of imagination!

Why was it that such an invincible person would emerge from within the commoners?

This was a question that puzzled many people.

Amidst another moment of silence, Ye Qingyu jumped off the ring. He headed for the third ring.

He had no expression on his face, dragging the spear in one hand. The blade of the spear rubbed against the stones tiles, producing a terrifying noise and a series of sparks!

“This...cannot be allowed to continue, or else...” Quan Yalin shouted. If today he really allowed Ye Qingyu to drag all the noble students down then it signified that the entire noble population of first years, could no longer lift up their heads.

“Quickly go get a teacher!”

“After defeating the ring master, then you are the ring master. You can’t be allowed to challenge ...He...He is breaking the rules!”

“Too arrogant! He’s disregarding the rules and is out of control!”

The noble students cried out in panic.

At this time, Ye Qingyu had already entered onto the third stage. The master of this ring was a white robed youth that looked extremely agile.

Holding two swords in his hands, he looked at Ye Qingyu and said: “Haha, commoner scraps are really such brutes that don’t even know the rules. You only rely on your brute strength...if you have guts then lets compete on sword techniques!”

Ye Qingyu: “Haha!”

The next second.

The winds of his fist, as if it was a surging tsunami, completely submerged the teenager that thought he was so clever!

Under the ring.

“Lost...Lost again?”

“The one with the reputation as being the strongest swordsmans, Tong Wei, has also lost!”

“Ye Qingyu’s strength is really too terrifying. Using strength to overcome technique. Even the most intricate swordsmanship, in front of that terrifying avalanche like power, is useless....”

“That damn brute!”

“Demon king!”

The students discussed heatedly.

The noble students were all filled with righteous anger but was helpless. Delight filled the faces of every commoner student. Although in the past days, they did not have much interaction with Ye Qingyu but his actions that was akin to slapping the noble students in the face, made them feel extremely satisfied!

“Where is the teacher? Why has no one come out to stop this trash...”

“This is subverting the order of the challenging matches, why does no one care?”

“What does this little trash want to do? Does he want to turn head teacher Wang Yan’s list of ten into a joke?”

Quan Yalin and the others were like frightened rabbits, crying out loudly.

The people who they had sent for reinforcements had not yet arrived. And for some unknown reason, the teachers responsible for maintaining order only stood around the stages. They did not move to stop Ye Qingyu’s actions.

.....

From far away.

Within the air.

An invisible barrier prevented the students from sensing their existence. Therefore they could not see, above the practice grounds, five figures looking down and observing everything that had happened!

“This little fellow is really making trouble...”

The white robed old man, not knowing whether to laugh or cry, shook his head slightly. He looked to be around a hundred years old, every inch of his hair snowy white, with long white eyebrows that grew to his shoulder!

“Dean, should we really let him do as he pleases?” A black clothed, square faced middle aged man said without any expression.

“Haha, the things about first years, let little Yan take care of herself.” The old man shook his head, white light shimmering around him, then disappearing.

The black robed man nodded thoughtfully.

The next instant, he also disappeared.

Within the air, only the head teacher of the first years, Wang Yan, the great teacher Hon Kong and the burly teacher Wen Wan was left.

“I suddenly feel, the things that this little bastard does, is very similar

to what I've done when I was young." Wen Wan said with a pleased smile. "No wonder he is a disciple that your father, I, taught."

"The little scoundrel really take the tyrannical from [Tyrant] and demonstrates it fully." Hon Kong also had a pleased smile. "I've already said, his martial idol is the killing Asura god. With such a personality, how can he possibly endure their provocations. Haha, of course he follows his character. I like this."

The head teacher Wang Yan helplessly massaged her head. "You two narcissists, you've already concealed your identity for so many years but you still don't change your personality. I can't stand you any more...you guys talk, I'll leave first!"

"Ah? You're going to leave just like that? Then what should we do, about the events today?"

Wang Yan gave the bustling events down below a glance. "What can we do? Just allow the little scoundrel to do what he wants."

Black lines appeared on Hon Kong's facial expression, a picture of defeat on his face. He said, "After discussing for so long, the one who spoils him the most, is really you."

"That's right, aren't you afraid of spoiling him too much?" Wen Wan had a morally righteous look on his face.

Wang Yan gave the two men a glare. "Stop pretending. If I really decided to stop this little scoundrel, then the first to rush out to protect



him, will definitely be you two?”

Hon Kong and Wen Wan glanced at each other, laughing embarrassingly.

Wang Yan sighed and said: “The torturous experience that this child has gone through, is not something that someone of the same age can imagine. His personality is accommodating and he has his own ideas of doing things. It looks like he is just causing trouble, but he must have deeper intentions. And in these years, the academy is divided. When the old Dean was here, he wanted to stop the conflict between the nobles and the commoners. Today, by borrowing this child’s hand to suppress the arrogant and conceited nobles, a good thing can also be done. And the people in the list of ten, should also experience some setbacks. Only through knowing that there is always someone better than you, can you truly grow. “

“But I fear through this incident, the strength of this little bastard will become evident. Liu Yuancheng, that government official, I fear he will have bad intentions again.” Wen Wan said seriously.

“Just leave this to Blue Sky. In this Deer city, even if the city leader wants to act against Blue Sky, he’ll have to carefully consider the master of that lunatic.” Wang Yan laughed.

.....

At the same time that they were speaking, Ye Qingyu had already challenged to the seventh ring.

On these seven stages, all of the ring masters were noble students. Especially the number ten stage, it was originally held by a commoner student called Li Da. It was then taken by noble students through extended challenges, whose new ring master was extremely conceited. He was also crushed by Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu completely dominated every stage he went through.

No one was able to block one strike of his spear.

The amount of force that Ye Qingyu could produce, had completely shaken all the students.

The teachers that Quan Yalin and the others were hoping to arrive, did not appear.

It was as if the academy did not know about this incident, sending no one to take care of anything.

At this time, Ye Qingyu stood in front of the last three rings.

Qin Wushuang, Yan Xingtian and Song Qingluo were on the stages.

From the start of the challenging matches to now, no one has challenged Qin Wushuang.

Because no matter whether considering the selection results or the monthly examination results, the strength that he displayed was too

strong. His strength was like a divine mountain, suppressing everyone till they can't breathe.

The establishment of such respect and prestige was not done overnight.

Qin Wushuang was the number one expert of the first years. No matter what angle you considered him from, be it strength, talent, status or background, it was all flawless. There could be no one that could challenge his position.

There was not one student who dared face Qin Wushuang.

No matter it be it Xia Houwu, Liu Lei, dissatisfied nobles or commoners not content with their position. No one dared.

Qin Wushuang stood high up in the number one ring, observing the surrounding students. He was like a monarch observing his citizens. Even if Ye Qingyu was able to continuously defeat the seven ring masters, it could not cause the slightest change in his facial expression.

On the other side, Yan Xingtian had already accepted forty five challenges.

He had injuries all around his body, but still stood as firm as a rock on the ring. Even the Quan Yalin who had conceived the scheme to drag him down did not imagine that this commoner student would be so tough and tenacious, managing to retain his spot till now.

He had a solemn and stern expression. He looked at Ye Qingyu, not

saying anything.

From Yan Xingtian expression, no one could guess his thoughts or emotions. There was not any joy at Ye Qingyu crushing the nobles nor was there the anger from the number two person at someone stealing his thunder.

He only stood there silently.

No one could guess what he was thinking.

It seemed that there never had been anyone who could tell when Yan Xingtian was happy, angry, sad or joyful.

While Song Qingluo's expression was slightly uncomfortable. Ye Qingyu's explosive actions had completely shocked her. Apart from shock, she could also clearly feel her weakness compared to him. If Ye Qingyu's next objective was her, than unquestionably, she would not be able to retain her position.

Ye Qingyu had a faint smile on his face, walking towards the next stage.

The crowd started heating up.

“Who is it? Who is it? Ye Qingyu will choose who next?”

“It should be Song Qingluo? She is after all, part of nobles' circle...”

“Quickly look, he is really walking towards Song Qingluo’s ring!”“

## Chapter 037 – The Number One Stage

---

Song Qingluo was gorgeous, and could be counted as one of the top beauties of the entire first year. She was usually solemn, aloof and had an high opinion of herself. Her talent was also exceptional. The only flaw she had was that the way she talked and did things was harsh and brittle. Although she was popular among the students, at the same time there were quite a few people who did not like her attitude.

There were naturally a group of people who would be overjoyed to see this haughty girl be embarrassed.

Underneath the stage.

Ye Qingyu only glanced up at the Song Qingluo on the stage.

He did not enter the platform.

“You are the cousin of Song Xiaojun, I won’t make things difficult for you.” Ye Qingyu said with a laugh, turning and heading for another ring.

No one realised that at this time, Song Qingluo released a heavy breath of relief.

And the crowd was taken aback, having never imagined that such a thing would happen.

A group of people's gaze constantly travelled over Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun. From Ye Qingyu's mercy, they could at least tell one thing —

He regarded Song Xiaojun as an extremely important friend.

Ye Qingyu was a person that cared deeply about friendship.

If you were his friend, would that not be an extremely fortunate thing?

In the heart of some people, they were envious.

And then, Ye Qingyu slowly arrived in front of the number two ring.

Yan Xingtian was on top of the stage, looking down at Ye Qingyu.

“The people I'm going to blow out today are idiots whose hearts are filled with a ridiculous sense of superiority. It has nothing to do with you, I don't want to fight with you.” Ye Qingyu looked at Yan Xingtian with a smile. He said, “I know you are very strong but your condition today is not too good. We'll do battle another day.”

Yan Xingtian suddenly smiled.

It was for many people, the first time of they have ever seen Yan Xingtian smile.

It was a strange sight to see a smile appear on his dark and serious face. It gave off a strange feeling, a feeling that caused people to inadvertently believe in him.

“Good.” Yan Xingtian said. “Let’s do battle another day.”

Ye Qingyu clasped his hands together.

Under the gaze of countless eyes, he finally arrived at the number one stage.

Qin Wushuang stood silently above.

“Therefore, the last opponent you are going to challenge, is me?” Qin Wushuang said, his tone calm and peaceful.

Ye Qingyu smiled and nodded, as if he was having a normal conversation: “In reality, I have no confidence in beating you. But today, even if I don’t want to fight, I’ll have to fight.”

“Oh, and the reason for this?” Qin Wushuang asked blandly.

Ye Qingyu pointed at the angry and scared Quan Yalin and his friends. He shrugged his shoulder: “Because of your lackeys who think they are born superior to others, must cause waves in such a peaceful academy. What dog fart noble student groups, that you must make the four years of a student’s life into a nightmare...These kinds of actions, forming camps and plotting and scheming makes me very nauseous. Everyone has come here to learn martial arts. And a bunch of kids around the ages of ten,



who obviously has not even grown their hairs yet, is playing at plots and schemes...Haha!”

Ye Qingyu’s words were incomparably clear, travelling to everyone’s ears.

The faces of Quan Yalin and the youth became exceptionally embarrassed.

The tone of Ye Qingyu’s voice, was like a parent scolding a misbehaving child. Every word was like a blade, cruelly stabbing into their heart.

They racking their brains for schemes, exhausting their efforts and ingenuity was something that they were extremely proud of. But in the mouth of Ye Qingyu, it became the actions of little children playing house. There was no way to express their anger and resentment.

“Your words, although they sound brilliant but in reality are useless words.” Qin Wushuang looked down, his words carrying a trace of pride and superiority. “From the beginning of history to now, nobles have always been above commoners. Junior brother Quan and the others are only protecting the natural rules and order of Snow country, what wrong have they done?”

His words were confident, as if everything was for granted.

Quan Yalin and the others were both shocked and surprised. The confusion and embarrassment on their face disappeared like mist.

Qin Wushuang was such a person.

At many times, he only needed to say one sentence to boost the morale of others following him.

“The so called nauseous plotting and scheming of organisations, is in reality the natural order of the Snow country for hundreds of years, from the monarch himself down to the ministers that he rule. This is the law that has always existed. This is the rule that has always been. This is one of the reason that the human race can continue to exist in the Heaven Wasteland. Junior brother Quan and the others only sought to protect it, what is wrong with their actions?”

Qin Wushuang condescendingly asked.

In his tone, there was almost a majesty in his questions.

“You are only an undisciplined and unreasonable little brat. Relying on your brute force, you are blocking the path of civilisation. Uncouth and coarse. You don’t know anything but yet you spout nonsense here. That is what is truly ridiculous here!”

When he spoke his words at the end, Qin Wushuang’s tone became severe.

As his words were spoken, the atmosphere of the entire practice ground was changed entirely. Nearly everyone felt their chests constricting, an invisible pressure crushing them.

The students were unwittingly convinced by the words of Qin Wushuang. An urge to bow down and pay homage to him was suddenly born!

It was as if this instant, the figure of Qin Wushuang that was covered with golden sunlight, represented justice and righteousness. And anyone who acted against him, was wicked and heinous.

Nearly everyone, was dominated by Qin Wushuang's pressure.

Everyone apart from Ye Qingyu.

He held up his hands, with an indifferent smile.

“Look, this is one of the reason I must do battle with you. Any kind of laughable dogfart\* reason when it comes out of your mouth, becomes righteousness. Haha, even if I've slapped Quan Yalin and the others faces till it broke, there's not any meaning behind it even if I killed them. Only by stamping over you, can I really turn the first year into a more peaceful and quiet place.”

Qin Wushuang's face darkened.

“Arrogance.” His gaze when he looked at Ye Qingyu, was like a deity regarding an ant. “You don't even understand, what level my power has reached.”

“Really?” A will to do battle appeared in Ye Qingyu's eyes. He took off the holder for his black spears, taking the two parts of the inexorable

spear out, each hand holding one. “It’s the same for you. You also don’t know my true power. Come!”

Before he had finished speaking.

Ye Qingyu’s spear struck out.

With a bang, the stone tiles underneath his feet suddenly cracked, spider web like cracks spreading out from Ye Qingyu’s feet to all around.

And Ye Qingyu borrowed the force of his step, to soar into the skies.

“Take this strike!”

The black inexorable spear vibrated in the sky, two parts of the spear twisting and rippling. Along with the downward momentum of Ye Qingyu, it was like the fall of a divine mountain, striking at Qin Wushuang down below.

The winds was as if it was furious.

The black hairs of Qin Wushuang suddenly began dancing in the air.

He shouted loudly, a blue green light appearing around his whole body. An indescribable type of energy, radiated out from all directions.

This was the power of yuan qi of Heaven and Earth!

“Seal!”

Qin Wushuang grabbed something from the air, and with a flash, an ancient sword appeared in his hands. With it in his hands, he used it to block the strike!

Boom!

When the spear and sword clash, a terrifying impact discharged everywhere.

The turbulence was like a hurricane, spreading out everywhere.

The rune formations for reinforcement and impact reduction, was destroyed nearly instantly. Those students within ten metres of the arena, before they could react, was knocked away by this clash...

Screams and cries where everywhere.

Tens of students, as they were falling away, widened their eyes. They could clearly see, that the Qin Wushuang was rapidly being submerged. The huge platform under him was as if it was made from sand, the terrifying impact causing the collapse of the stage!

Gravel and dust soared into the sky, as if it was a crazy mushroom cloud.

The dust covered both the figures of Ye Qingyu and Qin Wushuang.

“This...Heavens, what kind of power is this?”

“The ring is directly destroyed?”

“This stage has been reinforced by an elementary rune formation. This can withstand a full power strike from an expert of the Spirit spring stage, to be directly destroyed...What does this signify? The power contained in Ye Qingyu’s strike...”

“Who won?”

“Can Qin Wushuang withstand it?”

As the dust spread out throughout the air, strikes upon strikes of metallic clashes could be here. Vaguely, sparks could be seen, the sound of the impacts sounding like constant roar of thunder.

Finally, ten breaths later.

The sounds of the weapon clashing stopped.

The dust settled.

Countless people stopped breathing, opening their eyes wide.

In the rubble of the stage, the figure of two people stood tall.

Qin Wushuang and Ye Qingyu both had surprise on their faces, looking at each other. There were no injuries on each of their body; evidently in the clash just now they had not yet managed to decide the victor but they were both surprised at each other's strength.

“You... you’ve managed to attract my interest.” Qin Wushuang slowly said.

Ye Qingyu held both parts of the black inexorable spear together, placing the bottom of each spear together. Accompanied by the sounds of the mechanism activating, the final form of the Inexorable spear was finally revealed to everyone.

“Really?” Ye Qingyu smiled. “If so, then fully display the strength of someone who has the strength of one Spirit spring. Let me see, the battle power of a warrior who is able to excavate one Spirit spring mouth in their Dantian!”

“I can, you possess the requirements.” Qin Wushuang proudly lifted his head. “The [Great Zhou sword] has already been submerged in my Spirit spring in my dantian for several months. To be able to block its strike, is enough for you to be proud!”

The ancient, giant [Great Zhou sword], floated automatically over his head. The sword blade was thick, without the traditional ridge of a sword. Instead, the middle of the sword was caved in, with strange blood red characters engraved upon it, shining with a mysterious energy.

This was a spiritual weapon.

Once a martial artist entered the Spirit spring stage, they were able to open the eye of a spring in the dantian that released yuan qi. The spring would evolve into a Spirit spring, that was able to release water filled with yuan qi. The water of the spring would nourish the body, making a martial artist even more powerful.

At the same time, one could place a spiritual weapon into their dantian, submerging it onto the waters of the spirit spring. Not only could this increase the power and level of the weapon, but it would also increase the compatibility of the wielder with the weapon, release an even more terrifying battle prowess.

Storing spirit weapons in the waters of the Spirit spring, that was an privilege only enjoyed by experts of the Spirit spring stage.

It was rumoured that Qin Wushuang had already had half a step in the Spirit spring stage, and had already planted a yuan qi kindling in his dantian. But from the looks of it, this genius from the city leader office, has an even deeper strength. He was not just someone who had half a step in the Spirit spring stage, but he was already a true expert of the Spirit spring stage.

By opening one spring mouth in his dantian, he could already be counted as an expert in the entire Deer city.

Furthermore, Qin Wushuang was only eleven.



His future was limitless.

In front of him.

Ye Qingyu used a quirky style, holding the Inexorable spear behind his back. The three metre long gigantic spear, covered the sky behind his back, displaying a fierceness that made people tremble with fear.

In comparison, Ye Qingyu's body was tiny compared to the spear. It made people have the wrong impression that this was a divine weapon, and that a normal human could never wield this gargantuan weapon.

“Everyone retreat five hundred metres!”

Qin Wushuang shouted at the surrounding students, commanding them in a practiced tone.

## Chapter 038 – Sharing The Limelight

---

At this time, the students had finally recovered from their shock. Instantly, the crowd heated up. The statue like students abruptly turned into a scene of chaos, with some screaming and with others retreating backwards rapidly....

This scene was like a hornet's nest that had been struck.

On the face of Yan Xingtian and the others, astonishment was present.

Qin Wushuang was already an expert of one Spirit spring. This news made some people dejected; those who thought their strength was comparable to Qin Wushuang instantly became depressed.

And there were also some people who realised another implication of this. Qin Wushuang was so terrifying, then the Ye Qingyu who could match blows with him, was he also at the stage of one Spirit spring?

At this time—

“Everyone evacuate!”

Wen Wan's strict shout sounded.

Within the air, figures appeared. Great teacher Hon Kong's elegant figure appeared from nowhere. He floated ten metres above the ground,

bring a slight pressure with him. His palms were held open, four streams of light flying out from his hands and heading towards all sides.

Within the movement of yuan qi, a new rune formation was formed.

In the pale silver barrier, ripples drifted and flicker, glowing with a strange light. It completely enveloped the area of five hundred metres where Ye Qingyu and Qin Wushuang were in. This was done to prevent the battle causing harm to the surrounding students or the buildings.

In a gesture, Hon Kong was able to create a yuan qi formation of such scale and strength. The strength of the great teacher, was definitely unfathomable.

And his actions, was equal to allowing the battle between Qin Wushuang and Ye Qingyu.

The stunned students retreated silently, till they were outside the area of yuan qi formation.

An atmosphere of nervousness spread.

The air was as if it was solidified.

“Previously you have always hidden yourself, as if you stood aloof from worldly affairs. Now you have stood out. Your strength, is really not bad.” Qin Wushuang reached above, grabbing the floating [Great Zhou sword] above his head. He flicked the blade of the sword, a metallic ring emitting from it. He coldly said: “What made you change the way you do

things?”

Ye Qingyu smiled and said: “It’s all thanks to your hired thug, Quan Yalin. It’s only through his provocation, that made me realise, constantly running away and hiding from conflict is not good. In this world, only fierce people have the capacity to have a footing. Only then will no one irritate or provoke him. My martial heart, is the killing Asura idol. Withdrawing, is not one of my choices.”

Qin Wushuang nodded his head, saying: “It looks like you have finally realised this point. Haha, it’s not too late. Your strength, truly makes one impressed. It’s only a pity, that you should never, ever, have chosen to be my opponent.”

“Words are no use, there is only battle left.”

Ye Qingyu did not want to converse anymore.

In his eyes, a will to do battle like a flame was burning.

Weng!

The long spear stabbed outwards. A thousand pound boulder behind him was lifted in a split second. As if it was a meteorite, it headed towards Qin Wushuang.

The battle begun.

“Move ! ”

Qin Wushuang shouted, the [Great Zhou] sword striking out.

Boom!

The sword shattered the boulder into pieces.

Within the rubble and dust, there were stills tens of boulders flying towards Qin Wushuang.

These boulders were from the collapse ruins of the arena. Under the herculean strength of Ye Qingyu, the boulders were a streak, as if they were really nine meteors shooting through the sky. The friction of the air with the boulders caused a red glow to appear on the surface. Every impact, was at least the force of ten thousand pounds.

Qin Wushuang, with his unparalleled strength, at this instant was also taken aback.

“Great Zhou sword first stance... Seal!”

He shouted, and under the direction of his sword move, yuan qi funnelling into the [Great Zhou sword]. Around the sword, layers and layers of yuan qi formation appeared, like a silver disc forming a strange light wall blocking in front of him.

BangBangBangBang!

Accompanied with the sound of thunder, the flaming boulders struck upon the light shield, shattering into pieces.

Dust covered the air.

Xiu!

A cold light shined.

Ye Qingyu's body was like a dragon, the inexorable spear like a solo star among the dark sky, striking out to kill.

Ding !

The instant the spear point touched the barrier, the formation was pierced. It broke apart, shattering in the air.

Qin Wushuang's facial expression did not change at all. Holding his sword with two hands, he struck out.

Bam!

The blade of the sword collided with the spear tip.

The two figures faintly paused, then was jolted backwards.

“Great Zhou sword style... ten thousand kill!”

Ye Qingyu had always been the one to act first. Between Ye Qingyu's brows, a killing intent was obvious. Qin Wushuang began using his profound sword technique, the ancient sword floating above his chest. In a flash, images upon images of swords appeared around him, surrounding his entire body.

“Kill ! ”

The sword move was activated. Thousands upon thousands of sword images struck out.

It was as if there were only swords in Heaven and Earth. Everywhere it pass, it destroyed.

Ye Qingyu laughed loudly, holding the inexorable spear in his hands. With a bang he jumped over tens of metres, landing next to an arena that was entirely unharmed. With another bang, the spear stabbed into the bottom part of the arena.

At this time, no one understood, what Ye Qingyu was going to do.

But the next instant, the eyes of everyone widened.

“Rise!”

Ye Qingyu shouted loudly, his voice like a God or a Devil's cry.

His muscles were seen to be bulging, a tremor spreading throughout the ground. Through the vibration, one could see the ring over ten metres in diameter, through his terrifying strength, slowly being lifted.

One spear could pick up an entire arena?

Everyone felt that their mental capacity was not great enough to process what was happening.

The shock of this, was like an ant lifting up a mountain. The stark contrast between the arena and the small figures of the spear and the person, made it even more shocking.

And Ye Qingyu at this instant, was like a devil from hell. The inexorable spear swung the entire arena, directing it towards the thousands of sword images incoming.

It was like a mountain clashing with a myriad of lightning.

Hong!Hong!Hong!Hong!

In a flash, there was a frantic and violent explosion of yuan qi. The large arena shattered in the pieces, and the sword qi of the Great Zhou sword was also expended.

The sharp cries and shouts of the students could be heard.



Using one spear to send the entire arena flying. Heavens, that needed at least fifty thousand pounds of force? Was Ye Qingyu's body made of metal? How was it possible that his body could contain such a terrifying strength?

No one had imagined, that Ye Qingyu would use this kind of method to break apart Qin Wushuang's yuan qi technique, [Ten thousand kill]. This was already beyond the limits of imagination for over ninety percent of the students.

Before this, no one had realised, that the strength of flesh and blood could be trained to such a level.

Practice grounds.

With the aid of the cover of the rubble and dust, Ye Qingyu quickly ran.

The strength of the physical body, could only be demonstrated in close combat. Therefore, he must close the distance.

The stone tiles underneath him shattered as he ran. From this, one could tell exactly how quickly his explosive run was. His figure was almost an after image.

This was done purely through the explosive power of the physical body.

The current Ye Qingyu, had not yet trained in any yuan qi techniques. He only relied on the power of his physical body to do battle. From the viewpoint of the martial stages, he was behind Qin Wushuang by one.

But the power of his physical body had long exceeded the normal level of the ordinary martial stage.

Xiu!

The Inexorable spear stabbed out.

A point of cold first arrived, then the spear came like a pouncing dragon.

This was the highest level [Stab] of the spear technique.

The spear style that Ye Qingyu trained in was the most basic moves but it was also moves that were the hardest to react to.

Even Qin Wushuang did not dare to face it directly.

Through the stab of the spear that seemed like it could rip apart space, he could sense a power. This power was enough to make even him tremble, as if this was a power that was an existence not any lesser than that of his one Spirit spring.

He staggered, using his footwork to avoid the strike of the spear.

The spear stabbed the air. Ye Qingyu changed his stab to a swing, sweeping it out.

The three metre long spear, was like the scythe of the Death God, becoming a beam of black lightning.

Qin Wushuang avoided it again.

His figure trembled, then appeared in the air, floating.

The Spirit spring stage was part of the Xiantian stage. After getting rid of the Houtian shackles, one could use the energy within Heaven and Earth to solidify the air. Floating in the air, was one of the special abilities of the Spirit spring stage.

One spirit spring has already been formed within the dantian of Qin Wushuang. The yuan qi within his body, was already enough for him to float for fifteen minutes.

His expression was furious after avoiding Ye Qingyu's lightning like strikes.

To be forced to such a stage by someone who he regarded as an ant.

But....

It comes to an end now!

Qin Wushuang breathed in deeply, opening his arms as if he was hugging something. The [Great Zhou sword] suspended above his head, rotating frantically. A sound like the tearing of metal reverberated

throughout the skies.

Even if you were a normal person, you were still able to see that a strange thing was occurring in the air. The currents of the air slowly began to circulate, gathering around Qin Wushuang.

This was the yuan qi in Heaven and Earth.

The world's most terrifying force.

Qin Wushuang was gathering and storing yuan qi, to prepare for a final blow.

He lowered his head to look at Ye Qingyu. In his eyes, was both pity and disdain.

Even if your body was even stronger, so what?

In front of the power of Heaven and Earth, everything was fleeting.

His swung his arms, the sword leading the flow of qi. The [Great Zhou sword] above his head began wailing, speeding towards the ground and transforming into thousands and thousands of swords.

“Great Zhou sword — Ten thousand kill!”

This was the same as the previous move. But under the rage of Qin

Wushuang, the power of it was even greater. The thousands of swords in the sky was like torrential rain, destroying everything in its path, heading straight for Ye Qingyu.

“Good!”

Ye Qingyu shouted, his thick hair dancing wildly. His body was as straight as a rock. The inexorable spear in his hand began spinning wildly, afterimages being formed, a black blur. It was like a black shield that let nothing pass, protecting him.

Hong!Hong!Hong!Hong!

Swords upon swords landed on the shield, as if was they were punishing thunderbolts from Heaven. The terrifying sword images, covered the entire ten metre area around Ye Qingyu.

“He couldn’t avoid...”

“To directly block the yuan qi swords?”

“The [Great Zhou sword] is a spirit weapon!”

From far away, the eyes of the student were wide open as they looked at the practice grounds. Even if the body was stronger, it still couldn’t directly block strikes that were infused with yuan qi? Furthermore the weapon in Ye Qingyu’s hands was just a normal weapon.

The explosion of the sword images fell incessantly upon the ear.

Qin Wushuang stood above in the air like a god.

After a while, the swords from the [Ten thousand kill] finally stopped.

As the rubble and dust dispersed, one could vaguely see a terrifying crater in the place he was standing, as if a meteor had landed. The crater was so deep one could not see the bottom and the rocks were so fragmented it became like a desert.

The figure of Ye Qingyu, could not be seen.

“Where is he?”

“Could he be crushed into pieces?”

“It can’t be...”

Exhalations of shock were everywhere. On Qin Wushuang’s face, a trace of fatigue could be seen but it was overshadowed by indifference and haughtiness.

Everything was as he calculated.

## Chapter 039 – Raising The Arena With A Single Spear

---

Using this type of move, those who were not yet at the Spirit spring stage, was sure to die.

A cold smile finally appeared on Qin Wushuang's face. He was about to say a few words, when suddenly he noticed something. He frowned, his eyebrows like zagged lightning, carefully examining below.

Suddenly--

Xiu!

A black spear shot up towards the sky.

As if it was a black killing bolt of lighting.

This spear, came too abruptly.

The silver bottle shattered, water scattering. The cavalry struck out, birds flying!\*

It was incredibly quick.

The incoming killing intent, was like a needle piercing through skin.

The whole body of Qin Wushuang instantly went tense, subconsciously dodging, the spear narrowly passing by his figure...

Ye Qingyu held the spear, shooting through the sky like a rocket and passing by the figure of Qin Wushuang.

The robe on his body was shattered by the swords, shreds of it hanging above his trousers, exposing his perfect naked upper body. He was one with the spear, soaring as if he was a dragon.

“Heavens, he’s still alive ! ”

“This explosive strike, was like a dragon’s anger. Qin Wushuang was nearly hit...”

“This Ye Qingyu, really can’t be killed!”

“He’s not injured.....Receiving such a terrifying yuan qi sword technique, how can he be unharmed .....”

The students who were deathly silent, suddenly became animated.

“Heavens, the figure of Ye Qingyu could be said to be perfect...”An infatuated female student shouted loudly. A few of her comrades of the same sex besides her, their eyes also gleamed when they saw Ye Qingyu’s muscular and supple naked torso.

His physique was different from Qin Wushuang’s slender figure. Every



muscle of Ye Qingyu's body was filled with a masculine beauty.

And therefore in the instant the he leapt into the sky, the manliness that he displayed attracted the gazes of countless female students.

The spear stabbed the air.

Expendng all of his force, Ye Qingyu heavily returned to the ground with a bang.

Qin Wushuang also slowly floated back to the ground, a tear appearing in the shoulder of his clothing, the cloth flapping in the air. This made him slightly embarrassed; although he reacted in time, the spear also managed to rip apart his clothes.

Carelessness!

Cold sweat appeared in his back, and in his heart was extreme anger.

In this type of situation, for his clothes to be torn apart by a commoner trash that he did not regard as significant at all. For the prideful Qin Wushuang, this was an unacceptable disgrace.

What made him more even angry, was that he could vaguely sense a killing intent on Ye Qingyu that made even him fear--

A killing intent born from experiencing countless battles.

This type of killing intent, he had only seen a few times before in the city leader's office. Only a small minority of his father's men had it and in the group of kamikaze warriors that his father kept.

Ye Qingyu was so young, yet his experience in fighting was already so abundant. The way he grasped at opportunities was extremely precise as if he was a warrior that had been through hundreds of battles. This made Qin Wushuang extremely stunned...why was he able to do this?

The light of the sun, landed on both fighters.

Qin Wushuang's clothes was drifting about in the wind, his sword floating horizontally from him. He was originally extremely handsome, and at this time he looked like an elegant young master, making one humbled when they looked upon him.

And Ye Qingyu emitted an entirely different atmosphere altogether.

His upper body was entirely bare. Every inch of his body was as if it was sculpted according to the golden ratio. He had a tall body, every inch filled with an explosive and masculine beauty. The black spear was held in a strange stance. Under the golden sunlight, it was as if he was a golden killing Asura statue.

"These two people...are definitely the two walls of the White Deer academy."

"The two best of the entire first year!"

“Too frightening!”

“A pity, a mountain cannot contain two tigers. Considering either their background or their power, they cannot be in the same side!”

At this moment, countless people sighed.

Even if it was Quan Yalin and the others, at this instant they had unwittingly regarded Ye Qingyu as an existence equal to that of Qin Wushuang. A deep fear and respect for Ye Qingyu, was engraved within their hearts during the battle.

Even the teachers in charge of maintaining order, were also deeply moved.

These two seedlings, really were the most exceptional that they have seen in recent years. Even if you considered the genius that had appeared in the last twenty years in White Deer academy, no one could compare.

In the air.

The great teacher Hon Kong had a faint smile on his face, nodding his head slowly.

His gaze passed over the crowd below. The spectating students were increasing. Not only were there first year students, there were now second, third and fourth year students, all quickly rushing here when they heard the news.

Within the crowd, the figures of Han Xiaofei and Jiang Xiaohan appeared.

The usually haughty and prideful upperclassmen, also slowly began appearing...

“This is good. Those arrogant fellows, after seeing such a battle today, a sense of urgency will be born!”

.....

Kacha !

Ye Qingyu's hands twisted, and accompanied by the sound of the mechanism, the Inexorable spear once again splitted into two parts. He dragged the two parts of the spear, walking closer to Qin Wushuang step by step.

Ding!Ding!Ding!

The point of the spears rubbed against the ground, emitting bright sparks.

Ye Qingyu could already tell, that Qin Wushuang had spent a lot of yuan qi. After continuously performing moves like the [Ten thousand kill], the yuan qi left on Qin Wushuang was too little. He could no longer continue to float in mid air.

After all, he had only formed one spirit spring within his dantian.

Truly strong experts of the Spirit spring stage, needed to open at least six spirit springs in their dantian. The springs would then overflow, in the end forming puddles, streams, rivers and lakes of spirit water. Only through this process could one enter the Bitter sea stage.

At the same time, Ye Qingyu could feel a mysterious change appearing within his body.

Under the strikes of Qin Wushuang's yuan qi, he could vaguely feel the existence and traces of yuan qi.

Continue to battle!

As long he continued to fight, he could definitely breakthrough.

Within Ye Qingyu's heart, his will to do battle was even greater.

He was storing energy.

With every step, this strange energy would increase by a trace.

Every step, stone would shatter under his feet.

According to logic, only martial artists who could control the yuan qi in

Heaven and Earth, could you know how to store energy and how to utilise your aura. But at this time, Ye Qingyu seemed to have already begun to grasp and touch on this stage. The previous wilderness training, the constant battles between life and death, had great benefits for him.

Qin Wushuang's expression changed.

He could feel a threat.

A terrifying threat.

The incoming Ye Qingyu, although slow, was like an ancient mountain collapsing in front of him. Although sluggish, but it was unavoidable and unblockable.

“You want to use your aura to suppress me?”

Qin Wushuang shouted. Yuan qi moved all around his body, his aura not inferior in any respect to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu's face was calm.

He seemed to have entered into an extremely mysterious state.

And at this time his head was blank, with a barely discernible light flickering in his mind. The strange heat that had always been hidden in his body, was activated, automatically galvanising into action.

This is...

“It seems to be...the method to cultivate yuan qi?”

Ye Qingyu was slightly surprised, then instantly realised.

Some days before, the little loli had forcefully fed him the mantra for planting a yuan qi seedling inside his body. And at this time, this mantra became incomparably clear. The mysterious heat within his body, began activated according to this mantra.

What is happening?

Could it be that my own body is automatically attempting to forcefully break through?

An unprecedented desire to fight, like an unstoppable flash flood, boiled in his heart. At this time, there was nothing that Ye Qingyu wanted to do but fight.

He lifted his head, staring fixedly at Qin Wushuang.

“Take this!”

Ye Qingyu became like a gust of wind. Both spears struck out, stabbing towards Qin Wushuang.

“Good!” Qin Wushuang shouted angrily, swinging his sword to meet the spear.

He had never imagined that he would be forced into such a state today. He must defeat Ye Qingyu no matter what today, or else the status and respect that he had work so hard to establish, would all be wasted!

Hong!Hong!Hong!

Violent clashes sounded in the practice grounds.

In this instant, the battle had already entered its climax.

The explosive clashes pushed the dust and rubble aside, with visible air currents radiating towards all areas. The rubble and gravel were like arrows from a crossbow, shooting through the air with a chilling whistle.

In the dust and gravel, the clashes of sword and spear were emitted constantly as if gods were shouting.

The two figures, very quickly, could be faintly seen in the dust.

For every first year student, the battle that happened between their peers, had caused them to be stupefied. This was beyond their imagination. They had never thought, that the power of someone of the same age as them, would have reached such a level!

If not for the yuan qi formation great teacher Hon Kong had created,



the impacts created by these clashes would have already injured them!

Xia Houwu was supported by someone, standing within the crowd.

A cold chill was within his heart. A deep disbelief, as well as a crazy fear enveloped his entire being. He understood clearly, that if they directly clashed, he would never ever be able to compare to the two.

Quan Yalin and the others, had also stopped breathing from nervousness.

Their confidence in Qin Wushuang, was for the first time, shaken. The strength of Ye Qingyu, a power like that of a God or Devil, had already been deeply imprinted into their hearts.

Song Xiaojun clenched her tiny fists tightly together, cheering for her brother Qingyu in her heart!

Within the crowd, there were some second, third and even fourth years with serious expression. The majority of them were Xiantian experts who could already control yuan qi, but when faced with the terrifying strength of Ye Qingyu, they could not help but shiver.

“Such a monster appeared in the first years!”

“Both of them are monsters!”

“Who will win?”

“I...can’t tell!”

“This type of strength, even for a second year student, they have no way of blocking>”

“Motherfucker, every time I see such a monster appearing, I will feel a deep sense of unfairness. I’ve trained hard for several years, but I still cannot compare to half a month’s training of these junior students!”

The upperclassmen sighed.

Jiang Xiaohan’s face turned green. A very crazy light flashed across her beautiful eyes.

Because of Ye Qingyu, she had suffered humiliation at the [Residence of Heaven’s Will]. Originally, she had planned to stealthily teach Ye Qingyu a lesson. But during this time, partly because she was too busy and partly because there was not a good opportunity, she did not act yet.

She would never have imagined, that she would see such a scene today.

## Chapter 040 – Breaking Through In The Midst Of Battle

---

Ye Qingyu was in the limelight yet again.

Was this not equal another cruel slap on her face?

This damn Ye Qingyu, he must be doing this on purpose, he must be doing this to show me, must be doing this deliberately to make me embarrassed. ...Otherwise, even if your strength was exceptional, why did you not continue hiding it? Why must you demonstrate it?

The hatred in Jiang Xiaohan's heart, became even greater.

The expression of Han Xiaofei beside her also darkened.

As time went on, the number of spectators grew and grew. For a battle between first years to attract around six thousand spectators, this was something that was extremely rare in the past decades in White Deer academy!

Many of the upper classmen activated their yuan qi, reinforcing their eyes. Through the layers of dust and rubble, they were able to see the battle within. Seeing this scene, the shock in their eyes was even greater.

Tension!

Madness!

Suspense!

Who would be able to win?

No one knew.

Gradually, suddenly —

“En?” A fourth year student frowned, looking strange at his companion. He said: “You...do you notice anything?”

The companion beside him was slightly taken aback. Then he was finally able to sense it, and with a blank face he said: “This is...the movement of yuan qi in Heaven and Earth...it’s gathering...it’s heading towards the practice grounds...this...”

After finishing his sentence, he was in a daze.

The place the yuan was gathering, was namely the centre of the battle. It was gathering around the figures of the two still in battle.

“How is this possible?”

They were both stunned at the same time.

As fourth year students, they had long entered into the Spirit spring stage and were experts of the Xiantian stage. They were deeply experienced in the cultivation process so naturally understood what this gathering of yuan qi signified.

At this time, the movement of the air became more and more evident.

Even those students at the ordinary martial level, also began to realise something was going on.

The loose rubble on the ground, slowly floated, as if gravity did not exist, gathering towards the centre of the practice grounds. This did not make sense at all. Previously, the explosions and clashes in the centre was like a surging tsunami. It was rocks that were sent shooting away, rather than the other way around...

“Fluctuations in the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth...”

“This is evidently a sign of someone breaking through to the stage where they can control yuan qi!

“Breaking through in the midst of battle... This Qin Wushuang, definitely has incomparable talent. I fear this Ye Qingyu will not fare well!”

“How do you know its Qin Wushuang that’s breaking through and not Ye Qingyu?”

“Haha, are you a pig? Ye Qingyu only relied on the strength of his flesh,

he has absolutely no idea how to control the yuan qi in Heaven and Earth. He has not yet even planted the yuan qi kindling, how can he breakthrough?”

“That’s right, to control yuan qi is no simple matter. This is the most important step of a Houtian to become a Xiantian. Without the efforts of days and months, to break the shackles of this realm is too difficult. As far as I know, Ye Qingyu has only recently broken through to the sixth stage of the ordinary martial level!”

Everyone discussed heatedly.

The upperclassmen at this time had already given a very definite answer. The two figures rapidly clashing blows in the battle making it hard to discern which was which. But according to martial theory, the gathering of yuan qi, should definitely belong to the Qin Wushuang who was already at the Spirit spring stage!

“The yuan qi gathering is now extremely obvious!”

“No, its getting more and more violent ! ”

“Retreat, everyone retreat...”

In less than fifteen minutes, the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth that was rushing towards the centre of the grounds became violent. The turbulent air flow was like a hurricane. It picked up countless pieces of stones and wood, and began rotating in the centre of the grounds.

Apparition of Heaven and Earth.

“Heavens, what kind of breakthrough is Qin Wushuang going through? How can the apparition be this terrifying?”

“Haha, this is too perfect. The breakthrough of senior brother Qin, means that the little trash Ye Qingyu will definitely lose!”

“A commoner scrap wants to challenge senior brother Qin. He is really looking for his own destruction!”

“Haha, this Ye Qingyu could be counted as quite capable. If he is willing to become a servant that followed senior brother Qin around, then we could perhaps let him go!”

“Haha, I hear that senior brother Qin is needing a slave!”

The noble students began laughing.

Quan Yalin and the others hearts finally returned back into their body. Senior brother Qin had never disappointed them before. To cause such an apparition and scene to appear, he could definitely crush the power that Ye Qingyu previously demonstrated.

After all, in the martial world of Heaven wasteland, the power of yuan qi, was the true power of those cultivating in the martial way. This was the only power without any limits. Even if the physical body was still strong, there were still limits of the body that could not be passed.

The other side.

The commoner students to some extent, were concerned.

In these days, Ye Qingyu did not grow close with any of the other commoners, causing them to be dissatisfied. However, even if so, from the perspective of their backgrounds, they would forever be of the same level. The outbreak of Ye Qingyu today; destroying the arena, challenging Qin Wushuang was in many people's eyes, representative of the commoners challenging the nobles!

From this angle, all the commoner students to some extent hoped that Ye Qingyu would be the last man standing.

But it looks like, the situation was not favourable!

Yan Xingtian remained silent as usual.

Besides him, he was surrounded by ten commoner students.

And ten metres away, the little loli Song Xiaojun tightly clenched her fist. From the very beginning, she was in this position. There were hints of worry in her stance, but in her eyes an expectation was present. She tightly pressed her lips together, as if she was waiting for something...

The yuan qi whirlwind around the battle, became more and more intense.



The surrounding students who were not yet at the Spirit spring stage had to retreat until they were a thousand metres away to avoid being caught in the tornado. Otherwise, they would be easily dragged into the whirlwind!

At this time—

Bam!

A majestic yuan qi, suddenly exploded in the centre of the battlefield.

The figures were blown apart.

The stormy sea of gravel and dust, rushed in all directions as if it were a tsunami. It struck the yuan qi barrier, causing a deep rumble as if there was an earthquake.

“The battle has ended!”

“Who won?”

The spectators all widened their eyes.

The only thing that could be seen, was the surging yuan qi hurricane transforming into a pillar of wind. As if it was a divine dragon, it was over hundreds of metres high, connecting the sky and the earth. As the winding and rotation of the pillar continues, a figure was whizzed into

the pillar of wind!

There was a terrifying amount of yuan qi gathered in the hurricane wind pillar.

The expressions of the spectators all changed.

“This is bad...they’ve lost control? The energy contained in this pillar of wind is too terrible. If this explodes, it is enough to destroy the entire practice grounds!” The expressions of the teacher in charge of maintaining order were all alarmed.

“Retreat, quickly retreat!” Another teacher shouted in panic.

At this time —

Within the air, a figure appeared.

The great teacher of the first years, Hon Kong, who was spectating turned into a beam of light. In an instant, he entered into the centre of the battle. The next instant, he rushed outwards, carrying a figure in his right hand and setting him down outside!

“Qin...senior brother Qin?”

When Qu Yalin and the others saw this, they all began shouting.

The one who was rescued by Hon Kong, was namely Qin Wushuang. The white robe on his body was in tatters and his hair had also become dishevelled. He did not possess his normal demeanour, his complexion frightened and angry, looking like a sorry sight.

The surrounding students after seeing this, also started shouting in surprise.

The one who was dragged out, was Qin Wushuang. Then the person who was in the yuan qi hurricane pillar, was naturally Ye Qingyu.

“Senior brother Qin, are you fine?” The noble first year students all began crowding around.

“How could senior brother Qin be not fine? Are you blind? Did you not see senior brother Qin’s awe-inspiring performance? Breaking through in the midst of battle, and causing Ye Qingyu to be drawn into the hurricane wind pillar. Nine deaths one life\*. Haha, senior brother Qin has won...” Quan Yalin laughed loudly, impatiently shouting.

“Right, right, right, senior brother Qin has won!” The others quickly coordinated with the cheers.

No matter what, a good tone must be first be set. In the end, there must be a winner and a loser.

But—

“E—Pu!”

The face of Qin Wushuang suddenly went white. A spurt of blood came out of his mouth, his stature wobbling and shivering.

“Senior brother Qin...” Quan Yalin was dumfounded, then shortly was extremely shaken.

Qin Wushuang had a malicious expression on his face, coldly glaring at him. He did not say a word, the yuan qi around his body in total chaos. He looked at the yuan qi wind pillar far off in the distance with a complicated expression. Retrieving the Great Zhou sword, he turned and left promptly.

The crowd automatically parted, allowing a passage for Qin Wushuang.

Quan Yalin and the others finally realised something. They dejectedly followed behind Qin Wushuang, departing in a panic.

This scene, caused many people to realise something.

Could it be...

Qin Wushuang, he...actually lost?

Qin Wushuang lost?

This idea, almost in an instant, appeared in everyone's hearts.

And nearly every first year student, had a feeling like the entire world was collapsing. They could not accept this. The previous month...No, it could be said, that in the previous years, the name of Qin Wushuang was famed throughout. After entering White Deer academy, Qin Wushuang was naturally recognised as the number one expert for the first years.

But at this time....

He had been defeated?

The next second, the gazes that were looking at the disappearing figure of Qin Wushuang finally shifted. And when these gazes turned towards the yuan qi wind pillar, what was in their eyes was not simply shock anymore. It was a type of emotion that could not be described by language or even by any expression.

Therefore, the person breaking through was not Qin Wushuang, but Ye Qingyu?

Ye Qingyu broke past the ordinary martial level in the midst of battle?

He had started controlling the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth?

But why did breaking through for the first time, controlling yuan qi for the first time, cause such a large apparition and scene?

“The battle has already finished. Everyone disperse.”

Within the air, the bland but commanding voice of great teacher Hon Kong sounded. There was an unquestionable authority behind his words.

The spectating students, after hearing these words, could only leave.

When they turned their heads to look at the violently rotating hurricane wind pillar, they silently estimated in their hearts. The Ye Qingyu after he has broken through, his strength, what kind of terrifying level has it reached ?

## Chapter 041 – Defeat of Wushuang

---

The ordinary martial level that Ye Qingyu was in, was enough to face the Qin Wushuang who had one Spirit spring. Then what about after he had broken through?

It was very like that Qin Wushuang would not be his opponent by far?

But this time Ye Qingyu had caused chaos in the challenging matches, destroying the arena, and breaking the rules of the academy, this surely cannot be allowed to stand? Even if Ye Qingyu was a greater genius, the disciplines and regulations of White Deer academy could not be so blatantly ignored?

Furthermore, this time, the group that Ye Qingyu offended, was the entire noble organisation of White Deer academy.

Many people had the feeling, that White Deer academy was about to enter an eventful period.

.....

The ruins of the battle.

Hon Kong, Wen Wan and Wang Yan stood in the air. Their gaze, when they looked downward was filled with a strange light.

“This little brat, has caused such a commotion!”

“The previous month he had always been quiet and discreet. How come he has changed his personality, and become so wild...”

“Haha, I think this way is very good. The killing Asura way means that you cannot restrict yourself, and must act according to your wishes. Only by doing this, can you hope to breakthrough!”

The three people talked with a faint laughter.

The excitement in their eyes was evidently higher than the blame within.

“No wonder he is of that bloodline. The cultivation speed is really too quick.” Wang Yan sighed, saying: “But I fear after this battle, the entire Deer city will have noticed this little kid!”

“This is easy to handle.” Wen Wan laughed. “Today is not the same as four years ago. I want to see, within Deer city, who dares to touch little Ye.”

“Haha, I agree.” Hon Kong began laughing loudly.

Wan Yang gave the two men a look of disdain. “You two uncivilised men, you only know how to use force. We must be careful in handling this and consider the long term implications, accidents cannot happen anymore.”



During the time they were speaking--

Boom!

A terrifying yuan qi energy rose from the Southern direction of the city, heading towards the White Deer academy. Everywhere it passed was like dark clouds covering a city, involuntary causing a suffocating sensation to be born.

This energy was like light, quickly closing the distance to White Deer academy.

And nearly at the same time, from within Deer city, more terrifying yuan qi energies appeared. As if sensing the same thing, they all gathered, their destination the White Deer academy.

Or more accurately, their destination was the practice grounds.

“Who has broken through in White Deer academy?” From the south-east, came a sharp voice.

The facial expression of Wang Yan, slightly changed.

Hon Kong’s eyebrows convulsed. In his gaze, was a trace of killing intent. He coldly snorted, “Hmph, after so many years, these people are still so overbearing. They really think my name, [Blood killer], is a sham?”

Before he had finished his sentence.

His figure moved, shooting towards the sky. He headed towards the area that the terrifying energies were gathering.

“It’s the little trash of the Ye family that has broken through? Hmph, since he has this kind of strength, it must be him who murdered my son Liu Lei! Quickly hand him over!” Another voice sounded, rapidly rushing towards them.

Wen Wan stretched his neck, the joints popping and cracking. He smiled and said: “I’ll also go and do a little exercise.”

Before he had finished, his figure had already disappeared.

Boom!

It was another shocking clash of yuan qi.

Wen Wan had found his opponent.

Different yuan qi clashed together, striking then immediately withdrawing. The fallout from this was as if entire sea of clouds was surging and exploding, with indistinct bolts of lightning appearing. The entire Deer city could clearly hear these clashes, countless low level martial artists shivering in fear from sensing these energies.

The horrifying sound between the fights of high class martial artists was like Heaven's wrath.

“After so many years have passed, these two fellows...Haha, they are still so violent.” Wan Yan shook her head helplessly. Her gaze returned to the pillar of wind, becoming gentle once again. Her lips curled in a faint smile, and she muttered to herself: “Little child, allow me to protect you. You have to hurry and quickly grow up!”

With a wave of her hands, four small almond yellow coloured flags appeared in her hands.

With a gesture, the four little flags landed around the four corners of the wind pillar. It guarded the Ye Qingyu who was in the pillar of wind, not allowing anyone to get near or observe him.

.....

.....

Ye Qingyu was sitting in a meditative stance on the ground.

The centre of the wind pillar was unnaturally calm, as if it was a room that was entirely separated from the outside world.

The surging winds was like a white wall, blocking everything outside.

Endless yuan qi from heaven and earth gathered into the centre of the

wind pillar. Gradually, even the air became more and more pure, turning into a liquid like substance. Ye Qingyu was 'submerged' in this type of pure yuan qi.

It was the dream environment for countless of martial artists striving to breakthrough.

Ordinary martial level martial artists after reaching the peak of this stage, in a flash of fortune would be able to sense the yuan qi within heaven and earth. This was their opportunity to breakthrough. Only by planting a yuan qi kindling within their endless dantian could they break through.

According to martial theory, the dantian of Houtian martial artists was an endless world but it was a world filled with a dry desert. Only by attracting yuan qi of Heaven and Earth into the body and planting a yuan qi kindling, could a Spirit spring be excavated in this desert. Only through using the waters of the Spirit spring, could it begin to nourish the desert, activating life within this wasteland. By doing this, one could shed their mortal body and achieve Xiantian power, extending their own life and strengthening the functions of their body.

And when breaking through, an apparition of Heaven and Earth would appear.

These apparitions, would differ according to the techniques used to control yuan qi. Some people, when they broke past the ordinary martial level, would only cause yuan qi from around tens of metres to gather. While other people, could cause yuan qi from within thousands of metres of form a turbulent vortex, creating a yuan qi wind pillar.

This type of environment where yuan qi was highly concentrated, had very obvious benefits for martial artists looking to break through.

At this time, the location Ye Qingyu was in could be said to be completely saturated in yuan qi. This was evidently the best environment for those seeking to break through.

Countless strands of yuan qi as if they were a liquid, unceasingly flowed into his mouth, nose, eyes, ears and into every pore in his body. Without slowing, it poured within his body.

It was as if his entire body was submerged into liquid.

The body at the peak of the Houtian stage, was currently undergoing a mysterious transformation. Every bone, every muscle, every cell in his body was crazily absorbing yuan qi from Heaven and Earth.

Endless yuan qi continuously entered into his body.

Ye Qingyu's tongue was touching the top of his mouth, his eyes observing his nose, his nose observing his heart. His mind was completely empty, unconsciously entering into a rare state of cultivation.

In the previous battle between Qin Wushuang, the mantra of the little loli, Song Xiaojun appeared in Ye Qingyu's mind. The mantra that she had forced Ye Qingyu to remember, once it was activated could not be controlled. It caused the mass convergence of yuan qi from Heaven and Earth into his body.

The Qin Wushuang who had already exhausted the majority of yuan qi within his body, was struck until he vomited blood by Ye Qingyu, who had entered into a frightening battle state. Qin Wushuang could not resist anymore, and seeing this, Hon Kong plucked him from the battle.

The Ye Qingyu who had lost his opponent, regained his senses and naturally understood what had happened. This battle had become an opportunity for him to complete the final step of the ordinary martial level.

Knowing that his opportunity to breakthrough had arrived, Ye Qingyu began the process of [Forming Yuan].

The so called [Forming Yuan], was to form a yuan qi kindling.

Only by gathering yuan qi to form a kindling, and planting it within the desert in your dantian could you enter the Spirit spring stage. The kindling would, drop by drop, cause a spring to be excavated and slowly transform into a Spirit spring.

This was the most important start of the yuan qi martial path.

The process and theory behind this was already extensively read about by Ye Qingyu in the scrolls of the public library. He was extremely familiar with this process and did not need the guidance of the academy teachers, as if everything was a matter of course.

Time passed.

Ye Qingyu could sense, that the yuan qi within his body was gradually reaching a saturated stage.

Once his body was saturated, it was the opportune moment for him to undergo the process of [forming yuan].

And without him realising, the rhythm of his breathing once again returned to the state at which he trained in the nameless breathing technique.

Under this state, the process of [forming yuan] evidently became easier.

This nameless breathing technique that his father had taught him was as if it was an all purpose tool. It seemed like it could be used in every situation.

Ye Qingyu controlled the yuan qi within his body, slowly gathering it in his dantian.

Although he could not see inside his body, but he still could sense that the yuan qi, as if it was a stream of warmth, moving throughout his four limbs. In the end, under Ye Qingyu's direction, it gradually converged towards his dantian.

More and more yuan qi, gathered in the position of his abdomen.

With the techniques that Ye Qingyu learned from reading, and

combining it with his nameless breathing technique, he started compressing the yuan qi within his body. More and more heat streams began gathering and his abdomen gradually became burning hot.

It was an extremely strange sensation.

It was as if there was a small fire burning from within his abdomen. This type of heat, felt as if it could burn everything into ashes but the body of Ye Qingyu was perfectly unharmed.

As the endless yuan from Heaven and Earth gathered, and constantly compressed, a yuan qi kindling would be formed within his dantian.

This process, would be painful.

As if your body was being burned by fire.

Cultivating was originally a process that goes against Heaven.

Time passed second by second.

Small beads of sweat appeared in Ye Qingyu's forehead.

“Something's not right. In the scrolls, it says that the process of [forming yuan], only need about thirty minutes to complete...” Ye Qingyu was slightly befuddled. His process of [forming yuan] had already gone past a hour and thirty minutes, but he had still not succeeded. If he could not clearly feel that yuan qi was still constantly being gathered in his



dantian, he would have thought that he had failed!

But why was it so much slower than what it would normally take?

Ye Qingyu was suspicious but at this time, he could not divert too much attention to this peculiarity.

Unknowingly, his meditating figure began to silently float. As if his gravity did not exist, he hung from the middle of the air like a Buddha.

And around him, the yuan qi of heaven and earth was so thick that it was like a bubbling spring!

The yuan qi wind pillar continued to have strong winds circling around.

The silver white wind wall continued to rotate with Ye Qingyu at the centre. It separated the outside world entirely, not allowing anything to affect Ye Qingyu's breakthrough.

Gradually, Ye Qingyu became completely immersed into this state.

The burning sensation within his dantian, became more and more intense. In the end, this type of burning feeling extended to every inch of his body, as if he was completely covered in burning magma.

Time passed so slowly it was as if it had stopped.

He did not know how much time had passed.

Ye Qingyu gradually awoke from his blank state of mind that was like a old monk's. His thoughts gradually returned to a conscious state, slowly opening his eyes. He carefully examined the yuan qi wind pillar. As if it was a thin layer of snow under a glaring sun, it slowly faded...

The burning sensation in his dantian, gradually disappeared like the tide.

“The [forming yuan] was successful? Or did it fail?”

His heart jumped. The next instant, incredible things suddenly occurred without any warning.

All that Ye Qingyu could see, suddenly changed —

An illusory world of vast desert, appeared in his eyes.

This was a barren world to the extreme. Sand covered every inch of the landscape. The occasional gusts of wind would appear, sweeping up the yellow sand and exposing a black rocky ground that was as hard as steel.

Not even an inch of grass grew!

## Chapter 042 – The Failure Of The Yuan Qi Kindling?

---

A translucent crystal like the world's highest class jade, floated above the world. It was slowly beginning to fall...

“This is...inner vision?”

After getting over his shock, was a huge excitement.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised that the scene he was seeing, was the desert world within his dantian.

This type of situation was namely the rumoured inner vision.

Being able to observe inside yourself, represented that the process of [planting yuan] was successful. Both of your feet had stepped into the Xiantian stage, because only someone of the Xiantian said was able to possess inner vision。

And the translucent jade like crystal that was glowing with radiance, was the [yuan qi kindling] that he had been forming.

This was an seed of hope that had been formed from compressing vast quantities of yuan qi.

Through his inner vision, the yuan qi kindling gradually drop onto the

sands, and slowly buried deeper and deeper. It sunk to the lowest level of the sands, and in a speed that could not be discerned by the human eye, burrowed itself deeper into the steel like rocky layer.

“This is exactly as described by the scrolls. The yuan qi kindling will bury itself deep within the desert, then slowly germinate. Bit by bit, it will grow and in the end turn into the eye of a Spirit spring...”

A prideful feeling was stirred up in Ye Qingyu’s heart.

The first step on the path of the yuan qi, was finally made.

The world in the dantian contained endless possibilities and was the foundation of the yuan qi martial path. People who had not cultivated, their dantian was just a piece of desert. Only through continuous cultivation and gathering of yuan qi of Heaven and Earth into your body could you begin to change this piece of desert, causing life to appear. Only through this could the human race control the power of Heaven and Earth, exceeding the limits of this world.

This yuan qi kindling, was a seed that could change this entire desert.

It was a seed that belong to Ye Qingyu.

Retreating from his state of inner vision, Ye Qingyu’s sight returned to normal. The things that he could see, was still the rubble of the arena, in the centre of the practice grounds.

The wind pillar had already disappeared and the air streams were

becoming less turbulent.

Gravel and dust were everywhere.

Within the air, yuan qi was still extremely concentrated.

The inexorable spear was stabbed one metre into the grounds next to him.

Ye Qingyu stood up and felt as if there was an incomparable energy in his body. It was as if every muscle, every bone, every blood vessel and every cell possessed a limitless energy that was boiling over.

He had a sensation that if he punched, he could crack open the earth and break apart the skies!

“This is the power a Xiantian lifeform can possess?”

Ye Qingyu closed his eyes to better experience this profound transformation.

He was extremely confident. If right now, he had faced Qin Wushuang again, he would definitely dominate and defeat him in less than ten moves.

Ye Qingyu could clearly feel, that there was an additional kind of energy within his body. This was the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth that was currently nourishing his entire body. The next step in his

transformation was an incomparably long and protracted process. The peak of cultivation was to transform your flesh into energy, turning into the legendary Emperor deity state where you became indestructible and immortal.

Apart from his strength increasing, Ye Qingyu could also clearly feel that his vision, hearing, smell, sense of touch, all five of his senses were extremely sensitive.

This sensation, was like a person who had always been blindfolded, finally taking off the blindfold. The entire world in front of him, became unprecedentedly bright and clear.

He could not hold in his laughter.

With a wave of his hands, he grabbed the two parts of the inexorable spear in his hands. Ye Qingyu looked around the destroyed and chaotic practice grounds, feeling a shred of regret. This time he had caused a little too much disturbance, if the academy forced him to repay the damages than it would really be troublesome.

The long spear in his hands shook, stabbing out.

Xiu!

The sound of the spear broke through the air.

The surrounding yuan qi turbulence that was still around, was sliced apart by the strike of this spear, immediately settling down. The gravel

and rubble that was still floating in the air dropped to the ground, the dust disappearing. The chaotic practice grounds instantly quietened down.

Ye Qingyu strode out of the ruins of the arena.

“Eh? Where’s the surrounding people? They’ve already left?” Ye Qingyu was surprised to discover that the students spectating had already dispersed. There was not one single person on the vast grounds.

He felt slightly disappointed in his heart.

He had displayed his magnificence and defeated Qin Wushaung, and broke through during battle. After doing so many flashy and formidable actions, who would have thought these people would leave after watching only half of it. They really didn’t give him any face...

Originally, Ye Qingyu wanted to enjoy the gazes of admiration and shock. He had already thought on what kind of stance and attitude he should have at that time, who would have thought that the people had all left!

A gust of wind blew past, causing his entire body to feel slightly cold.

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback, then looked down. He only realised at this time, that he was only wearing a pair of shorts. His other items of clothing, had already been ripped apart during the course of his battle with Qin Wushuang. He was practically naked.

“Luckily there’s no one around to witness me...”

He wiped away his cold sweat, and as if he was flying, rushed back in the general direction of the dormitory.

The most important thing was to first find a set of clothing he could wear.

Acting and basking in the limelight could temporarily wait.

.....

“This little brat, why do I feel he has a thief’s head and a rat’s brain<sup>1</sup>...” Within the air, the Wen Wan who had seen everything shook his head.

“He looks like a weasel that is stealing chickens!” Hon Kong added in.

Both of them had already ended their respective battle an hour ago. Whether they won or loss was still unknown, but from their outer appearances, they did not suffer any injuries.

“Spending over four hours to form his yuan. I’m extremely curious, what kind of yuan kindling did this little brat manage to create.” Wen Wan said, rubbing his jaw with his right hand.

“It should not be simple! The concentration of yuan qi when this little kid underwent the process of [Forming yuan] is something that I have never seen before. His potential is unlimited!” Hon Kong said with a



proud smile.

Wang Yan did not say anything.

In her hands, was the four almond yellow coloured flags that she had just retrieved. With a flash of light, it entered back into her body. For the entire process, she had been safeguarding Ye Qingyu.

“There will be many upcoming troublesome events.” Wang Yan gave the two men beside her a glare. “You two violent people, do you really like fighting that much? I believe that you will very quickly be satisfied.”

“Hehe, in this case, it suits my intentions perfectly. After so many years of enduring, my fist is starting to get itchy...” Wen Wan said triumphantly.

Only Hon Kong had both of his hands clasped behind his back, the sleeves of his hands lightly flapping about. He had an indifferent expression, saying “How am I violent? I am the type of person that is elegant and graceful, cultured and handsome and separated from worldly affairs. I am not they type of brute that he is, I only made a mistake by accident this time by being slightly too heavy handed. In reality, I am very benevolent and gentle...”

Wen Wan gave him a look of disdain, saying? “Elegant and cultured? I peh<sup>2</sup>! Made a mistake? I peh! Every time your opponent either has broken hands, broken legs or broken arms. You can cover their entire body in blood, and you dare say that you made a mistake by accident? How did your nickname of [Blood Killer] come to be...”

Hon Kong: “Lets...go, and find a place to have a long discussion.”

Wen Wan: “I’m busy.”

.....

.....

The next three days, the atmosphere of the entire first year was slightly strange.

The noble students, who were in the past flashy and conceited, exercised restraint.

Furthermore, the commoners who were led by Yan Xingtian also remained strangely silent.

The originally active first year, became a puddle of still water. The battle of Ye Qingyu had caused many people to lose their will to compete, shocking every student into depression.

Within the academy, when people saw Ye Qingyu’s figure, they were all fearful and respectful. There would not be many people that would dare greet him.

It was as if Ye Qingyu had transformed into a god of misfortune.

And as for Ye Qingyu's roommates, they had already consecutively not returned to the dormitory to sleep for three nights – they had not even appeared once in these three days.

Many types of rumours passed through the students.

It was said that the academy was currently considering how to punish Ye Qingyu.

Not only because he defeated Qin Wushuang. Not only because he had ruined the challenging matches for the list of ten. Not only because he had destroyed at least six arenas that had been reinforced by rune formations. Not only because his actions had severely violated the regulations of the academy...

These were all excuses.

But the biggest reason, was the noble student organisation and the forces behind them. They did not wish for the existence of a commoner student that was able to completely dominate his year group and was able to oppose the noble student organisation.

On the surface of the calm winds and still water, hid the upcoming storm.

From any angle, it seemed that Ye Qingyu would encounter trouble in the future.

It was rumoured that as a result of this incident, the teachers of the

academy were split into two groups.

One group firmly insisted that such a horse that brought trouble to its herd<sup>3</sup> should be expelled from the academy. Otherwise, if every student followed in his example, then would not the entire academy be in chaos? How then, could they teach? They must kill the chicken to warn the monkey<sup>4</sup>.

The other group said that Ye Qingyu's talents were exceptional and was a rare genius. He only needed to be punished lightly and in the future needed to be carefully cultivated. Little kids, when they were young, who had never been naughty. What matter if a few rings were destroyed, as what the White Deer academy had was money...

Within these three days, the two groups argued incessantly.

It was even said that the city leader and the four military leaders, had also discussed this incident. The organisations within Deer city, whether through hidden discussions or open announcements, all decided on which side they would take.

And as the main party involved, Ye Qingyu acted as if he was unconscious of what was happening behind the scenes.

These three days, he continued to eat and then train, train and then eat. It was as if nothing whatsoever had ever occurred.

Finally, by the fourth day, the dust finally settled.

Concerning Ye Qingyu's punishment, it was finally announced in the stone mirrors of the practice grounds. When the punishment was displayed, it instantly invoked a myriad of discussions.

“Quickly look, quickly look! What does it say on the stone mirror?”

“Hereby the first year student Ye Qingyu...is erased from the rankings...not recognising the results of the challenging matches...forced to stay in the Grievance Hall for three months...” People endlessly recited the words on the stone mirror. Before they had finish reciting, their jaws were wide open.

A look of astonishment was on every member of the crowd.

-----

1. Chinese idiom for someone acting suspicious ↵
2. Spit ↵
3. Chinese idiom for black sheep ↵
4. Punish an individual as an example to the others. ↵

## Chapter 043 – Such A Punishment

---

The words on the stone mirror said that Ye Qingyu was erased from the rankings of the first year. Although he had defeated most people on the list of ten, this result was not recognised by the academy. After, the announcement also said that he was punished by being confined within the Grievance hall of White Deer academy for three months...

It was this type of punishment?

Everyone was shocked, not because the punishment was too heavy but because it was...too light!

The meaning of the rankings to Ye Qingyu, had never been significant. After such a battle, everyone naturally knew how strong this person really was. Even if he was not in the rankings, who could really guarantee that they would be able to defeat Ye Qingyu?

Not recognising the results of the challenging matches?

This was basically equal to scratching the outside of a boot. From the start, Ye Qingyu had never cared about the rankings. The reason he entered the challenging matches, was only because Quan Yalin and the others had made him annoyed and provoked him.

And as for being isolated?

It seemed like this was done to protect Ye Qingyu.

The Grievance Hall was one of the most severely guarded areas of White Deer academy. It was not only guarded strictly for those inside, but for the people outside, it was tremendously difficult for them to interact with someone who was confined in the Grievance Hall.

Throwing Ye Qingyu into the Grievance hall, represented that those who wanted to investigate and enact vengeance upon him were not able to do so. For the groups like the city leader's office, such as the Liu family, they could not even touch a hair on Ye Qingyu's body, at least for this three months.

“This...the academy really decided on such a punishment?”

“This is on the surface a chastisement but is in reality protection!”

“Could it be that there are higher ups with real power in the academy that wants to protect Ye Qingyu?”

“That shouldn't be right. Ye Qingyu is only an ordinary student from a common background, how could he turn peril into safety?”

“Could it be that the academy has great expectations for his talent?”

“So what? Can it still withstand and protect this kid under the pressure of so many noble groups in Deer city?”

The students of the White Deer academy were all talents recruited from

all areas. They were not idiots. After seeing the announcement on the stone mirror, they could all read between the lines slightly but could not determine the real reasons for this ‘punishment’.

The news spread, not only within White Deer academy, but throughout the entire Deer city. Nearly all organisations were affected by this announcement.

Within the government office.

Deep within the walls, came the screams of Liu Yuancheng, sounding like a heavily wounded beast. It was said that there was a long time servant of the Liu family, who after saying something slightly wrong, angered Liu Yuancheng. He was beaten to death alive.

Within the mansion of the city leader.

The youth Qin Wushuang who was just treated by the family’s medic, getting rid of the hidden injuries, stood within the pavilion looking out into the mist and rain. He did not say anything, staying silent throughout. He delayed his return to the White Deer academy, by one day...

Within one of the rooms of the fourth year dormitory.

Jiang Xiaohan stood in front of the window, her expressions many and varied. Sometimes it was green and sometimes it was red. Finally, she fiercely struck her palm out. With the turbulence of yuan qi, the stone table in her room was crushed into fragments...



“I was not wrong, I did not choose wrong...” Her face was slightly sinister. She growled in a low voice: “Ye Qingyu, I do not regret abandoning you in the slightest. I will never regret doing so! You are forever a trash, a trash, don’t think that you can soar to the skies...”

The special martial treasure room of White Deer academy.

Bai Yuqing slowly lowered the jade scroll in her hands, turning to look at the Zhou Yu behind her. “From this we can conclude, that someone wants to protect Ye Qingyu?”

Zhou Yu nodded his head.

“Who could it be?” Bai Yuqing said thoughtfully.

“From the rumours, it seems to be great teacher Hon Kong.” Zhou Yu said in an unhurried voice. “But one cannot blindly believe in the rumours. The position of great teacher Hon Kong may not be enough to achieve this. I fear even head teacher Wang Yan cannot achieve this.

Bai Yuqing thought for a while, then nodded her head. She said: “I don’t care who wants to protect him, this has nothing to do with us. This person’s personality is too unpredictable and arrogant. If he does not change, the academy may protect him once, but it cannot protect him his entire life.”

Zhou Yu only carefully considered this statement without saying anything.

But he seemed to vaguely feel, that the opinion of senior sister Bai about this teenager, had risen slightly.

.....

.....

“Is this the Grievance hall ?”

Ye Qingyu carried his spears. Accompanied by the surveillance of two black robed disciplinary teachers, he slowly walked into the rumoured Grievance hall.

He curiously regarded his surrounding environment.

All the architecture, was entirely in black. It emitted an aura of strictness and seriousness, causing a faint pressure to be felt. Around in hidden locations, there were indistinct yuan qi formations, tightly protecting the entire Grievance hall.

Within the air, there was enough yuan qi energy in the air that was it was sufficient to suffocate a normal person.

Even for an expert in the Bitter sea stage, if they wanted to forcefully enter this Grievance hall, would definitely not be an easy matter.

Ye Qingyu looked at this building appreciatively.

The two disciplinary teacher did not know whether to laugh or cry.

Every other student who saw the black robed disciplinary teachers, would change their expressions immediately with fear and respect. Once they entered the Grievance hall, they basically all had distress on their faces all quivering as if they were heading to an execution ground. For this teenager, it was the other way around. His facial expression evidently showed that he did not place too much of an attention on the two teachers. Not only was he not afraid, he had the behaviour of a guest acting as the host...

He really was a pain and a thorn.

The two disciplinary teachers made their judgement about Ye Qingyu. They continued to accompany Ye Qingyu, bringing him through six rune formation mechanisms in total. Finally, they placed him within a solitary courtyard.

“This is the place where you’ll be confined. Only after three months, can you come out. You are not allowed to exit the entrance of this courtyard and not allowed to go anywhere else. Formations are everywhere here, so if you enter a formation, your life is at risk!”

One of the disciplinary teachers said flatly.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head like a little chick pecking at rice, the very picture of an obedient child.

The other disciplinary teacher turned his head away, and through great efforts, finally managed to suppress his laughter. This little kid was too fearsome, he could act exactly like a harmless little white flower. If not for the fact that he knew the reason why he was confined here, he might really have felt sympathy for him.

Informing Ye Qingyu of the things he would have to pay attention to, the two disciplinary teachers turned and left.

Ka-Cha!

The large, black door was locked from the outside.

A bright and radiant rune formation activated on the door, firmly locking the door in an instant. Ye Qingyu was confined within the small courtyard.

His lifestyle of being confined had finally begun.

Ye Qingyu examined his surroundings.

The little courtyard was six acres in size, as if it was a miniature practice grounds. It was extremely suited for training.

The surrounding black walls was at least thirty feet high, blocking the sight of the surroundings. Both the walls and the floor had imprisonment formations on it, even for someone of the Xiantian stage, it was extremely hard for them to jump and look at the view outside.

On the south side, was a small house to be used for resting.

On the west side of the courtyard, there was a small black bucket. After thinking for a bit, Ye Qingyu finally decided that was the object used to solve his bodily needs.

Everything was really simple!

He went to the small house, and stored away the things that he had brought with him. Afterwards, he went to the courtyard and began training.

Since he had come here and was temporarily separated from the outside world, then he would temporarily not think about the conflicts outside. It was perfect for him to calm his heart and raise his strength.

In this world, the foundation of everything was power.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

The long black spear was like a black dragon. It danced within Ye Qingyu's hands, the swishes of the spear sounding like a dragon's roar. Ever since the process of [forming yuan] was successful, and Ye Qingyu had begun to grasp the power of yuan qi, the strikes of his spear became freer and followed his will exactly as he imagined.

After practicing the basic spear stances, Ye Qingyu only felt bright and

refreshed.

But he had encountered a problem.

As his strength increased, Ye Qingyu could feel that practising this basic spear stances could no longer increase his battle power. Especially after reaching the Xiantian stage, the reason for the strength of martial artists was yuan qi battle techniques. In the previous battle between him and Qin Wushuang, the strength of the [Ten thousand kill] had left a deep impression on him.

“If I could possess a yuan qi battle technique, then it would be perfect!”

Ye Qingyu had some small expectations for the time when he could use a yuan qi technique.

The [ten thousand kill] that Qin Wushuang demonstrated, was truly a killer move of a yuan qi battle technique. This was the essence of the yuan qi martial way, and was not something the [Serpentine form], [Bear form] and the other eight divine forms could compare to.

It was a pity that these techniques, belonged to the truly secret and hidden techniques of this world.

These type of things definitely did not exist in the public libraries.

The only reason that Qin Wushuang possessed such a technique was because he was the young master of the city leader's office. He obtained the sword technique directly from the city leader, it was not obtained

from White Deer academy.

For an ordinary student, to obtain the most basic yuan qi technique, they must save large amounts of academic points before they could swap for it. Many students saved up through hard effort for one or two years, before they could obtain a technique that suited them. Otherwise, after they had risen to the second year, the teachers would teach a public battle technique to them. It was only that the power of this battle technique, was hard to say.

Ye Qingyu came from a poor background so naturally he did not have any family resources.

The only path that was left to him, was to think of ways to quickly obtain academic points and exchange it for a secret technique.

He silently calculated in his heart. Since during the battle in Qin Wushuang, he had completely exposed his strength, then there was no need to hide anymore. The things that he had obtained in the previous wilderness training, he would exchange it for academic points after he left his solitary confinement. After saving this up, and adding to this five or six more wilderness trainings, then he estimated he could obtain at least a low class yuan qi technique.

This seemed like the only possible path he could take.

The greatest aim of Ye Qingyu, in this period of confinement, was to consolidate his yuan qi. And within these three months, he would strive to finally excavate one Spirit spring within his dantian, truly entering the state of one Spirit spring.

After warming up with the spear stances, he sat in the middle of the courtyard. He began breathing in and out, beginning the inner vision and cultivating yuan qi of heaven and earth.

With a will of his heart, the yuan qi within the courtyard began swirling like a whirlpool. It caused ripples and waves that was discernible by the human eye, slowly and orderly converging towards Ye Qingyu's body.

Ye Qingyu's tongue was touching the top of his mouth, eyes observing his nose, his nose observing his heart, his mind a complete blank. His inner vision had begun.

The vision in front of him changed entirely.

He could again see an endless and vast desert without any signs of life.



## Chapter 044 – Excavating A Spirit Spring

---

Carefully sensing, Ye Qingyu finally found the yuan qi kindling buried underneath the yellow dunes.

This translucent jade like crystal glowing with a radiant light, had already buried itself deep into the hard ground beneath the sands by a full ten feet. The crystal constantly emitted a yuan qi vortex, constantly transforming the hard rocky surface around it. It was as if it was a drill, unceasingly burying itself deeper and deeper, finding the most suitable position to excavate the eye of the Spring and produce Spirit water.

Ye Qingyu concentrated his entire attention and energy, sensing the constant convergence of yuan qi from the outside. Using the nameless breathing technique, he gathered the yuan qi into his body, and then directed these yuan qi towards the direction of the kindling.

This was the cultivation process of the yuan qi martial away.

Using the purest and most powerful energy of Heaven and Earth, yuan qi, to nourish the kindling, turning it into his own use.

Cultivation was a slow and difficult process.

Time passed by quickly.

Within the state of inner vision, Ye Qingyu could clearly ‘see’ the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth entering the world in his dantian. In the endless

desert of the dantian, this caused the whipping up of hurricanes with the air currents all gathering around the yuan qi kindling. The originally deathly silent desert was, all of a sudden, filled with gusts of winds and sand being stirred up all over the sky.

At the same time, the yuan qi kindling radiated an even brighter glow, wildly absorbing the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth.

“This is actually a yuan qi hurricane. It’s not the same as what the books described when you gather yuan qi within your body for the first time, it’s slightly more violent...” Ye Qingyu was flabbergasted.

Within the public library, he had carefully studied all the theoretical aspects of gathering yuan qi and read the notes of those who had previously experienced this process.

Normally, after the martial artist had successfully undergone the process of [forming yuan], the apparition that they were able to cause during their first time drawing yuan qi into the body, was just a slight breeze. To be able to cause the air currents to be gusts of wind, was already an extremely rare speed, and the martial artists who was able to do this must be a rare kind of genius...

And Ye Qingyu could see the world within his dantian, where the air flows were like winds from a hurricane, sweeping the world.

Hahaha, could your brother I be a genius in the path of the yuan qi cultivation too?

Previously he had only felt that his strength was greater than ordinary people, and that training in body refinement was easier than normal. He did not think that his talent in training in the yuan qi martial way, was also so monstrous?

Ye Qingyu's mood turned good in an instant.

Majestic yuan qi endlessly converged around the yuan qi kindling, the concentration of yuan qi becoming higher. In the end, the yuan qi completely surrounded and wrapped the yuan qi kindling, showing signs that it was about to liquidfy...

Yuan qi kindling turning into liquid!

This was the most important step in excavating the Spirit spring. If this was successful, then the kindling would transform into the eye of the spring, spurting out Spirit water and nourishing the world within his dantian.

Water was the origin of all things.

This was one of the foundations of the world within his dantian.

From spring into stream, from stream into river, from river into lake, from lake into the sea. At the last step of this process, the entire desert would turn into a yuan qi ocean submerging everything and this ocean was known as the Bitter sea. And the martial artist that was able to reach this stage, would leave the Spirit spring stage and enter into the Bitter sea stage.

This was a long and determined process.

Ye Qingyu had only taken his first step on the yuan qi martial path.

Time quickly passed.

Unceasingly, high concentrations of yuan qi entered into Ye Qingyu's body, transforming into raging hurricanes that fanned the flames of the yuan qi kindling.

.....

.....

“En? This energy...”

Grievance Hall.

In the courtyard separated by the wall.

A person with a sky blue hair, Blue sky, opened his eyes and awoke from cultivation.

In his eyes, was confusion and a slight shock. He said to himself: “It looks like, this is from someone drawing yuan qi into their body for the first time. But the commotion is slightly too big, the yuan qi wind pillar

is not dispersing and is over tens of metres in height...who is it?”

He looked towards the wall.

Over the high black wall, he could see a silver wind pillar twisting in the air, as if it was a wild dragon.

“Haha, it looks like...I have a very interesting neighbour. Who could it be? The aura of this yuan qi is unfamiliar, I have never previously seen it before...” On the face of Blue Sky, his signature nefarious smile appeared.

His figure moved.

The next instant, he was right next to the wall. With a fierce jump, he was able to rise to the height of thirty feet, the perfect height for observing the person in the courtyard beside him. But very quickly, the imprisonment formation in the courtyard began to be activated. Shackles made from black characters, without any sign or warning, stretched out from the grounds and the wall. As if it was whips, it snapped up, catching Blue Sky’s body...

“Oh...Again!”

Blue Sky let out a painful scream, a blue light being emitted from the whip, falling back down to the ground.

“His uncle! The rune formation designed by that old monster is slightly formidable...Wait till your father I is fully healed, I will definitely dismantle this mess of a grievance hall!!” He returned to the ground,

hard. Bloodstains began appearing in his shoulder, dyeing it entirely in red. The injury that had not healed yet had broken open again.

But he did not care in the slightest.

As if the blood that was flowing was from a body that did not belong to him.

“Who would have thought that this little fellow would be confined next to me.” Blue Sky said excitedly. “Haha, this little kid is like a tiger. Previously, he even dared to kill Liu Yuancheng’s son, this time who knows what kind outrageous thing he did to be confined here...”

.....

Time passed day by day.

In the blink of an eye, Ye Qingyu had already spent a month in the Grievance hall.

In this month, he basically spent everyday training and cultivating. Every time during meal time, the disciplinary teacher would deliver food to him. But the food was just simple pearl barley rice, bland and tasteless, barely enough for nourishment. And the quantity of this meal was extremely small – for a glutton like Ye Qingyu, it was barely enough to fill in the gaps of his teeth.

The sun rose and the moon set.

The yuan qi cultivation of Ye Qingwu, was undergoing at a flying pace.

Deep within the desert in the dantian, the deeply burrowed yuan qi kindling had already turned ninety percent into liquid. There was only one last step left before it would become the eye of a Spirit spring.

From [forming yuan] to creating an eye of a Spirit spring, even for genius students would take at least half the year. But for Ye Qingyu, he only needed one month. This type of speed, if it was made known, would definitely shock the world.

Today.

The wind was gentle and the sun was bright.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative stance in the middle of the black courtyard.

A ten metre high yuan qi pillar with him in the centre continued to be formed. The thickness of the yuan qi in the air, was even greater than the first day he attempted to undergo the process of [forming yuan]. His body floated half an metre off the ground, yuan qi that was visible to the human eye rapidly converging into his body.

“Liquefy, there’s only the last step left...”

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth.

The convergence of the yuan qi made him feel as if his body was being torn apart, piece by piece. Within the desert in his dantian, slowly sand began drifting away into all directions. A pillar of light rose into the sky, lighting the vast lands all around. Within the centre of the light pillar, an indistinct sound of water flowing could be heard.

This was the most important step, to turn yuan qi into liquid.

Ye Qingyu did not hesitate in the slightest.

Ye Qingyu allowed the yuan qi within this courtyard to rush into his body, not moving in the slightest. Maintaining his consciousness, he did not allow the pain to make him faint. Using the mantra, he directed the yuan qi that had entered into his body to converge upon the light pillar in the desert.

Time went so slow it was as if time had stopped entirely.

He did not know how much time had passed, before this pillar of light began to pale.

Within the black courtyard, the wind pillar that was crazily howling and twisting, also began to be dispersed.

When Ye Qingyu entered into the state of inner vision again, he discovered that the yellow sands that had been dispersed, were now once again covering everything. It was as if nothing had happened. He could no longer sense the yuan qi kindling that was hidden deep beneath the



rocky grounds.

“This is...What happened? Could I have failed the process of turning it to liquid?”

Ye Qingyu was afraid.

However, the next instant, a clear spring soundlessly emerged from beneath the yellow grounds. Drop by drop, it continued to nourish the surrounding yellow sands...

“Yuan qi spring!”

Ye Qingyu could not help but be taken aback, not suppressing his shout of joy.

This was the yuan qi spring!

He had managed to turn yuan qi into liquid!

Not only had he planted an eye of a spring under the rocky ground, but the water from the spring had already begun to spread. This result was so much better than what he had originally predicted, completing the entire process in one step. Very little people were able to directly after turning yuan qi into liquid, to also cause the yuan qi spring to nourish the desert.

The Spirit spring spilling out, was a true sign that you had reached the Spirit spring stage.

From this moment on, Ye Qingyu had completely stepped into the Spirit spring stage.

He was only at the early stages of one Spirit spring, but as long as he continued to cultivate and the waters continued to spill, to reach the middle stages or high stages was not a problem.

Exiting from the state of inner vision. Ye Qingyu began jumping up and down in triumph.

He had finally reached this day.

Previously reaching the peak of the body refinement stage, signified that he was already firmly on the path of martial cultivation. And right now, finally entering into the Spirit spring stage represented that he had attained the next level, opening the door and becoming a true 'martial artist'.

As he recovered from his emotional stage, Ye Qingyu turned to look at the inexorable spear beside him. With a gesture of his hands and a surge of yuan qi the inexorable spear was grabbed firmly in his hands.

With a will of his heart, the long spear automatically flew into his hands.

He was right now learning how to control yuan qi to interact with objects.

In the battle, Qin Wushuang could, using the yuan qi in his body, control the [Great Zhou sword] to perfection, as if it were a part of his arm, the power extremely great. Right now, Ye Qingyu had also reached the one Spirit spring stage so in theory he could also use yuan qi to control weapons.

Ye Qingyu tested it right now, trying to discover the secrets behind using yuan qi to control objects.

He very quickly discovered that doing so exhausted yuan qi at a rapid rate.

After a martial artist entered the Spirit spring stage, every time he used yuan qi, the yuan qi was spent from inside the spring in his dantian. The more yuan qi used, the less yuan qi that would be within the Spirit spring. If the yuan qi was completely exhausted, then a long process was needed to recover the yuan qi. According to the scrolls, spending all the yuan qi within the body, was quite harmful for a martial artist.

Extremely strong yuan qi battle techniques was extremely effective to kill or injure but needed a high amount of yuan qi. After using such a technique, it was very possible that it could exhaust all the yuan qi in your body, causing you not to be able to continue using such a technique. For example, after continuously using the [Ten thousand kill], Qin Wushuang was not able to use it for a third time.

After practicing for a while, Ye Qingyu placed his attention on solidifying the air.

According to theory, after entering the one Spirit spring stage, one was

able to solidify the air. During the battle, Qin Wushuang floated in midair and avoided Ye Qingyu's strikes. From an high position, he constantly struck killing blows, forcing Ye Qingyu into a troublesome position.

After trying for several times, the legs of Ye Qingyu finally left the ground shakily, beginning to float.

“Haha, interesting. Does this mean that I can fly in the later stages?”

Ye Qingyu started crying in excitement.

The sensation was really too fantastic.

He activated the yuan qi within his body, continuing to rise. Although his figure was shaky, he did not fall down.

Half a metre.....

One metre.....

Two metre.....

Four metres.....

The figure of Ye Qingyu began to float, higher and higher.

Within the world in the dantian, the waters of Spirit spring began bubbling as if it was boiling. Surging and gushing, the clear Spring waters turned into a white mist, entering into the four limbs and every part of the body, bringing an endless energy to the body.

This white mist, was known as the inner yuan.

Inner yuan, was namely the true energy source of yuan qi martial artists.

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu's figure was eight metres off the ground.

Considering the fact that he getting closer and closer to the top of the wall, a strange thought appeared in his mind.

If he could float so high, then did this not mean he could just jump out of the courtyard he was imprisoned in?

He could not help but try it.

At this time—

“I advise you not to do that...”A voice said from the other side of the wall.

## Chapter 045 – Repayment Of The Ancient Book

---

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, about to ask the voice why. At this time, he had already floated thirty feet high. Accompanied by the sounds of objects shooting through the air, shackles upon shackles of black chains appeared from the air and the wall, firmly latching onto Ye Qingyu's body...

“Ouch, it hurts...”

Ye Qingyu let out a sharp breath, feeling pain pervading throughout his soul. Every bone in his body was as if it was broken into pieces, and causing yuan qi unable to be gathered. He fell headlong towards the ground, smashing into the hard surface, and did not recover until a long while.

If he was not at the peak of the body refinement, with tough muscles and durable bones, this would definitely have turned him into meat paste.

“Hahahahaha .....” From the next courtyard, came a cackle like thunder, not disguising at all his amusement from Ye Qingyu's misfortune.

Ye Qingyu sat up, rubbing his back. Apart from being shocked and offended, he could not help but feel amazed. The courtyard wall was filled with formations that prevented noise from passing through, so for this person's laughter to be able to be heard so clearly, the person who was laughing must have terrifying strength.

Above his head, shackles were still quivering, slowly fading away.

Ye Qingyu carefully examined these objects and discovered these were not 'shackles' at all. These were black runes tightly grouped together, forming a dense beam. It seems that he had previously floated too high and activated some sort of formation. That was why he had been thrashed so harshly, and suffered such a painful experience.

"Motherfucker, wait till your father I is strong enough, I will definitely dismantle this formation...Ow, ow, it's so painful."

Ye Qingyu bitterly cursed.

The voice from over the wall sounded again. "Good little kid, you have the same temperament as me. You have ambition, I like you."

Ye Qingyu continued breathing roughly and after recovering from the pain all over his body, his curiosity was aroused. He loudly shouted: "Who's the person behind the wall? Why did you laugh so loudly at my suffering?"

This time, there was no reply.

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback, shouting loudly again.

There was still not a reply.

“Damn him, is he a mute?” Ye Qingyu silently seethed, and seeing the discussion would not continue, did not ask any further. He began sitting in a meditative stance, recovering the yuan qi that he had expending on trying to control objects and floating.

The previous experiments, had expended over a quarter of the yuan qi within the Spirit spring. The consumption was definitely not negligible.

Only after an hour, was the amount of yuan qi in his body recovered to his previous state.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head with satisfaction. At this time, something unexpected occurred.

When the yuan qi recovered to its optimal state, Ye Qingyu could suddenly feel a heat activating within his mind. Before he could react, his sea of consciousness suddenly glowed with a golden splendour. The mysterious bronze book [Fiendgod<sup>1</sup> titled chart] activated, vibrating with a humming sounds, as if it had came alive.

“What’s happening?”

Ye Qingyu was shocked by the events.

At this time, he could clearly feel within the desert world in his dantian, the yuan qi within the Spirit spring was as if it had lost control. It wildly dispersed throughout his entire body, finally turning into a stream of heat that entered into his sea of consciousness and was absorbed by the bronze book.



The speed at which this occurred was extreme.

There was no way that Ye Qingyu could control this process.

In the blink of the eye, half the energy in the Spirit spring was forcefully absorbed by the bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart].

And this process, continued to become fiercer and fiercer.

Under Ye Qingyu's panic, he quickly tried to halt the yuan qi, wanting the yuan qi within the Spirit spring to stop flowing outside.

From the perspective of an expert in the Spirit spring stage, the yuan qi within the Spirit spring was the foundation of everything. Once it was all gone, not only did the martial artist need to repeat the process of [forming yuan] to excavate a new Spirit spring, it would also hurt the foundations of the martial artist.

But the suction power of the bronze book, was incomparably great. No matter how Ye Qingyu struggled, even using the nameless breathing technique to prevent the absorption, the effect was not particularly useful.

Within the world in the dantian, the Spirit spring was as if it had turned into a fountain. It crazily spurted out spirit qi, heading to the bronze book within his sea of consciousness.

The body of Ye Qingyu, was as if he had lost all control, finding it hard to even move.

Time passed second by second.

This process, continued for approximately an hour of time.

One hour later, Ye Qingyu's face was deathly pale, breathing raggedly.

The Spirit spring that he had managed to excavate after so much effort had been sucked completely dry, turning into a desert again. There was only a deep and dry cracked hole left, where the eye of the Spring used to be located...

A unprecedented feeling of weakness and inability, enveloped Ye Qingyu's entire body.

He was like an old man who had lived out his life, reaching the end of his road. The flames of his life was like a candle in the wind, possibly extinguishing at any moment.

"I'm finished, I'm finished, this time I'm really finished...This bronze book is too evil, it has really absorbed all by inner yuan. The inner yuan that I have worked so hard to cultivate has become the possession of this Bronze book..."

Beads of sweat that was as large as beans, began dripping down from Ye Qingyu's forehead.

His brain worked furiously, thinking of all the possibilities, trying his best to come up with a solution.

At this time, within his sea of consciousness, the vibrating bronze book [Fiendgod titled chart] finally stopped moving. It radiated with a pale golden light, incomparably bright and radiant.

Characters and characters of strange writing appeared on the smooth cover of the bronze book. One could vaguely see a faint red in these characters, as if they were written using blood.

This scene was incomparably peculiar.

The next instant, something abnormal happened again. The pale golden light, as if it was sucked in by a giant whale, went inside the interior of the Bronze book. The originally seamless ancient book, was as if it was blown open by the spring wind, crashing unexpectedly and automatically opening...

Ye Qingyu's eyesight was not poor, but even he could only vaguely discern the scene within the book, not being able to clearly see what was written.

And then the bronze book closed seamlessly again.

Then, it started buzzing and vibrating again.

And after that, the pale golden light that had entered into the bronze book, returned again.

Before Ye Qingyu could react, the pale golden light spurted out again, transforming into a long streak of yuan qi. It passed through the endless sea of consciousness, as if it was travelling through space, and again entered into the four limbs and bones of Ye Qingyu. The energy contained within was even purer and warmer, finally turning into a stream of inner yuan, returning to the dried up Spring...

This type of change, was entirely out of Ye Qingyu's calculation.

And what it brought, was an inexhaustible energy.

Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that his body which had become malnourished and famished, once again began to fill with life. The feeling of weakness was completely swept away, and what replaced it was a strength that was even greater than his previous condition.

In his inner vision, the dehydrated eye of the Spring, had already become filled with signs of life again.

The diameter of this spring, was at least ten times greater than it was before, at least fifteen or sixteen metres in diameter. The yuan qi water within was clear and bubbling, as if it was boiling water, filled with vitality. It was purer by who knows how many times, and one was not able to observe any hint of impurities within.

The yuan qi spring erupted in the air as if it was a geyser, shooting over

several hundred metres. The surging roar of this was like that of a dragon's growl.

“My inner yuan is so much purer compared to before, with faster flows rates and greater potential! The rate at which it nourishes the desert has a direct impact on your cultivation speed, this means the time till excavating the new Spirit spring has shortened too!

Ye Qingyu was both astonished and exultant.

He had never imagined that such a thing would happen.

After the bronze book had completely absorbed all his inner yuan, Ye Qingyu thought he was completely done for. He had already decided that this Bronze book was an malicious object of some sort, and had never thought that the Bronze book would absorb the inner yuan and purify it, returning it to him once again.

This process, was like repayment.

The newly obtained inner yuan, was more pure, more condensed and more formidable. It was simply a completely new change.

“This bronze book, is definitely a treasure!”

Ye Qingyu had already judged without any uncertainties.

If according to the normal cultivation speed, by Ye Qingyu's estimates,

he would need at least a month's time before the purity and size of the Spirit spring would reach such a state and have such vitality and flow rates!

But through the bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart] absorbing and returning the inner yuan, in less than an hour this was done.

Ye Qingyu realised, he had found a treasure.

A treasure that was priceless.

Just through the fact that it can aid in cultivation, this type of treasure was enough to enter the top ranks of Spirit instruments?

His mood suddenly changed for the better.

“Hahahaha... when luck comes, no one can block it.”

The bronze book he had only found by coincidence, who would have thought that it was such a miraculous item.

In a state of excitement, Ye Qingyu observed his sea of consciousness.

He could only see that within the sea of consciousness, the Bronze book again returned to its previous calm and peaceful state. It did not vibrate or buzz anymore, nor was there any light emitted from it. It was as if it had once again returned to an endless sleep.

Ye Qingyu attempted to communicate it with his will, but there was no reaction at all.

Too mysterious.

It seems like this bronze book, [Fiendgod Titled chart, really contained endless mysteries.

Ye Qingyu guessed, that through the absorption and return of the inner yuan process, the bronze book had also received some kind of energy replenishment, so some change had occurred with it. But most likely, his inner yuan stage was too far away and could not meet its needs at all.

In other words, to awaken the bronze book, an enormous amount of inner yuan was needed?

Of course, this was only Ye Qingyu's guess.

But no matter what, the existence of this bronze book must not be made known to others.

Ye Qingyu's mind was sharp and cunning. He was able to guess at some the secrets and mysteries behind this bronze book and came to a decision.

As his emotions calmed down, Ye Qingyu thought of something again. With a will of his heart, the bronze book came out from his sea of consciousness. Accompanied by a radiant light, the palm sized book again appeared in his right hand.

It remained as heavy as it ever was.

Ye Qingyu attempted to open the book.

The first page was able to opened.

This page Ye Qingyu had already opened before, and what he had seen was strange characters organised in some sort of an index.

It was still the characters from the God and Devil age, complicated and intricate. For a normal person, one look at it would cause them to feel dizzy.

But not for Ye Qingyu.

Through these days of studies, Ye Qingyu had already grasped all the books regarding forgotten characters and languages. He was able to recognise the characters from the God and Devil age, although his comprehension was still basic, but he was able to understand the general meaning.

Ye Qingyu could clearly remember during the first time he had attempted to open this bronze book, he was able to open the first page and saw something akin to an index. But as for the pages after, he was not able to open it in the slightest, no matter what method he attempted.

But this time, it was different.



The first row of characters on the index was not grey but had turned into a pale golden colour.

“This means...”

Ye Qingyu suddenly moved, his finger placed on the silent characters. A sensation as if touching a lover’s smooth skin, and the previously closed pages automatically opened, turning to the directed section of the book.

On the palm sized page, a virtual projection like an illusion was produced.

-----

1. So I’ve previously translated 神魔 as God and Devil. But having recently reading Desolate Era, I’ve also come across similar terms. Looking at the other translations, they seem to have translated it as Fiendgod, which seems more easier to fit in within the English translation so I’ve decided to adopt this phrase and it also makes it easier to remember. [↩](#)

## Chapter 046 – The Four Stances Of The Golden Armoured King

---

It was an extremely realistic projection.

A middle aged man wearing golden armour and having a golden crown, looking like the very picture of an emperor.

The first instant Ye Qingyu saw the projection, it was as if it had come to life. An indescribable aura of pressure and majesty was emitted from this projection, as if the sky was cracking and falling. As if he was an ant facing a dragon.

The glimmering golden armour, the crown surrounding him, the strange spear with a dragon's head and the heavy gaze of this middle aged man...

This was an image of a divine king!

Within Ye Qingyu's mind, this fact came unknowingly to him.

He did not know the name of this middle aged man, nor had he ever seen such a face before. He did not know the history of this golden armour, but Ye Qingyu could feel, this middle aged man was definitely not normal, nor was he a martial expert...he was a deity!

A real deity!

From Ye Qingyu's estimation, even experts of the Bitter sea stage or higher, would not be the opponent of this middle aged man.

From the day he was born till now, Ye Qingyu had never experienced such a pressure before.

Even if this was from just a projection.

Just a projection.

“The entire page only has this scene, what does this mean?”

Ye Qingyu carefully observed, but he felt that the page contained too much information and yet nothing at the same time. The bronze book was too mysterious, it was an object from the God and Devil era. It was only a pity that it wasn't a secret martial technique...

And as he was thinking this thought, a change appeared on the image.

The golden armoured King who was standing quietly, suddenly moved.

Two beams of golden light, as if it were two divine swords, stabbed out from the Bronze book. Ye Qingyu instinctively backed away and in the next instant, the golden armoured King jumped out straight from the bronze book, as if it had really come alive...

“This is bad.....”

Ye Qingyu directly threw away the bronze book.

He had really been frightened by this strange and mysterious book today.

Who would have guessed that after the ancient book left his hands, it did not fall down, but floated in the middle of the air.

The golden armour King came rushing towards him, completely passing through Ye Qingyu's body, as if it were just a mirage.

Ye Qingyu only just reacted. What rushed at him was just an illusion and not a real existence, it was only that it was too realistic, as if it had really come alive. The pressure it emitted made it difficult for him to determine whether it was true or not.

After being relieved slightly, he then saw the golden armoured King let out a commanding shout. Within the air, he demonstrated four martial battle techniques, at a speed which was enough to make one dizzy and disorientated.

As the moves were exhibited, there was a crash like a mountain breaking apart and indistinct scenes of volcanoes erupting appeared, as if the apocalypse had arrived...

This was the terrifying power of the four moves, it had the power to break apart Heaven and Earth.

It was only a pity, that before Ye Qingyu could carefully observe in detail, the golden armoured King had already finished exhibiting these moves. He jumped, returning back into the bronze book and transforming back again to a picture on the page, not moving in the slightest as if he had fallen asleep.

Ye Qingyu stood there blankly. With a wave of his hands, the [Fiendgod titled chart] floated back to his hands.

With a will of his heart, and a flash of light, Ye Qingyu stored the book back into his sea of consciousness.

“The power of these four battle techniques are endless, it’s only a pity that I did not observe it fully, it really is...” Regret was within his heart. When he was thinking, a golden light suddenly flashed in his mind and a bizarre information appeared unknowingly within his mind.

After Ye Qingyu perceived what the information was, his jaw was wide open.

“This is the four battle techniques...this is the complete entire training process for these techniques...Heavens!”

Ye Qingyu was nearly driven insane.

He would have never thought, that just as when he was being troubled by this exact problem, it would be solved. The four techniques that the golden armoured King demonstrated, along with the mantra appeared within his mind miraculously without anything missing.

This sensation was too wonderful.

It was as if it was a bloodline inheritance, or as if it was something that Ye Qingyu had already known tens of thousands years ago but had forgotten and now suddenly remembering.

Very soon, Ye Qingyu became immersed within these four stances.

.....

.....

Time passed day by day.

In the blink of an eye, another month had passed.

Ye Qingyu had already been confined in the Grievance Hall for a total of two months.

The him who had lost all contact with the outside world, did not know what had occurred outside nor did anyone visit him.

Even very little sound would appear in this courtyard. Crows would not fly above, and the voice next to him did not appear again. Apart from Ye Qingyu talking to himself, the environment was quiet to an extent that it was slightly scary.

In this lonely and quiet environment, the strength of Ye Qingyu began altering fundamentally.

Under the blazing sun, the Ye Qingyu who had a bare torso, was holding the inexorable spear in a strange stance behind his back. The pale golden light shined on his body soaked with sweat, as if pearls were hanging on his body. His posture and stance was extremely peculiar, his entire person looking like a sculpture.

An aura as if he had exceeded his own realm, surrounded and completely enveloped his body.

Xiu !

A light flashed.

Ye Qingyu was not seen to move, but a part of the inexorable spear had already struck out.

It was impossible to see the spear.

It was as if the spear had entirely disappeared in thin air.

Nearly at the same time, the long spear appeared from an impossible angle.

It was completely not in any normal thrown trajectory.

Nor did it emerge from at the same horizontal height as him.

Instead —

It struck from the sky.

Yes, the inexorable spear fell from the sky.

It was as if within the clouds, there was a deity that threw a giant flag from high up downwards, as if it was judging all lifeform.

The long spear was like a banner. Bringing with it a power of light and justice, it flew like a beam of light, landing on the ground twenty metres away. Even the black ground that had been reinforced by mysterious runes, and the hardness that was comparable to tempered steel, was stabbed through till it was one metre deep.

What was even more strange, was that an abnormal energy was surrounding the spear.

A terrifying power!

One could imagine, if the spear that had struck from the sky, if it landed on a person, it would pass through their body in an instant.

Ye Qingyu was confident, that opponents such as Qin Wushuang, would find it extremely difficult to leave with their life intact if faced with



this move.

**【Banner of Heaven and Earth】 !**

The name of this stance, was known as the Banner of Heaven and Earth.

It was the third technique of the four techniques of the golden armoured King, and was also the most intricate stance.

Ye Qingyu's facial expression did not change, and the right spear in his hand moved at a high speed, stabbing out. A silver flash suddenly pierced through the air, the unstoppable spear strike destroying everything in its path. Everything within twenty metres was stabbed and rendered apart.

As the blur of the spear dispersed in the air, a twenty metre vacuum was formed in the air, as if space itself was torn apart!

**【Fierce dragon pierce!】 !**

The first stance of the golden armoured king four techniques, [Fierce dragon pierce].

The power of this was comparable to the full power strike of someone at the second Spirit spring stage.

As he performed the [Fierce dragon pierce], the figure of Ye Qingyu, as if he was being pulled by some sort of force, came instantly to the

position where the banner was stabbed into the ground. His body's momentum was like the avalanche of a mountain, breaking apart layers of layers of air!

This was the power of the first and third stance within the four techniques of the golden armoured king.

The endless power of these two stances being used consecutively was terrifying, able to produce a chilling impact.

Only after the two stances were finished being performed, did Ye Qingyu stop.

“The power of these stances, is really incomparably powerful. But it also uses an incomparable amount of inner yuan. With my current store of inner yuan, at the most I could use these two stances twice before I expend the vast majority of inner yuan in the Spirit spring of my dantian.

Ye Qingyu carefully considered.

He was extremely clear in his heart, that the force of the two stances that he had learnt had still not yet reached the optimum. According to the mysterious information he received, once the [Banner of heaven and Earth] it could strike out from sky thousands of miles away. Likewise, the fierce dragon pierce could also stabbed out into the distance thousands of miles away...

Apart from this, within the four stances, Ye Qingyu still did not completely grasp the second and fourth stance.

The second stance was a defensive technique, known as the [Protection of Heaven and Earth]. It was able to completely surround the body in inner yuan, creating a special domain, that reduced the force of the enemy's strike but also at the same time, slowed down their movements.

And the fourth stance was the stance that was the most powerful and terrifying stance. The move involved leaping from the sky, using your own physical body as the weapon. Once it was trained to its extreme, it could cause an volcano to form from the bombardment and causing magma to erupt, turning the land a hundred miles around to a land of death, completely changing the terrain!

As he trained more and more, Ye Qingyu became more shocked.

The strength of these four stances was incomparable, completely surpassing any technique that White Deer academy possessed. Who knows what person created these stances, these techniques could definitely be called as divine techniques!

Thus the value of the bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart] became even more evident.

Ye Qingyu understood, no matter what, he must keep the origins of these techniques a secret. Otherwise, the ordinary man was innocent, but the crime was in the treasuring of a jade ring. He feared that the existence of such an object would cause a storm of blood over conflict for this item.

These four stances of the golden armoured king, was only one page in

the endless pages of the [Fiendgod titled chart]. The power was so strong even now then what about in the pages after. There was sure to be even more strong and tyrannical techniques hidden secretly within...

Thinking about this, Ye Qingyu became more and more excited.

The [Fiendgod titled chart] would become his greatest help in becoming strong.

The sun shone fiercely on, scorching all those under.

The time of the season in Deer city right now, was the period that had the highest temperature. After another one or two months, the temperature would quickly fall, the entire Snow country would enter the season of winter. Slowly, snow would envelop the entire land, entering the long winter.

The sweat of Ye Qingyu was like rain drops. Within this confined courtyard, he continued to train as normal.

Another half a month had passed.

There was only ten days left till the end of his three month imprisonment.

And as of today, Ye Qingyu finally comprehended the second stance of the golden armoured king.

The fourth stance with the greatest power, he still could not grasp the essence of it.

Today, Ye Qingyu was again training within the courtyard.

Suddenly a door opening could faintly be heard.

“It should be the disciplinary teacher in charge of delivering meals...” Ye Qingyu said looking at the time and seeing it was nearing meal time. But today, it seemed a little earlier than usual.

He did not pay attention to this, continuing to close his eyes and meditating. Absorbing the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth and turning it to inner yuan.

The sound of door knocking was heard again.

Footsteps came closer.

What sounded was a cute and crisp voice, as it were the sound of a lark: “Brother Qingyu.” A young girl’s faint fragrance drifted over.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

## Chapter 047 – Some News

---

“Little girl?” He opened his eyes.

He saw the little loli, Song Xiaojun wearing an expansive black disciplinary robe. Her smile was like the bloom of a flower, standing by the entrance with a large grin, her face filled with excitement looking at him. Ye Qingyu could not help but be slightly taken aback. “How come you have come?”

The little loli laughed joyfully, the light in her eyes like that of a spring sunlight.

“Brother Yingyu, did you miss me?” She dragged her long robes across the grounds and in her hand, there was a red food box half her height. She came bouncing and jumping, bringing the container in front of Ye Qingyu.

Once the food container was opened, a rich smell of food came wafting over.

Inside was various plates of different sizes, all holding different cuisine. Evidently a lot of care had been placed in cooking it.

Ye Qingyu’s appetite was greatly aroused.

“First eat, eat then we’ll speak”

In the clear beautiful eyes of the little loli, was an undisguised laughter. “I know, Brother Qingyu has been confined here all this time. You must be so bored so I brought some good food over!”

Ye Qingyu laughed and did not pretend to be shy. Taking the dishes out of the container onto the ground, he sat cross legged and began eating.

In these two months, he had devoted his entire time in training causing his strength to explosively increase. But he was still a young man, and training too long had indeed taken its toll on him, making him feel slightly bored and tired.

The food of the Grievance hall was also too poor, the food had never changed. Ye Qingyu was not a picky eater, but even he felt as if he could endure no longer.

Seeing such tasty dishes, Ye Qingyu devoured it ravenously, sweeping it all up in an instant.

The little loli looked happily at Ye Qingyu beside him, laughing at him and pouring alcohol for him.

“You little kid, how did you come in?” Ye Qingyu gave her a stare, saying: “The Grievance hall is strictly guarded, only disciplinary teachers can enter. Even teachers like Wen Wan can’t come as he pleases...”

He was really slightly curious.

The little loli said laughingly: “It’s not as strict as brother Qingyu says.

I only used my academic points to swap for an opportunity to enter here.”

“Swapping your academic points?” Ye Qingyu finally understood why she was allowed to enter, and was also slightly touched in his heart. However he still gave the little loli a scowl, saying: “You spoiled little girl, you used your precious academic points to exchange for something so useless?”

The little loli giggled, not carrying in the slightest. “Annoying, I’m not a spoiled little girl, that sounds so bad...Hehe, it’s been nearly three months, I’ve really missed brother Qingyu. It’s only six academic points that doesn’t really matter much. My strength is now very powerful, hehe, the academic points are very easy to earn!”

“What? Six academic points?” After hearing this, Ye Qingyu directly flicked the little loli on the head. “You are really not an ordinary spoiled child!”

Six academic points was enough to exchange for two hours teaching from a teacher at the four Spirit springs stage. It was really exchanged by this little loli for a pass to enter the Grievance hall...

Ye Qingyu was speechless.

“Ouch, it hurts.” The little loli rubbed her forehead, saying: “Brother Qingyu, its you that said, martial artist needed think clearly if one wanted to advance and to not be led astray by evil or enter the demonic fire state. You said this was very important!”



“I don’t have too many friend in the academy, and I’m too stupid, no one wants to play with me. My sister cousin is also very strict. The time you’ve been in the grievance hall, I’ve always been distracted and progress in training is slow. I’ve really missed you, that’s why I came to the Grievance hall to visit you, that way I can think clearly!”

Ye Qingyu did not know whether to laugh or cry at her reasoning.

Within White Deer academy, apart from Song Xiaojun, Ye Qingyu did not possess any more friend. In these days, he had thought about the little loli many times. Truthfull speaking, the fact that the little loli came to visit him made him feel extremely touched.

But the price was too high.

Thinking about the cost of six academic points, Ye Qingyu felt a pain in his heart.

But since things had already happened.....

The only thing Ye Qingyu could do.....was to continue ravenously devouring the food.

“That’s right, in these months, has there been any entertaining things happening in the academy?” Ye Qingyu casually asked, while demolishing the food.

“There is, one and a half month ago, the entire year went out for their second practical battle training. Qin Wushuang was in the limelight yet

again, it was rumoured that he had the fortune to obtain a rare treasure that cannot be treated lightly. His strength has increased in leaps and bounds.”

“And in the second challenging matches in the list of ten, no one was able to be his opponent. He has already entered into the second Spirit spring stage, everyone says, that with his strength he can directly jump to year two without any issues...” The little loli chattered ceaselessly.

Qin Wushuang had a fortuitous encounter?

This is indeed a bit interesting.

“Then did he jump straight ahead?” Ye Qingyu asked.

He was slightly concerned about the answer.

If Qin Wushuang was able to skip years successfully, then this was an example he wanted to follow. He also wanted to attempt to jump a year, wanting to complete the graduation from the academy in the shortest amount of time possible.

“He did not.” The little loli shook her head, looking at Ye Qingyu with a playful expression. “Originally head teacher Wang Yan agreed that he could jump a year but Qin Wushuang himself declined it.”

“Declined it? Has his head been kicked recently?” Ye Qingyu was slightly dumbfounded, nearly choking, forcing the food in his throat down.

The light in the little loli's eye brightened considerably and she said laughingly, "That's right. Qin Wushuang said himself, that he will wait until you've left the Grievance hall and defeat you by his own hands before he'll jump a year."

So it was this.

Ye Qingyu smiled.

"Are there any more entertaining stories?" Ye Qingyu said, holding a dish and licking the plate clean.

"En, let me think..." The little loli held her chin considering, "Ah, that's right, Yan Xingtian has disappeared."

"What? Disappeared? What do you mean?" Ye Qingyu said, shocked.

"In the third practical battle training ten days ago, Yan Xingtian disappeared with his whereabouts unknown to everyone. No one knows whether he is dead or alive." The little loli looked around, mysteriously closing the distance and lowering her voice. "Many people say, that this was done behind the scenes by Qin Wushuang, that he had targeted him during the training..."

"Did this really happen?" Ye Qingyu considered for a bit, then said: "That can't be right. Yan Xingtian has never offended Qin Wushuang before."

“The only possible explanation is because Yan Xingtian is the leader of the commoners in first year and his strength is extremely high. He has always opposed the noble organisations. Some people said, that after Qin Wushuang had his fortuitous encounter, he challenged Yan Xingtian behind the scenes. The two were said to fight to a draw...”

The little loli said in a gossiping tone.

Ye Qingyu stopped, thinking silently.

As it was said, there would be no waves without wind, and that a hole would not have wind inside it.<sup>1</sup>

The things the little loli said, were all just chasing the wind and clutching at shadows.

Yan Xingtian had always acted low key, giving people a sensation that he had immeasurable depths. If he had really threatened Qin Wushuang's position, and the noble organisation had decided to act against, this was a possible explanation.

The White Deer academy was on the surface peaceful but the conflict between the nobles and the student had already caused blood to appear.

All these years, nothing had changed.

Yan Xingtian's disappearance, did not bode well for him.

After thinking about this, Ye Qingyu was slightly enraged.

The human race in the Heaven Wasteland domain could not be counted as one of the leading forces, having to face numerous enemy races. The destiny of the human race should have been the number one priority, and they should unite against outside forces but despite this, they would still have inner conflicts.

These dogfart nobles and commoners, as long as their conflict did not end, then countless heroes would be embroiled and sacrificed in the conflicts between.

They were really narrow minded groups!

“Oh, that’s right. The teacher, Wen Wan, who taught you the eight divine forms left the White Deer academy one month ago.” The little loli Song Xiaojun said.

“What? Old Wen left?” Ye Qingyu this time, was really taken aback.

Wen Wan had really left?

“Where did he go?” Ye Qingyu quickly asked.

The little loli saw Ye Qingyu’s expression turn serious, she being slightly taken aback. She had only mentioned this in passing, who would have thought that brother Qingyu would have such a big reaction to such a casual piece of news. According to her knowledge, the burly teacher Wen Wan, should not be that important a person?

Within the entire White Deer academy, those who knew about the relationship between Wen Wan and Ye Qingyu were not few, but within the students, it was basically unknown.

“It’s said that he’s been recruited, to guard the Youyan frontier in the border!” The little loli said.

Youyan frontier?

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He knew about this Youyan frontier.

It was an extremely important military frontier a thousand miles from Deer city. It was in the border between the Snow country and the Northern demon court, and battle had always occurred in that area. Especially in the last ten years, the conflict between the Snow and the northern demons court had never stopped, becoming more and more serious with everyday that passed. The Youyan frontier was like a steel nail, located firmly in the Youyan mountain range and extending the territory of Snow country by a thousand miles.

Deer city was a city that was far out from the centre of Snow country.

Youyan frontier was an important defence in the border.

Once the Youyan frontier was lost, the demon court could invade deep

in the Snow country territory and at that time, the first cities to be impacted would be Deer city and the other cities near it.

Every year Snow country would recruit large amounts of experts as reinforcement for the Youyan frontier and fight against the army of the demon court. These things were long known by Ye Qingyu, but he would never have thought that as a teacher of White Deer academy, Wen Wan, would be recruited to defend the Youyan frontier.

Ye Qingyu could vaguely feel, that there must be a story behind this.

The fire of battle burned everywhere in Youyan frontier. Old Wen, you must come back alive.

“That motherfucker, old Wen should have given me a shout before he left.”

Ye Qingyu scolded Wen Wan in his heart, and suddenly remembered about the pearls from the golden clam that he had given him for him to examine. This fellow had left in such a hurry, would he have embezzled it away?

Who knows when, they would be able to meet again.

Ye Qingyu could not help but feel a slight pang of regret when thinking about this.

-----

1. Chinese idiom for things that don't happen without causes [↩](#)



## Chapter 048 – Cheap Mouth

---

“That’s right, there’s also an important issue. Three days ago, the number three ranked academy of the ten great academies of Snow country, Azure phoenix academy, came to the White Deer academy. Along with their deputy Dean, they came to our academy to spar and exchange techniques. After ten battles, White Deer academy has lost seven battles, losing tragically...” The little loli chattered on. “In the remaining half a month, the three great geniuses of the Azure phoenix, said they will completely dominate our White Deer academy!”

Ye Qingyu rolled his eyes as he listened to this.

It seems, that in the three months he had been here, there really was a lot that had happened.

The time the two were conversing went by extremely quickly. In the blink of an eye, over two hours had already passed.

The little loli stood up unwillingly, saying: “The time is nearly up. I have to go, brother Qingyu you have to hurry and come out. When you beat the people of the Azure phoenix until they piss their pants in terror, then they’ll know how awesome the White Deer academy is.” The little loli said, swinging her tiny little fists.

“I don’t have that much spare time.” Ye Qingyu said lazily, stretching his back. “There are so many genius students in White Deer academy, who needs me to act. And besides, such a thing is not something that we first year students can interfere in. Just let them be.”

“But I like seeing brother Qingyu inspiring awe in everyone and destroying all that comes.” The little loli packed away the food containers, pitifully twisting her fingers. Her shimmering large eyes stared unblinkingly at Ye Qingyu.

“Quickly return.” Ye Qingyu lifted his hand to flick her head again.

The little loli hurriedly packed up the remaining containers and avoided his hand, leaving a few words : “Hmph, I’m going to ignore you from now on.” She turned around and went in the direction of the entrance, but the smile on her face betrayed her. Evidently, the close intimacy between her and Ye Qingyu was very effective.

Ye Qingyu shook his head with a smile.

The little loli was too small, only just reaching ten years old. With a child’s personality, pure and simple. This was one of the reasons that he was on such good terms with her.

The little loli after reaching the door, turned around to give Ye Qingyu a smile before waving and leaving.

Ye Qingyu smiled, his mood instantly turning better.

Patting his full stomach and burping, he continued training. Sitting cross legged in the courtyard and absorbing yuan qi to raise his inner yuan. In the blink of an eye, an hour had passed.

The sky turned dark.

Ye Qingyu was about to return to the small house to rest, when sounds appeared from behind the door again. The runes shimmered with light, the door opening. A skinny middle aged man wearing the black disciplinary robes slowly walked in.

“En?”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze fell on the person. Without knowing why, every hair on his body stood up, as if he was being stared at by a wild beast.

“Dinner time has come.” The skinny middle aged man placed the food on the ground.

So it was the disciplinary teacher in charge of delivering food.

Ye Qingyu relaxed slightly.

It seemed like they had swapped person. The person previously in charge of delivery food for the last two months, was not this person.

“Where’s teacher Wang?” Ye Qingyu casually asked.

“Oh, old Wang? He asked for a leave, something happened in his family.” The skinny middle aged man said without any expression, his tone cold.

Before he had finished, a cold light appeared in Ye Qingyu's eyes. With a sweep of his hands, the two parts of the inexorable spear appeared in his hands. He coldly laughed, "Haha, you retard. Your father I, was able to expose you in one try. Speak, who are you?"

The skinny middle aged man said dumbly, "What do you mean?"

Ye Qingyu complacently sneered: "The previous teacher in charge of delivering meals was named Qin and not Wang. How come you don't know? Furthermore, today someone has already delivered the meal ... Haha, speak. Who are you? Why have you smuggled into here? Who directed you? Have you come to kill me? With your intelligence, you actually came here to be an assassin?"

The fact that the previous disciplinary teacher was named Qin, was something that Ye Qingyu had discovered when he was pointless and bored. After constantly bugging the discipling teacher who spoke extremely little, after several eyes, and driving this teacher insane did he manage to obtain this piece of information.

The skinny middle aged man stood blankly for a while. Then, an undisguised fury appeared in his face. An extremely strong aura emitted from his skinny figure, surging out in an instant.

"Assassin? Intelligence?" The skinny middle aged man was like a beam of light, appearing next to Ye Qingyu in an instant. Like an enraged rhinoceros, he lifted his hand, fiercely slapping Ye Qingyu on the forehead.

Pak!

A red swollen bump was instantly created.

Ye Qingyu: “Eh? You’ve dared to launch a sneak attack...Shameless!”

“Sneak attack? Shameless?” The skinny middle aged man was like furious thunder. With another pak, he slapped his head again, causing two swollen red lumps to appear in Ye Qingyu’s head.

“Hey?” Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that the strength of this old thing was slightly too terrifying. Quickly shouting, “Stop, everything can be resolved with words, there’s no need to come to blows...”

“Don’t come to blows?” The skinny middle aged man shouting again, quickly attacking yet again.

His strength was unfathomable, his hands was as if they were lightning. With Ye Qingyu’s current level of strength, there was no way he could avoid these strikes. After several pak sounds, Ye Qingyu’s head was filled with swollen red lumps.

Ye Qingyu’s covered his head and fled like a rat.

But he had already faintly realised, the skinny middle aged man was not a bad person or an assassin. Because although his blows were ruthless, it did not contain killing intent.

After experiencing the fights to the death in the first wilderness

training, Ye Qingyu was extremely sensitive to killing intent.

Pak!Pak!Pak!Pak!

Noises like firecrackers setting off were continuously heard within this little courtyard, mingled with the curses of Ye Qingyu and the begging for mercy...

After ten minutes.

The skinny middle aged man finally stopped.

He looked at the shivering Ye Qingyu on the ground, filled with swollen red lumps. As if spectating a piece of art he had created himself, he nodded in satisfaction. Picking up the food from the ground, he did not say anything but turned and left...

.....

Ye Qingyu bit his lips, the pain so much that tears were forming in his eyes. He could not even say a word.

“Motherfucker, who was that old fellow? How come he was so ruthless and fierce like a tiger?” Ye Qingyu was slightly confused in his heart, wondering in his mind. What had just happened, was as if everything was a hoax.

This was the first he had been toyed with to such an extent.

“Ouch, owowow...that old thing really was heavy handed.” Ye Qingyu carefully rubbed the lumps on his body. Apart from the tens of bumps in his head, his entire body was covered with who knows how many bumps, everyone of them red and swelling up.

On one hand, Ye Qingyu silently cursed. On the other hand, he also felt slightly lucky. Thankfully this was in the Grievance hall and no one had seen him in such a state otherwise his legendary reputation was completely finished.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative stance, activating his inner yuan to get rid of the pain on his body.

Within the world in the dantian, the Spirit spring was bubbling as if boiling. A pillar of water erupted from the Spring like a dragon soaring to the skies, the ejected water nourishing the area within several hundred of metres and forming a small puddle. There was spirit fog all around.

After experiencing the purification of the [Fiendgod titled chart] the inner yuan of Ye Qingyu was already purer by manifold and was comparable to a year of hard cultivation by others.

Ye Qingyu directed his inner yuan to pass through his entire body, nourishing his flesh. He attempted to solve the red swollen lumps that the mysterious skinny man left.

As if it was a clean stream that was passing by, the areas where the inner yuan swept through, the feeling of pain and swollenness quickly resided.

It was an extremely peculiar sensation.

After Ye Qingyu had activated his inner yuan and nourished his injuries for an hour, the red swollen lumps on his body had finally disappeared.

Ye Qingyu stretched lazily, slowly standing up.

“Eh? Could this be a mistaken sensation? Why do I suddenly feel, that my body moves freer than before and the compatibility of my inner yuan and my body is even greater?”

Ye Qingyu discovered an abnormal occurrence.

Especially in the areas where the skinny disciplinary teacher had struck. After the inner yuan had reduced the swelling, the flow of inner yuan in these areas was extremely smooth, as if his body was one with the inner yuan.

Could it be.....

Ye Qingyu thought of something, but he could not be sure.

.....

The second day.



Ye Qingyu continued to train in the four stances of the golden armoured king in the [Fiendgod titled chart] at the same time as cultivating his inner yuan. As he discovered more and more secrets within these stances, he became more and more certain that these techniques were incomparably intricate.

Apart from training, Ye Qingyu would also observe the bronze book in his sea of consciousness, [Fiendgod titled chart].

After the bronze book had automatically absorbed the energy within the Spirit spring, Ye Qingyu could sense in these past days that there was still a indistinct connection between the Spirit spring and the bronze book.

After the careful observation of Ye Qingyu, he discovered that the page of golden armoured king was within the section of [Titled Fiendgods]. Apart from this, there was also [Titled divine weapons] and [Titled strange objects]. It was really a pity, that at this moment, there was no way to open these sections.

He guessed that this may due to the fact that his inner yuan was not yet deep or pure enough. It had no way of supporting the [Fiendgod titled chart] to uncover the sections. After hard cultivation and raising his level, with inner yuan, he guessed that he could activate the other sections of the [Fiendgod titled chart].

Today, afternoon had come.

The skinny middle aged man appeared again.

It seemed like he really was the new disciplinary teacher in charge of looking after Ye Qingyu. He placed the food at the door, coldly staring at Ye Qingyu without saying a word.

Ye Qingyu let off a cold shiver.

“Elder, why do you look at me with such a gaze...” Ye Qingyu attempted to become closer to the teacher.

“What about my gaze?” The skinny middle aged man’s gaze became even colder.

“Er, how do I put it, elder your gaze, is as if I owe you a huge debt or as if I have abducted your daughter? It’s really a unfathomable mystery, I don’t know elder previously...” Ye Qingyu smiled ingratiatingly.

“You have a cheap mouth do you not? Let me help you fix it!” The skinny middle aged man coldly laughed, as if he was a dragon that had its mate taken away during intercourse. With a shout, he rushed like lighting at Ye Qingyu.

Pak!Pak!Pak!

The terrifying power of his fingers broke through the air, as if it was a bow that was reinforced by runes.

Ye Qingyu once again covered his head and ran like a rat.

The lightness of the middle aged man was exceptional and had unfathomable strength. Ye Qingyu attempted to block one or two strikes, then was struck even harder. His entire body was filled with swollen bumps, as if he had been bitten by a swarm of demonic mosquitoes.

This process continued for a full ten minutes.

## Chapter 049 – Heavy Handed

---

Ye Qingyu attempted to use all methods to escape –apart from using the techniques from the golden armoured king. In the end, he was not able to escape from the middle aged man's ruthless beating. When the middle aged man finally stopped and left with a satisfied smile, Ye Qingyu was already covered with swollen lumps, even in a state worse than yesterday.

Kache !

The black door closed and locked.

In the courtyard, only Ye Qingyu was left, grimacing in pain.

“Ow...this old fellow...really is ruthless...”Ye Qingyu said, looking at the lumps on his body. He felt that looking to get beaten like this, was really no different from being crazy. But he still needed to confirm whether yesterday's judgement was correct or not.

He sat cross legged, activating his inner yuan to treat his injuries.

Within the dantian world, yuan qi from the Spirit spring began bubbling, transforming into inner yuan that headed towards Ye Qingyu's body. It nourished his bones and flesh, and apart from this, also began to disperse the swollen lumps.

This time, it took a total of two hours before the injuries were

completely gone.

He slowly stood up, sensing the changes in his inner yuan.

An expression of astonishment appeared on his face.

“That’s right, the feeling I had yesterday was not wrong. The compatibility between the inner yuan and the body has definitely gotten even better. The swollen lumps that this middle aged man creates on my body, is definitely not simple!”

Ye Qingyu silently evaluated in his heart.

The skinny middle aged man looked ruthless and malicious, but Ye Qingyu had never sensed a shred of killing intent from him. His strange powerful fingers, on the surface seemed incomparably powerful, and even metal armour would not be able to withstand this type of power. But when used on Ye Qingyu’s body, it only caused swollen lumps to appear...

From yesterday, Ye Qingyu had already suspected that the skinny middle aged man was a friend and not an enemy.

Now he was even more sure.

Right now, Ye Qingyu could finally know for certain that the skinny middle aged man was aiding him. Through this type of peculiar finger technique, he broke through the blockages on his body.

These places, after Ye Qingyu carefully examined, was the places that was not yet refined when he was at the ordinary martial stage – since Ye Qingyu used less than three months of time to walk a path normal people would need more than a year to walk, even if his talent was even greater, there was inevitably some omissions.

This type of situation did not only appear on Ye Qingyu.

Normally speaking, when a martial artist left the ordinary martial stage, they did not train every part of their body to the extreme. There would typically be a weak spot or dead vitals that they could not train. Once the martial entered the Spirit spring stage, and was able to control the Xiantian yuan power, and spending years upon years, only then could they completely train these weak points.

The finger technique of the skinny middle aged man was mysterious and his observation was poisonously sharp. Just from a glance, he could tell that there were points on Ye Qingyu's body that was not refined to its fullest, and using his yuan qi, marked it out.

This could be counted as a help in disguise to Ye Qingyu.

It was only that his methods was a little too ruthless. His finger strikes had made him so sore, that Ye Qingyu's cries were like the tragic howling of a wolf.

“The old fellow seems like he doesn't like me very much. Then why does he help me?” Ye Qingyu was puzzled, not able to think through this point.

.....

The next few days, similar things happened.

Everyday, the skinny middle aged man would appear with the food. And every time he would beat Ye Qingyu till he was badly battered, his entire body swollen with lumps as if he wanted to beat Ye Qingyu to death...

And Ye Qingyu could not resist, and could only sorrowfully accept this treatment.

Several times, Ye Qingyu's cheap mouth acted up again. He could not endure and insulted the middle aged man through a few phrases. The result was that Ye Qingyu's teeth was nearly knocked out by the skinny man, making Ye Qingyu much more honest from then on.

Every time he was beaten, Ye Qingyu would activate his inner yuan to treat the injuries, spending a significant amount of time. Afterwards, he would find that his body would become more and more translucent, without any flaws whatsoever. The blockages that would block the inner yuan, numbered less and less.

There once was grandmasters of rune formations who compared inner yuan as a surging river and the human body as the river bed. Only by having less rocks and sand in the river bed, would the river flow with even more power and strength.

Ye Qingyu discovered, that after the skinny middle aged man's beatings

the impurities and blockages within his body became fewer and fewer. His inner yuan passed through his meridians and muscles without any blockages whatsoever, able to produce an even greater force.

These types of days, continued.

Ye Qingyu continued to have a bad mouth, be beaten, treating injuries and raising his strength every day, awaiting the end of his sentence of confinement.

Time passed by quickly.

Today.

Was the last day of Ye Qingyu's confinement.

When the first rays of dawn shined past the northwest corner of the wall, this was the time that Ye Qingyu's confinement was truly over.

He was imprisoned for three months in such a strange and isolated place, and only able to see black walls and blue sky. Apart from this, there would be very few other colours in his view. Although Ye Qingyu had long become accustomed to being alone, but even he felt bored and restless being confined here for so long.

This day, Ye Qingyu did not continue to train.

He sat there cross legged, considering the things he should do when he



left. Right now, he had already truly entered into the Spirit spring stage, and could be counted as a little expert. There was no longer a need to be afraid of the slightest thing.

Especially some of the left over business he had, he needed to settle quickly.

What the Ye family lost in these four years, he would bit by bit, take it back.

The inherited family sword, some properties, the Ye family house... these things did not mean much to the Ye Qingyu today, but he knew , he must take it all back.

This was not due to incentives.

It was due to dignity...and emotions.

But only second year class students, had the right to leave and go from White Deer academy as they please. The first year students was still in a period where they were strictly controlled, and restricted from leaving the area of their year...Therefore, the most important thing for Ye Qingyu to do when he left, was to attempt to jump a class!

Jumping a class !

Quickly finished the lessons of the first year, and directly entering the second year.

For the current Ye Qingyu, this did not poses too great a difficulty. His strength was by far enough, and he only had to pass through some tests before he could succeed.

Apart from this, was some miscellaneous things. Such as finding a suitable spirit weapon and placing it to be submerged within the Spirit spring, becoming his life spirit weapon. The inexorable spear's force and impact was great, but in the end it was not a Spirit weapon

The sunlight was not as harsh as it was a month ago.

Ye Qingyu's torso was bare and his thick black hair flowed down from his back like a waterfall, directly to the ground. A masculine beauty was emitted from his body, and a strange aura of strength completely surrounded his body.

What was strange, was that even after the sun had already set, the skinny middle aged man still did not appear.

The disciplinary teacher was swapped again, and this person was like a mute. No matter what Ye Qingyu asked, he only shook his head and did not speak.

Originally, Ye Qingyu wanted to control his bad mouth and wanted to properly thank the strange skinny middle aged man. It looks like that Ye Qingyu would not have this opportunity.

It was a quiet night.

Ye Qingyu laid down on the black ground that was still faintly warm from the heat of the sun.

The vast and starry sky had a brilliance that was as if diamonds was studded onto the pitch black night. This familiar sight, was as if Ye Qignyu had once again saw his parents kind and gentle faces on the starry night...

It was unknown when tears began dripping down Ye Qingyu's cheeks.

The memories that he wanted to forget four years ago, once again came right after another.

“Mother, father, are you faring well in the embrace of the stars? Your child has already grown up, your child is already an expert at the Spirit spring stage...Father, don't worry, I still remember your last words. I will definitely go the court of the royal family of Snow country, and find the secret you have left for me...”

“I don't care who it is, I don't care which forces caused such a bloody scene to be created. I will definitely investigate who was involved in this. I swear, I will definitely make them pay for blood with their blood!”

Ye Qingyu continued to speak to himself.

He did not know why, but tonight, he did not want to train at all. He only wanted to lie on his back and look at the starry skies, as if time had returned. As if he had returned to the joyful days, the days where he was

with his parents, sitting in seats at the ancestral house looking at the stars...

Who knows when, did he finally sleep.

Ye Qingyu had never wanted to allow his life to become devoted to vengeance, he did not want revenge to cover up all the other bright colours of his life. In these past four years, he had thought he had long seen through revenge...

But at this instant, he only understood right then. Revenge, was not something that could be easily let go.

.....

On the ninety first day, the first ray of the golden dawn, shined on the black Grievance hall.

Two disciplinary teachers unlocked the rune formation door.

“Time is up, leave.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He had long packed his belonging, walking directly to the door.,

After walking several steps, Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of something.

He looked at the wall, shouting : “Hey, I’m leaving. I don’t know who’s in the wall beside me, but if you hear my words, remember, once you come out I’ll treat you to alcohol!”

These words was said to his mysterious neighbour over the wall.

Once he had finished, Ye Qingyu walked with large strides outside the Grievance hall.

.....

“Treat me to alcohol? Haha, this little fellow, is quite interesting...”

Blue Sky sat quietly in his courtyard.

The ending of his solitary confinement was not yet over, and there was still a decent amount of time till the end.

But he was not rushed in the slightest.

He looked at the slowly rising red sun, squinting his eyes. He thought of something and sighed, saying : “Drinking alcohol is of course good, but, the beautiful days that one is able to sit and drink, is quickly coming to an end...”

## Chapter 050 – Is He Not Afraid That I'll Break The Legs Of His Dogs?

---

Ye Qingyu was released.

This news was as if it had grown wings, spreading quickly throughout the entire first year area of White Deer academy. Until today, very many still remembered what happened three months ago.

That day, a person that was not in the top fifty as all, using two spears, pierced through the high up geniuses in the list of ten. He destroyed six arenas, defeated Qin Wushuang and broke past the ordinary martial stage...

The things that happened on that day was like a legend.

Many people, when they thought back to the events of that day, they were still incomparably shocked, the blood in their bodies boiling.

And today, the person who created this legend would end his solitary confinement and emerge.

Three months had already passed, how strong would he have gotten?

In an instant, many students of White Deer academy began intentionally gathering near the entrance of the Grievance hall, hoping to get a glance of something...

Kache !

The black door with runes and formations on it began to open.

Numerous eyes turned to gaze at this.

Under the sunlight, the bearded youth walked out, with his black hair hanging down to his thighs. The one metre and a bit long spear holster hung from his back. He seemed more haggard and skinny, and the unbridled recklessness evident in his expression seemed to have been moderated.

“He’s come out!”

“It’s Ye Qingyu!”

“It seems he’s slightly gaunt and exhausted!”

“He’s been confined for three months, with an entire ninety days without any teachings or cultivation resources. I estimate, that Ye Qingyu’s strength has not improved that much!”

“That’s’ right, the Grievance hall is not that suitable for training.”

“Wah wah, quickly look. Qin Wushaung’s people has appeared, with Quan Yalin leading...Through my estimation, the second part of this story, is about to begin!”

The students all discussed heatedly.

Unknowingly, many people had already placed Ye Qingyu as one of their focal points. From the moment that Ye Qingyu stepped out from the Grievance hall, gazes could not help but be gathered onto him.

But they only looked from afar.

He had offended the entire noble organisation in the academy and was a thorn in countless people's eyes. The brighter and more radiant Ye Qingyu was, meant that less and less people would want to be his friend. The waves he had caused, after three months, how peaceful could it have gotten?

No one knew.

There were even some students that were itching to act against Ye Qingyu. In these three months, their strengths had increased explosively. With such a good opportunity to prove themselves, if they were able to defeat ye Qingyu, this was a chance to become close to the noble organisation and be famed throughout. Was this not fame and fortune both at once?

Within the crowd, only one person was different —

“Brother Qingyu!!”



The little loli Song Xiaojun came bouncing and cheering, charging straight at Ye Qingyu.

She did not have the slightest care or restraint, and was only acting on her impulses from the bottom of her heart. She was like a little deer that had finally met her old friend, with an undisguised joy and delight.

“Brother Qingyu you’ve finally been released!” The little loli grabbed Ye Qingyu’s hands, jumping up and down, wantonly cheering.

Ye Qingyu patted the little loli on the head, being infected by her happiness. A smile appeared on his face.

The people nearby had complicated feelings when they saw this scene.

The little loli Song Xiaojun was different from the ‘cold and haughty’ Ye Qingyu. She was a simple and innocent little girl, and as cute as if she was a jade doll. No matter who she faced, she was passionate and happy to help without any malicious intentions, able to make many friends in the year.

And furthermore, she was one of the people that head teacher Wang Yan had high expectations for. Her hidden talent was extremely exceptional. In the four months that she had been in the academy, she gradually emerged with her strength growing rapidly. This attracted the attention of many organisations and caused her to have great relationships within the entire first year.

But many people knew, that even though Song Xiaojun had many

friends, she only had one best friend—

Ye Qingyu.

The Ye Qingyu who had no friend apart from her in the entire class of two thousand.

Many people did not understand how Ye Qingyu and Song Xiaojun were able to become friends. No matter considering aura, the way they did things, or their cultivation, they were all different. They had nothing in common at all.

Some people was envious of Ye Qingyu because he was able to obtain the true friendship of such an innocent and naïve little girl, Song Xiaojun.

And some people were envious of Song Xiaojun because she was able to obtain the true friendship of someone as tyrannical and with a terrifying strength, the Demon king Ye Qingyu.

For Ye Qingyu, Song Xiaojun did not care about wasting her precious academic points to obtain the right to enter the Grievance hall.

And for Song Xiaojun, Ye Qingyu was furious and completely destroyed the entire noble organisation in first year using his spears. The high and mighty Qin Wushuang, son of the city leader was also stamped under his feet...

Such a friendship, was the object of envy for numerous students.

It was a pity that many people could only be envious, because they would never ever be able to obtain such a friendship.

From the crowd, Song Qingluo also looked upon this scene enviously.

She was one of the only students to retain her position in the list of ten within the challenging matches. Song Qingluo's gorgeous appearance, exceptional talent and her wealthy background made her become the goddess of countless male students in first year.

She was also a person many people admired.

But at this moment, Song Qingluo was envious of her innocent and silly little cousin.

A complicated expression flashed past Song Qingluo's beautiful face. She finally grew serious, as if making some sort of decision. Her red lips opened, crying out Song Xiaojun's name...

From far away.

The Song Xiaojun who was laughing like a lark, hearing Song Qingluo's voice was as if she had instantly turned into a fossil. Her expression instantly turned lonely and she lightly let go of Ye Qingyu's arm...

She turned around and saw, her cousin's strict expression with an

unquestionable authority.

“Brother Qingyu, I have something to do, I’ll leave first...” The little loli said, her face filled with apologies, as if she was a little white flower that had frosted over.

Ye Qingyu looked at the Song Qingluo from far away and then regarded the listless little loli. He nodded his head, saying: “Go.”

The little loli reluctantly waved goodbye.

He saw her walking far off, standing in front of her cousin sheepishly. Song Qingluo seemed to have said some words, then dragged the little loli away, without looking back....

Ye Qingyu smiled, without saying anything.

He knew why Song Qingluo dragged the Song Xiaojun away in such a rush.

Compared to the simple and silly Song Xiaojun, Song Qingluo was more suited to become the future leader of the Qingluo merchant company. Her thoughts were cautious, and the way she did things was like thunder and wind, without wading in water or mud in the slightest<sup>1</sup>. It was only...At such a young age, to consider everything, could she really be happy?

Ye Qingyu’s gaze surveyed everywhere around him, walking towards the dormitory.

After walking a few steps...

Xiu!

A object pierced through the air, a gentle breeze blowing past.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand.

The red and golden gilded challenge letter was held between his index and ring finger.

He lifted his eyebrows, looking at the noble students walking their way out of the crowd.

Quan Yalin walked out in front of the group, his expression holding a deliberate arrogance and haughtiness. He coldly sneered: “Three days, number one arena. Senior brother Wushuang challenges you, one battle to decide the victor.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

Quan Yalin continued to coldly sneer: “What? You don’t dare? It looks like you don’t know, senior brother Wushuang’s strength has increased explosively, and he has had a fortuitous encounter. He is already a dragon soaring in the skies, and is not someone that a commoner scrap can be compared to...”

Before he had finished.

Xiu!

Ye Qingyu's hand moved.

The red challenge letter was like a bolt of red lightning, tearing apart space. Brushing past Quan Yalin's head with a sharp sound, it buried itself into an ornamental fake mountain twenty metres away

Quan Yalin's figure stopped, his mouth wide open. The sneering smile on his face had frozen and in his eyes was a terror that was hard to control.

Cold sweat dripped from his forehead.

A light wind blew past.

Hair rustled and fell.

A large bunch of Quan Yalin's hair, fell cleanly to the floor. It exposed his white scalp, as if the sharpest razor had passed by. His skin was not broken in the slightest, neat and tidy....

Countless eyes fell on Quan Yalin's head and then towards the fake mountain far off.

On the ornamental mountain, there was a deep fissure.

The challenge letter was soft and gentle, and was as hard as a goose feather to impart any force into. But in Ye Qingyu's hands, it completely entered into the boulder, only leaving a deep crack where it had passed through, as if it was cut open by a divine weapon....

In this instant, countless exclamations of shock sounded.

With a wave of his hands, Ye Qingyu had broken the courage of countless people.

Especially the people who thought in these three months, their strengths had completely exceed his. Those thinking that Ye Qingyu did not receive a systematic or complete training within Grievance Hall. Those who had wanted to treat Ye Qingyu as a stepping stone, in this moment, their ambitions that burned like fire was doused by a bucket of icy cold water. Before the flames had even begin to burn, it was completely extinguished!

No matter considering the intricate control to only cut Quan Yalin's hair, or the strength needed to crack the boulder, this was not a power that an ordinary Spirit spring expert should be able to possess.

The power of Ye Qingyu, in these three months, had grown to what heights?

Many people were dumbfounded by this scene.

Ye Qingyu swept his gaze around the crowd.

No one dared to meet his eyes.

In these three months, Qin Wushuang's rapid growth was like a divine king, shining a light that could not be ignored. Then the Ye Qingyu who had come out from the black Grievance hall, demonstrating a destructive power similar to that of a Demon King, was also something they could not face.

A sudden blast of wind.

The black hair of Ye Qingyu began dancing wildly, as if a terrifying black flame was burning.

Step by step, he walked out of the crowd.

The students looked at his back, an undisguised fear on their faces.

“Losers, should have the self awareness of a loser.” The voice of Ye Qingyu sounded from far away the path. “Qin Wushuang wants to challenge me? Then tell him to come personally. Always telling his dogs to bark, is he not afraid that I’ll break his dogs’ legs?”

His voice sounded.

His figure disappeared.



Everyone was silent.

Quan Yalin and other noble students were as silent as if they were mourning for their deceased mother.

Half a second later.

In the eyes of some students, a light began to burn in their eyes. In a small voice, “Extremely strong...Ye Qingyu’s strength, when compared to the people of Azure phoenix academy, must not be any worse?”

These words woke countless people from their daze.

“That’s right, Ye Qingyu absolutely has the qualifications to compete with those arrogant and domineering Azure phoenix students!”

“Yes, yes! Ye Qingyu is a demon king with no scruples when he is enraged. He won’t be like those noble students, burdened by their reputation. Fearing they would lose, they hide and don’t fight!”

“If Ye Qingyu can really allow the White Deer academy to vent their anger, than from today onwards I will only follow him!”

“Standing in front of the stormy seas is the inherent character of a hero! This time, whoever stands up, is the hero!”

-----

1. Means she does things swift and decisively. ↵

## Chapter 051 – Azure Phoenix Academy, Is Merely This

---

Ye Qingyu was able to sense, that the atmosphere of the academy was slightly strange. An air of nervousness pervaded throughout the entire academy, as if the students were about to face a great opponent.

He returned to the dormitory to wash and change his clothes.

His original idea was to go and find Wen Wan and ask him several questions about cultivation. However, since Wen Wan had already left the academy, Ye Qingyu did not know what his next step would be.

He stayed in the dormitory to train in the nameless breathing technique for half the morning, then it was lunch.

After Ye Qingyu considered, he decided that he would first convert all the resources he had gained during the wilderness training into academic points. Then, he would think of a way to obtain a Spirit weapon. After entering the Spirit spring stage, he must find a spirit weapon and submerged it within the spring in his dantian for it to become truly his. Only by cultivating together with his weapon, could it be counted as the true path of the yuan qi formation way.

Of course, there was also the issue of skipping a year.

Ye Qingyu wrote down a list of what he needed to do, to order his thoughts.

Noon, the temperature could not be said as hot.

After Ye Qingyu had finished eating in the canteen, he went to the commerce area of the first year area to have a look. Within the weapon shops, there was Spirit weapons but the price was extremely high and the majority of it was low class weapons that did not match Ye Qingyu's needs.

The first life spirit weapon, for a martial artist of the Spirit spring stage, was extremely important. Ye Qingyu did not want to lower his standards.

He also attempted to add runes to the inexorable spear, to make it become a Spirit weapon. But after consulting several rune masters in the commerce area, he knew this was not possible.

The first reason was because the material of the inexorable spear was special, and it could not work well with runes and formations. And furthermore the spear was too large, even if a high class rune master was willing to do work upon it, it would expend a great deal of resources and attention on engraving rune on the spear. It was not worth it.

After walking around the commerce area entirely, Ye Qingyu eliminated the idea of turning the inexorable spear into a spirit weapon.

He understood, that although the power of the inexorable spear was great, but it could not become his long term weapon. He needed a weapon that grew strong along with him – the inexorable spear could no longer match his needs.

With many thoughts in his head, he followed the path. Unknowingly, he had already left the commerce area.

Trees cast mottled shadows, slanting towards the east.

The time was now afternoon.

Ye Qingyu went to the administration office, and exchanged all the resources he had obtained during the first practical battle training into academic points. After obtaining twenty academic points, he followed the path leading to the largest library in the first year area.

These days he had been training as if he was blindfolded. There were many slight problems and issues that had cropped up, that he hoped he would be able to find the answer to in the library.

But when he reached the entrance of the library, he found that the atmosphere there was slightly wrong.

Tens of first year students angrily stood below the platform, with people questioning loudly. And on the top of the platform there were several teenagers wearing a bright blue robe. From their outer appearance, these were not students of White Deer academy.

“This is the library of White Deer academy, why can’t we enter?”

“That’s right, the Azure Phoenix academy is too unreasonable. The

guest has become the host!”

“To think that you would monopolise the library and not allow us to enter, can you be anymore unreasonable?”

The students of White Deer academy were all filled with righteous indignation, their faces and neck flushed red. Evidently, they had been angered by something. There were also some with bruises in their faces, and traces of blood in their lips. They had obviously come to blows but came out the worse.

On the platform, the four students of the Azure phoenix academy, had an arrogant air, looking at the crowd gathered below with contemptuous disdain.

“Senior brother Xu Ge is here to consult some scriptures, that is akin to giving face to the entire White Deer academy. Don’t mistake our good intentions. A crowd of trash, chattering and buzzing. If you don’t have the strength to back up your actions, then scram!” An Azure Phoenix student with small eyes coldly sneered.

“You guys are too arrogant, this is in the end, White Deer academy’s territory.” The White Deer academy student with his eyes swollen like a rotten peach said angrily.

“And what about it? Before using this library, we had the permission of one of the elders of your academy.” An Azure phoenix student said with his chest out.

“Even if the elder agreed to you consulting the writings, but he did not allow you to block the entrance and not allow White Deer academy students to enter....” Another White Deer academy said furiously.

“Haha, what status is senior brother Xu Ge? He is right now quietly studying the books, and is not allowed to be disturbed. Naturally we cannot allow scraps with weak strength but does not recognise it to enter...” The Azure phoenix student with small eyes said haughtily.

“You...can you speak some reason?” A White Deer academy student said angrily.

“Reason? Haha, speak some reason?” The other Azure phoenix students as if they had heard the most funny joke in the world, all began laughing in contempt.

The small eyes Azure phoenix student shook his head, his eyes filled with pity as he looked at the White Deer academy students. With a mocking tone, he said: “A bunch of pitiful, idiotic, innocent trash. I don’t know what the White Deer academy teaches you...Remember, only parties with equal strength will discuss reason with each other. Your strength are too weak, have you ever seen a dragon speaking reason with an ant?”

The White Deer academy students were so infuriated that their bodies were quivering, but they did not know what to say.

The Azure Phoenix academy was located in one of the most wealthy districts of Snow country, with great power and unfathomable resources. In the rankings of the ten great academies of Snow country, it was

ranked so much higher than the White Deer academy. The vast majority of students in Azure phoenix academy came from famous families, all with great strength, and the average skill level was higher than the White Deer academy. This was a fact.

Originally, many White Deer academy students had an admiring and aspiring attitude towards the Azure Phoenix academy. After the Azure Phoenix academy had come, many wanted to use this as an opportunity to interact with the geniuses that came from the wealthy district of Snow country, and practice and exchange ideas with each other, each helping the other.

Who would have guessed that the high and mighty Azure phoenix students did not have the White Deer academy in their eyes at all. From their gazes, it was as if a high and mighty emperor was regarding a dirty beggar by the roadside. Filled with a bored disdain and contempt, an arrogance emanating from the marrow of their bones to their soul. Not to mention exchanging cultivation experiences, even speaking to a White Deer academy was a type of humiliation for them.

This kind of arrogant attitude cruelly pierced the hearts of the White Deer academy students.

In these days, there had already been several conflicts, both large and small, between the two academies. Only through the control of teachers from both side, could they barely manage to supresss any major fireworks. But the estrangement and enmity between them, had grown ever deeper.

Today the forceful monopolisation of the library, was only a small explosion from these countless conflicts.



In the previous spars, the students of White Deer academy evidently had always been on the losing side.

In the stand off, the White Deer academy students were both fuming and angry. But their skills were lesser than that of the Azure Phoenix students. There was nothing they could do.

And at this time, a White Deer academy student inadvertently looked behind. Suddenly his eyes brightened, his expression becoming excited again.

He grabbed the person beside him, pointing backwards.

“Why are you grabbing me, you...Eh? He is...Demon King Ye Qingyu?” His companion originally was annoyed, but the instant he turned back he also realised something, also becoming excited.

“Ye Qingyu has come.”

“He is coming to the library?”

“It should be. You have to know that the Demon King Ye is a famous madman who likes to spend time in the library.”

“Then does this mean...Hehe, Demon King Ye is famed for not sparing anyone under his spear...this time these people of the Azure Phoenix academy, is about to encounter misfortune!”

The White Deer academy students all looked towards Ye Qingyu walking closer to them. Suddenly there were all excited again, whispering to each other, as if they saw a life saving herb.

Someone wanted to greet Ye Qingyu, but they lifted their hands and did not say anything. One was because they were not familiar with Ye Qingyu, and the second was because there was a fearful respect.

Ye Qingyu had noticed everything.

He nodded his heads to the White Deer academy students. Not saying anything, he continued walking to the entrance of the library.

But this action of nodding his head, had already greatly astonished those students lifting their hands in greeting. At this moment, they unexpectedly realised, that the rumoured cold and emotionless demon king Ye, was not entirely a person who could not be reasoned with.

Step by step.

The expressions of several Azure phoenix students changed.

The aura that this silent White Deer student emitted, made them feel a trace of unease and pressure. One of them looked towards his companion, then faintly nodded his head. He rushed forward suddenly, his fist striking out.

The wind from the punch spread outwards.

“This road is blocked!” He shouted. His fist was as if it was a hammer, emitting an explosion of air, striking at the vital parts in Ye Qingyu’s chest.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

He did not even block.

His chest, under the gaze of numerous eyes, met with the fist that had the pressure of wind and lightning, striking together directly.◦

Kache !

The sounds of bone snapping could be heard.

Smiles appeared on the faces of the Azure phoenix students.

The White Deer academy students lost colour on all their faces.

But the next moment, Ye Qingyu took out another step. The Azure phoenix student who had struck out with his fist, cried out painfully. He fell away trembling, his right arm bending at a strange angle.

This type of situation, was as if a lance was stabbing into a copper wall and iron bastion, then it snapped off into four or five pieces...

So the thing that had broken was not Ye Qingyu's ribs.

It was the arm of the Azure Phoenix student.

“Audacious.....”The Azure Phoenix student with small eyes who had not spoken yet, loudly shouted: “You dare injure someone, do you know who the person you have injured is...”

Before he had finished his sentence.

Ye Qingyu directly lifted his hand and punched out.

Boom !

The air seemed to explode with a swelling thunder.

The punch of the Azure Phoenix student could already be counted as extremely powerful. The winds caused by his punch, caused unending turbulence in the air, causing everyone to be astonished.

But as Ye Qingyu let out his punch, a thought suddenly gave birth in the hearts of many people: This punch is a true punch. The previous fist of the Azure Phoenix student, was almost as if he was a child playing around.

The three Azure Phoenix student, including the person with small eyes, in front of the just the wind from this punch, felt as if they were oats in a

hurricane. They were filled with insignificance and despair, quickly retreating, not daring to receive this punch at all.

Ye Qingyu laughed, stopping his fist.

The wind from the fist stopped.

“Azure phoenix academy, is merely this.”

He dragged out his words, unhurriedly entering the library step by step.

Staring at Ye Qingyu's figure till he disappeared, the four Azure Phoenix students suddenly felt the pressure as if a mountain was on top of them disappear. Cold sweat had completely soaked their backs...

If this White Deer academy student had not stopped his fist, they would have been heavily injured.

## Chapter 052 – White Deer Without Talent Has Lost His Antlers, The Azure Phoenix Intends To Subdue The Heavens

---

This kind of strength, was too terrifying.

In such a tiny White Deer academy, there was such a monster?

From his appearance, his age was not high, only about thirteen or fourteen years old. He should be a first year student of White Deer academy...this was even more frightening.

If senior brother Xu Ge faced him, would he be able to win?

The four was completely silent. This was the first time they did not have absolute confidence in their talented senior brother.

At the same time, the White Deer academy students, also began cheering below the platform.

“Haha, we’ve finally vented our anger, this is too soothing!”

“Demon King Ye is really Demon King Ye. This is absolute dominance. Haha, he only stood there and let that person hit him. The result was that person’s fist and arm was shattered into pieces. Domineering, he is truly domineering!”

“How about it? Do you accept defeat? This is the strength of White Deer academy!”

“From now on, Demon King Ye is my idol!”

“That’s right, he is a true man. Hmph, Qin Wushuang is known as the number one person in first year, normally high and mighty. But since Azure Phoenix academy has arrived, I have never seen him do anything for us!”

The White Deer academy students cheered jubilantly.

They stood tall and pound, entering the library with their chests held out.

This time, the four people of Azure Phoenix academy, did not block them.

.....

Ye Qingyu entered the martial library.

He was already extremely familiar with this place, and knew where the information he needed regarding cultivation was situated. He headed directly for the third floor.

Just when Ye Qingyu stepped onto the third floor, a white clothed, black hair, handsome teenager passed by him.

The skin of this youth was like jade, possessed a clear and fair face, wealthy and had a spiritual air with slightly curled lips. He had an severity that did not come from anger, his entire aura like that of a deep pool, extremely profound. In his hands was a white fan, walking slowly down the stairs.

Ye Qingyu could not help but take a second glance.

He had never seen this teenager before. Judging from his clothing, he should be a student of the Azure Phoenix academy, of a similar age as him. But his strength was extremely powerful, definitely having long entered the Spirit Spring stage, much more powerful than the Qin Wushuang who he had fought previously...could he be the Xu Ge in the mouth of the Azure Phoenix academy?

At the time Ye Qingyu turned his head to have a second glance, the white cloth handsome teenager also turned back to look.

Their eyes met.

It was as if sparks had appeared in the air.

In the gaze of the white clothed teenager, there was a surprise and fighting will. But it only fleetingly passed by, and he controlled his emotions very well, turning and leaving.

Ye Qingyu was also slightly surprised.



At that moment, he was able to feel the inner yuan in his dantian trembling. It was as if it was directed by some kind of energy, nearly causing him to want to fight a battle.

The white clothed teenager left.

Ye Qingyu also turned away.

He continued to search for the information he needed, not spending much more attention on thinking about useless things.

The things that had happened just then, for him, was just a small bump in the road.

.....

.....

“Then from your words, Dianyi and the others have crossed blows with him?” The white clothed youth had his arms behind his back, unhurriedly walking in the stone tiles. His gaze flitted with no focus to the scenery around.

“Yes senior brother Xu.” The Azure Phoenix student with small eyes, Dianyi carefully followed behind, his attitude displaying utmost respect.

Of course the people who followed also included the other three Azure Phoenix students.

“Do you know the background of this White Deer academy student?” The white clothed teenager said blandly.

“I’ve asked, that person is called Ye Qingyu, he is only a poor commoner. But I’ve heard that his talent is exceptional, with herculean strength, and the way he does things is direct and without fear of the consequences. Hence, he has been called Demon King Ye by many students of the White Deer academy.”

Dianyi quickly answered.

In a short amount of time, he had already investigated most of the information about Ye Qingyu. This Dianyi, although his strength was not high, but he was extremely clever and devious. This was why the rising star of the first year Xu Ge, had allowed him to constantly accompany him.

“Demon King Ye?” The white clothed youth stopped walking, considering. A faint smile appeared on his lips. “Quite interesting, to be able to cause a reaction in my inner qi, he is quite strong...Hehe, who would have thought, that the White Deer academy ranked last in the ten great academies ranking in its twilight years and gradually dying, would be able to produce such an interesting seedling!”

“Senior brother Xu, about what had happened...” Dianyi carefully probed, wanting to say something.

Xu Ge lightly waved his hands. “I know what you want to say, but I advise you to eliminate that thought. That person is not something you

are able to provoke, and I currently don't want to oppose him...This time in our visit to White Deer academy, we have important things to do. Don't go aggravating everyone, otherwise if elder Chen passes down the blame, no one can withstand it."

Dianyi quickly nodded his head, not daring to say anything more.

Originally he did have some intentions, wanting to regain his face. But after hearing Xu Ge say that he did not want to oppose Demon King Ye, it seemed like this opponent was even more frightening than what he had imagined. He would temporarily eliminate his ideas of revenge.

In the coming days, he would have to restrain himself. This was their territory, after all. If he was to irritate some fierce people, the person who would lose out in the end would be him. Even if White Deer academy was generally weak, but to be able to produce one or two fierce people was still possible for them.

Xu Ge stood staring blankly at the fake mountain fountain far off in the distance, thinking of something, remaining silent for a while.

Dianyi and the others stood waiting quietly.

After ten minutes, he seemed to have thought something through.

He held his palm out slightly, the skin on his hands as white and jade. His inner yuan activated, a pale silver light appeared between his two palms and began gathering. From the original rough and coarse appearance till at the end smooth and sleek, the silver light brightly

radiating. It was as the moon was burning between his palms.

Dianyi seeing this site, his heart was shocked, greatly astonished.

“Congratulations senior brother Xu Ge. You have finally managed to master the [Full moon seal]. From now on, in the second year and under of Azure Phoenix academy, you no longer have any opponents.” Dianyi quickly rushed to congratulate him.

He knew, Dian Yi had only studied the yuan qi battle technique, [Full moon seal] for half a year. He had previously never been able to fully understand it, who would have thought that coming to White Deer academy, he would suddenly master and grasp it.

“It is only a small success, haha.” Xu Ge could hardly hide his excitement.

He could not help but be excited.

In the [Choosing techniques ceremony] half a year ago in Azure Phoenix academy, standing his ground against the opinion of many, chose the [Full moon seal], a technique that was extremely powerful but also extremely hard to cultivate in. In reality this was taking a great risk; if he managed to master it, he would completely dominate his peers but if he failed, his competitors would leave him far far behind.

Xu Ge's original plan, relying on his talent and cultivation resources, estimated that mastering the [Full moon seal] would not be a problem. Who would have known, that he would train for half a year without

completely understanding it, nearing the edges of failure.

If not for the advice of an adept, telling him to use this opportunity of Azure Phoenix academy visiting White Deer academy, to come to White deer academy to find training notes he would still be stuck. This solved many problems associated with the bottleneck, otherwise he feared he would still be drifting between the limits of failure.

“It’s only that the [Full moon seal] is evidently an extremely deep and profound technique. Even Azure Phoenix academy does not have any cultivation writings about this skill, why does such a small White Deer academy, in the public library, would have a clue?

Xu Ge’s heart was filled with questions, and in the end he could not think it through.

But the training notes, was really incomparably insightful. He only read it once, and erased the doubts and fears in his heart, breaking through at once. Xu Ge lowered his head to look at the two moon seals between his palms, in a very good mood.

.....

The next couple of days, the wind and waves was peaceful.

The little loli Song Xiaojun did not appear again nor did the noble organisation seek to have trouble with Ye Qingyu. Apart from training, Ye Qingyu also spent some time in the library searching on information about the cultivation resources he would need.

Wen Wan had already left, and Ye Qingyu did not have another teacher he was close to. After the incident in the challenging matches, many teachers that had come from noble families, did not have that good of an impression of Ye Qingyu. They were not too willing to pay attention to him. Even if Ye Qingyu humbly asked them, they would be indifferent.

Under a fit of rage, Ye Qingyu decided he would not ask the teachers in the academy anymore and searched for the answers to his questions within the books of the public library.

Thankfully, he had the pass that head teacher Wang Yan had previously given him. Not only could Ye Qingyu enter and leave as he pleased in the library of the first years, he could also go to the public library located in the second year area to search for the information he needed.

His memory was shocking and comprehension was monstrous. His perception was extremely abnormal. With the aid of the nameless breathing technique, there were many martial techniques that he only needed to consult the martial manuals without the need for a teacher. His progress was extremely rapid.

Ye Qingyu also preferred this method of training. This way, he would not spend his energy which was not much in the first place, to be diverted in the fights and conflict between the groups of the academy.

In the blink of the eye, ten days had passed.

This day, in the morning it was sunny.

After Ye Qingyu's morning lesson was over, and switching to a clean martial uniform, carrying his spear holster, he headed to wards the administration area of the first year. He wanted to apply for skipping a year, directly entering the second year.

The things that he needed to learn in first year, had already been learnt entirely.

After entering second year, apart from training the inner yuan by yourself, the students could also begin to approach rune formations and rune weapons these two supernatural abilities. Even though these were supporting skills, but it was also an important part of a martial artists's strength.

It was also something that Ye Qingyu had planned to learn.

On the road there, he encountered many White Deer academy students. Seeing Ye Qingyu, they quickly lowered their heads and rushed past. There were also some people who would meekly greet Ye Qingyu, with some commoner students gathering together as if wanting to say something, but in the end did not approach...

Within the entire first year, Ye Qingyu was definitely the most special.

In the eyes of many students, his existence was akin to that of a Demon King.

The main path of the stone tiles diverged into many smaller paths. The

path towards the administration area, coincidentally also passed through the practice grounds.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to have a look.

In the previous battle, Ye Qingyu had lifted the ring with his spear. Crushed rocks filled the air, and the grounds around was completely transformed to a ruin. But the efficiency of White Deer academy in reconstruction was extremely high. Today, this place had already regained its former appearance. Spacious grounds, tall and high rings, neat and tidy.

But on the practice grounds, many figures were gathered.

On the number one arena, two banners, white and green was hung on opposite sides. Under the wind of the morning it fluttered, with each flag having two lines of word written in red ink. These characters were like swords or axes, filled with killing intent.

“White Deer without talent has lost his antlers, the Azure Phoenix intends to subdue the Heavens!”



## Chapter 053 – The Ye Mansion

---

As he neared, Ye Qingyu could clearly see the writings on the banner.

A thought passed through his mind.

During his time at the Grievance hall, he had heard about this from the little loli. The Azure Phoenix students had set up sparring arenas throughout the first, second, third and fourth year areas respectively. They had defeated many strong opponents of White Deer academy, becoming more and more arrogant as time went on. Ye Qingyu did not think that it had progressed to such an extent.

These two banners, were erected by the Azure Phoenix academy.

Just from looking at this phrase, one was able to know the extent of how conceited the people at Azure Phoenix academy were. Placing such a banner within the practice grounds of White Deer academy was not only a provocation; it was a fierce slap in the face.

But since the banner was able to be erected for such a long time without it being taken down, very evidently no one was able to stand up within White Deer academy and defeat the students of Azure Phoenix academy.

The ring was surrounded by a considerable number of White Deer academy students. Their expressions were all filled with fury, but not one of them entered to challenge.

Some people saw that Ye Qingyu had appeared, instantly cheering.

A large number of students of White Deer academy remembered the incident that had happened in front of the entrance of the library a few days ago. In an instant, their hearts filled with expectation. If Demon King Ye was willing to act, then these two humiliating banners on the ring, could definitely be trashed!

But very quickly, they were disappointed.

Because Demon King Ye was only passing by. He only had a glance from far away, then walked away uninterestedly. There was not the slightest indication that he would act out in the sparring arena, his figure quickly disappearing into the trees far off...

“He left just like that?”

“Could it be that even Demon King Ye is afraid?”

“This is too disappointing.”

“Disappointing your fart. Demon King Ye not acting out is extremely normal. Haha, the so called number one person of the first years, Qin Wushuang why does he not act? He is usually famous and showered with compliments, but he does not act in key moments. That is what is truly hateful!”

“That’s right!”

“Hehe, these noble students, normally would slander and vilify Demon King Ye in a hundred ways. Now that they need his strength, this kind of countenance is really unsightly...”

Within the crowd, another topic of discussion was argued back and forth.

.....

Administration area。

Applying for skipping a year was much more simpler than Ye Qingyu had imagined.

Originally he had thought there would be a lengthy application process and strength determination testing. Who would have thought the entire process would be so simple? After filling in a simple a simple form, the sleepy white haired head of administration only casually glanced at ye Qingyu. With a flick of her brush, she accepted the application.

“From tomorrow onwards, you can go to the second year area for training. You don’t have to worry about the things that will occur afterwards, everything will be handled for you.”

The white haired head of administration took Ye Qingyu’s nameplate back. A light in her palm flashed, the information in the nameplate being changed and rewritten. Throwing it back, she waved her hand, kicking Ye

Qingyu out.

Demon King Ye was slightly confused as he walked out of the administration area.

This was a little too smooth.

Could it be that the people in the administration area, had long known that he would come here to apply to jump a year, so they had already prepared beforehand?

Ye Qingyu guessed in his heart.

He did not know, that from the beginning of the academy to the present day, they had already developed a very complete system in these decades. In the past years, every year there would be a genius that had a cultivation speed far outstripping their peers, so jumping a year was not such a rare incident.

The white haired administration head had strength that was unfathomable. Just through one glance, she was able to discern a student's cultivation, and as long as their cultivation was at the required level, skipping a year was an easy thing to do.

Ye Qingyu examined the new name plate in his hands. After a moment of observation, a triumph spread throughout his heart.

“Jumping a year is successful, from now on I can enter and leave as I please from White Deer academy.”

After some consideration, he did not return to the dormitory. Instead, he headed straight for the entrance of the White Deer academy. He had already been in the academy for five months straight; truly, he was impatient to take a wander out in Deer city.

In truth, Demon King Ye was a young man that liked action and liveliness from the depths of his bones.

.....

Two hours later.

Ye Qingyu appeared in front of his parents' graves.

Although only five months had passed, but the grave was already overgrown with wild weeds, somewhat in a decline. The graves were completely covered with grass, and after several torrential rainstorms, the graveyard was scoured thoroughly, the gravestones at a slant and nearly falling...

Ye Qingyu respectfully kneeled and bowed in front of the grave, then began the process of tidying it.

After spending a hour of time, the graveyard was once again returned to its clean and tidy state.

Ye Qingyu sat in front of the grave and took out a piece of paper from

his chest.

On it, was a dense list of things he needed to do.

His gaze landed on the first row of characters.

“To revive the Ye family, first I must take back the Ye ancestral home, and return the memorial tablets of my mother and father to their place...”

Ye Qingyu clenched his fists.

This day, had finally arrived.

.....

Deer city.

North district.

With less than five kilometres from the poor district, there was an area for the wealthy and the nobles. Stately mansions were located in this area, with fresh and clean air, tree lined streets, spacious and tidy, birds chirping, butterfly fluttering. A beautiful scenery.

This was the wealthy district of the Northern part of the city.

In the north west of the wealthy district, there was a mansion that

could not be counted as extremely large. It covered a radius of less than a hundred acres, but the terrain was relatively elevated. There were streams passing through the mansion, with a large and expansive courtyard. Pavilions and porches scattered throughout, with an intricate architecture. There was a faint sense that it was tightly guarded, something contrary to its peaceful appearance.

The entrance of the mansion was from the south.

On the bright red board, the two dazzling words, 'Ding Family' was written.

The mahogany doors was six feet wide, and there was two sculptures made of white marble, three feet tall Bixie guarding the two sides of the door.

Ding Kaixuan was the current owner of this mansion.

To speak of the history of this mansion, Ding Kaixuan could not help but to feel triumphant.

He had a noble title, but within Deer city, he could only be counted as a third class noble. When compared to the true nobles of the various forces of Deer city, he was by far lacking.

However Ding Kaixuan had always been adept at looking out for his own personal gain.

This mansion, originally belonged to the Ye family. The husband and

wife of the Ye family had died in the battle to safeguard the city, and only left an ignorant son. Ding Kaixuan saw his opportunity, and used some underhanded methods, nearly without expending any financial resources, and through extortion managed to obtain this mansion.

And the servants and maids that originally belonged to the Ye family, also became the resources of the Ding family.

In these years, Ding Kaixuan had grown accustomed to this mansion, finding the lifestyle here extremely comfortable. He decided that he might as well move from his original mansion; as a result he was often present here.

The things that happened till here, seemed to occur very smoothly.

But every since approximately five months ago, the only son of the Ye family, Ye Qingyu, suddenly became White Deer academy student with exceptional talent from the original idiotic retard that he was. Ding Kaixuan could not rest easy from then on.

He began to worry, if Ye Qingyu came back fully fledged and looking for trouble, and the things in the past came to light, then there would be issues.

Therefore since then, Ding Kaixuan began to plan, and make some preparations.

He expended a large amount of money to hire an expert to protect the mansion.



Ever since the morning, Ding Kaixuan had always felt his right eyebrow twitching. He was restless and agitated, as if something bad was about to happen. His mood was extremely poor.

During lunch, something finally happened.

A servant when placing the utensils on the table, accidentally dropped an silver chopstick on the ground. The silver chopstick fell to ground with a ding, attracting the attention of everyone.

The agitated Ding Kaixuan was instantly enraged, ordering the woman to be hung up and beaten without any other explanation.

“Hmph, servant scum, daring to neglect me! I see you don’t want to live...” Ding Kaixuan roared.

His unfounded anger, was all vented on this woman.

At this time, Ding Kaixuan could already recognise this forty year old woman, was namely a servant from the previous Ye family. And she should be one of the nurses of the only son of the Ye family, Ye Qingyu.

This made him inexplicably angrier.

Whip after whip was struck. The pitiful woman clothes were torn apart, fainting with pain.

“Pretending to be dead? Hmph, continue to beat her, if you beat her to death than find a place to bury her.” Ding Kaixuan’s anger was still burning, shouting in a loud voice.

Within the courtyard, the servants were all gathered together, not daring to plead for mercy.

“Don’t, don’t! Master, I beg you, my mother did not do it intentionally, please spare my mother!” A young girl rushed out, desperately protecting the woman with her own body, begging bitterly.

The little girl seemed to be only thirteen or fourteen years of age, with features that could be called delicate and pretty. Although she wore the rough clothes of a servant girl, her appearance was somewhat striking. Currently, her tears were like rain, tightly hugging the unconscious woman and convulsing with fear as if she was a skylark scared and shivering in cold during a rainstorm.

She was the daughter of the woman, her name was Little Grass.

Seeing her mother be beaten to such a state without any reason, Little Grass had long been frightened out of her wits. She was only a pitiful little child, how could she be able to protect her mother in front of the ruthless and savage whips of the guards. Very quickly, she had endured several whips, her body stained with blood.

“Little lowly servant you dare block? Hmph, your guts is not small to not even care about my words. Come, drag her to one side, I’ll let this little lowly servant see with her own eyes her mother being beaten to death. To make me Ding Kaixuan unhappy, what the consequences of

that are...”

Ding Kaixuan roared a like a mad dog, still with a unknown anger.

At this time, the pitiful woman, under the intense pain, finally awoke.

She desperately pushed her daughter away.

“Little grass, don’t pay attention to mother...You...must ...live on...One day...your brother Ye will come back...” The woman was covered with blood, forcefully opening her eyes, and letting out a few weak and feeble words.

“No mother. I need you to live. If you are not here, what will I do?” Little grass began shedding tears of horror.

Her father had died in the battle to defend the city four years ago, and in these years, she and her mother relied on each other for survival. Every day was tough and arduous, but in the end they could support each other. The little girl could not imagine, if she lost her mother, in this cruel and cold world, the she without any relatives, how could she survive.

“What are you doing standing there? Beat her, cruelly beat her...” Ding Kaixuan as if he had gone mad shrieked.

## Chapter 054 – Why Are You Still Here?

---

The guards once again lifted their whips maliciously.

At this time, suddenly another guard came rushing in. He came in front of Ding Kaixuan, clasping his hands together. He said: “Master, outside the entrance a youth is asking to see you...”

“Youth? What youth?” Ding Kaixuan impatiently waved his hand. “Tell him to scram, your master I doesn’t have the mood to see some assorted trash.”

The guard hesitated for a moment. “Master, this youth is a student of White Deer academy.”

The students of White Deer academy were all martial artists. In Deer city, they had a certain status and respect given to them.

“White Deer academy?” Ding Kaixuan was slightly taken aback, then instantly quivered, realising something. “How old is he...did you ask what his name is?”

“He seems to be around fourteen years old. This subordinate have asked, he said his family name is Ye, and his name is Qingyu.” The guard nodded his head.

He was not able to see that once he finished his words, Ding Kaixuan’s facial expression changing entirely. Fury and fear flashed across his eyes,

his expression undergoing a myriad of changes, and finally looking gloomy.

Ding Kaixuan did not think, that the thing that would come, would come so fast.

It was not that he had never thought about the possibility of the descendant from the Ye family would come. But he had never imagined the day would come so quickly; Ye Qingyu had not even been in the White Deer academy for five months. According to normal reasoning, only after a year could he enter the second year and be free to leave the White Deer academy...

In these days, Ding Kaixuan had sent people to gather information about Ye Qingyu's performance within White Deer academy. He was able to obtain some vague news such as Ye Qingyu offending Qin Wushuang and being confined with the Grievance hall. Only through hearing that could his heart settle down...

Putting all these information together, Ding Kaixuan judged that the descendant of the Ye family, in the near future, absolutely could not pose any sort of threat to him.

But the problem was, why had the day arrived so early?

In this moment, countless thoughts passed through Ding Kaixuan's mind.

He was about to say something, when he suddenly saw a teenager

wearing a long black robe. As if taking a stroll, he came step by step closer. Stepping into the inner courtyard, and heading towards the main hall...

This teenager did not look to be over fourteen or fifteen years old with a muscular body. His thick black hair was tied back with a white hair band, hanging loose to the waist. He had swordlike eyebrows and a star like gaze with an angular face. Especially his pair of eyes, was like a cold star in the dark night, as if it flashing with an electric light.

Behind him, he carried a black spear holster with a spear the thickness of a young child's arm that was able to be seen behind his back. The two spears were around one metres and eight centimetres, and the black body of the spear had a heavy sinister killing aura emitting from it.

The youth walked closer step by step, his gaze glancing at the architecture all around. He displayed a type of lament, thinking of the past and sighing. He completely disregarded the other people in the main hall...

“Where did such a wild kid come from, to dare to barge into the Ding mansion...” After being surprised for a moment, a guard immediately rushed out shouting.

The black robed youth swung his arm.

Xiu!

This guard who was at the peak of the fifth stage of the ordinary

martial level, flew out like a kite. He landed on the ground, struggling for a long time but still not managing to get up.

Everyone was greatly stunned.

“You...you are Ye Qingyu?” Ding Kaixuan did not need to ask, he immediately knew the name of this teenager

The black robed teenager lifted his head and gave him a glance, his gaze filled with a strange dissatisfaction. Instead of answering the question, he asked instead, “Why are you still here?”

Ding Kaixuan hesitated.

What did these words mean?

Why can I not be here?

He suppressed the anger in his heart, and gave a discreet signal to the guards next to him. Then a seemingly amiable smile appeared on his face. He said: “I wonder why the young master of the Ye family has come here to my place, do you have some business?”

“Your place ? ”Ye Qingyu gave a mocking smile: “This is the Ye family, why can I not come?”

Ding Kaixuan’s expression changed, his face darkening. “Little children are young and are naïve so I won’t blame you. This place that used to be

Ye family now is the Ding mansion. You trespassed on the Ding mansion without reason, this is violating the laws of the Snow country. In consideration of your young age, I won't take matters further. Quickly leave!"

Coordinating with Ding Kaixuan's strict and threatening tone, tens of guards pulled out their blades. They pressed closer from all sides, emitting a killing aura, their faces sinister.

Ye Qingyu gave a light smile, lifting his head and looking at Ding Kaixuan. He said bitinglly, "I don't want the blood of outsiders to pollute the ancestral home of the Ye family. I'll give you thirty minutes of time, obediently scram, or else..."

Before he had finished speaking.

An abundant and irresistible yuan qi energy exploded from around Ye Qingyu. The tens of guards around him, amidst their screams, was forced stuttering backwards by this energy, not being able to stay in balance.

Ding Kaixuan with wide eyes retreated several steps, his face changing completely.

"Lei Gongfong, are you still not going to act?" He cried darkly.

As he finished his sentence, a bear like man with a body like an iron tower walked out from the shadows.

This person was around thirty years of age and two metres tall, with



bulging muscles that was similar to that of a massive bear. It was unknown how he was able to hide in the shadows; previously no one had discovered him, as if he did not exist at all...

But when he stood out, the ferocious aura emitted from his enormous body was enough to make people feel as if a ten thousand pound boulder was pressing against their chest. There was an illusion of suffocation, as if dark clouds were pressing down.

“Keke, a little child knowing some superficial skills, dares to come out and flaunt?” The Lei Gongfong with a steel body, laughed like an owl. “White Deer academy has really declined, its getting worse with each generation!”

Ding Kaixuan’s face, also displayed a malevolent intention.

This Lei Gongfong was someone that he had spent much financial resources into hiring, a Spirit spring expert. He was infamous throughout, cruel and ruthless. Normally there was not much use for him, but today with Lei Gongfong here, he could definitely take care of the descendant of the Ye family.

Opposite.

Ye Qingyu only took a glance at Lei Gongfong, then lost his interest.

He suddenly sniffed, smelling a bloody odour. Realising something, his gaze passed by the crowds, finally landing on the pitiful woman hanging from mid air far off in the distance outside the main hall.

“This is...” Ye Qingyu’s heart shook, recognising the woman covered in blood. “It’s aunt Lan!”

Xiu !

Everyone felt a blur zip across their vision.

The Ye Qingyu who was originally within the main hall, through a flicker of his shadow, disappeared. The next instant, he appeared outside the main hall.

Che!

The ropes were sliced apart by the wind from his palm.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, catching the woman into his embrace. His left hand extended and an invisible yuan qi shot out, grabbing hold of a chair covered with beast fur, and placing the woman onto the chair.

“Mother, mother...” Little grass quickly rushed over, to protect her mother.

The woman woke up from her unconsciousness again and felt a pain as if her body was being stabbed. In her sight, there was a young and handsome face, faintly familiar. Enduring her pain, she said, “Child, you....you are...”

“Aunt Lan, it’s me. I’m little Yu. Aunt Lan, I’m sorry, I’ve come late...”  
Ye Qingyu was greatly shaken within his heart.

The woman’s name was Qin Lan, and was one of the nurses of Ye Qingyu. It was said that Ye Qingyu’s real mother did not possess any milk when Ye Qingyu was small, and it was this nurse that had raised Ye Qingyu with her milk. Qin Lan’s husband was a guard of the Ye family, and in the battle of the city, died along with Ye Qingyu’s parents.

After the Ye family’s property and mansion was forcefully taken, Qin Lan and her daughter little grass was both seized as servants and Ye Qingyu was forced to live on the streets, with no way to resist. Although Ye Qingyu was still young at that time, but from the last words of his father, he could vaguely guess at some of the hidden meanings within. In order not to involve or implicate Qin Lan and her daughter, in these four years, he had not contacted them at all.

Until he had entered White Deer academy and possessed sufficient strength, was his first action be to rush to recover the Ye family home. One reason was solely for the sake of retaking the mansion but at the same time, he wanted to see Qin Lan and her daughter again and free the servants that had been seized by the Ding family...

Who would have thought, the first scene that he would see when he returned would be this.

An anger, began burning from Ye Qingyu’s innards!

“Little trash, I’m speaking to you, you dare ignore me...” Lei Gongfong also exited the main hall with large steps. His face was slightly hard to

look at; he had not been able to stop Ye Qingyu's actions, causing him to lose face.

"Little Yu..Quickly go..You..." Qin Lan understood what had just happened, hurriedly pushing Ye Qingyu away. From her perspective, a fourteen year old teenager was definitely not the opponent of such a fierce and bloodthirsty Lei Gongfong.

"Brother Little Yu, quickly go, don't worry about us..." An unknown courage came from Little Grass, she was still a child but was determined.

"Sister Little Grass..." Ye Qingyu looked at the little girl who had grown up with him drinking the same milk. He could not help but feel sorrow in his heart when he saw the state she was in.

In these four years, Ye Qingyu had felt that he himself had lived an extremely hard life. He had always endured, withstanding the mocking and disdain of the entire city, becoming the clown of Deer city. He was always withstanding the burden of humiliation but compared to these two, the suffering he had undergone was nothing. Qin Lan and Little Grass, was truly living in hell, experiencing all sorts of suffering and misery!

He had really came too late!

Ye Qingyu blamed himself for their suffering.

Opposite.

On the face of Lei Gongfong was a cruel and sinister smile. “Go? It’s too late...Lowly trash, to dare come to us alone, is looking for death. Master Ding, I advise you to get rid of this little fellow entirely, eliminating any future problems.”

“This...” Ding Kaixuan was tempted but he was also undecided.

To kill a student of White Deer academy, one must bear a certain amount of risk. He was only a third class noble, and must carefully consider this proposal.

“Haha, Master Ding, what are you scared of? The gutter of the North District is filled with corpses. After chopping him up and throwing him in there, who can discover him?” Lei Gongfong laughed malevolently, extremely bloodthirsty. “I, Lei Gongfong, have killed the demonic beasts before with my own hands and killed people of the military. Hehe, to kill a little trash of White Deer academy, what is there to be scared about?”

“If this is made known?” Ding Kaixuan was still hesitant.

“Hmph, who dares leak this, I’ll kill that person.” The killing of Lei Gongfong leaked out. As if he was a giant bear that had gone rabid, he took a step, shaking the entire structure of the mansion.

The servants of the Ding family, their faces were scared white and was shivering in terror.

## Chapter 055 – This All Belongs To The Ye Family

---

“Quickly go, Little Yu, you...” Qin Lan was in a panic, struggling to sit up. The wounds on her body broke open again, fresh blood spilling everywhere.

Ye Qingyu quickly placed his palm on the back of Qin Lan, sending a stream of inner qi. Only through doing this was he able to stabilise her injuries.

He turned and looked outside, his gaze landing on a decorative mountain. Inexplicably, he asked, “Aunt Lan, from what I remember, this courtyard did not have a decorative mountain in it?”

Qin Lan did not understand the meaning behind his words. After a slight hesitation, she subconsciously answered: “It’s part of the new design of the Ding family...”

“Hehe, so it was really this...then it should be demolished.” Ye Qingyu laughed. “Aunt Lan, wait a moment.”

Saying this, he stood up.

“Do you know why I have to demolish this mountain?” Ye Qingyu said seriously.

“Little trash, stop pretending and doing your schemes, you don’t know you’re about to die!” Lei Gongfeng walked step by step closer, laughing

maliciously. “Quickly beg me...haha, begging is no use, I’ll cut you into pieces!”

Ye Qingyu at this time, slightly shook his head, as if he had only noticed this fighter of the Ding family that was filled with killing intent at this moment.

He nodded his head thoughtfully. “En, theres a solution.”

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu suddenly took a step forward.

Lei Gongfong was still walking forward when he abruptly felt a blur before his eyes and a hand was already heading towards him. Under his shock, the inner yuan of Lei Gongfong began to be activated, shoving both his hands forwards, wanting to knock the palm away...

Who would have guessed that his two hands which was tough enough to crack apart stone, when it met this palm, it did not knock the palm back. Instead his steel hands that he was so proud of, instantly fractured, the pain spreading throughout his body...

“Aaaaaa...” Liu Gongfong opened his mouth, letting out an explosive scream as if wanting to say something.

But the next moment, this palm had already firmly gripped his throat. Then Liu Gong felt his entire vision falling backwards, fierce winds blowing into both of his ears.

Everyone had their eyes wide open.

Including Ding Kaixuan.

This noble master who thought he had everything under control, at this time could not help but let out a breath of exclamation. He watched stunned as the biggest card under his sleeve, watched as the Liu Gongfeng with unfathomable strength, as if he was the same as a dog, as if he was the same as a lousy sack, be casually grabbed around the neck by Ye Qingyu.

“Aaaaaaaa.....” Lei Gongfong screeched crazily and struggled for his life. But this palm, was as if it was made from steel, incomparably firm, gripping his neck so tightly it was impossible to break away.

Liu Gong was shocked as he discovered his one Spirit spring stage, was entirely suppressed by the inner yuan within this palm. The inner yuan in his body was expelled from his four limbs, firmly locked within his dantian, as if he was sealed.

“Beg from you?”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze was like a sword that pierced through Liu Gongfong. He had a bland smile that was filled with mockery and disdain.

“You...hehe...little thing....quickly release me...you...” Liu Gongfong’s face was filled with a ferocity, still trying to threaten Ye Qingyu.



“Wait a moment, after I’m finished using you then I’ll release you.”

Ye Qingyu smiled.

His body floated one metre up in the air, lifting up Lei Gongfong’s massive body, slowly arriving in front of the decorative mountain. Without even saying one word, he lifted up Lei Gongfong as if lifting up a battering ram, smashing it down on the boulder!

Boom !

There was a tremor like an earthquake.

The fake mountain started shattering, dust rising everywhere.

“Aaaa....” Liu Gongfong cried painfully, but the next instant was like a mother hen being grabbed in the neck, not able to emit any more sounds.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

Ye Qingyu mercilessly continued to hammer away.

The decorative mountain collapsed, large chunks upon large chunks of rocks falling to the ground. Like an earthquake was occurring, the entire courtyard seemed to be trembling.

The servants and guards of the Ding family all had deathly white faces.

Blood spurted everywhere.

From the start, Lei Gongfong's body was relatively unharmed, then his flesh began tearing apart. Even though he was at the peak of body refinement and also had the protection of inner yuan, it still could not bear this level of impact for long.

The force of Ye Qingyu's strikes had contained at least ten thousand pounds in every strike.

Ding Kaixuan had long lost all the colour on his face, pointing his finger at Ye Qingyu. His hand was shivering like he was suffering epilepsy, but he could not even manage to utter a word out, as if he was driven crazy with fear!

Finally, the entire rockery collapsed.

Ye Qingyu stopped, looking at the rubble of the destroyed mountain, displaying a hint of satisfaction. He casually tossed Lei Gongfong's body that was now limp into the spreading dust.

The next instant, without that steel hand clutching his throat, the cry of Lei Gongfong was like that of a pig being slaughtered, resounding throughout.

But this howl, made the entire courtyard seem even more quiet.

The other people were all dumbfounded.

Ding Kaixuan had nearly lost his ability to think, subconsciously withdrawing his pointing fingers, not daring to point at Ye Qingyu anymore.

Ye Qingyu's figure flashed, appearing in front of the entrance to the hall, raising his hand gently.

A strong gust of wind passed by, sweeping away the rubble and dust in the air. In the clear sight of everyone, was the fake mountain shattered till it was a pile of rocks, and Lei Gongfong covered with blood. His four limbs was fractured into who know how many pieces, lying there in the rocks like a dead dog, crying painfully...

This instant, many people finally understood through their cold sweat.

So this was the method that Ye Qingyu used to destroy the fake mountain.

Too terrifying!

Too violent!

Ye Qingyu stood silently in front of the entrance to the hall.

The wind lightly blew his black robe, and his thick black hair began moving like a flame.

A deathly silent was all around.

“I hate the people being pretentious in front of me. And besides, you can’t beat me at being pretentious. Haha, when I was fourteen, I was alone in the wild and killed over a thousand demonic beasts, including high class demonic beasts that were bitten to death by me. Also, situations involving killings, I have also seen many. You’re the type that appears fierce but is cowardly at heart, you’ve only torn apart a couple of demonic beasts, how is that worth bragging about? Half a step in the Spirit spring, inner yuan like a dry stream. Haha, a trash like you, because of your ignorance you are meaningless. You don’t even understand what the White Deer academy represents, and you also don’t know how the struggles between nobles actually are. You’re stupid and Ding Kaixuan is even stupider, that’s why you were able to fool him to pay such a high price for you...”

Ye Qingyu looked at Lei Gongfong, his face filled with contempt.

“Mercy...Mercy...” Lei Gongfong’s mouth was filled with blood. Without any trace of his previous arrogance, as if he was a dog with a broken spine, struggling to beg for mercy.

At this moment, even if Lei Gongfong was even more stupid, he absolutely knew he was not the opponent of this teenager. He was already scared out of his wits.

Originally with his strength, even if he was repeatedly struck onto the fake mountain, he would not be in such a pitiful state. But the teenager at that instant, had sealed his inner yuan, not allowing him to use yuan

qi to protect his body...

This type of strength, exceeded Lei Gongfong by many times over.

“I won’t kill you, scram.” Ye Qingyu flicked his hands.

Lei Gongfong was as if he was granted amnesty. He struggled to rise, not daring to tarry in the slightest. Bearing his pain, he bit by bit crawled away...

Ding Kaixuan was like an icicle.

“Noble master, you’re still not leaving? Staying here, do you want me to invite you to dinner?” Ye Qingyu asked with a smile that was not a smile.

Ding Kaixuan did not dare say anything.

He knew he should quickly leave.

But the problem was in these four years, he had invested a lot into this mansion. There were many treasured objects that had been transferred here for storage, once he left, everything would belong to the Ye family..

Thinking of this, he could only feel a pain in his teeth and flesh.

People die because of riches, birds die because of food.

Therefore he hesitated, wanting to rely on his noble status, to negotiate.

Ye Qingyu could see through the thoughts of Ding Kaixuan with one glance, not paying attention to him anymore.

“Go find a doctor, to treat the injuries of Aunt Lan.” Ye Qingyu supported Qin Lan till she was seated properly, then activated his inner yuan, suppressing her pain.

There was a manservant nearby, who was fair faced, and seemed clever. Hearing this, after a slight hesitation, he immediately ran to find a doctor.

Ye Qingyu comforted Qin Lan and her daughter then turned, coming to the centre of the hall.

In the deepest part of the hall, there was a landscape painting hung on the wall. Directly underneath, there was a small, bronze altar with intricate workmanship, with carvings of flowers and birds and also depicting scenes of the human race fighting. It was a work of art.

This small bronze altar was once one of the treasured possessions of the Ye family.

Ye Qingyu looked at this little altar, his deepest memories being invoked. He remembered the intimate and gentle moments with his mother and father, a faint smile appearing unknowingly on his face.

He retrieved the brass heroic badge from the inter dimensional pouch, placing it on the recess on top of the altar.

Instantly, a sound of mechanisms turning could be heard.

The four walls of the hall suddenly glowed with a pale light from the runes and formations. The entire mansion seemed to possess a strange atmosphere, indistinct lights from runes shining on all parts of the mansion. Stone tiles, walls, water pavilions, corridors, the surface of every part of this building began to glow.

But very quickly, everything became peaceful again.

At this time, the Ye family mansion was as if it was changed and as if nothing had happened whatsoever.

Ding Kaixuan seeing this, his entire body was shaken.

His gaze was filled with regret and remorse. “So the deed for this house, was in your hands all along...”

In a world where runes where advanced, mansions that were above average had deeds made by rune masters. Transactions exchanging houses, needed the rune hub to reset the owner. Only after this, could you be counted as a true owner, and received the protection of the royal law of Snow country.

After Ding Kaixuan had forcefully repossessed the ancestral house of the Ye family, he had never managed to find the deed. After hiring a

person who had some skills in runes, he had managed to change the information in the runes slightly. Normal people could not tell, making it seem as if he really possessed the deed.

Now that Ye Qingyu had managed to bring out the true deed, the rune hub – that is the little bronze altar, had reset. This was equal to Ye Qingyu once again becoming the owner of this mansion.

Ding Kaixuan finally understood, that all his plans and schemes, in a split second had become wasted effort.

His heart, turned icy cold.

“I...I need...I need to take back what belongs to me.” Ding Kaixuan said hoarsely, speaking as if he was talking to himself. “I have many things in this mansion, I...”

Ye Qingyu gave him a smile. “From today onwards, everything here, belongs to the Ye family.”



## Chapter 056 – The Corners Of Her Mouth Curved Slightly Upwards

---

“But.....”Ding Kaixuan was in a panic.

“If you don’t leave then I’ll personally invite you to go out.”Ye Qingyu looked at the heroic brass badge in his hands, examining it carefully. “You have a position of nobility, but to trespass on a property of someone with this heroic badge is a grave crime. I absolutely have the right to arrest you!”

Ding Kaixuan was dumbfounded.

Only half a moment later, did he wake up from his nightmare. Biting his teeth, glaring steadily at Ye Qingyu he left his parting words. “The person surnamed Ye, you win. We’ll wait and see.” He turned and left.

Ye Qingyu lightly smiled.

“This time I will let you go. But my patience has its limits, the next time you try and act against my friends and family, if you even display the slightest intention, then I will make you disappear completely from this world. If you don’t believe me, then try it!”

The words of Ye Qingyu, reverberated throughout the entire courtyard.

Ding Kaixuan stopped his steps, his face dark, finally leaving without turning back.

Very quickly, the sounds of footsteps could again be heard outside.

It was the young manservant, bringing with him a grizzled old doctor rushing hurriedly. Behind the old doctor, there was a little girl with braids in her hair, panting as she carried the heavy medicine box, beads of sweat appearing on her forehead.

“Young master Ye, the doctor has come.” The fair faced manservant said respectfully.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, then spoke a couple of words with the old doctor, asking him to treat Qin Lan.

After a short pause.

“Young master Ye, there is no need to worry. Madam Lan has only suffered some external wounds, her internal organs are unharmed. She only needs to ingest some medicine, and rest for a period of time, then she will be fine.” The medical prowess of this old doctor was extremely high, simply taking care of the wounds and giving a recipe for the medicine needed.

Ye Qingyu discovered, that the colour of Qin Lan’s face had turned for the better.

“Thank you for your trouble Doctor Li.” Ye Qingyu hurried to express his thanks.

During the time that the old doctor was treating the injuries, the fair faced manservant had already silently came to Ye Qingyu's side. He had reported the background and history of the doctor clearly to him.

The grizzly old doctor had the surname Li, and was called Li Shizen<sup>1</sup>, and was one of the famous doctors in the Northern districts. Every generation of his family had practiced medicine. Not only was he extremely skilled in medicinal arts, but his ethics was also admirable. Every month he would spend three days treating the poor people in the poor district free of charge.

It was only that this old man was ill fated. His only son and the wife of his son had long left this world, only leaving a grand daughter behind. The two only had each other for companionship.

After paying the fee, Ye Qingyu respectfully escorted Li Shizen and his granddaughter away.

Seeing the little girl panting and gasping for breath, Ye Qingyu could not help but feel pity for her. He had experience the pain of losing his loved ones, so he especially cherished family. The little girl had long lost both her parents and only had her grandfather. For her, this was misfortune, but at least she had one of her family by her side. Then what about himself?

Ye Qingyu at this moment, sighed with sorrow.

“What's your name?” He turned to look at the manservant.

“Little person, I<sup>2</sup> is called Tang San. I have been working for this mansion for over four years already.” The little manservant replied deferentially.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He was once someone who belong to the Ye family.

Four years ago, Ye Qingyu was only ten years old. He did not usually order the servants about, so not remembering this little manservant was something within reason. Since he was an old servant from his family, then he was at least trustworthy. From his performance today, he was quick witted and fast to react, it was worthwhile to try him out for a period of time.

This time leaving the academy, Ye Qingyu had asked for three days leave of absence, so he was not in a rush to leave.

Repossessing the ancestral home of the Ye family was the first step. Afterwards, there were an assortment of little things that he needed to take care of, such as putting the mansion and the servants in order. The servants of the Ding family, definitely had some people who had ill intentions and were Ding Kaixuan's confidants. These people must be scoured out.

Ye Qingyu did not have the time nor interest to take care of such matters.

Originally Aunt Lan, Qin Lan, was an extremely good choice for

handling this. But currently she needed to recuperate, and this Tang San could be used as a trial. Any matter that needed a decision to be made would still be given to Qin Lan to manage but the things that needed to be first acted upon, he would give to Tang San to do.

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, signalling to all the servants that they were not needed. He returned to the main hall, informing Qin Lan of his idea.

“This...this is too important. This servant...I...I fear I can’t...” Qin Lan was not comfortable with her change in status, stuttering and mumbling.

Ye Qingyu smiled and said: “Aunt Lan is one of the old retainers of my family. You are the person who comprehends everything the most, and is also the person with the final say. When I was small, I grew up drinking Aunt Lan’s milk. Since mother and father is no more here anymore, Aunt Lan you are my closest relative. From now on, everything that happens in this home, you have the power to make the decisions...”

“This cannot be.....”Qin Lan jolted up in shock from her chair.

Ye Qingyu quickly rushed to support her. “Of course it can be. From today onwards, you are the person who has the final say in this home. Everything will need to go through you. Haha, I remember when I was small, Aunt Lan you are extremely formidable. Mother once said, she and father was not skilled in managing householder affairs, and everything was done by Aunt Lan you!”

Aunt Lan recovered some energy, her face becoming slightly more red. She looked at the Little Grass sitting behind her, hesitating. “This...

This...”

Ye Qingyu smiled and gently patted Little Grass’s head. “Aunt Lan, don’t decline this. I have to return to the academy and have to expend far too much energy and time in training, I simply don’t have the time to manage the Ye house. Perhaps in the future, I will also leave White Deer city. You and sister Little Grass, are the only relatives that I have left in this world. This mansion, can be Little Grass’s dowry when she grows up and marries!”

“Ah, Brother Little Yu, you .....” Little Grass let out a breath of shock. Her face was completely red with embarrassment, her face like fire, not willing to lift up her head.

“This can’t do.” Qin Lan shook her head determinedly, saying in a steel voice. “This mansion is passed on from the Master and the Madam. I, Qin Lan, is willing to manage it for young master, but no matter what, this mansion will forever belong to the Ye family.”

Ye Qingyu had a brief smile.

He knew that Qin Lan’s personality was stubborn and hard headed. Once she had decided on something she would never change her mind so he did not insist. He smiled: “Then I’ll first bother Aunt Lan. The things that will happen later, we’ll speak when it happens.”

This time acting out and regaining the ancestral home, was something that Ye Qingyu only did because it was something that he should do. This was not because he regarded this mansion as something extremely important; the feelings and emotions involved far exceeded any financial

meaning.

Ye Qingyu was clear in his heart, that one day when his strength was enough, he would leave White Deer academy and Deer city behind. He would head towards the court of the royal family of Snow country and investigate the secret that his father had passed onto him in his last words. This ancestral home was only something mental for him; from his perspective, this house held no physical meaning whatsoever.

Qin Lan's wounds recovered extremely rapidly.

Four bitter years had passed and the home once again returned to the Ye family. This woman who had extremely deep feelings for the Ye family once again found motivation and hope for her life. Under the simple instructions of Ye Qingyu after he had gathered everyone, Qin Lan became the number two person of this mansion.

Tang San became the head steward of this home.

Under Ye Qingyu's approval, Qin Lan announced all the servants would have their wages doubled. This action, instantly won the cheering of many people. When Ding Kaixuan was in charge, he was stingy and tight fisted, often withholding the servants' money. Qin Lan's action, instantly won the support of the servants.

Qin Lan had experienced many struggles and waves in her life, and was able to instantly see through many peoples' intentions. Very quickly, she identified and resolutely dismissed the people with poor characters and the confidants of the Ding family. Her swift and decisive action, instantly established respect.

Ye Qingyu also encouraged the servants with a few words. With a casual smile, he took hold of Little Grass's hand and made this little girl who drank the same milk as him when he was small, into his sister. This way, the position of this little girl was in an instant turned into that of a young lady in this household. Along with this, Qin Lan's position would also rise, stabilising her position.

Very many servants, all sighed with regret in their hearts: The mother and daughter Qin Lan had finally endured to the end. Little Grass from a servant girl at the lowest level, every day washing, cleaning, doing the roughest jobs, right now in an instant, had turned into a phoenix. A life of extravagance awaited her, for she had become the young lady of this home.

This new master of the house, when taking care of Ding Kaixuan and Lei Gongfong and the others, was simply as frightening as a killing Demon king. Who would have known that this person would be extremely friendly and amiable when dealing with the servants. Qin Lan's character was understood by every servant; now that she managed this house, they would definitely have good days in store for them.

As such, all the waves regarding the mansion of the Ye family, had flowed past.

In this world, there was not a wall that did not leak wind. Very quickly the things that had happened here, through different avenues, passed on to the ears of those paying attention, invoking shock from various interest parties all around.



Of course, many people continued to not notice what had happened in the Ye family ancestral home.

This night, Ye Qingyu stayed within this house.

After taking a delightful bath, he stayed in the [Determination garden].

The determination garden was the location Ye Qingyu had lived in when he was small. It was not a large courtyard, with a Wutong tree growing in the middle, at least thirty years of age. It had attracted some unknown birds with nests constructed on its branches. In those years that Ye Qingyu was within this courtyard, was the years that he was the happiest.

After entering again, apart from being deeply moved, his heart was like an ancient well without any ripples.

He sat cross legged under the Wutong tree, breathing meditatively, activating his inner yuan, wasting no time in training.

Time quickly passed by.

Qin Lan and her daughter slept on a soft and smooth bed, not being able to sleep. Originally, Qin Lan had thought that her life would be enveloped with suffering and darkness. Before, when her daughter had slept in the middle of the night, she had silently shed tears of pain. She was worried for herself, she was even more worried for her daughter and she was also worried for the little boy who grew up drinking her milk, and losing all protection, the boy whose whereabouts were unknown....

Qin Lan feared that one day she would pass away and her daughter would be left alone, in this cold and harsh world, how could she possibly survive....

Who would have thought, this little boy would finally return.

It was like the coming of a deity.

“Mistress has once said, that young master will one day amaze the entire world, like a monarch arriving. Master and mistress, believed in the young master so much...perhaps they were correct!”

Qin Lan suddenly remembered some of her memories.

Little Grass finally fell asleep in her embrace. In these four years, this was the first time that the little girl had slept so sweetly, so at ease, so comfortable. When she dreamed, the corners of her mouth curved slightly upwards.

-----

1. 李时珍: He's actually a famous herbalist/ doctor in Chinese history. Not sure if this is relevant to the story or not. ↵
2. Refers to himself humbly ↵

## Chapter 057 – Fatty, Be Gentler

---

The second day.

By the time Ye Qingyu had ended his training at dawn, Qin Lan had already ordered people to prepare a sumptuous breakfast for him.

Changing into a new pair of clothing, Ye Qingyu sat and ate with a smile together with Qin Lan and her daughter. The little girl hesitated, then had a hungry glance at the food, excitedly sitting next to Ye Qingyu. Qin Lan insisted on standing at the side.

“Aunt Lan, from now on we are family, there is no need to be so estranged. My parents have passed away, I wish that my family can eat breakfast together with me. A family needs to be joyous and harmonious.” Ye Qingyu said with a laugh.

Qin Lan heard this and considered, finally sitting on the other side of Ye Qingyu.

Midway through the meal, Qin Lan wavered slightly and said probingly: “Young master Yu, I want to discuss something with you. I want to sever half of the servants in this house...”

Ye Qingyu drank some fresh shrimp congee<sup>1</sup>, and said with a smile: “Ding Kaixuan’s remaining people have already been expelled. Now the current servants do not number more than thirty, to take care of this mansion is just barely enough. Why would aunt Lan want to do this?”

“This.....”On Qin Lan’s face, a pained expression was evident. Finally she spoke the truth: “Young master Yu still has to return to return to White Deer academy and expenses cannot be spared for your cultivation. This family does not have any method to earn money, and in the short term there is no way to expand upon our financial resources. The only way is to think of a method to cut our expenses!”

Ye Qingyu grew silent after hearing this and Qin Lan seeing this, thought even he did not have a solution. Qin Lan quickly rushed to reassure him: “But there is no need to worry young master Yu. Sooner or later, a way will be found, the Ye family can definitely continue on.”

As she said this, the main steward, Tang San knocked and entered.

Evidently this fair faced youth did not have a good night’s sleep, with blood shot eyes, and the cuffs of his sleeves was wet with dew. It was a mystery where he went so early in the morning but he was in rare spirits; his entire face filled with excitement. From a low class servant to become the number three man of the Ye family overnight, caused Tang San to be so charged up that he was hardly able to sleep.

“Master, the things you’ve asked me inquire about, I’ve already completely investigated clearly!” Tang San said with respect and deference.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Seeing this, a slight confusion was in Qin Lan’s heart. She did not know what young master Yu had asked Tang San to inquire about, but

since young master Yu did not elaborate, she did not ask.

“You only just came back? You have not eaten breakfast yet? Sit, let's eat together.” Ye Qingyu looked at Tang San, pointing at a seat.

“Hehe, this is great, hearing master words, I am really a little hungry.” Tang San said with a laugh then sat down promptly, grabbing a bun and began eating, not hesitating in the slightest.

Qin Lan on one side kept giving meaningful looks at Tang San, but Tang San pretended not to see.

Ye Qingyu could not help but smile.

This Tang San did not care about the small details and was quick witted, and had a temperament similar to him. In the future, as long as he was carefully cultivated, he could become one of his trusted people. At least in the future, managing this mansion was not an issue.

After finishing breakfast, Ye Qingyu wiped his mouth. Patting Little Grass on the head he said smilingly: “Little girl, do you want to go out and have a walk. Brother Little Yu will bring you out to play.”

“Good, good!” Little Grass began jumping up and down in excitement.

Between twelve and thirteen years old, was namely the most brilliant part of childhood. Previously she had always been trapped within the mansion, every day and night doing rough and menial labour. Every moment she had to fear for the fierce whip of the steward. Once she

heard that she was able to go out and have a look, Little Grass was so happy she was about to float in the air.

Qin Lan originally wanted to say something, but seeing the joyous face of her daughter, her heart constricted, not saying anything to prevent her in the end.

Looking at young master Yu holding her daughter's hand and accompanied by Tang San leaving the entrance, Qin Lan prayed in her heart. No matter what happens in the future, young master Little Yu, you must be able to bear it!

Everything about the Ye family, right now needed this youth who had not yet grown up to support it.

.....

“Ah, an extremely beautiful little windmill ! ”

“This clay doll is so cute, it's as if it was alive.”

“Heavens, that old grandfather is really amazing, to be able to balance such a long pole on his head!”

“Hehe, that uncle can change his appearance, and he can breath fire!”

Little Grass bounced up and down, her excitement so great it was as if she was a skylark that was just released from its cage. The smile on her

face was the bloom of a flower, sometimes turning her head to look at things that way and sometimes running to another side, her laughter spilling everywhere.

After exiting the Ye family mansion was the wealthy district, and very quickly after that was a concentrated commerce area. The sides of the street was lined with shops and also stalls that were managed from people from outside the city, creating bustling streets, very lively.

Tang San followed beside Ye Qingyu, his back held very straight.

In truth he was also a young man, and had rarely ever came to such a lively place. He was the same as Little Grass, he could not help but feel excited. He could not wait to rush around and have a proper look but he was clear in his heart, that he had only just received young master Yu's appreciation. The way he did things, he needed to have propriety, so he endured and silently followed behind Ye Qingyu.

Within Tang San's heart, he had the urge to cry.

Only when he followed behind young master Yu could he be like a normal person. He could hold his back straight, without the need to bow his head to everyone, nor the need to carefully observe everyone's body language in order not to offend them. When people saw them coming, it was them that lowered their heads and parted!

This time walking on the streets, Tang San felt that he had finally regained his dignity as a human.

The further they went, the closer they were to the flourishing and prosperous areas.

“Master, we’re here.” On the crossroads was a three storied restaurant, Tang San reminded.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

This restaurant had an ancient and classic appearance, constructed from mahogany wood and bricks. From far away, the tempting fragrance of the dishes wafted over. Those who entered the restaurant, was either wealthy or rich, wearing illustrious garments. Evidently this was a high class place.

Heavenly fragrance restaurant.

It was one of the previous properties of the Ye family.

This three storied structure, was the result of the consolidated efforts of Ye Qingyu’s father. Located in the most prosperous area, every year it allowed a significant inflow of money to the Ye family, and was one of the three most important properties of the Ye family.

After the Ye husband and wife had died in battle, this was too taken away through trickery.

The one who invaded this place, was someone that was once indebted to Ye Qingyu’s father. When Ye Qingyu’s father was here, he did everything possible to please but after he had died in battle, he



immediately changed his stance, using some trickery behind the scenes to take over this restaurant.

Ye Qingyu back then was still young, without any possible way of resisting. He had always endured.

Today, it was finally time for the Heavenly fragrance restaurant to return to the Ye family.

To Qin Lan's worries and questions, Ye Qingyu had long thought of the answer. Naturally once the ancestral home of the Ye family was taken back, then the properties of the Ye family also needed to be taken back. Only doing this, did they have the ability to sustain and feed so many people.

"Have you passed my words?" Ye Qingyu walked towards the restaurant.◦

"It has already been given since early morning. I believe that Luo Jin is currently waiting for master you." Tang San quickly answered.

Ye Qingyu nodded.

At the entrance to the restaurant.

"Ah, this lord you look unfamiliar, is this your first time coming to Heavenly fragrance restaurant? Just order whatever you want to eat, we are not bragging, but this Heavenly fragrance restaurant guarantees your satisfaction..." A very capable server came forward.

“I’m called Ye Qingyu, I’m here for Luo Jin.” Ye Qingyu said simply.

The server’s expression instantly changed, as if facing an enemy. Carefully examining him up and down, with an icy tone and expression: “Boss is at the third floor, follow me.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything else, entering the Heavenly fragrance restaurant.

The area of the first floor was the largest, able to accommodate hundreds of people. Mahogany tables and chairs were laid out, a very spacious and stylish environment. It was only early in the morning, but the number of customers had already exceeded Tang San’s expectation; it was nearly completely full.

“So many people, business must be good.” Tang San mumbled.

Ye Qingyu heard, but only gave a slight smile.

By the time they had reached the second floor, Tang San instantly quivered. Because in this floor that was able to accommodate around fifty people, apart from some tens of fierce looking wanderers for guests, there were around thirty or so soldiers with spears and swords, emitting an ominous atmosphere.

“Master, this...” Tang San quickly alerted in a small voice.

It was as if Ye Qingyu did not hear his warning, nor saw those people. He continued walking on towards the third floor.

Tang San could only summon his courage and follow on.

After entering the third floor, the light suddenly brightened up.

Golden sunlight came through the window frames, the mahogany flooring was as if it was shining with its own lights. The scarlet red screens that was like flames was particularly intricate, dividing the entire third floor into five separate yet connected areas, appearing irregular but still looking charming.

Compared to the second floor and the first floor , the decoration of the third floor was much more sophisticated and elegant , filled with a rich and comfortable atmosphere.

This place was also full.

“Hahaha, nephew Ye, I heard that you wanted to come here early. Your Luo uncle I have already been waiting for an hour, quickly come have a seat.” In the loud laughter, a middle aged man with an sophisticated atmosphere stood up, smiling and waving at Ye Qingyu.

This person looked to be around forty years old, without any hair on his face. Presumably when he was young, he was a rare handsome young man. He had a long robe on him, using the most famous fabric of Deer city, the fabric from [Li Embroidery]. He possessed a tall figure and emitted a sense of trustworthiness.

This person, was Luo Jin.

A person that was indebted to Ye Qingyu's father, but after he died, immediately became a traitor that forgot everything, someone who had kicked his benefactor in the teeth.

At this moment, it was as if nothing of the sorts had happened. He laughingly greeted Ye Qingyu, still acting like an elder.

Ye Qingyu only stared at him with a faint smile, not saying anything.

His gaze passed from Luo Jin's figure into the surrounding people on the tables around. Ye Qingyu nodded his head with satisfaction saying, : "Jin Shiren from the Lianfeng smithery, Wang Youde from the Murong shop, Dong Mingtong from the Miao Yu temple, Nie Yin from the from the Yin Taoxuan pavilion... these coyotes that have the guts to carve a part of the Ye family's properties are all here. This is too perfect, it saves me the trouble of finding you one by one."

Before he had finished.

Pak !

A fatty wearing the top half of a leather armour slapped his palm on towards the table. He abruptly stood up, his face filled with malicious intent. He said angrily: "Little brat, the Ye family only has a little seed left. If you don't want the Ye family to lose all their descendants, then obediently return to stare at the graves. Wanting to make me vomit

something that your father I have already swallowed, you don't have the requirements to do so!"

Tang San was frightened by this.

This fatty, entire body was covered with blubber. When he abruptly stood up, his entire body fat started quivering, as if it was a mountain made of fat that was shaking, the armour barely holding together. This was Jin Shiren, the manager of the [Lianfeng smithery], the largest smithery nearby. This person was famed for being rude and having an explosive temper.

Ye Qingyu did not react with anger, only had a slight grin on his face. "Fatty Jin, be gentler. Everything of Heavenly fragrance restaurant belongs to the Ye family. This table also belongs to the Ye family, if you break it, then you will have to pay for it."

-----

1. Congee, rice porridge. ↵

## Chapter 058 – Dead Fatty

---

“You little brat.....” Jin Shiren was enraged, wanting to say something more.

“Everyone first calm down, calm down. Let’s discuss this peacefully.” Luo Jin came over between them waving his arms, and smiled towards Ye Qingyu. “Nephew Ye, the things that happened in the past you must have some misunderstandings. But this does not matter, at that time you were still young and did not understand matters. Today since you have come, we can sit down and have a good open conversation...”

“There is nothing to discuss.” Ye Qingyu slowly walked in front of the windowsill, his back facing everyone and opened the window. He looked at the bustling crowd down below and said: “One condition. Spit out everything that you have swallowed from the Ye family, return everything that you have taken. I also don’t want to go too far, if you do this than I will write off all grievances and resentment...”

“I peh, who do you think you are. Little trash, have you gone crazy..” Fatty Jin could not endure any, once again slapping the table and standing up. With a dark expression, he shouted: “Boss Luo, you’ve heard what he said. This little trash is climbing all over us. I, fatty Jin will not return anything, I’ll see what you can do to me!”

“Old Jin, lets discuss things calmly...” Luo Jin seemingly had an attitude that he was trying to settle things without it getting out of hand.

“There is nothing to discuss. What kind of person am I, fatty Jin? Hehe,

did you not go and investigate? To be harsh and unreasonable in front of me, you really don't know life and death. A little trash that hasn't even had his hairs fully grown, wanting to threaten me? I peh!"

Fatty Jin saying this, lifted his legs to leave.

As he walked past Ye Qingyu, he smiled sinisterly. "Little kid, the Jiang Hu is not somewhere that you can act in this way. If you have the guts then come to Lianfeng smithery and repeat the words you've just said. I'll make you know, how to write the character Death<sup>1</sup>!"

Finishing his words, he brought the two experts beside him to leave. His overweight body, came to the stairs and was about to go down.

Ye Qingyu turned around and smiled. "Then how about this...Right now, I'll teach you how to write the character Death."

Saying this, his right hand lifted up and a light suction was in the air.

The fatty Jin's flesh mountain body quivered, then instantly fell back. Under his scream of shock and surprise, he flew through the air, his back landing upon Ye Qingyu's palm.

"You.....release me....."The four limbs of fatty Jin flailed madly, struggling for his life, but it was no use. He shrieked with rage and embarrassment.

"Little brat, you dare ! "

“Release our master ! ”

The two experts following fatty Jin reacted. They floated through the air at the speed of lighting. The moment they acted, strong gusts of wind blew through space, like a storm. Their strength was indeed impressive.

Ye Qingyu lightly laughed, his left hand casually swiping through space.

Instantly the gusts of wind stopped.

The two experts in midair instantly had blood filled their mouth, as if slapped by a gigantic invisible force. They sprawled flat on the floor, two palm indents had sunken into their chests, not being able to get up....  
.....

“Little star palm power ! ”

“You.....”

The two experts spurted out blood and exclaimed.

The little star palm power could not be counted as a high class technique, but was instead a common way of striking that utilised inner yuan. Both of them knew how to perform this, but to use it like Ye Qingyu, without any hint of energy fluctuation and be able to injure someone without any signs, was indeed profound.



Through just this simple point alone, these two knew in their hearts, they were not his opponent by far.

Shouts and cries exploded!

The people sitting on the large table finally stood up, every single one of their expressions changing.

“Nephew Ye, lets discuss things peacefully. No need to come to blows, no need to come to blows....” Luo Jin still acted the part of an elder, trying to persuade a child.

“Little trash, release me, quickly release me. You dare treat me like this, you...” The fatty Jin screamed in rage.

“I have never understood, why some people with their lives in the hands of others, would dare to be still threatening and demanding,” Ye Qingyu said contemptuously. “Do you think this is stupidity or is it courage?”

“Nephew, don’t be rash. Quickly release him, you must not kill anyone. If you kill that person, I fear you won’t be able to withstand the consequences...” Luo Jin quickly rushed to persuade Ye Qingyu but his words held a different meaning.

Ye Qingyu gave him a side way glance: “Four years have already passed, why do you still have daggers hidden in your smiles? Do you really want me to kill him?”

Luo Jin was taken aback, instantly saying with a smile: “Nephew you must have a misunderstanding.....”

Before he had finished, the fatty Jin again began crying loudly. “Little trash, it’s best for you to release me. Hehe, the Lianfeng smithery, don’t think you can take it back in your lifetime. If you obediently release me, and bow down to me to beg for forgiveness, then I won’t pursue this matter any further. Otherwise, today there are not only a few people present. If you dare harm a single hair of mine, don’t think you can walk away alive...”

Before he had finished.

The left hand of Ye Qingyu released him, facing the window. The palm of his hand freed him, and the gargantuan figure of fatty Jin, directly fell from the window of the third floor...

“Stop ! ”

“Don’t.....”

“Little brat you have guts ! ”

Everyone was shocked, with some people screaming but everything had already be done.

The cries from fatty Jin became quieter and quieter, the screams

becoming and longer and longer from outside the window. Very quickly, the boom of a heavy impact could be heard and the cries of the fatty abruptly stopped, the sharp cries of the bystanders down below resonating.

Ye Qingyu looked out the window to investigate.

Below the streets, was the fatty Jin who did not know any martial arts. He had nearly become a meat patty, his four limbs twitching and with his eyes opened wide in disbelief. Till the moment of death, he still could not believe that Ye Qingyu would really dare kill him!

The third floor of the restaurant was filled with a deathly silence.

On the faces of everyone sitting there, was a terror that was hard to disguise.

They had never imagined, that this good looking teenager, was the weak boy that they had taken everything away from him four years ago. During their conversation he would so easily act and kill someone, as if he was killing a rabbit or a pig.

Ye Qingyu looked at the crowd and as if suddenly thinking of something, a smile appeared on his lips.

“I have just thought of a joke. A fatty, if he accidentally fell from the third floor, without knowing any martial arts, then what would he become?” Ye Qingyu said with a laugh.

Everyone was taken aback, not knowing the reason for this question.

As everyone subconsciously guessed the answer, with answers such as meat patty, meat mud, corpse and the such, this question was answered by Ye Qingyu instead. “Hahaha, of course, he will become... a dead fatty<sup>2</sup>!”

There was vaguely someone who snorted, nearly laughing out loud.

Luo Jin’s face had become somewhat difficult.

He suddenly felt, that as if he had miscalculated something. In four years of time, the teenager in front of him, had undergone far too great a change. Where was the slightest hint of the weak smile, the inflexible kind heartedness, the wealthy son that could be bullied by anyone?

Why was it that in his gentle smile, he was able to see a decisive and ruthless killer, with a atmosphere as fierce as wild beast, a demon king, such a tyrannical person?

The Tang San who had followed Ye Qingyu here, was also astounded.

Originally this was only meant to be a discussion. When he saw the people of the second floor, he had realised the opposing party had already made their preparation, in terms of martial force and in terms of legal discourse. They would definitely be the disadvantaged party and Tang San had already prepared himself to beg for mercy for his young master

But in between the light and bland discussion, his master had already taken fatty Jin's life.

Tang San could not react.

He knew that, the following events could not be bode well.

His master was still too young, too rash.

Tang San hurriedly grabbed hold of the frightened Little Grass, placing her behind him. He was about to say some words that could alleviate this problem, but the other people finally recovered from their stunned state.

“Audacious, to kill someone in broad daylight!”

“This is too impudent, too impudent. So what if he's a student of White Deer academy? Can he ignore the laws of the royal family?”

“Hmph, even if I have to risk my life, I will report this to the city leader. He is too arrogant!”

People slammed their tables to leave, screaming in rage.

QiangQiangQiangQiang !

A type of martial artist that were also family servants of these various people, took out their weapons. They all stood up, with a malevolent

gaze, surrounding Ye Qingyu.

Below came the rushing of footsteps.

The soldiers with armour also had their razor sharp weapons unsheathed. They completely filled the space between the staircase of the second and third floor, an killing intent emanating in the air.

“Ye Qingyu, you dare ignore the laws of the country. To kill the innocent, quickly surrender!” A middle aged man with a dark expression shouted, in an imposing manner.

This person was called Nie Yin, and was the master of a dojo called the Taoxuan pavilion. He was also one of Ye Qingyu’s targets today.

The Taoxuan pavilion also used to be one of Ye family’s property. Ye Qingyu’s father had founded this martial arts dojo and Nie Yin was the head instructor of this dojo in the past. He seemed cautious and conscientious, but after the death of Ye Qingyu’s father in the battle, he repossessed the dojo for his own uses. Getting rid of all who would not follow, he cruelly murdered and caused the deaths of a few instructors who was still loyal to Ye Qingyu’s father.

Nie Yin could also utilise yuan qi and was therefore not as afraid. Standing out, he condemned Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu coldly gave him a glare, saying icily: “You also look to die?”

Only through a gaze, did Nie Yin’s heart froze over. Terror and fear

inexplicably rose in his heart, finding it hard to breath, and he really could not say anything more.

Ye Qingyu’s gaze left him, landing on the Luo Jin still with a faint smile on his face. “Look at your devious face. You are originally a shameless and brazen trash, and yet you have to pretend to uphold justice and righteousness. Its been so many years, aren’t you tired...”

Luo Jin had never been mocked to such an extent before. His facial expression abruptly changed, saying: “Nephew, you...”

“If you dare call me nephew one more time, do you believe I’ll slaughter you at this very instant?” Within Ye Qingyu’s eyes, there was a glint like that of a sword unsheathed, as if he was a prehistoric beast that was about to begin killing at the slightest provocation.

Luo Jin’s heart suddenly pulsated. A cold air travelled from his spine to his head, nearly exploding his mind. A terror that he had never experienced before, enveloped him.

No matter facing what terrifying character before, Luo Jin firmly believed with his glib tongue, he was able to persuade the opponent. But this youth would not even give him the chance to speak.

-----

1. Chinese idiom, should be pretty obvious what it means. Its just a threat. ↩

2. It's a play on words, dead fatty can also be referred to damn fatty *etc.*





## Chapter 059 – The Consequences Of Taking The Initiative

---

But this time, facing the teenager that he thought was under his control, Luo Jin really did not dare to utter another word.

He did not doubt in the slightest, that if he spoke another sound, Ye Qingyu's killing intent would explode like thunder, without the slight trace of hesitation.

“Hmph, the bravery of an ignorant person.” Luo Jin coldly snorted in his heart.

But he did not say anything more.

Ye Qingyu held the hand of Little Grass, coming in front of a table next to the window.

The people sitting at the table looked at each other. Finally, they quickly moved aside. The killing aura of this teenager, his hands covered in blood<sup>1</sup>, turned their faces pale, not daring to come near.

“Sit.” Ye Qingyu placed Little Grass by the window, reclining by the windowsill himself, coldly staring at the people of the third floor.

“Young master Ye, we should discuss this peacefully, perhaps we can ...” Dong Mingtong from the Miao Yu temple said standing up, wanting to say something more.

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, cutting him off, his face filled with impatience.

“Fine, fine, I’m can’t be bothered to listen to your useless words. I give you half an hour of time, obediently return the Ye family properties back and there is no need for blood to be shed here anymore. Other, the fate of fatty Jin will be your example!”

He was more than intense !

He was more than tyrannical !

This was simply arrogance !

A bare and naked arrogance !

In truth, Ye Qingyu did not want to discuss terms with these scum at all. With the things they did to the Ye family years ago, killing them hundreds of times over was still not enough considering how many people loyal to the Ye family was driven to death by them. But today was not the day to settle these grievances, and Ye Qingyu did not want to make the matter even bigger, starting a slaughter here now.

But if this crowd of scum still foolishly continued to resist, then Ye Qingyu would absolutely show no mercy.

Since he had chosen to act today, then naturally he had some cards

hidden up his sleeve.

However, at this time —

“Hahaha, an extremely confident expression. Only being in the White Deer academy, you have forgotten how high the Heavens is or how deep the Earth goes. Killing someone in broad daylight, threatening peaceful citizens, is this the things you have learnt in White Deer academy?”

Loud laughter.

Within the hall, one of the bloodstone dividers was pulled apart.

Three people that looked like military officers, was sitting beside a large table in a private room. On the table was exotic delicacies, fragrant fine liquor and with dancing women accompanying them, in the midst of a drinking party.

Previously the rune formation dividers had blocked sound from passing through and the sounds within could not be heard at all with no one noticed anything. Now that the divider was gone, it was as if another dimension had suddenly appeared from beside the people.

The person who spoke, was namely one of the military officer sitting in the middle.

This person looked to be around forty years of age, with a hooked nose, and a deep black armour. He emitted an imposing pressure, wearing a steel helmet and a long blade by his waist. From his appearance, he

should be a military officer of the Northern general.

The two sitting beside the hook nosed man, was slightly younger. The person on the left had the same black armour as him, but from the style, it seemed that his military position was slightly lower than the hook nosed man. The person on the right had the appearance of a scholar, holding a fan, with a long black beard and cold smile on his face.

Seeing these three people appear, everyone in this floor let out a long breath of relief.

Apart from this three people, there were also ten other people in distinct armour, armed with swords and spears. Everyone one of them was filled with a killing aura, standing like a black iron statue. Very evidently, these were the elite soldiers of the military.

Luo Jin laughed.

Deep within his eyes, a cold light appeared. A shred of triumph was in his gaze as he looked towards Ye Qingyu.

“Ahah, nowadays the students of White Deer academy, are becoming worse and worse. A person who had not been learning for more than half a year, is coming out as a fox to exploit’s the tiger’s might<sup>2</sup>. Running out to scare and threaten merchants who peacefully abide by the law, tututut!” The middle aged man drank the alcohol next to the dancers, shaking his head with an icy smile.

Ye Qingyu only smiled at this.

“So Luo Jin and these bunch of scum, the reason they still resisted until now, was because of you three....Right now, have you finally shown all the cards under your sleeve?” Demon King Ye was still casually reclining in the chair next to the window.

The appearance of the hook nosed man and his two friends, did not cause Ye Qingyu to display any expression of surprise.

At the same time.

Tang San had always carefully observed Ye Qingyu’s expression.

Seeing the young master’s confident expression, he relaxed slightly. The things that had happened here today had really made Tang San’s heart beat as if he was on a wild ride, always holding his breath tensely.

But he did not know why, when things were developing to its climax and the situation was more and more explosive, he instead let out a breath of relief.

As they were speaking——

Pak !

The military officer sitting to the left of the hook nosed man, suddenly slapped his enforcement manacles upon the table, causing the female dancer beside him to turn pale. He stood up, staring and coldly saying:

“Killing someone in broad daylight, even if you are a student of White Deer academy, don’t think you can escape responsibility. Little brat, just obediently surrender and follow us to the interrogation prison!”

The interrogation prison, was the place where local criminals were questioned in Deer city.

It was a rumoured place that people went there breathing normally and when they came out, would be on their last breaths. A place where you enter complete and intact but came out crushed into pieces. An eerie prison reeking of blood. Very many people, just by hearing the words interrogation prison, was enough to frighten someone stiff.

Once these words were spoken, the expression of everyone on the third floor changed.

A contemptuous expression was shown on Ye Qingyu’s face.

“Interrogation prison, haha, an extremely famous name. If this was in the past, hearing the snap of the manacles, I wonder how many people will be terrified out of their wits. To pretend to be awe inspiring, no one can be even compared to you...” Saying this, Demon King Ye gave off a smile. “It’s a pity, a pity...”

“What’s a pity?” The military officer coldly grinned.

“It’s a pity that your small Northern interrogation officer, does not have the power to arrest me.” Ye Qingyu said, slowly placing the heroic brass badge on his chest, all the while with a grin to the military officer.

The military officer at first only had a cold expression, his expression looking at the brass badge with a look of disdain. First was contempt and scorn, but then he suddenly realised what it was. His mockery was gone, to be replaced by a serious expression.

The scholar on the right side of the hook nosed man, at this instant, his countenance also changed entirely. There was a slight surprise, then hurriedly he came beside the hook nosed man, and whispered something in his ear.

Very evidently the hook nosed man was the leader among these three men, with the highest position.

Originally he had his arms around two female dancers, one mouth of meat and another mouth of alcohol. He only drank and eat, enjoying himself. From the start, he did not even give Ye Qingyu a glance, not even sparing a look for Luo Jin and the others. He had the posture of someone extremely high up, as if that just by him appearing was some sort of reward for the people here.

But after the words of the scholar, he finally lifted his head.

A heated glare like a sword, landed upon Ye Qingyu's face. Then, it focused on the brass heroic badge shining in the sunlight. Half a moment later, his eyebrows shifted down, standing up and gesturing. "We're leaving!"

Finishing his words, he brought his two underlings and the ten soldiers, leaving the meeting and heading towards the staircase.

Such an abrupt change, had not been predicted by anyone.

The triumph in Luo Jin's face froze over, then was surprise, a hint of panic in his eyes.

“Captain Yu, you...this...” Luo Jin was finally in a panicked alarm, wanting to persuade the hook nosed man and the others to stay.

This hook nosed man was named Yu, his full name being Yu Luosheng. He was a captain under the Northern military leader, and could be counted as a middle level military officer.

Yu Luosheng turned his back and gave Luo Jin a glance. A faint shake of his head, without saying anything and in the blink of an eye he was already at the staircase.

The guards and the servants who had originally rushed up, everyone one of them looked at each other in bewilderment. But they did not dare to block the path of Yu Luosheng and the others, rushing to open a way for them to pass.

But at this time—

“Stay there!”

The Ye Qingyu who had not spoken, suddenly opened his mouth.



Yu Luosheng's body stopped. Turning around, he glared at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was not frightened in the least by the expression of the captain, that seemed as if he wanted to devour someone. He blandly said: "Aren't you going to capture me to the interrogation prison? Why are you suddenly leaving in such a rush?"

The young military officer who previously had said the brash words, suddenly had a face as red as a pig's liver. Anger and hate filled him, he bit his lips and was about to say something when the scholar hurried to stop him.

"No wonder the Ding Kaixuan with a position of nobility, was willing to leave the mansion. So the Ye family really has a heroic badge that was passed down. Young master Ye, this time it was us that was too rash. The matters concerning the Ye family, we will not interfere in again, young master Ye can handle it as he pleases. Afterwards, this restaurant, me and captain Yu will place special attention onto it."

The middle aged scholar cupped his hands together, saying with a smile.

In reality, the heart of this scholar, really wanted to swear and curse.

Ding Kaixuan that crafty old man, no wonder he did not act himself. After losing the mansion he had worked so hard to obtain, he did not dare take revenge and instead hid within his old mansion venting his anger. So it was because of this badge.

This heroic military badge, had a significant weight within Snow country.

The person wearing this badge, as long as they had evidence that this was passed down legally, had a position equal to that of a noble. They did not need to dismount and rid themselves of weapons when seeing the monarch nor did they need to bow down to government officials. They had many special privileges and an unusual position. Even if they committed a crime they could not be interrogated with physical instruments, and needed the judgement of a royal member of Snow country before they could be convicted.

For example the fatty Jin Shiren, who kept calling trash and scum at Ye Qingyu who had inherited this badge, was equal to directly insulting the nobility and the royal family. As a tiny little merchant, without any position of nobility, such a crime was enough for his tongue to be sliced off and executed. Dying through falling in the streets, was a mercy for him.

Fatty Jin deserved to die, and as the person who killed him, Ye Qingyu had obviously committed no crime. And to capture Ye Qingyu to interrogate him, was simply just a joke unless the northern military leader and the officer of the interrogation prison did not want to live anymore.

The reason that the scholar wanted to swear and curse, was because Ding Kaixuan and the others had evidently known that Ye Qingyu had such a badge. However, they had not informed himself or Yu Luosheng at all. They were used like idiots by him, forcefully taken the initiative. The result was that they had gotten into a mess and trouble, losing all their face

And they had also offended Ye Qingyu.

-----

1. Not literally but metaphorically ↵
2. Chinese Idiom: use powerful connection to intimidate people. ↵

## Chapter 060 – Returning Heavenly Fragrance Restaurant

---

If Ye Qingyu was only a teenager with average talent, even if he possessed the heroic badge, his threat would not be too high. Similarly, if Ye Qingyu was only a normal student of White Deer academy, offending him would not be something to be fearful about. But this youth was a White Deer academy student and the inheritor of a heroic badge. When these two were added together, this was something that was frightening.

This type of person, would sooner or later grow up.

Even just considering the present, the entire Northern military office may not be enough to handle him anymore, not to mention the three officers.

They were in the eyes of common citizens —no even in the eyes of wealthy people, big shots. But in front of the brass heroic badge of Ye Qingyu, the identity of their position as military officers was laughable.

As someone in the army, to offend someone who had inherited the badge of the royal family of Snow country, there was not a stupider thing to do than this in the entire world.

This was why the scholar threw away his face, and had a friendly tone when he spoke.

He knew today they were used by some people as the spear head, to

probe Ye Qingyu or perhaps it was due to some other reason. Either way, their current position was not something to be envied. They must think of ways to repair the relationship between them and Ye Qingyu, only then could they regain some benefit.

Ye Qingyu heard this and his expression remained calm and peaceful.

In these four years, Luo Jin and the others had completely taken over the properties of the Ye family. This was a bare and naked robbery and repossession, something that was against the laws of the country. However they did not receive the slightest retribution or consequence from their actions; the positions of the Luo Jin and the others were just servants and merchants at that time. Evidently, to be able to do this, they must have the support of someone in the background.

In these four years, the Ye family properties had accumulated wealth and riches from. Luo Jin and the others had received a part of it, but the person behind them must have received much more.

The person who was able to do this, was not someone of the army, but someone of the nobility.

“I don’t care you received who’s order to support Luo Jin, and I don’t care what has happened in the shadows in these four years. From today onwards, all the property of the Ye family, must be returned to the Ye family. If there are still people not willing to give up, and still wants to obstruct me, then I don’t mind making this matter even bigger. The Ye family has once bled before so...” Ye Qingyu’s fingers lightly clasped the table. “Today’s Ye family, is also not afraid of shedding blood.”

The tone of which he used to spoke was very calm.

But every person, was able to discern from the calm tone of this teenager a steel will and a determination that was unquestionable. It was a martial artist's heart that would not accept any negotiation.

The aura of the hook nosed man, could not help but completely disappear at this very moment.

“No need to worry young master Ye. Me and my brothers, from now on the matters regarding the Ye family, the northern military will not question again.” The hook nosed man nodded his head, expressing his goodwill and then left with his soldiers, not daring to tarry in the slightest.

Within the northern military office, Yu Luosheng could be counted as a mid level officer. He could not hide the sky with one hand<sup>1</sup>; even though he had a military position, he was not a nobility nor did he have a title. He was only a soldier, especially in front of an heroic badge holder, he could not be the slightest impudent or presumptuous.

As they looked at Yu Luosheng and the others departing, there was a deathly silence in the hall.

Some people had still not recovered.

Some people had already recovered. Swallowing their saliva down their throat with difficulty, they looked at the youth bathed in golden sunlight next to the windowsill, their faces covered with fear and shock.

And there were some people who acted as if they were undergoing a funeral, experiencing an apocalyptic fear.

Such as Luo Jin.

The middle aged merchant who had been from the very beginning, absolutely sure he could devour Ye Qingyu, his expression right now was as if he had just eaten a dead rat. His smile that was produced using his best efforts, was even more disgusting than if he had just simply cried.

“Young master Ye, I.....”Luo Jin said simply, kneeling to the floor.

He finally understood how laughable and ridiculous he was. He finally understood, in the world where strength was the ruler of all, the techniques he used to manipulate people, the techniques that he was so proud of, in the eyes of the truly strong and the nobles, was not even worth a mention.

This kneel, signified his complete collapse.

Ye Qingyu gave Luo Jin a glance, seeing him painfully weeping in front of him. His brain could not help but think of when he was young, this person in front of his parents treating him especially well, with kindness and gentleness. Purchasing various items and his fake joyful smile...

“Not crying until you see the coffin, not giving up until reaching the Deer river!” Ye Qingyu sighed lightly.

This sigh, caused Wang Youde from the Murong shop and Dong Mingtong from the Miao Yu temple to be frightened out of their wits. Thinking that Ye Qingyu was intending to kill them, they knelt on the floor with a thud.

“Young master Ye, we were wrong...”

“Forgive us ! ”

“I am willing to handover the Murong shop, completely giving it over...”

“The Miao Yu temple from now on, is also the property of the Ye family. Young master Ye please show your mercy, spare me, I beg you spare me...”

The two kowtowed like a hammer pounding garlic.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything, his gaze landing on Nie Yin.

Nie Yin who came from a martial artist background, had an sturdiness that Luo Jin and the other merchants did not possess. Although at this moment he was also frightened, but he still bit his lips and was about to negotiate...

“Fine, you win. As long as you accept my conditions, the Taoxuan pavilion can return to the Ye family....” Nie Yin said bitingly.

Before he had finished.



A cold smile appeared on Ye Qingyu's lips.

The next instant, a shadow passed through everyone's vision. Luo Jin could only sense a figure passing by front of him, and when he reacted, he could only hear Nie Yin's cries from behind him....

He turned around to look.

As his eyes took in the scene, his pupils dilated.

The Nie Yin who was domineering and powerful in their eyes, was struck in the dantian by Ye Qingyu's palm. There was a visible mist that emitted from Nie Yin's body, and a sound like beans popping could be heard....

"Aaa, You....you've crippled my yuan qi, you..." Nie Yin was like a balloon that leaked air, slowly deflating. His face filled with ashen grey, his gaze containing hatred and despair.

Ye Qingyu retrieved his palm.

"This will be interest. Forcefully taking over the Ye family property for so many years, some sort of price must be paid. Normally you use your strength to bully others, today I have crippled your martial prowess. I fear that that are countless people applauding me for this action..."

Ye Qingyu stared icily at Nie Yin.

“You are ruthless...” Nie Yin lifted his hand and pointed at Ye Qingyu.

“Ruthless?” Ye Qingyu shook his head. “Compared to the things that you have done to the Ye family, this cannot even hold a candle...I am no longer the little boy that can be bullied and walked all over.” Ye Qingyu slowly returned by the window,saying : “What right do you have to discuss conditions with me?”

Luo Jin at the others had already been frightened till their faces were the colour of the ground, cold sweat dripping down their cheeks.

The way Ye Qingyu did things was brutal and direct.

Losing his yuan qi, represented that Nie Yin had lost everything. The way he did things was overbearing and he had made not a few enemies. Now that he had lost his martial power, once news of this leaked out, very quickly he would be in a state worse than death.

Then how would this youth take care of them?

Luo Jin and the others state of mind was in a mess, as if they were a prisoner waiting for their judgement. If time could be turned back, they would absolutely not offend the Ye family anymore.

“I also won’t go too far, return the Ye family properties and each one of you pay a hundred thousand of silver taels<sup>2</sup>, then the grievances between the Ye family will be written off. If you don’t come to provoke me in the future, then I also won’t bother you.” Ye Qingyu clasped the edge of the

table, saying in a bland tone.

“I am willing, I am willing...” Dong Mington rushed to be the first one to accept.

Luo Jin and Wang Youde felt a pain in their heart. After taking over the properties, in these four years of time, the profit added up together was only about a hundred thousand silver taels. Repaying so much, was equal to slicing off their own flesh, but if they were not willing to pay...

Thinking of the consequences of Jin Shiren and Nie Yin, they did not dare to raise an objection at all.

This affair, could be said to have drawn to a stop.

Ye Qingyu did not tarry longer than half an hour. Waiting until Luo Jin and the others had signed and placed their finger prints on the rune formation contracts, he left the remaining business for Tang San to take care of.

For Tang San this was an opportunity but also a test.

If he was able to effectively manage these assorted affairs, then from now on Ye Qingyu could rest his heart and rely on him for a lot of matters. But if his ability was not enough, than Ye Qingyu would naturally consider swapping the steward of the Ye family.

And as for why he had so much confidence in this youth who did not look older than sixteen, even Ye Qingyu himself could not be sure.

Perhaps it was the fact that he himself was only slightly older than fourteen.

And on the other hand, being able to obtain such an opportunity, Tang San was naturally so excited that he could float in the air. But he suppressed his urge to jump up and down, suppressing the tremors in his hearts, trying to give off a sedate and calm appearance. After seeing off Ye Qingyu, he handled the leftover business.

Luo Jin and the others had been completely broken by Ye Qingyu. They did not dare to play any tricks, cooperating to their fullest.

.....

The sunlight outside Heavenly fragrance restaurant, had already become extremely bright and glaring.

The weather these several days were abnormally great, making people feel especially comfortable.

But the old citizens of Deer city, knew that these types of days signified the end of the time of good weather with bright sunlight. Very quickly, within a thousand miles, it was about to enter the season of icy winds and floating snow.

Holding Little Grass's hand and walking down the staircase, the people who previously had gazes of fierceness like wolves and tigers, was at this time like little lambs lowering their heads, as if bowing to their monarch.

Telling the server to package their special food, Ye Qingyu prepared it for Aunt Lan and the others as a small present.

Little Grass carried the food container. As she left the entrance of the restaurant her smile was like a flower blooming in March.

But as Ye Qingyu left the restaurant, he stopped.

Six men wearing pale purple clothing, stood in front of the restaurant as if waiting for someone. The collar of neckline had a vivid pale golden dragon engraved upon it, and under the sunlight, was especially eye catching.

These six people wearing such a clothing stood right in front of the restaurant and passerbys all took a detour to avoid them.

The people from the two river organisation, had also arrived?

Ye Qingyu was slightly surprised.

-----

1. Hide the truth from the masses ↵
2. Unit of weight equal to fifty grams ↵

## Chapter 061 – Little Shang Sword

---

The power groups within Deer city, apart from the army of the Snow country, there were also the noble organisation, White Deer academy and also several large commerce companies. Societies were also a significant power within these groups.

The Two River group was one of the many societies.

Within the northern district, the power of the Two River group was enough to rank in the top ten. The leader of this society's name was Lang Zhong, and it was said that he was an expert in the Spirit spring stage since a long time ago. He had many experts under his command, with high influence especially in the areas around Heavenly fragrance restaurant. This location was under the control of the Two River group.

“Excuse me, are you Ye Qingyu, young master Ye?”

One of the men in violet seeing Ye Qingyu come out, clasped his hands together and said politely.

Ye Qingyu nodded.

“Greetings young master Ye.” The violet man bowed again, then beckoned to the people beside him.

His four companions brought a mahogany box around one metre and sixty centimetres long and fifty centimetres wide towards Ye Qingu.

Seeing them slowly walking with careful steps, the weight of this box was definitely not light. Evidently, the four men each possessing above average strength still felt a strain lifting it and this was reflected in their heavy footsteps.

The leading violet clothed man pointed at the wooden box, saying humbly, “Young master Ye, this is the present our society leader Lang has given you, please accept it.”

“Lang Zhong has given me a present?”

Ye Qingyu frowned.

Many thoughts and guesses passed through his mind in an instant.

It is said that destiny will make enemies meet. This leader of the Two River society, was one of the people that Ye Qingyu had prepared to face.

Because the person who had taken away the only Spirit weapon of the Ye family, was namely Lang Zhong.

This person was different from Luo Jin and the others. Not only did he have strong influence, he himself was already a person who had long entered the Spirit Spring stage. Ye Qingyu through many fortuitous events had also broken through to the Spirit spring stage, but he was only someone with one Spirit spring. There was no guarantee he was the opponent of Lang Zhong.

Therefore after this, Ye Qingyu had indeed acted against Luo Jin and

the others but he did not go out of his way to look for Lang Zhong of the Two Rivers group.

Who would have that the Lang Zhong would have such a good information network, finding Ye Qingyu's location so quickly and even instructing people to give him a gift.

It seems this Lang Zhong already knew what had happened, including the incidents that had occurred in the Ye family and here,

This leader of the Two River group, seemed to be a bit more difficult to deal with than what Ye Qingyu had imagined.

But this Lang Zhong had sent him a present, what intention did he have?

Ye Qingyu hesitated for a moment, then lifted his hand, inner yuan activating.

The four violet clothed men only felt the heaviness in their arms disappearing, and when they looked again, they only saw the scarlet red box was grabbed through the air by Ye Qingyu. Only using one hand, he firmly lifted up the box.

The violet clothed men stared at each other, everyone able to see each others astonishment.

They were the elite of their society yet when the four people lifted this wooden box, still felt it was heavy. Who would have thought that this



youth would be able to carry it so easily. His strength was far above theirs.

Opposite them.

Ye Qingyu felt that this scarlet red wooden box was extremely weighty, definitely not under five thousand pounds. He could not guess what was contained within. His right hand held the lid, lightly unboxing it.

A cold light appeared, an icy and chilling air released from the box.

This breath-taking sight, was as if a moon suddenly appearing in the dark skies.

Ye Qingyu looked inside, and could not help but be dumbfounded.

Within the huge wooden box, was a gigantic sword, thirteen inches wide and five feet long. The blade of the sword was as pure as a pool of limpid autumn waters, clear and flawless. The sword did not have any ridges nor any markings. A radiance stirred, as if it was moving quicksilver, the hilt about the thickness of a duck's egg. On the handles, veins and patterns carved, and it was an azure blue, splitting into three layers each intricately linked, spitting out the blade of the sword.

The style of this sword, was simple and unadorned but held a gorgeous beauty. One glance of it was enough to cause someone to have affection for this weapon.

“This is...the Little Shang sword!”

Ye Qingyu nearly cried out in shock.

This sword, was namely the Little Shang sword that had once belonged to the Ye family, which was taken away by the Two River group. When Ye Qingyu was small, he had seen his father wielding this sword. This was deeply etched onto his memory so he could not possibly be mistaken.

Today, Lang Zhong would return this spirit weapon in such a light and easy fashion?

This was something Ye Qingyu had never thought would happen.

After thinking for a moment, he once again covered the wooden box. One hand holding the box, one hand holding Little Grass, he did not say anything in response to the gift. Passing by the violet clothed men, step by step he disappeared in a street far off...

At the same time.

Approximately three hundred metres away from Heavenly fragrance restaurant.

On the road, the white haired old doctor, Li Shizen took care of his horse and rolled up his coarse sign made of cloth. Slowly rising, he and his granddaughter took away their medicinal boxes, the pair walking away...

A young person wearing rich violet clothing, respectfully watched the two leave.

.....

.....

One hour later.

Ye Qingyu returned to the Ye mansion.

The signboard in the entrance had already been changed, with the large words 'Ye mansion' shining under the light, emanating a special vitality.

Qin Lan had stood there at the entrance looking out since they left.

Only after seeing Ye Qingyu and Little Grass returning unharmed, could she let out a breath of relief. She hurriedly ordered the servants to see to their return.

Ye Qingyu did not linger in the main hall for too long. Speaking a few words, he impatiently returned to his room, wanting to carefully examine the Spirit weapon, Little Shang sword.

He had entered into the Spirit spring stage for a considerable but he still did not possess a Spirit weapon that belonged to him. When facing ordinary martial artists, this was not a big issue but when facing experts

that had Spirit weapons, he would be placed in an absolute disadvantage.

Even though after entering second year, he would begin to learn more skills such as rune formations, casting tools, collecting herbs, distinguishing ores, polishing and grinding. But to create a Spirit weapon, not only was a skilled and practiced technique needed, it also required a high amount of resources. The amount of Spirit ore that was needed, this was not something that Ye Qingyu could support in such a short time frame.

Therefore, in this type of situation, the Little Shang came at the perfect time.

Little Shang sword was something his father had inadvertently picked up. Although it was not famous, nor was it a weapon that could enter the rankings, but it was truly a real Spirit weapon. At least in the foreseeable future, it could satisfy Ye Qingyu's short term needs.

After refining the Little Shang sword, Ye Qingyu's power would rise to another level.

.....

"You said, young master Ye went to Heavenly fragrance restaurant today?" Qin Lan asked, incomparably astonished.

She was in the main hall, conversing with her daughter. Only through a spur of the moment, did she inquire about what had happened today.

Little Grass vividly repeated all that she saw to her mother.

Qin Lan was completely stunned.

Luo Jin, Wang Youde, Nie Yin and the others were the people who had carved up the Ye family. These were the people that Qin Lan had hated the most but she did not have any power to retaliate against. Ever since Ye Qingyu had appeared again and retook the Ye family, Qin Lan had always worried that if these people find out the things that had happened here, another incident would occur.

Qin Lan worried that Ye Qingyu lacked experience, and had the brashness of a youth, and would do something impulsive. This would cause Luo Jin and the others, these old foxes that ate people without spitting out bones, to fall into their traps that they had created. Young master Ye would not be able to hurt the tiger but rather be injured by it.

She had originally planned to find a time today, to persuade Ye Qingyu, to take his time in making a decision.

Who would have thought.....

In Qin Lan's eyes, the most terrifying opponents, was casually solved by master Ye.

"It looks like I'm really getting old..." Qin Lan was both overjoyed and deeply moved. The growth of Ye Qingyu had greatly exceeded her imagination. This also made this loyal woman realise, that she and young master Ye, was no longer people of the same world.

Very quickly, Tang San came back along with a large variety of contracts and seals.

“Haha its all resolved, I have done something to be proud of...” Tang San was incomparably excited, after greeting Qin Lan, he asked again: “Where is young master Ye?”

“Brother Ye has confined himself in isolation. He said that the matters of the family, brother Tang San you can just discuss it with mother and make a decision.” Little Grass said crisply.

She had swapped into silk garments fitting for a young lady, making Little Grass even prettier, as if a little jade doll. It was only that she had been malnourished for a significant period of time, causing her to be too thin and skinny.

Tang San and Qin Lan then quickly discussed the matters regarding the retaken property.

For the Ye family to grow prosperous again, there were too many things to take care of. Both of them had the same determination, to construct a stable family for young master Ye, so he could do whatever he wanted without any worries.

The things that had happened made the two people realise, that Ye Qingyu was a crouching dragon. Today, he was still slumbering but sooner or later, he would soar in the sky, ascending throughout the clouds and leaving them behind. The Ye family could not always rely on him.

.....

Ye mansion.

Determination garden.

Ye Qingyu stood with his legs apart, within the courtyard.

There was an invisible air flow surrounding his entire body, the inner yuan of his body being activated to its fullest. Strong qi rushed throughout his four limbs, and the three metre space around him was as if air had solidified. Vortexes of air appeared around him...

The Little Shang sword floated above his head, and spun around in a high rotational speed not discernible by the human eye. On the handle of the sword, there was a pale silver rune inscripted upon it that emitted an azure blue radiance, as if it was alive, slowly wriggling.

This line emitting a blue glow, was namely the rune formation.

A spirit weapon, was a weapon made from many different and rare materials. But the most important thing was, inside the weapon and on the surface of the weapon, there would be scriptures that could or could not be seen, personally made by rune masters.

These rune formations, through the activation of the martial artists inner yuan, could give birth to a strange kind of energy. It allowed the

martial artist's offensive or defensive power to greatly increase and some special Spirit weapons, through the coordination of the martial artist, was able to display formidable power similar to high class yuan techniques.

In general, martial artists possessing spirit weapons could easily withstand and kill three or four martial artists who did not possess Spirit weapons.

On the previous battle, if Qin Wushuang had refined and submerged the [Great Zhou sword], and made the sword truly his, turning the [Great Zhou sword] into his life Spirit weapon then Ye Qingyu would not have a chance.

It was a pity that the Qin Wushuang then, had not entered the Spirit spring stage for long so his foundation was still unstable. He did not have complete control of the [Great Zhou sword] and could not fully utilise the full power of that Spirit weapon, and in the end was defeated by Ye Qingyu's herculean strength.

“So this is why Spirit weapons are so fantastic and astonishing.....”

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan all around him, streams and streams of yuan qi like stands of light, travelling throughout his entire body. Finally, it transformed and appeared on his arms, as it was tiny bolts of minute lightning, spreading throughout his entire body. It was like a lightning shackle, wrapping around the Little Shang sword.



## Chapter 062 – The First Spirit Weapon

---

To refine a spirit weapon, the first step was to insert your inner yuan into the body of the weapon, to understand the rune formations within.

For Ye Qingyu, this process possessed a slight risk.

After all, Ye Qingyu had not been to any of the classes in the sophomore year and did not attend any lessons regarding runes and formations. He was only a layman, but through immersing himself in the library everyday, and also going to the libraries of those of higher years, he understood the basics and theory behind these formations. He had some partial knowledge so he therefore decided to give it a try.

The Little Shang sword vibrated, the blue lines on the sword handle becoming more and more evident, slowly spreading towards the area of the blade.

“The areas when the lines has already been activated and grown, represents that the runes and formations in that area have already been successfully immersed by inner yuan, and the formation within can be activated...”

Ye Qingyu made his decision.

His mind was clear and blank. Within his dantian world, the water of his Spirit spring rose dramatically and soared in the sky. It transformed into a great mist that entered into the four limbs and the hundreds of bones of Ye Qingyu, finally entering the Little Shang sword continuously.

From the doubt and hesitation he had at the start, at this time, Ye Qingyu finally began to understand how to refine this Spirit weapon. The somewhat incomplete theory that he had read in books regarding runes and formation, through this process, gradually became clear and distinct.

The process of instilling his inner yuan into the Little Shang sword, became smoother and smoother.

If there was someone beside him observing, they would discover that the blue strands of light appearing on the Little Shang sword, was as if they were vines that were crazily growing, heading ever upwards and completely surrounding the Little Shang sword.

At this instant Ye Qingyu could sense, that this Little Shang sword was like a life form that had slept for who knows how long in the endless darkness, and was being awakened bit by bit.

These strands of blue light continued to grow throughout the sword, as if they were veins and arteries, beginning to function.

“This feeling, is really too mysterious, its like.....its like the Little Shang sword is blending into my blood, combining into one entity.”

Ye Qingyu could not help but mutter to himself.

Two hours had already passed. The entire body of the Little Shang sword, was finally entirely enveloped by the blue strands of light. This was a sign that the rune formation within the sword had been completely

activated.

When this sword had been completely infused with Ye Qingyu's inner yuan, than it would have been refined by him.

Ye Qingyu was able to sense the power of this Spirit weapon.

A type of information that was hard to describe using any language, appeared in Ye Qingyu's mind. The power of this sword and the limits of inner yuan it could withstand, became clear.

Ye Qingyu picked the sword up.

The Little Shang sword floating above his head was firmly in his grasp.

The Spirit weapon in his hand, compared to when he had not refined it, had an entirely different sensation. Before refining it, it was extremely weighty being at least several thousand pounds and icy cold, with a rough texture. And now it was as if it was a part of his arm, he could not sense the weight at all, and it was warm as if touching a lover's skin...

Ye Qingyu swung the sword out.

Without activating his inner yuan, a wave of air was cut through by him.

Inner yuan was agilely moving within the sword blade, and with a slight activation, the three feet of the cold sword blade would emit an icy

and dense aura, causing people to feel terrified.

Through a will of Ye Qingyu's heart, accompanied with a flash of blue light, the Little Shang sword disappeared in his hand.

He used inner vision.

With the dantian world, in the location of the Surging spirit spring, it had already turned into a small lake. The eye of the spirit spring was namely in the centre of the lake and within the eye of the spring, the Little Shang sword has sunk in completely, entirely being submerged.

After refining the Spirit weapon, it could unite with the holder, entering the wielder's body and become submerged into their Spirit spring, nourishing within. If nurtured properly, the level of the Spirit weapon could perhaps be raised.

Little Shang sword could be counted as a low class Spirit weapon. If Ye Qingyu was able to find some suitable rare ores and materials, newly refining it and improving it through special techniques, then there was the possibility of it becoming a middle class Spirit weapon.

The higher the classification of the Spirit weapon, the more inner yuan could be instilled within and hence have a greater power.

“Little Shang sword, is the first Spirit weapon that I possess in my life.”

Ye Qingyu sighed with regret.

This was the last object that his father left him.

He continuously practice summoning the Spirit weapon. With a will, the Little Shang sword appeared in his hands, abruptly disappearing and appearing floating beside his head. It flew and soared according to Ye Qingyu's will.

Very quickly Ye Qingyu came to the conclusion that with his current inner yuan, he could only control the Little Shang sword to attack and defend within ten metres of him. After ten metres, the power would greatly diminish and it would not be enough to hurt martial artists of the Spirit spring stage.

This result, was already quite to his satisfaction.

After all, he still had not completely merged with the Little Shang sword, and his inner yuan had not yet completely submerged into the blade of the Little Shang sword.

“It has already been three months since the successful excavation of the first Spirit spring. The Spirit spring has already overflowed turning into a small lake. According to the scrolls, I have already reached the stage of basic mastery and can attempt to excavate the second Spirit spring within my dantian!”

Storing away the Little Shang sword, Ye Qingyu considered in the light of the setting sun.

In general, after the martial artist had excavated the first Spirit spring in their dantian world, if the water overflowed and became a small lake, then they could attempt to excavate the second Spirit spring. According to the theory of the yuan qi martial way, after excavating over ten Spirit springs, you could attempt to break through into the Bitter sea stage.

Ten Spirit springs, was the lowest requirement for martial artists of the Spirit spring stage to break into the Bitter sea stage.

Of course, some genius martial artists would not be satisfied with a mere ten Spirit springs. Rather, they would prepare slowly and diligently for future success, not being impatient about raising their overall grand level. They would excavate until twenty, thirty, or even more Spirit springs, reaching their limits then attempt to break into the Bitter sea stage.

Doing it this way, after entering the Bitter sea stage, their strength would increase explosively and a normal Bitter sea expert would not be their opponent.

From some perspective, the number of Spirit springs within the Bitter sea, represented the potential of a martial artist.

Of course, the number of Spirit springs was not something that you could increase as you please. Every one's body had a set upper limit. If your natural endowment was inadequate, then forcefully excavating past this upper limit would have devastating results. The least serious consequence would enter into the state of demonic fire, and the most serious consequence would be that their flesh body would transform and collapse into dust, disappearing within the world.

Ye Qingyu had read some anecdotes within the library about this.

According to legend, in the ancient age, there was a peerless genius of the human race that had managed to excavate over ninety nine Spirit springs, remaining in the Spirit spring stage for over a hundred years. Once he broke through and entered the Bitter Sea stage, in a instant he was invincible when facing opponents of the same stage.

Afterwards, this peerless genius rose and rose in the face of adversity, becoming the pillar that supported the entire human race. Resisting thousands and thousands of alien races, protecting a domain for the entire human race, he left behind countless legends.

There were also people of legendary strength within the human race, such as existences like the three Sovereigns, five Emperors and the eight Supreme, that had also prepared long and diligently in the Spirit spring stage. After many fortuitous encounters, they all had excavated over ninety Spirit springs, and in the end became a ultimate expert.

So it could be said, the cultivation and choice that occurred in the Spirit spring stage, was enough to affect the future success of a martial artist and determine what heights they were able to reach in the future.

Ye Qingyu was now in the Spirit spring stage, so he must be particularly mindful of what he decided.

.....

The third day.

The Ye mansion after the humongous transformation, finally settled down from their chaotic and disordered state. Qin Lan and Tang San, performed exceptionally in this regard; one managed inside affairs and another managed outside affairs. Through the efforts of these two, it allowed the Ye family to function successfully.

Li Jinji, Miao Yu temple, Yin Taoxuan pavilion, these properties had already been completely transferred and returned. Tang San was so busy that he became dizzy and woozy, but thankfully there were no errors that occurred.

After finishing breakfast, Tang San and Qin Lan both respectively prepared tens of scrolls for Ye Qingyu's inspection.

"The accounts of this mansion all these years, is all here, for the inspection of the young master."

"The five properties outside has already largely been investigated clearly. This is the accounts of it all these years, and also the financial resources and functions, is also within!"

The two stood by the side.

One glance was enough to make Ye Qingyu feel nauseous.

Regarding these matters, he did not have the slightest interest.



“Eh...These types of things, you should just handle by yourself. There is no need to ask me.” Ye Qingyu set the accounts by one side and shook his head with a bitter smile. “Besides, even if I personally looked it over, I would not understand anything!”

Tang San was taken aback, then let out a rueful laugh.

Qin Lan hesitated slightly: “But...”

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, saying: “It’s all good. My break is about to end, the matters regarding the family will need to be relied upon by you.” Saying this, from the inter dimensional pouch, he took out a jade scroll. “This is the jade scroll of the White Deer academy that are used to pass messages. If you encounter any incidents that you cannot solve, then bring this jade scroll to the academy. There will be someone who will pass on your message.”

The jade scroll was given to Qin Lan.

Pausing, Ye Qingyu spoke again: “Little Grass is coming of age. If she has the intention to enter the White Deer academy, in the upcoming examination next year, she can go and attempt it...” His gaze landed on Tang San. “Your age has already passed the limit and you cannot enter the White Deer academy. If you really want to pursue martial arts and if you have time, go to the Taoxuan pavilion and learn from some of the teachers there to train. Possessing some martial arts, is beneficial no matter what happens.”

Tang San nodded his head enthusiastically.

.....

.....

By noon time, Ye Qingyu had already returned to White Deer academy.

Returning to the dormitory to pack away his stuff, someone came to inform him of the location of his new dormitory and his room number. And they also passed on an assortment of things he needed to do to report in.

It was as the head of administration had said, everything had already been settled.

Jumping to the second year class, Ye Qingyu would have to leave the students of the first year and no longer be living in the same area. He should say farewell but after some consideration, he did not have any friends in first year apart from the little loli, Song Xiaojun.

Ye Qingyu wanted to find her and say goodbye.

But as this idea came to be, he hesitated.

Because he suddenly realised, in this long period of time, it was the little loli who had always taken the initiative to find him. He had never gone in search for her, so until now, he still did not know the little loli's room number nor which dormitory she was in....

## Chapter 063 – Going In Search Of The Little Loli

---

“A friend such as me, is really not that qualified!”

Ye Qingyu muttered to himself.

Thinking about this, Ye Qingyu crisply decided not to report in the second year but instead went to search for the little loli. At the very least, he needed to say farewell and discover where the little girl lived. Besides, he had prepared some presents for the little loli after returning from outside the academy.

Thankfully, Ye Qingyu knew the general direction of the female dormitory.

Carrying the black spear holster with the inexorable spear, Ye Qingyu silently followed the stone path of the living quarters. The breeze caused the light rustle of leaves, with the yellow leaves drifting down covering the entire grass fields. Ye Qingyu realised, that this was his first time he had noticed the pretty scenery around.

It was only that the entire dormitory area was empty, with not a sight to be seen.

Ye Qingyu could feel that something was slightly strange.

If it was as normal, at this time, the area here should be quite busy, with people coming and going. It should be one of the most bustling

times but there was not even a hint of a person here today. Something was up.

Very quickly he arrived at the female dormitory.

On the way, Ye Qingyu still did not bump into any first year students.

It made him feel something was definitely strange.

After questioning several teachers in charge of managing the dormitories, Ye Qingyu finally discovered the little loli, Song Xiaojun's room and dormitory.

But Song Xiaojun was not within the dormitory.

“Come back later. All the students of the first year, have gone to attend the general assembly of the first year.” The managing teacher was a female middle aged woman that looked amiable, and whose strength did not seem either weak or strong. She laughingly said. “Little kid, are you not a first year student? Why are you not attending the general assembly? Could it be that you have skipped class...”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

General assembly of the year?

No wonder on the way here, he did not see any other people. So it was this.

But why was a general assembly held? Could it be that a big incident had occurred within White Deer academy? Normally speaking, unless it was something to do with the honour and reputation of the entire White Deer academy, such a large scale meeting was extremely rare.

Ye Qingyu mumbled several words and promptly left, heading towards a pavilion. Sitting on the stone chair, he sat and silently waited.

The entire dormitory area was quiet and hushed and only the sounds of the wind rustling the leaves could be heard.

Ye Qingyu sat for a while, then felt bored. Instead of just waiting, he closed his eyes and began training in the nameless breathing technique. Very quickly he entered into a rhythmic state, breathing in and out.

The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth around, was quickly gathered at high speed, converging towards Ye Qingyu.

The inner yuan of Spirit spring martial artists, was largely created through absorbing and storing yuan qi from the environment. The every day training of martial artists, their primary aim was accumulate and absorb yuan qi from the outside world into the world and store it within the dantian. When facing an opponent, the yuan qi within would activate and erupt, achieving the aim of harming the opponent.

This type of accumulation and storage, was a long and slow process.

For many martial artists, after a tough and brutal battle, it was very

possible that their inner yuan would be fully expended. They needed to once again accumulate yuan qi from Heaven and Earth. Of course, this process of refilling did not require a length amount of time.

Only experts who had entered the Bitter Sea stage, would their inner yuan in their dantian world grow and multiply without end, without any limits. Therefore experts of the Bitter Sea stage was not too reliant on yuan qi from the outside world, and this one of the reasons that Bitter sea stage experts were stronger than Spirit spring experts.

For Ye Qingyu, this was an important stage that he must continuously absorb and accumulate yuan qi, turning it into his own inner yuan.

For this process, only possessing one Spirit spring was by far not enough. He needed to excavate more and more Spirit springs within his dantian; only through doing this could he absorb and accumulate more and more yuan qi of Heaven and Earth, constantly becoming stronger.

Ye Qingyu practiced the nameless breathing technique and his rate of absorbing yuan qi was incomparably rapid.

Not even fifteen minutes of time had passed when a yuan qi cyclone formed, spinning around Ye Qingyu and creating a strange apparition.

This type of apparition, attracted the attention of the amiable middle aged managing teacher from far away.

“This type of commotion...I know now, so it was this little kid. No wonder he came looking for Xiaojun.” The female teacher finally guessed

Ye Qingyu's identity.

Time passed by minute by minute.

Gradually, two to three metres away from Ye Qingyu's body, the withered yellow leaves became like golden butterflies, swirling around him. The circulation of yuan qi was like a nest of whirlpools, creating a spectacular sight.

Suddenly, Ye Qingyu was able to sense something. Opening his eyes, he stopped his training.

The surrounding yuan qi currently halted abruptly, the withered leaves drifting to the ground and creating a circle around the entire pavilion. It was as if someone had intricately placed and arranged the leaves in a pattern.

From far away, figures could be seen.

The originally peaceful dormitory area, suddenly became heated again.

Female students wearing the academy uniform appeared from far away, laughing and conversing. It seems that the general assembly had ended, with people energetically rushing back into the dormitory or rushing to the practice grounds. The crowd was like a tide heading in from the east, turning into small streams that flowed into different dormitories..

When passing by the pavilion, some female students were able to recognise Ye Qingyu, widening their eyes in astonishment.

Around the ages of fourteen was namely the age where the first awakening of love began. In these past months, within the academy there were a significant number of love stories that had occurred. Very frequently, male students would appear within the female dormitory area, pursuing the girls they liked, so the appearance of a male student was not at all strange or baffling.

Even the favoured child Qin Wushuang, had once appeared below the female dormitory.

But afterwards the matters was slightly disappointing to the students who wanted to witness a perfect love story. This lucky girl who was pursued by Qin Wushuang, after one month of envy, admiration and hatred from the other female students, completely lost favour with Qin Wushuang. The reality was, that this pitiful girl was just a plaything for Qin Wushuang when he was bored from training. After getting tired of her, she was then promptly thrown away....

No matter what the time, the female dormitory had a special attraction towards the male students.

But two people were the exception.

One was Yan Xingtian, this commoner student with exceptional talent. He had never appeared before within the female living area. Afterwards, when he disappeared during the practical wilderness training, this matter was slowly forgotten.

The other person, was Ye Qingyu.



Great demon king Ye had a handsome appearance and amazing talent. In the previous battles he had also displayed incomparable dominance. There were once some busybodies who had done an evaluation, and came to the conclusion that Ye Qingyu was the first year student that was the most masculine. If he had the mood, just through one glance, he could move the hearts of many beautiful girls...

But Demon King Ye did not appear once in the girl dormitory area.

He basically had no contact with female students.

Every day he would be in his living quarters, canteen, martial library and the practice grounds. He would undergo a lifestyle with four dots and one line, making many people suspicious, how Ye Qingyu could endure such a lifestyle.

The only person that Ye Qingyu was close to, was only the little loli Song Xiaojun.

Who would have thought that today, demon king Ye would really appear in the female living area.

If this news was to spread, it could be counted as a major occurrence.

In this instant, some female students crisply decided not to return, foregoing whatever they had to do. They instead stood staring from far away, wanting to see which person demon king Ye was waiting for.

From far away.

The sounds of laughter drifted over.

Tens of female students as if stars surrounding the moon, accompanied a red clothed girl. This red clothed girl was exceedingly beautiful, with an exceptional temperament, her skin as smooth as jade. It was as if she was naturally born with a colourful radiance that caused many female students to feel inferior.

Beside the red clothed girl, there was also a girl in white garments. She was also exceptionally pretty, her white dress drifting about and bringing with her a magical aura. But her face was still a little too young and immature, without the garish and beautiful bearing of the red clothed girl that was able to capture your soul.

“Senior sister Xiaohan, I’ve heard that in the competition between the two academies, the [Boundary canyon battlefield] will be opened?” The white clothed girl asked with a smile.

The smile of the red clothed girl blossomed, saying: “Junior sister Qingluo is right. This time, the commotion caused by the Azure Phoenix students is really too much. The guests are acting as if they are the hosts and showing up the White Deer academy, so therefore the higher ups of the academy is naturally unsatisfied. They’ve decided to hold a direct battle. sword against sword, spear against spear. Therefore the possibility of opening the [Boundary canyon battlefield] is very high!”

“If it is really true, then this is too great. I also want to experience the legendary [Boundary canyon battlefield]” The white clothed girl said

excitedly.

“Senior sister Qingluo your strength is exceptional and your rankings has always been in the top five of the first year. According to the previous criteria of selecting people to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield], you definitely have the requirements to be chosen. Your wish can absolutely come true.” Another graceful girl appeared by the side, calmly praising and flattering the white clothed girl.

“En, as long as Qingluo works hard, you have the chance to enter the list of the people selected.” The red clothed girl was outstandingly gorgeous, both her smile and frown had an attraction that even appealed to the female gender. With a laugh, she said: “There are many benefits to entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], this is an excellent opportunity, I will definitely recommend you to head teacher Wang!”

“I am too thankful to senior sister Jiang.” The white clothed girl rushed to say thanks.

This group of people had an above average characteristic, with a cordial atmosphere.

Behind them, there was a short and small silhouette that looked foolish and cute at the same time. As if she was a tired doll, she followed along weakly and without strength. She had an expression of disinterest and boredom, wearing a robe that was evidently too large for her, and every step along the way her cheeks puffed up in anger. She did not immersed herself within this group of female students.

Within the pavilion.

In an instant, a faint smile appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

Every time he saw the little loli's foolish and cute appearance, the mood of demon king Ye, would inexplicably brighten.

He beckoned from far away.

As if their hearts were connected, this bored Song Xiaojun with her head held down, suddenly sensed something. Lifting her head, she could see the Ye Qingyu from far away beckoning to her.

The little girl was dumbfounded and thinking this was an illusion, lowered her head and continued walking.

After walking several steps, she seemed to realise something again. She lifted her head again in shock, rubbing her eyes and confirming that she was not mistaken. Then, she began jumping up and down in excitement, letting out a cheer and running towards the pavilion.

She was like a sprinting and joyous little deer.

Ye Qingyu could not help but be amused by this little loli who was so naturally silly.

The cheer of the little loli, in an instant made the red clothed girl and the others to notice Ye Qingyu's existence. Their gaze landed on the pavilion underneath the shade of the tree, focusing on Ye Qingyu's figure.

“It’s him?” The gaze of the red clothed girl coagulated, stopping her footsteps, not knowing what to think.

The white clothed girl next to her also stopped, a dissatisfied light flashing deep in her eyes. But seeing the little loli’s joyful appearance, the words that she wanted to say stuck in her throat, not able to to say it in the end.

## Chapter 064 – The World's Best Brother

---

In the pavilion.

“Brother Qingyu!”

Song Xiaojun leapt into Ye Qingyu's embrace, rubbing her forehead against Ye Qingyu's body. Only after doing that for a while, did she jump away. She was bouncing and cheering, in a very animated state and only after a while, did she finally stop.

Under the gaze of so many people she did not disguise her intimacy with Ye Qingyu at all. Instead, she her truest and most authentic nature.

“Brother Qingyu, have you really come to find me?”

The little loli's large eyes widened, looking like the twinkling of stars and filled with expectation. When she smiled, exposing her tiny little canine teeth, it was as white and as sparkling as miniature diamonds.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He motioned for her to sit down, and then from the interdimensional pouch, took out the presents he had prepared for the little loli. Apart from two items clothing that fitted her, there were many delicious snacks, dolls and accessories suitable for young girls. It was not anything too precious, but everything had been personally picked by Ye Qingyu.

“Wah, its beautiful, I like it...I like it too much!” The little loli began cheering and hopping about again, tiny stars shining within her large eyes. “Thank you brother Qingyu.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

From far away.

“Ah, demon king Ye has smiled, he has an extremely gentle smile!” A female students cried in shock.

“I did not notice before, but when demon king Ye smiles he’s really good looking!”

“Is this really the violent and brutal demon king Ye? He seems to have suddenly changed into the big brother next door!”

“I really never would have guessed, demon king Ye would like children who have not even matured yet...Sigh, it seems like I am destined not to have a chance!”

Very many females students gossiped with their friends and best friends, teasing and joking.

Ye Qingyu was one of the movers and shakers of the entire first year, with countless people’s attention focused on him. Especially after the battle with Qin Wushuang, many people secretly idolised him. After all, in this world where the martial path was followed by all, those who were strong were the people who were right.

The tens of female students that surrounded the red clothed girl and the white clothed girl, also conversed in hushed whispers.

Suddenly, a strange smile appeared on the face of the red clothed girl. As if she had just thought of something, she headed directly towards the pavilion.

“Senior sister Jiang?” The white clothed girl was taken aback, then also followed behind her.

The red clothed girl came beside the pavilion, her gaze landing on Ye Qingyu. She said with a laugh, “Junior brother Ye, it seems that you have been in the limelight quite a few times during these few months. Haha, you are the same as you have always been, always fond of showing off and seeking fame. You have not changed at all in these past years.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

In reality, the moment Jiang Xiaohan appeared, Ye Qingyu had already noticed her. Even though he did not possess the slightest degree of goodwill for this snobbish neighbour and playmate anymore, but he could not deny, this little girl who walked out from the poor district, had a breathtaking appearance. Accompanied by her red academic dress that was like burning flames, she attracted the gaze of everyone. From the start, countless eyes had gathered onto her.

“It seems like junior brother Ye like this junior sister very much.” Jiang Xiaohan’s gaze landed on the figure of Song Xiaojun. In her eyes, was a slight ridicule.



Ye Qingyu still did not say anything.

“That’s right, little children are more innocent and are more easily fooled. They can easily idolise someone.” Jiang Xiaohan let off a barbed smile.

Ye Qingyu maintained his silence.

He even turned his gaze away, with a bland laughter, not looking towards Jiang Xiaohan anymore.

Such an action of neglect, caused an inexplicable rage to be consolidated within Jiang Xiaohan’s heart. She nearly lost control of her emotions and exploded in front of everyone.

She took a deep breath, and the smile appeared on her face again. “Do you not worry, that there will be a day that junior sister will grow up? When she sees the higher peaks of mountains around, when she sees an even more beautiful scenery, and meet better people, that she will not idolise and admire you anymore?”

“Not every person changes so easily and quickly. And not everyone, will not allow others to live happier than themselves, even if that person is their own friend. If Xiaojun in the future can see a better scenery, can meet superior people, then of course I will be happy for her.” Ye Qingyu smiled, and blandly said. “Also, senior sister Jiang, today you seemed to have said slightly too much.”

“Brother Qingyu, is the best person in this entire world...and he forever will be be.” The little loli was currently devouring a roast duck drumstick, her mouth covered in grease. She said these words loudly, her tone extremely determined and her expression was as if she was merely stating a law of the world.

The white clothed girl, Song Qingluo frowned, giving a meaningful glance to Xiaojun.

The little loli’s smiled disappeared, unwillingly lowering her head, not saying anymore.

“Greetings senior brother Ye.” Song Qingluo walked forwards, bowing her head. “Thank you senior brother Ye for the favour of not challenging me in the elimination matches.” That day Ye Qingyu had acted crazily, challenging everyone on the ten rings. Only her arena was not challenged and Song Qingluo could leave with her dignity intact. This caused her reputation among the first years to rise and for her, this was undoubtedly a beneficial occurrence. Therefore, she needed to thank Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“However, the Song family and senior brother Ye, has different paths and aim. Xiaojun is still young but within White Deer academy, her every action and words still represents the Qingluo merchant company.” On the graceful face of Song Qingluo, a shred of hesitation appeared then she said with determination: “To prevent others from misunderstanding, if senior brother Ye really wants what is best for Xiaojun, then please never meet with Xiaojun again!”

After these words were said, the expressions of several people's face completely changed.

"Sister you..." Song Xiaojun said in panicked voice.

"Stand aside, and don't say anything." Song Qingluo's tone was unyielding.

"But..." Song Xiaojun's face turned red, wanting to explain something.

"Do you really not miss your mother?" Song Qingluo's tone became severe.

Song Xiaojun was stunned.

The brightness of the little loli's eyes, in this instant, became dim. She lowered her head, not saying anything.

And the Jiang Xiaohan beside her, finally laughed.

"Haha, this is really interesting. It seems there is a clever person who understands reason and knows what to let go of. Junior brother Ye, it seems like your act, can fool little children but it cannot fool everyone." She triumphantly blinked her eyes, her gaze evidently holding a shred of disdain and provocation.

But the predicted result of Ye Qingyu's rage did not appear.

Ye Qingyu pondered for a moment.

Then, a smile appeared on his face.

“En, this was my mistake.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head seriously. Looking at Song Qingluo, he said, “Thank you for reminding me.”

Such a reaction, caused Song Qingluo to be taken aback.

In her heart, she was slightly guilty. After all, Ye Qingyu had aided her before. If in the end result was that Ye Qingyu would fly in a rage out of humiliation or turn and abruptly leave in anger, Song Qingluo would not mind in the slightest. After, this was her own fault.

But no matter what, she must do this.

The Song family was the largest merchant company in Deer city, and the head of the Song family had received a honorary title from the Snow country's royal family. But he was still not a true noble and in this strict empire where class was above all, power was the centre of everything. Even if you had greater wealth, it could be taken from you at a moment's notice.

Ye Qingyu had directly offended the noble organisation and the city leader's office, becoming the thorn in many significant peoples' sides. He was an extremely dangerous person, and if Song Xiaojun continued to be his friend, it would negatively affect the Song family. This was absolutely not something the Song family would be able to withstand.

So Song Qingluo was clear in her heart, in such a situation, that between Ye Qingyu and the noble organisation, who should she choose.

On some level, such a choice was a type of humiliation towards Ye Qingyu.

But she did not expect, Ye Qingyu to react like this.

But after being taken back for a moment, the clever Song Qingluo finally understood. Ye Qingyu's reaction, was yet another protection towards Song Xiaojun. Only a true friend, would consider so deeply and completely.

This was demon king Ye, the demon king Ye that because of a disagreement, one man and two spears alone, challenged the entire noble organisation. For Song Xiaojun, he was willing to accept the humiliation of this demand.

There was abruptly an itch in Song Qingluo's heart, feeling a slight jealousy.

She did not know what attribute demon king Ye liked about Song Xiaojun.

Her beauty was higher than this little girl, her talent was not any less than Song Xiaojun. Comparing family background, conversation ability, temperament, skills and ability...no matter comparing what womanly attribute, Song Qingluo felt that she was more superior than Song

Xiaojun many many times over.

But demon King Ye, against her expectations, did not treat her with any favour whatsoever.

The other side.

Jiang Xiaohan also rapidly grasped this crucial point, and a jealous flame ignited in her heart instantly.

Ye Qingyu's concern and spoiled favour, had once belonged to her. But it was thrown away by her. She had once thought that she would never regret such an abandonment. But right now, when this girl with a figure like a flat wooden board had obtained it, not knowing why, she was jealous.

And also angry.

"Your performance is really moving." Jiang Xiaohan coldly laughed, clapping her hands. "Ye Qingyu, you've really made a lot of effort. Using such a method, on an immature and inexperienced little loli, is that not too deep a scheme?"

Without waiting for anyone to say anything, the little loli finally could not hold her mouth shut anymore. She disputed loudly: "Utter nonsense! Drivel! Brother Qingyu is the world's best brother. You are only saying this out of jealousy! You are a bad woman!"

"Shut your mouth." Song Qingluo heard and instantly chided. "Quickly

return to your dormitory.

Jiang Xiaohan was in the end a senior sister of the fourth year. Her position was not low and her talent was extremely strong, so she had a considerable amount of influence. She was the target that Song Qingluo had attempted to get closer to during this time.

The little loli lowered her head, crystal like tears glistening in her eyes.

She was really slightly afraid of Song Qingluo, her sister cousin.

Ye Qingyu frowned slightly, not saying anything. He only patted the little loli's head, winking at the little loli. When the little loli lifted her head, her tears turned into laughter again at seeing Ye Qingyu's face.

## Chapter 065 – Being Beaten Again

---

“Return, if there is a suitable time later on, I will come see you again.” Ye Qingyu smiled, placing all the presents along with the dimensional pouch into the embrace of the little loli.

“I will definitely wait for brother Qingyu, you must come.” The mood of the little loli abruptly turned for the better. Rubbing away the tears at the corner of her eyes, she left unwillingly and with reluctance.

Ye Qingyu lifted the black spear holster propped up against the pavilion, preparing to turn and leave.

“Wait a moment.” Jiang Xiaohan suddenly opened her mouth.

Ye Qingyu turned around, his gaze like that of a blade.

“The grand competition between White Deer and the Azure Phoenix three days later, do you dare to participate?” Jiang Xiaohan said, enunciating each word clearly. “Do you dare compete in a battlefield that belongs to true geniuses? Or will you forever remain in hiding in your hole? ”

Ye Qingyu did not emit a single sound, continuing to depart.

A cold light flashed within the depths of Jiang Xiaohan’s eyes. She said: “Song Xiaojun has already entered into the list of competitors in this competition. Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], swords and



spears does not have eyes<sup>1</sup>. At that time, people will die.”

The footsteps of Ye Qingyu halted for a brief moment, then continued on.

Jiang Xiaohan noticed this, and did not say anything more.

A satisfied smirk, appeared on her face.

In her gorgeous and elegant face, when she smiled there should have been a radiance like that of a spring wind and summer's sun. But for some reason, the female students beside her, could feel a cold air seeping into their very bones at this time. Under her stunning beauty, it seemed that there was a terrifying malevolence hidden within.

“Lets go.” Jiang Xiaohan said to Song Xingluo and the others.

She walked at the very front.

The opportunity had finally come.

“I wonder what will occur when a martial artist who has been slaughtered time and time again is forced to witness with their own eyes, the person they most care about, dying again and again in front of their eyes. And they themselves does not have any power whatsoever to stop this, will this martial artist's determination and will, completely collapse and end?”

.....

.....

[Boundary Canyon Battlefield].

A dimension constructed by a supreme being with runes and formations along with absolute inner yuan. A space flooded with death and slaughter. A battlefield to cultivate warriors and fighters.

Several thousands of years ago, with the three sovereigns and five emperors age of the human race, the Formation Emperor Luoso along with several distinguished formation masters, constructed the first [Boundary canyon battlefield]. The reason it was created, was to prevent needless deaths but also at the same time, to imitate the most realistic and harsh killing battlefield against other races. To nurture and temper geniuses of the human race, only through doing this could the frail human race continue to survive on in this cruel and harsh world...

And after this, undergoing countless improvements and developments, the [Boundary Canyon battlefield] began to become more and more commonplace in different territories of the human race. Different sects, families, academies, placed their talented members to grow and train within.

Nowadays, many inner conflicts between the human race, such as disputes, competitions and battles would be fought within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

The ten academies of the Snow country, would have a grand competition between themselves every year.

Such a competition, would often be held in the jointly established [Boundary canyon battlefields]. The students that entered into this battlefield, would face the most primitive and challenging struggles. This was the most realistic battleground but also the most brutal. In a rapidly changing situation, you must make the most correct decision to obtain the final victory.

These information, was read in a scroll within the library by Ye Qingyu. He was extremely piqued by this information, so he had seriously investigated on.

On some level, the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was an important landmark of the runes and formations of the human race. Many powerful experts of the land had undergone the baptism and tempering of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and walked out from this battleground to become what they would become.

Ye Qingyu had previously seen the scenes of provocation of the Azure Phoenix students and had also stepped in to discipline them. From the situation right now, it seems that the arrogance and superiority of these youths that came from far away, had finally angered the entire White Deer academy. A grand competition filled with the smell of gunpowder would finally begin.

“If I am able to obtain a place to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield], then this is naturally a good thing. From the rumours, the battlegrounds has a very different environment to the outside world, there are some spiritual herbs and precious medicine, and also some rare

demonic beasts, with the possibility of obtaining valuable talent bones...”

Ye Qingyu pondered in his heart.

But this grand competition, was something that concerned the entire academy and not just the individual years. So the final right to decide the list of participants, should be in the hands of the true higher ups of the academy, and this privilege was extremely valuable and not easy to obtain.

If it was before, Ye Qingyu’s battle strength was already number one in the entire first year. He could therefore possess a position within first year, but the problem was, he was now currently a second year yet he had not proven himself within the sophomore class...

After mulling it over, Ye Qingyu finally decided to try and obtain a place.

He went to find the head teacher of the first years, Wang Yan.

When he knocked to enter, he discovered the number one goddess of the White Deer academy, Bai Yuqing was also within. The two people seemed to be in the midst of discussion about something.

Ye Qingyu hesitated seeing Bai Yuqing, then told them the intentions of his coming clearly, from start to finish.

“This matter, I know.” Wang Yan nodded her head, not confirming or denying his request.

Ye Qingyu said his thanks, and turned to leave.

In this entire process, Bai Yuqing wore a white dress and sat silently like a blooming narcissus. She reclined in a huge bay by the window's edge, quietly observing Ye Qingyu, until he had left.

After seeing Ye Qingyu off, Wang Yan turned her back and said with a smile: "So what about it, do you still maintain your evaluation that you made previously?"

Bai Yuqing stood up, her exquisite body having a curve that would make someone's heart beat faster. She casually flicked her hair, saying: "I would not have thought that he has already obtained and refined a Spirit weapon. Fine, if it is like this, then I feel he has the requirements to enter the list."

Wang Yan began laughing loudly.

"Yuqing, do you know what attribute that I most admire in you?" The head teacher said with a obvious merriment.

The corner of Bai Yuqing's lips elegantly quirked up. "Could it be because I am more beautiful than you?"

"Within the noble students in these years, you are the only genius who is able to resolutely hold onto your principles. Even though you are biased against the Ye Qingyu who came from a common background, you will not make a wrong judgement because of this bias." The smile from

Wang Yan's face gradually disappeared, shaking her head and sighing. "In these years, noble students like you, are becoming less and less."

"This has nothing to do with being a noble student." Bai Yuqing said in a confident tone. "This is the conviction and integrity of a martial artist."

Wang Yan looked at this beautiful and proud girl, not saying anything more.

Honour was becoming less and less. The glory of the kingdom was growing thin. The honour of martial artists, who knew when, had gradually began to disappear. In this cold and realistic world, this beautiful and prideful girl, had chosen values that were ancient and classical. Was she fortunate or unfortunate?

.....

As for Wang Yan's answer, Ye Qingyu did not know whether she had accepted or rejected Ye Qingyu's proposal.

As he pondered this carefully, he unwitting arrived into the second year area.

The dormitory environment was evidently better when compared to first years. No longer was dormitories shared, but rather everyone had a single area by themselves, with a courtyard. The living facilities were also far more complete, since there was a extremely harsh end of the year assessment. By the end of the academic year, not every student was able to advance a year.

The failure rate was around half.

Therefore when compared to the first year, the second year's numbers was a lot lower. Everyone who were able to pass the end of year assessment were all little geniuses. The conditions of the dormitory being better, was also something to be expected and within normal reasoning.

Ye Qingyu had jumped a year so the arranged dormitory was at the area further back.

Using the nameplate to open the door, he entered, but as he did so, he was taken aback.

After emitting a cold shudder, his first reaction was to run out from the door. His expression was slightly panicked, as if a rabbit seeing a cat in front of him.

But a humongous suction came, dragging Ye Qingyu through the air backwards.

“Save me! Murder!...Sexual harassment.....”Demon king Ye screamed hoarsely through his throat, flustered and discomfited. His hands and legs flailed madly through the air, struggling madly but it was of no use.

“Sexual harassment is it?” A familiar and cold voice said.

Ka-dong.

The door was locked.

After, strange sounds appeared from within the room, as if someone was held down and wildly beaten. Between these sounds, were curses and insults and then even more loud beatings. PingPingPing, came the sounds of the impact of the punches....

A while later.

The sounds of impact finally quietened down.

The door of the courtyard opened.

A tall skinny middle aged teacher with his eyes squinted, rubbed his hands and left the courtyard. On his face was a satisfied grin, shaking his sleeves and departing...

Inside the door.

Ye Qingyu was twitching on the floor, his entire body filled with lumps.

“His mother, that old bastard was really too cruel this time...” The corner of Ye Qingyu’s lips was in a straight line. Previously within the Grievance hall, his injuries had all been external injuries but this time Ye Qingyu felt as if his organs and bone, were about to be broken into pieces by that old bastard.



That old bastard was undoubtedly a teacher at the Grievance hall, why would he appear here?

In the first instant of seeing him, Ye Qingyu knew that he was finished and needed to endure a beating. When he wanted to flee, he was completely suppressed by the other party, being dragged back in an instant.

The strength of the old bastard, was unfathomably deep.

Also, even if he was beaten to death the next time, he could not call the old bastard skinny next time.

Ye Qingyu clearly remember, when he was being fiercely beaten and not being able to retaliate, his mouth had acted up again. He unintentionally insulted the old fool as a 'skinny monkey'; the result was that this old guy was suddenly upset, as if he had gone crazy. He increased the severity, beating fiercely without pausing at all, until Ye Qingyu was crying for his father and shouting for his mother.

“Why does this old guy hate the term skinny monkey so much?”

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan, crawling from the ground and wondering in his heart.

His martial body was automatically triggered and inner yuan flowed throughout his body, treating his areas of injuries. The same as before, there were many strange and mysterious impurities, through this process of recovery, that were expelled out of his body.

This made Ye Qingyu himself slightly astonished.

After reaching the peak of the ordinary martial stage, he had thought his body had already been tempered and refined to the extremes, with no speck left untouched. But who would have thought, that there would still be so many impurities. When that old thing had beat him, although he was cruel and harsh but he seemed to use a special technique, and caused the impurities in his body, to be forced out by the repeated impacts!

-----

1. Chinese idiom for mistakes can happen and people may be injured. ↩

## Chapter 066 – The Second Booklet

---

“This old guy, is he a pervert? Although he is doing me a favour, but who can withstand being tortured like this everyday?”

After using his qi to heal his injuries, he silently cursed in his heart.

He returned to his own room, and was about to rest when he suddenly saw in the middle of the stone table, there was a blue little booklet. It should not be something that came along with the dormitory, this was...

“Could it be something that was left behind by that old guy?”

Ye Qingyu wondered what it was.

The little booklet did not have a label, and seemed to be a thin journal that was handwritten. The writing on it was slightly disarrayed, covered with tiny characters. Occasionally there would be some diagrams of the human body scrawled into a mess. Only through severe concentration could one make out what was written.

Ye Qingyu flicked through several pages, slowly realising that it should be a cultivation recording regarding how to consolidate more yuan qi kindlings for further Spirit springs.

Regarding the information and mantra, Ye Qingyu had actually researched a lot about this topic in the public libraries. He had already achieved a basic understanding into this subject so he had already

decided to attempt to excavate the second Spirit spring within the next few days.

But the technique within this booklet, was far more profound and complete than what he had gleamed from the libraries. Especially some eccentric teachings contained within, it seemed that it went against common sense and was something that Ye Qingyu had never considered before. But with his insight and perception, after scrutinising it and visualising it, he knew that these techniques were absolutely possible. Moreover it would lead to a better result with less effort. It was a brilliant method.

“If I follow the method outlined in this book to train, the speed will increase considerably!”

Ye Qingyu read over this booklet several times in detail, confirming that the information contained within was valid. He decided to follow the method outlined by the booklet as the cultivation method he would use to excavate his second Spirit spring.

At this time, the sun was already gradually setting in the west.

Ye Qingyu went to the canteen for dinner and on the way there, he did not bump into any familiar faces. Everyone was second year students, and he completely did not recognise any of them and simply returned back to his living quarters, training in confinement.

Within the little courtyard.

“The first Spirit spring has already been excavated but the second Spirit spring is by far not enough. Within the Spirit spring stage, I must make preparations for future success. I must construct a stable foundation for my martial path while I am in this stage.”

Ye Qingyu had a determined will.

His inner yuan activated, the surrounding air currents changed and yuan qi of Heaven and Earth began converging onto his body.

Following the instructions in the booklet, he stimulated his inner yuan. Strands upon strands of yuan qi entered into his body, following the meridians into his four limbs and bones, and in the end, arrived into the dantian world.

The dantian world in the human body, was endless and without boundary. This was the key attribute of the yuan qi martial path. Ye Qingyu could already observed within using inner vision the dantian vision so he chose to consolidate the second yuan qi kindling a hundred thousand miles away from the first Spirit spring.

A large amount of yuan qi of Heaven and Earth was being gathered.

Time passed minute by minute.

Because he had already had previous experience, this time consolidating a yuan qi kindling for Ye Qingyu, could be said to to drive a lightweight chariot on a familiar road.<sup>1</sup> Following the method in the booklet to consolidate yuan qi, his speed was even greater and the inner

yuan being refined was even purer.

.....

.....

The fact that Azure Phoenix academy and White Deer academy was going to open up the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and would undergo a grand competition, very quickly spread through the entire White Deer academy.

For the entire White Deer academy, this was undoubtedly a large affair.

In this time, the students of Azure phoenix academy were both arrogant and provocative. There had already been many students from various years that had been incited and were enraged. There were an unknown number of small scale private duels that had already occurred but the overall result was not positive. They were in an extremely poor state of affairs.

In reality, such a battle record was very normal.

Firstly, the rankings of Azure phoenix academy in the rankings of the ten academies was originally much higher than White Deer academy. They were also situated in a much more wealthy location, along with rich resources. They had a more advantageous area, so therefore talented people would be born in large numbers. The students that had come in this visit, were all children that were chosen from tens of thousands of people. In comparison, the retaliation of the White Deer student was

chaotic and disorganised. Even if they evidently knew they were not the opponents of the Azure phoenix students, they would still go onto the arena and challenge. Loss was a natural consequence.

Such a result had a significant impact on the morale of the students of White Deer academy.

And as the matter grew larger and larger, and this event spread throughout the other regions in Snow country, this would undoubtedly create an negative influence. It would cause the already steadily deteriorating White Deer academy to be placed into an even worse position, and only able to make progress with great difficulty.

Under such a scenario, an official competition using the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was decided.

In these two days within White Deer academy, there were unceasing discussion that was passed on from student to student.

The topic that caused the students to intensely speculate and debate, was naturally the choice of competitors for this grand competition. Many White Deer academy students hoped to wipe away their shame and disgrace with the [Boundary canyon battlefield] by winning one round. Who had the qualification to represent the academy and enter the battle, was a question that many people placed great importance on.

According to the rumours from both parties, there would be a total of five battles between the two academies within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. The specific rules was that the first four battles would be fought according to the years of the students and the last battle was that

the two academies would choose the students which had the best performance and make them fight the last battle.

In a moment, there were violent winds and scudding clouds.

Every student of every year, began guessing the strongest students in their year that would be chosen.

As it was said, battles using words was hard to determine but winner of fights are easily decided. Who possessed real strength, this was basically evident through training, sparring and during cultivation. The five geniuses that would be chosen from each year, was already short listed.

Of course, everything would have an unusual occurrence.

What everyone was expectantly waiting for, was this unusual occurrence.

As time passed, there were even people who created betting platforms. They gambled on which people of every year would be able to enter the battlefield, gambled on which year had a greater chance of victory, gambled on which student would have the best performance in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], gambled on whether White Deer academy was able to win one round out of the five rounds, gambled...

Of course, there were very few people who placed their wager on the outcome of overall victory.

Even the most crazy self confident White Deer students, did not believe



that White Deer academy would be able to obtain the final victory in this grand competition. The difference between these two academies was too large, with the average level of strength different greatly.

This grand competition also disturbed the various forces and organisations within Deer city.

On the surface, the White Deer academy represented the glory of the entire Deer city and the entire Deer mountain range. No matter whether it was a commoner or a noble or a soldier in the city, they all hoped that White Deer academy would not lose too badly.

Hidden currents moved.

Various forces began acting.

The Azure phoenix students had been far too conceited. As the saying goes, the powerful dragon crossing the river must not oppress the local snake. In addition, the truly powerful dragon was the number one ranked academy in all the ten academies, Huining academy and not Azure Phoenix academy.

So therefore when facing a common enemy, the army within Deer city and the Deer mountain range all displayed a rare unity in opposition towards the same enemy. It was said that the army had already allocated several high class Spirit weapons and these weapons were in the midst of transport to be temporarily used by the White Deer academy. The city leader office and the noble organisation, were also willing to lend out their families' Spirit weapon...

Everything, was to be able to fiercely beat the people of Azure Phoenix.

Even if they were not able to obtain the overall victory, they needed to teach a memorable lesson to the people of Azure Phoenix academy.

In such a atmosphere, the White Deer academy was unprecedentedly bustling. Too many students had placed there attention on the matters concerning the grand competition, and the lessons of the academy had grinded to a stop. Even the teachers of the academy huddled in a group to discuss this competition, causing the students to become even more disinterested in training.

But Ye Qingyu remained alone within his living quarters all this while, training to his utmost efforts.

In reality, calling it solitary training would not be entirely correct.

Because everyday, as the sun was about to set, the old guy would appear at this time.

This entire process did not allow for any explanations as to why Ye Qingyu was beaten. No matter whether Ye Qingyu was begging or whether he was cursing, the final result was that he would be convulsing on the floor, his entire body filled with swollen lumps.

Ye Qingyu still could not understand, how he had manage to irritate this old fellow. Previously, within the Grievance hall, this old guy had also appeared inexplicably. They did not know each other at all from before...

Thankfully, his rate of training did not slow.

The second day, Ye Qingyu had finally managed to consolidate a yuan qi kindling and planted the second yuan qi kindling within the dantian world.

For him, this was a major breakthrough.

That day in the evening, after the old guy had appeared and gave Ye Qingyu another thorough beating, the Ye Qingyu who had just returned to his room, found another blue booklet...”

“Beginner’s [Boundary canyon battlefield] tactics analysis and exploration?”

Seeing the name of this booklet, Ye Qingyu’s eyes brightened.

The information that he obtained from the public libraries, was not detailed or comprehensive enough at all. Especially information concerning the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. It was extremely sketchy and did not go into deep details regarding this battlefield.

Ye Qingyu had also utilised the nameplate Wang Yan had given him to secretly enter the martial libraries of the third year and fourth year. He still could not find a satisfactory answer. Who would have thought today, in such a small booklet, the information would fall down from the sky in from of him.

Only through reading a few pages, Ye Qingyu was sure that this booklet absolutely came from the same hands as the previous booklet regarding cultivating yuan qi kindlings. No matter whether considering the writings or the diagrams, it was in disarray, covered with undecipherable handwriting that could barely be understood.

“Could it be something that old thing has left behind again ?”

Ye Qingyu silently guessed.

But he had never seen that old guy enter his room.

He pondered this in his heart, but very quickly, Ye Qingyu became completely immersed within the contents of this booklet. The contents of the little booklet describe and explained the [Boundary canyon battlefield] in such detail that apart from making Ye Qingyu gasp in shock, it also expanded his horizons.

He had never thought, that this [Boundary canyon battlefield] would be so incredible. No wonder it was the cradle that had trained and nurtured the human race for thousands of years, developing warriors, armies and even War Gods.

Finishing the last page, Ye Qingyu could judge that just this act of creation by the Emperor Luoso, was an integral part in allowing the human race to survive on, in the war of the thousand races.

-----

1. do something routinely and with ease ↵

## Chapter 067 – Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors

---

In the blink of an eye, there was only one day till the grand competition.

The final list of White Deer academy students that would participate in the battlefield was announced on the stone mirrors of each year. What was also announced, was the list of Azure Phoenix students that would enter.

The two academies both chose from the entire four years of students. In total, twenty genius students would enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield and undergo the fierce battle within.

Ye Qingyu's name, appeared in the list of five of the first year of White Deer academy section.

It seemed like head teacher Wang Yan had in the end, accepted Ye Qingyu's request.

Even though Ye Qingyu had already entered second year already, this was only something that occurred during the last ten days. His strength had already received the widespread recognition of the public through the previous incidents so such a decision did not cause too big a debate.

Apart from Ye Qingyu, the people that were able to enter the first year list was Qin Wushuang, Song Qingluo, Song Xiaojun and Xia Houwu.

Of these four people, the selection of Xia Houwu caused some debate and discussion. After all, this noble student did not perform too well within the monthly examinations and had been completely dominated and suppressed by Ye Qingyu several times already, making his reputation fall to the very bottom.

But since this list had already been announced, it was obvious that the higher ups of the academy had already made their decision. Even if it was not justified, there was no way to change the list anymore.

What made many commoner students sigh in regret, was the fact that if Yan Xingtian had not disappeared, then he absolutely had the right to enter the list of five. At that time, he could definitely make the commoner students proud, it was a pity...

Apart from this, the list for the second, third and fourth year were also announced. The people selected were naturally the movers and shakers of their years, including people like Bai Yuqing, Jiang Xiaohan, Han Shanghu, Han Xiaofei...

Ye Qingyu stood under the stone mirror, carefully examining the list.

What made him slightly perplexed, was that in the third year list, he was able to see a name called Blue Sky.

“Blue Sky? It seems that’s the name of the young teacher leading our group during the first wilderness training...” Within Ye Qingyu’s mind, a sudden image of the young person with blue hair, having an unreliable grin on his face and was instantly a little confused.

Wasn't Blue Sky someone who was a teacher?

When did he suddenly become a third year student of White Deer academy?

Could it be that the higher ups of White Deer academy had cheated and mixed in some teachers with great strength into the student body, wanting to make a comeback and win a round at least? This did not seem too likely; Azure Phoenix students were not idiots, as long as they investigated they would easily be able to make things clear. If that fact that White Deer academy had cheated was spread out, this would become an bare and naked scandal.

This was really strange!

Ye Qingyu thought carefully, but temporarily could not think of an explanation.

But Blue Sky's terrifying strength had left a deep impression on Ye Qingyu. If he was to go out and fight during the third year battle, then White Deer academy must win?

In contrast to this, on the announced list of Azure Phoenix academy, Ye Qingyu only recognised one person. It was the person that he had met in the public library, staring at each other. That person was deeply imprinted within Ye Qingyu's memory. The young man called Xu Ge was very frightening.

And this Xu Ge, was only a first year representative of the Azure



Phoenix academy.

Looking at the names that he did not recognise nor understood, Ye Qingyu had a premonition, that this grand competition for White Deer academy, would be incomparably tough.

On the way back his living quarters, Ye Qingyu was stopped by a young teacher, bringing him towards the group battle preparation area.

“There’s such a thing as a group preparation battle area ? ”Ye Qingyu was slightly shocked.

“Fighting within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], is not the same as fighting in a normal battle. There are some preparations that must be done, especially for first year students who has never entered into such a battlefield before and doesn’t understand the situation. In a while there will be teachers specialising in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], that will explain and teach the way of how to fight, the terrain within and so on...”

The young teacher lead the way and patiently explained to Ye Qingyu.

In the time they were speaking, they had already passed through the second, third year areas and reached the centre of the fourth year area. Walking through a long waterside pavilion, the young teacher’s footsteps finally stopped, facing a large building in the centre of the lake.

“Enter, the teachers are waiting for you inside.”

The young teacher pointed to the entrance.

“You’re not going to enter?” ye Qingyu casually asked.

An envious and longing expression appeared on the face of the young teacher. “Right now, I don’t have the requirements to enter [Ascending heaven pavilion].”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He lifted his head to look. Sure enough, above the large building at the centre of the lake, a blue board with golden characters was suspended imposingly. The three words, Ascending heaven pavilion, was as if written from the hands of a devil or a god. There was a loftiness that seemed as if it looked down upon the world, making a person vaguely feel, that as long as they entered this building, they could ascend into the blue skies.

“Thank you.”

Ye Qingyu said a word of thanks, then entered into the building.

In the instant he stepped past the entrance, the vision in front of him changed greatly. The lighting suddenly grew dim and what was in front of him, was floating stone statues of deities and underneath him was the floating stone tiles. From far away, there were the twinkling of the stars, as if he had appeared in the space of the universe...

An illusion ?

Or was it a small world created by formations?

Ye Qingyu continued to walk forward step by step and very quickly, he could see a massive rock plaza. As he followed the stone tiles and came to the plaza, he saw underneath a massive stone statue, there were tens of people. In the crowd were Song Xiaojun, Song Qingluo and the others, and also around ten old elders with snowy white hair and beards.

“You are the last one. Good, everyone has arrived now.” The voice of Wang Yan sounded out, the figure of the head teacher of the first years walking out, indicating that Ye Qingyu should stand with the crowd.

This should be the true higher ups of the academy and the elite that was about to participate in the grand competition?

Ye Qingyu estimated in his heart. Standing next to a Song Xiaojun that was stealthily waving at him, he did not say anything.

On the other side, was the number one genius of the first years, Qin Wushuang. Compared to his previous atmosphere of not showing joy nor anger on his face, after losing to Ye Qingyu, this noble young master had suddenly become a sword that was sharpened, emitting an overbearing and oppressive aura.

Ye Qingyu's gaze casually considered the people around him, then his eyes landed on the huge statue.

It was a hundred metre high sculpture of the Formation Emperor

Luoso. Vivid and lifelike, it towered majestically over the plaza, as if it was a mountain, giving people a stunned sensation as if bearing witness to a deity.

By the side, one of the higher ups had already begun lecturing in something. The majority of the students listened seriously. Clearly, such an opportunity, even for fourth year students was hard to obtain so even they were enthusiastic.

Within the crowd, only two people were distracted.

The blue haired Blue Sky, lazily reclined against the stone steps often yawning. He seemed to have no interest whatsoever in the words of the higher up lecturer, not disguising his boredom and inattention at all.

The elders of the White Deer academy, seemed to have already gotten used to such a sight. They did not even give a glance to this fellow who did not abide by the rules.

The other person who was distracted, was Ye Qingyu.

His attention, was placed on the sculpture of the Formation Emperor Luoso.

Looking at the statue, Ye Qingyu remembered the legends of the three Sovereigns and Five emperors.

It was a history that told the story of the suffering of their race, but it was also a story of an inspiring and tragic hero, and how he became this

hero.

Legend had it, that the human race came from a placed called the Blue Water domain --it was an extremely unnoticeable domain within the ten thousand domains. A very long time after the Blue Water domain was born, it was completely separated from the other domains. They had no natural enemies, and was on the top of the food chain, flourishing for a long time.

Afterwards, people unintentionally managed to break through to break through the edges of the Blue water domain and leave this domain. They found out that outside, there were even vaster and more mysterious domains, and came into contact with the Fiendgod race.

In this contact, the human race came with friendly intentions but what received them was an apocalyptic extinction and the fate of being enslaved. As the Blue Water domain started to grow and open its fangs, it entered into the world of the thousand domains that were ruled by the law of the jungle. The human race that ruled over all in the Blue Water domain, suddenly faced a unprecedented disaster that could drive their entire race into extinction.

The Blue Water domain became a purgatory hell that alien races held gluttonous feasts in.

And in the next few thousand years, the human race within the Blue Water domain, became one of the intelligent races that were sold as slaves. During this time, keeping human slaves became a type of fashion within the strong and noble races of other great domains. The human race were displaced from their homeland, their fate held in the hands of others. Suffering unimaginable torture and humiliation...

The human race was nearly driven to extinction.

This type of situation, only changed for the better along with the rise of a genius of the human race, called Luoso.

Formation Emperor Luoso.

This human genius that seemed to born from thin air, using incomparable talent and determination, combined the learnings of the human civilisation along with the martial path of the different races. He created the formation civilisation – a civilisation that could truly threaten the many different races.

Luoso's path of formation stunned everyone, even at the very beginning. Through his power alone, he slaughtered the invaders of the many different races in the Blue Water domain, regaining the Blue Water domain and shocking the other races.

Afterwards, experts of the human race began to rise. Within the human slaves that had drifted to the other domains, there were many people with extreme talent. After thousands upon thousands years of pain and suffering, it seemed that even fate could bear this no longer. Within a hundred years, the human races flourished and gushed geniuses, with several Supreme existences being born...

A variety of cultivation and battle techniques, gradually began to be created.

Through the harsh suffering, the human race had finally found a cultivation path suitable for their bodies. Battle was a hotbed that nourished the martial path. The average battle power of the human race increased explosively.

And it was rumoured in the age of the three Sovereigns and five Emperors, these eight Supreme existences that held up the Heavens, was born in this situation and became leaders of the human race. They battled with the alien races for over hundred of years, and finally in this cruel and cold domain, won the right to survive and reproduce. They managed to lay claim to their own space, no longer being sold as slaves...

## Chapter 068 – The First Round

---

Formation Emperor Luoso, was one of the three Sovereigns.

After tens of thousands of years of suffering, the human race already had established a position within many of the different domains. Their living conditions were improved by countless times, with the freedom of their entire race. The legends regarding the three Sovereigns and the Five Emperors motivated generations and generations of human warriors, to defend the rights of their race.

The Heaven Wasteland domain that Snow country was situated in, belonged to one of the many civilisations that followed in the path of the formation civilisation. So therefore the worship of their martial ancestor, Formation Emperor Luoso, and being able to see the sculpture of the Formation emperor in the heart of the White Deer academy, was extremely normal.

But a sculpture that was so massive, was the first time that Ye Qingyu had witnessed.

Under the gaze of the Formation Emperor, Ye Qingyu felt that he was as minuscule as an ant.

And evidently in this gargantuan statue, there was a difference from the normal sculptures outside. A visible pale yellow aura lingered around it's entire body, as if there was a mysterious energy that Ye Qingyu had no way of sensing.



After staring at this sculpture for so long, a strange thing began to happen ——

Ye Qingyu's vision suddenly became blurred. There was a hard to suppress dizziness, and the facial features of the sculpture began to move like ripples, the eyes as if it was blinking.

It was as if in the next instant, the sculpture would be able to come life.

And at the same time, a sacred and solemnness emitted from the stature of the Formation Emperor. It spread throughout the entire space, causing people who could sense this feel the need to bow down and surrender in awe.

“Within this sculpture, there are some obscure meanings...”

Ye Qingyu was secretly dazed.

He did not know whether others had a similar sensation.

As he turned his head to observe the other people, he discovered that they were still in the midst of seriously listening to the lecture of the higher ups of the academy without any abnormal signs. It seemed that this sculpture of the Formation Emperor did not affect them in the slightest.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu abruptly felt a gaze that had always focused on his figure, filled with an invasiveness, brazenly evaluating him up and down.

He turned his head around and saw Blue Sky staring directly at him.

Seeing that Ye Qingyu had discovered him, Blue Sky did not turn his gaze away. Instead, he laughingly perked up his eyebrows, greeting him in his own special way.

Ye Qingyu hesitated, then returned with a smile.

He remembered that Wen Wan had once said, when Liu Yuanchang of the government office had suspected him of killing Liu Lei and was about to capture him, it was this Blue Sky who had unreasonably beaten, forcefully protecting himself.

Even though he did not understand why Blue Sky would help him, but Ye Qingyu appreciated and was grateful towards this uninhibited and rebellious young man.

“Fine, the things that need to be said has been said.”The final summary of the old Dean was said, his voice becoming much louder. “I believe that everyone has already chosen a Spirit weapon that you are satisfied with. Even though this is a temporary loan, but for you there are definite benefits. As long as you assimilate it with care, even though you have only used it for several days, it will be a great aid in helping to raise your strength....”

“I’ve long prepared ! ”

“This time I will definitely give the people of Azure Phoenix a lesson ! ”

“Haha, with the 【Raging Flame Roulette】, I can directly face martial artists with ten Spirit springs. Hmph, I will definitely give a fierce lesson to that Azure Phoenix student Lin Baiyi!”

“The [Ice cold heart sword] has given me a very large inspiration, I have broken through again in these two days!”

The students in high morale all displayed their emotions, showing an absolute confidence.

Ye Qingyu could sense the inexplicable confidence of these people, as if they had found the winning tactic that they could use to gain victory against the Azure Phoenix students. He realised, that the various rumours were real. The White Deer academy had really ‘borrowed’ many Spirit weapons, and distributed it within the hands of the geniuses entering the grand competition...

But the problem was, as one of the participants, why did he not receive any Spirit weapons?

As Ye Qingyu was wondering, a thought appeared in his heart. His eyes was able to catch Qin Wushuang’s gaze filled with contempt and disdain.

“There are several students who did not manage to obtain a Spirit weapon. This is as when the army lent several Spirit weapons to us, on the way of transport, a small problem appeared. The academy has already sent four elders to go collect it, before tomorrow’s battle, it should be able to reach your hands...”

The head teacher of the first year, as if she suddenly realising something, looked at Ye Qingyu and the others.

Ye Qingyu gaze was able to notice, when hearing such an explanation, there were several people who emitted out a breath of relief. They displayed an expression of unloading a heavy weight from their shoulders. They should be the people who did not manage to receive a Spirit weapon.

Only Blue Sky were lazily leaning to one side, letting out a short laugh.

“From now on till the start of the grand competition, all the competitors will stay here. There are specialist teachers and elders here that can solve your problems, whether it be it regarding cultivation or the [Boundary canyon battlefield], you can ask anytime...” The old Dean said with a wide smile.

A cheer was let out from the students instantly.

To be able to reach the personal teachings of people like these elders, was a chance that was hard to come by. Especially the elders that had appeared, were experts that was famous within Deer city. Normally, they rarely appeared within the academy, how could the students not be excited?

Ye Qingyu's heart was moved.

He also had some small problems regarding cultivation, that needed

some guidance.

But he did not think, that the situation was completely different from his imagination. --

After consecutively asking two or three old teachers, either their response was bland or their answers was pretty much the same as those from books, without any new insights. He attempted to tell them of the things that he had gleamed from the two booklets, to confirm that it was real, but the result obtained was a scolding...

“You have already gone against the established rules ! ”A old elder said with a angry glare.

“But...” Ye Qingyu still wanted to say something.

“This child cannot be taught.” This old elder closed his eyes and waved his hands, the very picture of someone who would not speak anymore.

Ye Qingyu could only give up.

.....

.....

At the same time.

In the guest area of White Deer academy.

The Azure Phoenix academy's living quarters.

“The people of White Deer is really laughable. They’ve really gone and borrowed Spirit weapons. Haha, have they become crazy from wanting to win so much?”

“What’s the use of having a Spirit weapon? Can they be compared to the Azure Phoenix even then? Haha, I’ve already completely assimilated my Spirit weapon a year ago, the people of White Deer academy is really too poor...”

“We cannot underestimate them too much. It is said that in these past years, the White Deer academy has recruited several geniuses that we need to pay attention to, such as that Bai Yuqing. Her strength cannot be ignored. We cannot have blind confidence, to prevent capsizing in the shallows!”

“Oh, that’s right, that Blue Sky...”

“We are better off not provoking that fellow. He is a person that can make the number one genius of the ten academies Dan Chenzi have a headache...However, with his power alone, he cannot change the final outcome!”

“I really don’t understand, why that monster Blue Sky, would enter the White Deer academy?”

“Eh, Junior brother Xu, why are you not speaking? Are you thinking of something?”

“Yes, I’ve thought of a person that perhaps can be a slight hindrance to us.” Xu Ge snapped out of his daze, retelling the story of his meeting with a White Deer academy student in the public library. “That person is strong, I can sense it. He seems to be called Ye Qingyu...”

“Ye Qingyu? Haha, interesting. In the previous days some people of White Deer academy secretly contacted me. They ask me to pay special attention to several people, with one called Ye Qingyu who is on this list...”

“The people of White Deer academy has contacted senior brother Yin?”

“Yes, they are really a bunch of schemers and plotters. A grand competition that involves the honour and glory of their entire academy, and these so called geniuses, rather than uniting, instead conspires against each other...Haha, really a pitiful group of people!”

“If this really continues on, sooner or later White Deer academy will be finished!”

“That’s right, senior brother Gong, why can’t we see Elder Chen and the others in these days?”

“Elder Chen has an important matter to take care of, there is no need to worry. Just prepare well for the grand competition. I hope for no careless mistakes to be made, otherwise when Elder Chen’s rage is upon us, no

one can escape the blame.”

“We will follow your orders, senior brother Gong!”

.....

.....

The morning sun rose.

In the centre of the practice grounds of every year group, it was packed with a sea of people. Especially in the area in front of the stone mirror, it was completely full and brimming with students. Countless gazes focused upon the stone mirrors.

“Has the grand competition started ? ”

“Soon, Soon ! ”

“Who’s fighting in the first round ? ”

“I’ve heard that it follows the yearly classification, the first round should be between the fourth years of the two academies!”

“Can we possibly win ? ”

“I don’t know, senior sister Bai, senior brother Han, their strength is



unfathomable, they have a chance of winning. ....”

The crowd gathered together, discussing and chattering.

On the stone mirror, although they could not witness with their own eyes the happenings within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], but the mirror would continuously announce in real time the accomplishments of both parties, the contrast of power between both sides, individual accomplishments, battle losses, kill scores and death scores and more....

Through these statistics, one could judge the situation within the battlefield, and determine which side held an advantage and which side was about to face defeat!

Suddenly——

A loud sound of a bell resounded throughout the entire campus.

The emotions of everyone became excited and heated.

“It has finally started ! ”

“The first round will start!”

“Both parties need to enter the battlefield?”

“The names are displayed.....The blue names are White Deer academy,

the red names are the Azure Phoenix students...Quickly, look, the names of senior sister Bai Yuqing, senior brother Han Xiaofei, senior brother Han Shuangfu, senior sister Jiang Xiaohan, senior brother Li Mingxin names are indicated...”

“This is too exciting, the battle is about to begin!.....”

“It seems that at the moment, both parties have not acted against each other yet .....

“I’ve heard that within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], everyone’s strength will be suppressed to the same level by the law of this realm?”

“I don’t know, I’ve never entered ! ”

“Eh ? What’s happened ? Senior brother Li Mingxinj’s name has suddenly lighted up... ..”

“Not good, he is under ambush! ! ”

“His name is erased.....”

“Senior brother Li Mingxin has died!”

“So quick ! ”

“This is too fast, could it be that Azure Phoenix academy is really that

amazing? You have to realise that senior brother Li Mingxin has a title called [Palm sword absolute], in the previous internal grand competitions, he has rarely met an opponent...”

“Eh.....what ? Quickly look, the name of Li Mingxin’s name has brightened up again, could it be.... ..”

“I’ve heard that within the [Boundary canyon battlefield, everyone has three chances to resurrect. If you are killed in a row three times, then you will directly be transferred away from the battlefield, departing from this battle.....”

## Chapter 069 – The First Kill

---

“So there’s still a chance?”

“Let’s first wait and see ! ”

Everyone clustered in front of the stone mirror anxiously. Especially when a name brightened, they would stop breathing, afraid of missing anything.

“This is terrible. Senior brother Li Mingxin’s name has flashed again... it’s extinguished...this is his second resurrection?”

“From the beginning until now, the names of the people of Azure Phoenix academy, has not even flashed once!”

“The name of senior brother Han Xiaofei has also been extinguished .....

“The bright red light has greatly surged, they have already taken over sixty percent of the territory...The White Deer academy is at an absolute disadvantage, this will be terrible if this goes on...”

“Senior brother Li Mingxin’s name has been extinguished again...this time he will have to completely withdraw from the battle!”

“Senior brother Han Xiaofei’s name, has also been extinguished three

times. He has been transferred away from the battlefield!”

“How can it be like this? The people of Azure Phoenix academy, has not even had their names extinguished even once!”

“The name of senior sister’s Jiang Xiaohan, has been extinguished twice!”

“The name of senior brother Han Shuangfu has been extinguished once!

“Only senior sister Bai Yuqing’s name remains completely intact.”

“We have only three people left, the chance of victory is remote...”

“This is dreadful, our first line of defence the protector stature has fallen. The Azure Phoenix group is currently attacking our second line of defence, with signs that it can fall at any second!”

“If there cannot be a meaningful and effective counter attack, we will lose for sure this round!”

Time passed second by second.

Everyone’s heart became worried and anxious. The tide of the battle gradually shifted to one side, making everyone standing on the side of the White Deer academy hearts to hang in suspense. If they lost so decisively in the first round, then this would not bode well for the later

battles.

Could it be that the Azure Phoenix academy was impossible to win against?

Could it be that the difference between the two great academies, was really so large?

Everyone was fretful and impatient as ants on a hot wok.

“Quickly look...” Someone suddenly cheered. “Liu Ye of Azure Phoenix academy’s name has flashed...its about to be extinguished...”

Everyone seeing this, began to be animated again.

There would finally be an Azure Phoenix student that would be killed.

This was really too great, they had waited for this moment for so long. Even if they only killed one person, at least it would vent some of their anger, at least they would look better than if they were shaved completely bald.

But very quickly, the excitement and enthusiasm was mercilessly doused with a bucket of cold water.

The name of Liu Ye, after a brief period of intense flickering, did not extinguish.

And at the same time, the names of Han Shuangfu and Jiang Xiaohan of White Deer academy, were completely erased.

“This.....”Within the hearts of everyone, an icy cold sensation spread.

“This is fine, the name of senior sister Bai Yuqing has not even been extinguished once...In the end, she has protected and defended the last honour and glory of our White Deer academy .....”

Before his sentence had finished.

The name of Bai Yuqing, also extinguished.

No one spoke.

A deathly silence.

.....

.....

Within the Boundary canyon battlefield.

The murderous screams were like boiling tar.

The corpses of Han Shuangfu and Jiang Xiaohan lay under the protector statue that had lost its ability to attack, and was in collapse and

ruins.

The five people of Azure Phoenix academy surrounded from all sides. A sword was stabbed through Bai Yuqing's abdomen, fresh blood dripping down. Her tight fitting white battle dress was dyed red, withering like a white rose, her figure slowly crumbling...

What made the proud goddess's heart fill with icy despair, was not her injuries but the strength of Azure Phoenix academy.

Seeing the momentum of the White Deer academy was gone completely, Bai Yuqing together with Han Shuangfu, Jiang Xiaohan, wanted to rely on the power of numbers to kill a member of Azure Phoenix academy. That way, they could at least obtain a kill...

This was an ambush that had been long planned.

They also borrowed the attacking force of the protector statue, hoping to succeed in one strike. Although the situation was unsalvageable, but at least they could win back a shred of face.

Who would have guessed.....

The three person ambush were not able to kill Liu Ye, and conversely, the rapid reinforcements of the four people of Azure Phoenix academy came to kill them. Jiang Xiaohan and Han Shuangfu was slaughtered in the blink of eye, and she herself was heavily injured....

Bai Yuqing looked at the approaching Azure Phoenix academy, their



expressions filled with cold sneers. She did not hesitate in the slightest, her long sword slashing, cutting her swan like neck across the throat, blood spurting out...

.....

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

The faces of the people of White Deer academy were ashen.

The four people who were forcefully ejected from the battlefield, Li Mingxin, Han Xiaofei, Jiang Xiaohan, Han Shuangfu all had their heads held down, tightly clenching their fists. Their complexion were embarrassed, not even daring to utter a single word.

On the space above the sculpture of Formation Emperor Luoso, a gigantic projection was clearly visible.

Within the projection, was namely everything that happened within [Boundary canyon battlefield].

After the four people were forcefully ejected, the White Deer academy only had Bai Yuqing left to bitterly defend – but such a defence, was like the fight of a caged beast.

Vast numbers of the Azure Phoenix demon rune soldiers had already

destroyed the three layers of defence of White Deer academy. Under the direction of the five students of Azure Phoenix students, the total collapse of White Deer academy was only a matter of time.

Bai Yuqing did her utmost to resist, one against five. This could only lengthen the time till defeat by a little.

When battle had already reached such a point, in reality they should have directly surrendered.

But Bai Yuqing bitterly endured. Only after being killed in battle three times, and was expelled from the [Boundary canyon battlefield], did the battle end. The headquarters of White Deer academy loudly collapsed. The first battle had ended.

White Deer academy had lost.

Completely and utterly lost.

Silent people gathered in front of the sculpture of Formation Emperor Luoso. On the student representatives, there were both shock and unwilling to accept this reality. They could not accept that the first battle was finished in such a humiliating manner, shocked at the powerful strength of the Azure Phoenix students.

Han Shuanghu and Bai Yuqing, were known as the strongest within all the students of White Deer academy. They had the support of strong Spirit weapons, and possessed unique battle techniques. Within the eyes of the White Deer academy students, they were an existence they could

never win against.

But even those two people, could not even obtain one single kill.

The people of Azure Phoenix academy, were they not too strong?

The White Deer academy students that originally had utter confidence in themselves, at this instant, felt a wave of coldness pass through them. The next three rounds, it was most likely already determined.

.....

Outside.

“We’ve lost.....sigh, we’ve lost just like that!”

“Disgrace, not one single person has died from Azure Phoenix academy. This is complete domination. Could there really be such a great difference between the two academies?”

“Aaaaa, I even felt that my talent was not bad, and my strength was close to those people. I also thoughts that afterwards, in this great wide world, there is no place I cannot go, but the result it...So our White Deer academy is so weak. I really am filled with foolish conceit, a frog at the bottom of a well!”

“This is really too embarrassing ! ”

“The people known as the five strongest among the fourth year, lost so tragically. Hmph, they should have causally chosen a few people to enter, since the result will be defeat anyway!”

In the practice grounds of the first years to the fourth years, people were still tightly clustered in front of the stone mirror. After cries of shock and distress, such a result were like cruel slaps on their face, a fiery stinging pain being felt.

They could accept losing.

But losing to such an extent, was enough to make someone breakdown.

The morale collapsed like an avalanche.

At the same time, the news spread out rapidly throughout the entire Deer city. A dusky cloud covered and enveloped the entire city, the oppressive atmosphere making people feel incomparably stifled. They could only let out a low sigh.

One gained glory, the other lost it.

The White Deer academy was the face of the entire Deer mountain range and area. If such a tragic loss was spread out, the nobilities would be laughed at for numerous days by the people of the other regions.

.....

Ascending Heaven pavilion.

“Start the second round.”

The old Dean had no expression whatsoever. No one could tell what he was thinking in his heart.

Above the Formation Emperor sculpture, a second later, five beams of light shot out. It shined on the five representatives of the third years. After the light had disappeared, the figures of these five people were also gone, being transferred within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

There was total silence.

.....

In front of each stone mirror.

“The second round has started.....”

“Sigh, I estimate that there is no hope anymore.....”

“This difference is too large ! ”

“I only hope it is not complete domination.....”

“It would be great if they could obtain a kill, even if only just once!”

The White Deer academy students morale had fallen so low that they were nearly about to directly kneel and pray. They had always thought they were the favoured children of Heaven. Within Deer city, as long as they mentioned they were White Deer academy students, they would possess a superiority, and would be known as nobles who did not have a title of nobility.

If they completely lost in this grand competition, from now on there would be not one person who could walk around Deer city with their head held high.

The information and figures of the second round appeared on the stone mirror.

This time the White Deer academy was the red party, and the five students represented the demon race. And therefore, the Azure Phoenix students were the blue party, commanding the human army.

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], both parties had a choice of several powers. There were various race patterns they could choose, such as the Ghost race, Beast race, Demon race, Human race and even the Devil race or Divine race.

But within today's Heaven Wasteland domain, the influence of both the human race and the demon race was the largest. Their relationship were also extremely tense. So therefore, within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they would often chose a mode that fought between the human race and the demon race. This would allow martial artists from a young age, to familiarise themselves with the human military and the

army of the demon race, knowing the method of battle, habits, powers and special attributes, completely grasping it. When they fought in a later battle, they would not be at a disadvantage from inexperience.

“The battle has begun!”

“I’m too nervous, I don’t dare look!”

“Someone’s name has flashed...it’s a name from Azure Phoenix, the one flashing is really a person from Azure Phoenix academy...Eh? It’s extinguished.” Someone suddenly shouted in shock.

“He Ying of Azure Phoenix academy’s name has been extinguished, it’s really extinguished!”

“What’s happening? Could my eyes be mistaken?”

“It’s true, someone has really died in battle from the Azure Phoenix academy! Everyone quickly look, can you confirm, could it be that my eyes are not functioning?”

“Who killing He Ying? Their speed is too quick!”

The White Deer academy students were originally so nervous, they were in a death like state. They were gathered in front of the stone mirror and was in an apprehensive mood. The sudden explosive news, in an instant, caused the crowd to erupt in applause and cheers. The group of people was like a handful of salt scattered on a hot pot of oil, completely bubbling and fizzing!

## Chapter 070 – Five Consecutive Kills

---

In the direction of the White Deer academy practice grounds, screams and cheers could be heard.

The sounds of the cheers throughout the academy, even transmitting along to the guest area of the academy, the living quarters of the Azure Phoenix academy. These sound waves were like a provocation, becoming louder and louder, louder and louder, about to envelop the entire city.

“Hmph, a bunch of people that have not seen the world. They have only obtained a kill, what is there to be happy about...”

“In the previous round, we killed them like dogs, and they still cheer even now!”

“Ai, you have to understand the pitiful folks in a decaying academy, and their pathetic and fragile self esteem....”

“Hmph, I really can’t get used to those people. Even those so called nobles, every single one of them is filled with a poor and lowly aura, as if they are rocks in a mud pit...”

Within the guest area, the students of Azure Phoenix discussed these events with an arrogant disdain. They had a noble and lofty attitude that came from originating from the centre of one of the most wealthiest districts. From their perspective, not even a trace of cheers should be heard.



“Senior brother He Ying has died in battle?”

“I can’t endure this anymore, I need to go out and have look!”

“That’s right, when they completely lose, we can personally make these scrubby people shut up!”

A suggestion was made, then tens of students replied enthusiastically. They left the area, heading towards the centre of the first year practice grounds.

This time the visiting group from Azure Phoenix had over a hundred people, elites from every year. But only twenty people received the right to participate in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and the others were all restless from waiting.

.....

“It’s senior brother Blue Sky who killed He Ying!”

“Sure enough, the first person to receive a kill, is senior brother Blue Sky!”

On the stone mirror, after the name of White Deer academy’s Blue Sky, there was a kill mark. This represented the fact that he had manage to kill an opponent within the battlefield.

“Senior brother Blue Sky? This name is slightly familiar, so who is he?”

“Why have I never seen or heard of this person called Blue Sky in my three years here at the academy? He seems to appear rarely.”

“Hush, lower your voice! Blue Sky is that perverted fiend! ! ”

“What ? So he was the lecher that made things in total chaos a while back? His strength was so high?”

“That’s right, it’s him. It’s said that he is a complete thorn in the teacher’s side. Out of ten days, there are nine days where he is confined...”

“That severe ? ”

“According to the rumours, this Blue Sky is not originally part of Deer city. Only during his second year, did he abruptly came to the White Deer academy?”

“Who knows.”

The grounds was filled with chatter.

Students who knew a little about the background of Blue Sky, through a few words, exposed some juicy titbits. The majority of the surrounding people were clueless about him, and became interested. When did White

Deer academy have such a freak?

In the time of their speech, the contents of the stone mirror changed again.

“It flashed, it flashed, another name has been extinguished...Xu Yizhu of Azure Phoenix’s name has dimmed.” People began laughing with mirth and triumph.

On the stone mirror, another person of Azure Phoenix had died in battle.

At the same time, the number of kills Blue Sky had was now two.

“It’s Blue Sky again...This ...is too fearsome, it’s really too amazing! I can feel hope for this round again!”

“From now on, this Blue Sky is my idol, I will bow down to him whenever I see him!”

The crowd began heating up.

Compared to the complete domination of the fourth years, no one thought that the third year would create such an unbelievable situation. In less than fifteen minutes, Blue Sky had already killed two people consecutively, instantly making people able to see some hope.

But very quickly, as if this was the response to this valiant feat, the

names of the White Deer academy's students, began to dim.

Lu Lin died in battle!

Qin Yun died in battle!

Zhu Gui died in battle!

Three White Deer students were consecutively killed within the battlefield. What awaited them was resurrection fifteen minutes later, and a second opportunity to battle.

Some peoples' heart, was abruptly depressed again.

“Quickly look,. There's another new change...Chang Jun of Azure Phoenix has perished, he's died. Haha, he's really died...behind senior brother Blue Sky, he has three kills.”

“Is he able to turn this desperate crisis around? Senior brother Blue Sky, you must by all means withstand this!”

“Heavens, quickly look, he's killed another one!Mo Daoyan of Azure Phoenix has been killed! ! ”

“The kill score of senior brother Blue Sky is now four ! ”

“The crux of this battle will depend of senior brother Blue Sky!”

“Ah.....our side, has lost another four people...Sigh, it's hard for senior brother Blue Sky alone to reverse a desperate situation. The people of Azure Phoenix, in terms of kill score and number of members left, has already gained a huge advantage!”

“Not good, the name of senior brother Blue Sky is flickering...He is suffering an concerted attack!”

“Thankfully he has not died yet.....”

“He's died, Dai Zhide has died! Haha, the strongest of Azure Phoenix has died. He has previously obtained seven kills and now he is dead...it must be the actions of senior brother Blue Sky...the kill score of senior brother Blue Sky has become five!”

“Haha, delightful! Kill the five representatives of Azure Phoenix academy, slaughter them all!”

The blood of the crowd began boiling.

At this time, no matter who it was, to be able to win back some face for White Deer academy, they would become a hero. Even though previously before this battle, Blue Sky had a somewhat bad reputation. But at this instant, he became an existence that numerous people placed their hopes on.

But the next moment, many people were dumbfounded.

“Blue Sky has left the battlefield ! ”

On the stone mirror, these six words appeared.

At this time, many people became stunned.

What happened?

Why had he suddenly left the battlefield?

Was he not about to turn a desperate situation around?

.....

“You.....why did you do this ? ”

Within the Ascending Heaven pavilion, a golden light flashed, and a youth was transferred out. His face scarlet with rage, he rushed to question Blue Sky: “Why did you leave? If you did not retreat, we definitely could have withstood another hour...you did this on purpose!”

Golden lights continued to flash.

The three other people of the third year, were also expelled out.

They had already died in battle consecutively three times, and exhausted all their resurrection opportunities. They were forcefully

rejected from the battlefield...

“Blue Sky, you need to make an explanation for yourself! ! ”

“We trusted in you so much, but you didn’t even give us a notification, and retreated alone...you...are you worthy of us?”

“That’s right, we are a team, you would really abandon us...”

These people furiously interrogated Blue Sky.

Blue Sky leaned against a floating stone statue, having a lazy smile on the corner of his lips. He yawned, a perfect picture of ‘your father I is too lazy to explain’.

“Blue Sky, you should say something...” An old teacher also opened his mouth.

Blue Sky gave this old teacher a glare, and coldly snorted.

He turned his head, his gaze suddenly falling upon Ye Qingyu. He laughed mischievously: “Little fellow, let me tell you a little joke. Four stupid pigs with ulterior motives, once they entered into the battlefield rushed near the wild area to kill Spirit beasts and Demonic beasts, doing their utmost to harvest Spirit herbs and rare medicines. When they saw the people of Azure Phoenix, they ran like dogs with tails behinds their legs, and they have no shame, to dare mention the word ‘Team’. Do you think this is laughable or not?”

Ye Qingyu did not speak.

In reality, on the formation projection above the sculpture, everyone had clearly witnessed what had occurred. These four third year students had been really shameless, without the slightest hint of a will to do battle. Conversely, they did their utmost to reap the benefits from the battlefield, purely trying to survive, without the slightest hint of honour.

“How about it? Is this joke not funny?” Seeing that Ye Qingyu had no reaction, Blue Sky again jokingly said: “Then let me tell another. There’s another person that is even more retarded and shameless than these four people, and is yet he is still a teacher. He evidently witnessed everything that had happened, and yet asked someone like me, a great contributor with five consecutive kills to explain myself. Do you think this person is a shameless old bastard or not?”

The colours of everyone’s face changed.

If the previous words were just insulting and offensive to his four teammates, then this was acceptable. But this time he indirectly insulted the teacher that had previously spoken, this was complete disobedience and impertinence, reckless and extreme daring.

Shoot!

Veins appeared on Ye Qingyu’s forehead.

“Hey, who are you? I don’t recognise you, why are you telling jokes to



me, we are not familiar at all...” Ye Qingyu with a righteous look, stepped back from Blue Sky, a total picture of someone who did not recognise this mental nut case.

Blue Sky was flabbergasted.

He had never thought that this Ye Qingyu’s words would be so blatant and direct, using such a method to distance himself from him...such words were like indirectly asking for a beating. This demon king Ye, was even more brazen than he had imagined, and far more interesting.

Blue Sky abruptly broke into loud mirth and chuckles.

“Old Dean, this guy is too arrogant!”

“He is simply ignoring the elders!”

“He definitely has to be strictly punished ! ”

More teachers and elders stood out, condemning Blue Sky.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat rejoicing in Blue Sky’s disaster, silently cursing Blue Sky in his heart for trying to drag him into trouble with the elders along with himself. It seems like the relationships of Blue Sky with other people were not that great. Why was it that every teacher had righteous indignation on their faces, as if this Blue Sky had stolen their daughters...

“En, everyone’s words are reasonable. No need to worry, I will handle this.” The old Dean gave a glare at Blue Sky, angrily saying: “Nonsense, it seems like you don’t have a long memory! What are you waiting for, obediently return to the Grievance hall!”

“Dean, this...”

“It’s the Grievance hall again?”

“This can’t be?”

Everyone was speechless.

Every time, no matter what wrong Blue Sky had committed, the Dean would always give Blue Sky a glare and then order him to go to the Grievance hall. Counting up, in this year alone, eighty percent of Blue Sky’s time was spent within the Grievance hall. Although from the perspective of the rules and regulations of White Deer academy, this was normal but the problem was, very evidently, the Grievance Hall did not pose as any sort of punishment or threat for Blue Sky.

After time and time again, when such a punishment was given out, everyone felt that confining Blue Sky to the Grievance Hall, was instead a reward to him.

“Fine I’ll go! You old fool when you need me, you’ll release from the Grievance hall, but when you don’t need me anymore, you’ll just confine me again! You are really the worse!” Blue Sky was extremely speechless, but he honestly departed and left for the Grievance hall.

It seems like he would still obey the words of the Dean.

After the end of this little episode, the atmosphere of the Ascending heaven pavilion, once again returned to seriousness. Especially the second year students about to participate in the third round, every one of them had already fallen into a state of nervousness they had never experience before...

“Just pretend it’s a practical battle training!”

The old Dean let out a sigh, not saying anything special. At this time, words of encouragement, were useless.

## Chapter 071 – Entering Into The Battlefield

---

Four hours later.

“Naturally, we’ve lost again.....”

“The second year has lost so pathetically. They were not even able to obtain one kill...they’re the same as the fourth years, they were completely dominated!”

“From the beginning until now, our White Deer academy, apart from the five consecutive kills of Blue Sky, has not even managed to kill one person!”

“It’s a pity, that Blue Sky is such a scoundrel. After being in the limelight once he then immediately left and ran away!”

“This is terrible, will we lose so badly that we will never be able to lift our heads high again?”

The students of White Deer academy’s morale was at its lowest point, simmering with hate and resignation.

“This is the difference between our strength, learn to accept it!” An Azure Phoenix student with his head held high sneered.

“You...” The White Deer students were enraged.

These several Azure Phoenix students, from the beginning of the third round, had stood there. Various types of contemptuous insults and invectives were thrown, showing off their superiority. They angered the White Deer students so much that they felt pain from grinding their teeth, but they had no method to retaliate.

“What about it? With a trash strength and a bad temper. If I was a White Deer academy student, I would have long committed suicide by ramming myself into a piece of tofu.” A pale female Azure Phoenix student let out a delicate giggle: “I really can’t understand, such a useless academy can enter into the ten great academies. It really makes us, a part of the ten great academies, feel humiliation!”

“You...don’t be too conceited.” A person as muscular as a black bear and looking seemingly simple, stood out. He was so furious that his teeth was about to be grinded into dust.

“What about it? Big black bear, you don’t accept this?” The almond eyes of this Azure Phoenix female student sent daggers through her gaze: “Do you believe, in this round, that you still won’t be able to obtain a single kill!”

“This time the person coming out, includes demon king Ye. He can definitely teach your group a lesson, wait and see!” The White Deer student as muscular as a bear said in a low, muffled tone.

“Hahaha ! ”

“He doesn’t know how high the heavens is or how deep the earth is! ! ”

“In this generation of first year, they are known as the most talented people of Azure Phoenix in this decade. Especially junior brother Xu Ge, he is the future star of the Azure Phoenix, they are enough to completely dominate you bunch of bumpkins!”

The Azure Phoenix students laughed impudently in a exaggerated manner.

A sharp chinned Azure Phoenix student, said a few words next to ear of the female student with almond eyes.

The almond eyes of this female student brightened, nodding her head with a smile. “Do you dare to have a bet? Big black bear!”

“What bet?” The muscular bear-like student said with anger. “Speak, could I, Xiong Yan, be afraid?”

“Xiong Yan is it? The bet is very simple. If your so called Ye Qingyu is not able to obtain a kill,” The large eyed female student gave the sharp chinned companion next to her a glance, then he promptly spat a goblet of phlegm on the ground. The gaze of the female student with large eyes held an undisguised challenge and provocation: “Then you will kneel down, and eat this ball of spit.”

“What?”

“This is too much...”

“How could the students of Azure Phoenix be so unrefined?”

The surrounding White Deer students were in a panic. Such a condition, was a complete insult and mockery. These Azure Phoenix students had gone too far, they did not have a shred of culture or elegance.

“What about if senior brother Ye is able to obtain a kill? Will you eat this spit?” The big bear like man, Xiong Yan, asked instead.

“There’s no what about.” The female student with almond eyes coldly laughed.

“This is a bet, then naturally preparations have to be made for your lost. I won’t make you eat that phlegm, such a humiliating act, the people of White Deer academy is not unrefined enough to force you to do so. My condition is simple; if senior brother Ye is able to obtain a kill, then you will kneel down and say three times, ‘Azure Phoenix is garbage’.” Xiong Yan’s gaze similarly had a provocation and contempt. “What about it? If you don’t dare, then just admit it.”

The female student of Azure Phoenix was incited by the contemptuous words and gaze of this burly man. “Who says I don’t dare? I accept, this wager will be decided as such.”

The surrounding Azure Phoenix students began laughing, not worried in the slightest.

It was not possible for Azure Phoenix academy to lose.

.....

.....

“Prepare yourself, the last round, is about to begin.”

The voice of the Dean could be heard.

Above the sculpture of Formation Emperor Luoso, five beams of golden light shone out. It enveloped Qin Wushuang, Xia Houwu, Song Qingluo, Song Xiaojun and Ye Qingyu, these five people within.

Ye Qingyu could only feel the vision in front of him blurring, a warm feeling surrounding him, as if he was submerged in hot water. It was also as if something from his body, was taken from him....

The next instant, there was a rapid sense of descent.

Boom !

His legs suddenly touched the ground

The golden light disappeared.

Everything in his vision had changed.

Ye Qingyu appeared on a desolate and ancient nine metre blue stone



altar. On the coarse lines of the rock, a mysterious rune pattern extended, one step by one step, downwards!

Standing on top of the altar, Ye Qingyu looked around him.

On the centre of the altar, was a normal sized sculpture of the Formation Emperor Luoso. The workmanship was extremely rough, as if it had experienced tens of thousands of years of wind and rain. The stature was covered with mottled surface potholes, and possessed vague facial features but what was strange was that it was still extremely vivid overall.

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

Abruptly another four large bangs sounded. Four golden beams of light descended from the sky, and four silhouettes also appeared on top of the ancient altar.

It was Qin Wushuang, Xia Houwu, Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun these four people

For some reason, the time they had descended, was later than Ye Qingyu.

“Brother Qingyu...” At the first instance, Song Xiaojun rushed beside him, her little face rubbing against Ye Qingyu’s arm.

Ye Qingyu patted her head.

“This is the [Boundary canyon battlefield?” Song Qingluo took a deep breath. “The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth is much more concentrated than the outside world, this really is a place suitable for training!”

“Welcome to the Boundary canyon battlefield. Warriors of the human race, glory is waiting for you!”

A majestic and vast voice resounded throughout the sky.

It was as if this was the words of a deity.

This was the voice of Formation Emperor Luoso.

As the creator of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the voice of the Formation emperor was, using a special sound formation, preserved. Anyone who entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], would hear a similar phrase, giving the martial artists of the human race courage and confidence.

“I’m going to the North West road!” Qin Wushuang only said these words, then turned and left.

“I’m going North East ! ”Xia Houwu also at the first instant made his choice. Jumping down from the altar, he turned and look at the three people left behind, giving them a glare. His tone had a shred of threat and icy coldness: “Don’t follow me.”

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield] there were the North road, North West road and North East road you could choose from, as well as the three armies within each path.

The position that Ye Qingyu was standing on right now, the altar was the headquarters.

Going down from the altar, there was a palace of the human race around a thousand metres away. There were ten protector statues surrounding this palace, and within these statues were defensive runes and formations. When encountering the attacks of enemies, every ten seconds it would emit a destructive light beam. This was one of the powers of the sentries of this palace.

Further from here, was a massive blue city wall. It entirely surrounded the headquarters.

The blue city wall had three large gates, which are namely the North West, North, and North East gates. Each of them led to three different canyons.

These three canyons, were three paths.

As you followed along the canyons, you could find the flattest path that was walked by the ancient people, heading straight to the headquarters of the enemy. It was also the only paths that the armies could pass through.

Apart from these canyons, the other areas of the [Boundary canyon

battlefield], was a dense and desolate forests. Filled with wild beasts, spirit beasts, miasma, traps, floods, mountains and rapids, there were unimaginable dangers and obstacles within. It made it so that it was impossible for the rune armies to simply pass through.

After the battle had finally begun, from the headquarters of the both parties, there would be endless rune soldiers that would be born. Heading to the three respective gates and following the canyon paths, it would face off against the armies of the enemies.

The rune soldiers in different classes of [Boundary canyon battlefields], would have different battle strengths.

This time, the [Boundary canyon battlefield] opened by the two academies was targeted at the young students, and hence was the most foundation and basic of battlefields. The rune soldiers that were born, the individual strength of each soldier was very weak and comparable to someone at the first stage of the ordinary martial level.

And for people like Ye Qingyu who had descended onto this battlefield, their role was commanding these soldiers and arraying various traps.

The strength of an expert, would be displayed utterly within such a battle. The number of rune soldiers produced by each headquarters were the exact same, with the same battle strength so the final victor of this battle, would be determined by the people who had appeared on both sides.

Only by appearing within this place, could you truly experience the perfection of the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

This place, was as if it was an entirely separate and real world.

Everything, was realistic. If you stood on top of the blue city walls of the headquarters, you could vaguely hear, from the vast expanse of the pristine wilderness, the terrifying roars of the the wild beasts. You were able to hear the whistle of hurricanes blowing through the forest, you were able to see peaks of mountains towering within the miasma like ancient beasts...

Within the headquarters, there were many architectures and protector statues.

If these buildings were destroyed, then this would signify their loss.

The aim of the White Deer students and the Azure Phoenix students, was to destroy the opposing army's buildings, and obtain the final victory.

“I’ve heard that the flow of time in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] is different from the outside world. Here, it flows much slower, two hours outside is equal to three days of time here.”

Song Qinglou said, as if muttering to herself.

“It’s this, the average time that each round occurred within was four hours. In other words, we need to spend at least six days of time within this world!” Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

From the moment they descended, half an hour had already passed.

After Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu left, Ye Qingyu and the others carefully observed and noted everything within the headquarters, and only halted when they understood everything clearly. Outside this realm, they had already received the specialist explanations of those old teachers. But words from someone else's mouth was entirely different from your own personal experience.

## Chapter 072 – Choosing To Enter The Wilderness

---

“The time is about right. The leftover Northern road, we three...” Song Qingluo said hesitantly.

The aim of both Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu was extremely clear.

They were from the two most influential families within the city, and naturally did not care about the Spirit herbs and rare medicines within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. If they wanted a Spirit beast, they could also think of other methods to obtain one in the outside world. There was not a need to go to the wild areas outside the canyons and place themselves in danger.

Within this battlefield, every time you were able to kill a rune soldier, you were rewarded by the Boundary canyon. You could obtain a strand of yuan qi forever, and this type of increase in strength would persist even when you left the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

So therefore, from the perspective of these people, before being killed by the students of Azure Phoenix academy, they would do their best and kill the most demon rune soldiers. This way, they would be able to obtain the most rewards, this way they could maximise their gains.

As for the overall victory?

From the very start, they had not cared about such a thing.

One person completely controlling a canyon road, was unquestionably the best choice if you wanted to kill the most rune demon soldiers.

The words of Song Qingluo had a hint of unwillingness to split the rewards of the Northern path between three people.

“You and Xiaojun head to the North path, at the very least you can take care of each other.” Ye Qingyu said unhesitatingly.

“I want to go with Brother Qingyu.” The lips of the little loli pouted out till oil bottles were able to hang from it.

“Listen to me, I’ll go and find you shortly.” Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, in the process of giving the little loli a flick on the head.

“Brother Qingyu is annoying.” The little loli quickly evaded, jumping to one side.

Finally the cousins left together.

In the entire headquarters, there was only Ye Qingyu left.

Suddenly—

“There is two hours left till the enemies will reach the battlefield, completely crush them!”



The vast voice of the Formation Emperor Luoso sounded out through the entire battlefield yet again. The voice was like the beat of a war drum, causing one's blood to boil, and causing someone's will to do battle exponentially rise.

Ye Qingyu stood in front of the gate of the North path, a smile appearing on his face.

“What does the rewards from killing rune soldiers matter. The largest pile of wealth in this battlefield, is really within the wilderness...allow me, to rule over this entire battle.”

His figure was like lightning, rushing out from the headquarters.

.....

.....

“It's started, it's started, the fourth round has finally begun!”

“I hope there can be a pleasant surprise!”

“As long as we don't get completely destroyed by Azure Phoenix!”

“Give us a little bit of hope!”

In the centre of the practice rounds, the students clustered in front of

the stone mirror, said in a pleading tone, almost as if they were praying.

.....

.....

“What’s happening? Ye Qingyu has chosen to enter the wilderness?”

Ascending Heaven pavilion.

The second and third year representatives who had already been eliminated, through the formation projection, were able to see everything that happened within the battlefield. Instantly, shock was evident on the faces of every person.

In the previous three rounds, there was no one who had chosen the wilderness to become their field of activity

Although in the formation projection, they were only able to see the actions of their own party and not the doings of the Azure Phoenix people, but nearly every student felt Ye Qingyu had gone mad.

“He’s definitely afraid, he’s definitely afraid. He thinks that by entering the desolate wilderness, the people of Azure Phoenix won’t be able to find him, and he can live for a longer time.” Someone said in a thoughtful tone.

“If it is really this, then he is despicable...” Another person said.

“To allow such a person to enter the battlefield, is really a type of humiliation.” Han Xiaofei coldly sneered.

“That’s right. Compared to dying in battle, such a coward act, is even worse.” Jiang Xiaohan chimed in.

Wang Yan gave the two a glare, and said in a calm voice. “It’s I who permitted Ye Qingyu to enter the battlefield.

The two hesitated, an embarrassed expression appearing on their face, instantly shutting their mouths.

.....

.....

The canopy of the forest was more than ten metres high, forming an green layer that encompassed everything. It blocked the sunlight entirely and made the world underneath dark and cold.

Ye Qingyu walked carefully, step by step into the forest.

On the surrounding boulders, both large and small, they were entirely covered with emerald green lichen. Various gorgeous poison flowers were sprinkled upon the decaying vegetation, beautiful but fatal, making the entire environment even more unearthly.

If you observed with care, you would discover within the air that there was strands of pale green smoke. This was the miasma. Mortal and deadly, even if an expert of the Spirit spring stage accidentally breathed this in, their life would be placed at risk.

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the three gorges were the safest. In this desolate wilderness, there was a multitude of unimaginable dangers, making many people think that this was a forbidden area. Unless they were forced to a desperate situation, no one would choose to enter the wild area.

At least within the explanation of those teachers of White Deer academy specialising in the this battlefield, the wilderness was an area that was highly recommended not to enter.

But in the booklet Ye Qingyu was able to obtain, the wilderness was said to be most valuable location within the whole battlefield.

This was one of the reasons Ye Qingyu had chosen the wilderness.

He had calculated carefully, Qin Wushuang and the others, could at least endure approximately two days on the three different paths. In other words, within these two days, there was not a need for Ye Qingyu to reinforce them, being able to do what he wished within this timeframe.

Ye Qingyu must carefully utilise this time to raise his strength.

Then, he would worry about the upcoming battle.

Carefully observing the surrounding terrain, occasionally climbing up to the ten metre high canopy, to look at the landscape and environment around him, Ye Qingyu rapidly advanced deep into the wilderness.

Martial artists who entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], their ability to fly would be suppressed. Through this, the entire battlefield would become incomparably immense. In a short amount of time, very little people would be able to traverse the entire battlefield.

After approximately two hours of time, Ye Qingyu finally arrived at the place he was searching for.

On the way, he had already experienced the ambush of several demonic beasts and underwent numerous battles.

Thankfully in such a class of [Boundary canyon battlefield], the demonic beasts within could not be counted as powerful. Ye Qingyu managed to handle it without expending too much energy.

This was a depressed valley, surrounded by hills and mountains. There was a clear waterfall flowing from deep within the valley, and occasionally howls after howls of demonic wolves sounded from within the valley.

[Demonic Wolf valley].

“Very many people think that only by killing rune soldiers, are you able to obtain yuan qi that persists. They don’t know, that by killing demonic beasts within the wilderness, one is also able to obtain a growth in their

yuan qi growth. And from just a single entity, the yuan qi reward contained within a demonic beast is by far greater than any rune soldiers!

Ye Qingyu grabbed the spear from his holster, combining the two parts of the Inexorable spear. Two hands holding onto the spear, he step by step entered into the [Demonic wolf valley].

As one of the ten areas where demonic beasts gathered within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], there were over a hundred demonic wolves contained within the [Demonic wolf valley]. Of these wolves, there were many that were two headed or even three headed mutations, with a battle power that could be comparable to someone of the Spirit spring stage. The power of a single wolf could not be counted as frightening; but when hundreds of demonic wolves gathered together, it was enough to make many experts pale with fear.

But what Ye Qingyu needed to do right now, was to challenge this pack of demonic wolves.

Only after slaughtering this pack of wolves, would he be able to obtain a great amount of yuan qi.

This would allow Ye Qingyu to perfectly form his second Spirit spring completely, stabilising himself at this stage.

Only through reaching this stage, could Ye Qingyu have confidence in directly facing the so called geniuses of Azure Phoenix academy.

Killing intent emitted from all around.

The wind rustled the grass.

In the very second that he stepped into the valley, his presence was discovered by the low class demonic wolves near the outer edges.

A savage threatening howl sounded from deep within the foliage. Two wolves the size of calves appeared. A scarlet red, brutal and bloodthirsty eyes rose with wind and gradually came nearer. When they opened their mouths to howl, a nauseating smell of blood came wafting over.

These two huge wolves were pure black, fur as sharp as steel needles. When their paws landed on boulders, deep indents would be left behind.

They lifted their heads and howled to the sky.

The sounds reverberated throughout the valley.

Then the whole valley, as if in response to this, howls upon howls replied from far away, coming ever nearer, as if an army was gathering.

“Must finish this battle quickly.”

Ye Qingyu moved, his figure like a bolt of lightning rushing out.

“Ao!Ao!Ao—— ! ”

The two black huge wolves flew through the air at the same time, their sharp claws extending outwards. They sliced apart the air, and blades formed by wind, indiscernible by the human eye, came whistling at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu did not avoid at all.

The Inexorable spear vibrated with sounds of DingDingDing, the spear swings blossoming in the air. The impact of the metal resounded throughout, and the pale silver blades of wind all shattered.

The next second, the cold light of the spear covered the sky.

An icy light stabbed through the gaping bloody mouth of the first wolf, stabbing through his throat and piercing out. The point of the spear continued on, along with the still struggling corpse of the first wolf, piercing the abdomen of the second huge black wolf...

“Ao.....Wu.....”

Accompanied by the sounds of whimpering, the two wolves with a strength comparable to the peak of the fifth stage of the ordinary martial level, lost their lives in an instant.

Before Ye Qingyu had a chance to recover his breath, a strong wind ambushed him from behind.



It was another huge black wolf rapidly rushing to kill.

And at this time, from all around, pairs upon pairs of scarlet red bloodthirsty eyes surrounded him, with no end in sight. The special bloody scent of the demonic wolves completely enveloped the surroundings, the brutal killing intent was like tornadoes swirling within the wild grass.

Killing descended.

Demonic wolves were a pack that did not fear death. Once they were incited, they could only be calmed by death.

Ye Qingyu knew in his heart, the most terrifying battle was about to begin.

Before he could swing his spear, in the time of a spark, he stepped slightly sideways. The razor sharp claw of the demonic wolf rubbed past his shoulder, passing by with the width of a hair. Holding his spear in his right hand, he punched out with his left explosively.

Peng!

The black demonic wolf was directly blown apart by the frightening force contained within that punch.

And immediately after Ye Qingyu retreated a step, his fist turning into a palm strike, slapping on the two corpses of the wolves skewered onto his spear.

The corpses of the wolves whistled out, directly hitting two wolves in mid air. Their bones immediately broke, falling to the ground and struggling to get up.

Murderous intent overflowed from all around.

Seven black wolves even larger than usual, as if bolts of lightning, came swishing towards him. Their sharp claws spread opened, a flurry of sharp weapons, wanting to tear Ye Qingyu into shreds.

“Scram ! ”

Ye Qingyu held the inexorable spear using both hands, and explosions after explosions of noise resounded, booming to all parts.

The black wolves were all blown outwards like flying objects by the long spear.

Ye Qingyu's black hair danced wildly, his demonic like nature invoked. The three metre long massive spear within his hands, transformed into black lightning. Sometimes sweeping, sometimes snapping, as if a black dragon. Everywhere it passed, the bodies of wolves would crack and collapse.

## Chapter 073 – Not Allowed To Leave

---

This was a slaughter that was difficult to stop.

Unless there was a side that completely collapsed.

The inexorable spear constantly sliced through the air, the demonic wolves also howled in unceasing rage.

Blood spurted everywhere.

Bones shattered.

The large black wolves constantly died. Strands upon strands of yuan qi would fly out from their corpses, assimilating with Ye Qingyu's body.

This was the reward of the battlefield.

[Boundary canyon formation] was a world that was constructed using the formation martial path. No matter whether it was rune soldiers, rune demon soldiers or rune monsters, they were all constructed using runes and formations. They were not living beings that were made from flesh and blood, but rather formed from consolidated energy.

This type of formation was incomparably profound, far exceeding the imagination of a martial artist like Ye Qingyu. After the demonic wolves were killed, there would be blood spilt, as if everything was real.

But in the end, the corpses would transform into formation yuan qi. A part of this would return to the battlefield itself and a part that would enter into the killer's body.

The formation martial path created by the Formation Emperor Luoso, was like a technique created by the gods. As if it had the power of creation itself.

Everytime he killed a demonic wolf, Ye Qingyu could sense, that his expended inner yuan was being replenished. It constantly grew during this battle.

This was one of the reasons why he continued to endure in such a desperate battle.

However, in the end, injuries could not be prevented on Ye Qingyu's body.

There was a blade of wind that passed by the defence of the spear, slashing at Ye Qingyu. It sliced apart his clothing, and on his sturdy muscles, left a line of blood.

Not even an hour had passed when every inch of his clothing were in tatters. The exposed muscles were as if it were sliced apart by a sharp little knife after His flesh was being carved apart, blood dripping down.

The two headed demonic wolves and three headed demonic wolves also began to appear.

In the different heads of these wolves, different sprays would be spat out. There were toxic gas, burning flames, icy cold, different killing techniques. Even for someone of the Spirit spring stage, this was enough to threaten their life. On one hand Ye Qingyu needed to avoid the close range attacks of the normal demonic wolves and on the other hand he had to be careful of the long range attacks of the demonic wolves on the outer edges.

Such a battle, continued on for four hours in total.

Finally, all the demonic wolves in the [Demon wolf cannon] were completely slaughtered.

Ye Qingyu was bathed in blood, as if he had been executed through a thousand cuts. His entire upper body, apart from his head, there was not a piece of flesh that was intact. Blood covered both his upper and lower body, and it was unknown whether this blood belonged to the demonic wolves, or he himself...

“His mother, the booklet did not say that to challenge this pack of demonic wolves would be so difficult. I was nearly torn apart by this pack of wolves...” Demon king Ye said, trepidation still remaining after that traumatic battle.

He leaned against the inexorable spear with one hand. Only through doing this could he stand stably. His other hand felt his own face, then let out a breath of relief: “Fortunately I desperate covered my face, otherwise such a handsome appearance would not be preserved...”

From the moment he had stepped into the [Demon wolf valley], exactly four hours had gone by.

Ye Qingyu could be said to have won only by a shred.

Thankfully his cultivation technique for his inner yuan, was the nameless breathing technique. Sustained and prolonged, his speciality was endurance. Especially after his flesh body had experienced the numerous beatings of that old thing, the toughness of his body far exceeded martial artists of the same stage. Even so, he could barely withstand such injuries.

Otherwise, if someone of the same stage as him had experience such an attack, they would most likely expend all their inner yuan. They would consume their entire strength and would be dragged to their death in this valley.

Deeply breathing in, Ye Qingyu sat cross legged amongst the corpses of the wolves, beginning to cultivate and recover his yuan qi.

As the nameless breathing technique activated, the yuan qi from heaven and earth in this valley, came rushing down towards this teenager covered in blood.

Within the dantian world, the yuan qi water within the first Spirit spring had already been expended by about ninety percent. The second Spirit spring was not yet fully completed, but the yuan qi waters within were also nearly completely consumed.

“Within this battlefield, the recovery rate of yuan qi is at least six times quicker than the outside world...” Ye Qingyu quickly discovered the discrepancy.

This also represented that training with the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was much faster than in the outside world – this was also one of the many reasons people competed to enter this competition.

Within the Demon wolf valley, a yuan qi vortex was formed.

Above in the sky, clouds formed from yuan qi began to sink down, as if they were forming a funnel. It completely enveloped the entire Demon wolf valley. And in the centre of these floating yuan qi clouds, was namely Ye Qingyu, his figure as small as an ant.

This scene was hard to believe.

The funnel that was several thousands of metres long made from floating yuan qi clouds, abruptly rotated. Finally, as if a large whale was swallowing water, everything was completely absorbed into Ye Qingyu’s body. There were constantly yuan qi from Heaven and Earth that gathered from all directions, then entering into this tiny silhouette...

It was hard to imagine, that a body that seemed so tiny, could contain such a large quantity of yuan qi.

And if such a scene was seen by other people, they would be stunned at the rate of absorption of Ye Qingyu in taking in yuan qi.

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

“He’s completely cleared out the [Demon wolf valley]!”

“But will this affect the grand competition in some way?”

“His courage is admirable, but to waste his time within the desolate wild areas, is really something stupid!”

Students secretly discussed with low voices.

On the formation projection above, occasionally images would appear showing Ye Qingyu’s actions within the battlefield. Fighting against the pack of demonic wolves had shocked many student representatives. Ye Qingyu’s valiant figure had made many of them secretly apprehensive, but it was only limited to this.

Even until now, they could not see what the impact of Ye Qingyu’s actions would be on deciding the final victor of this grand competition.

And when they saw Ye Qingyu absorbing yuan qi from Heaven and Earth at an astonishing rate, they were dumbfounded. They could not help but feel jealous.

“What’s happening? Could it be that training within the wild areas has some special amplifications?”



“Such a rate of absorbing yuan qi, is too fast!”

“This type of speed...could he have entered into the state of demonic fire?”

Han Xiaofei and Jiang Xiaohan looked at each other, each able to discern the other's shock and surprise.

They were fourth year students, and this was not their first time entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. Their understanding of the battlefield was much greater compared to those of the first and second year students. But even they could not be sure, that training in the wild areas, would have such an amplification effect on the rate of training.

Because previously, in their five opportunities in entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they had not even attempted to enter the wilderness once.

In many of the lessons of White Deer academy, the recommendation given by the teachers were ‘distance yourself from the wild areas.’ Because the benefits from an area with unknown dangers could not be compared to the benefits gained in the three main canyon roads.

The old teacher who had previously scolded Ye Qingyu for deviating from the trodden path, his face was slightly red.

They currently could not confirm what effect the wilderness had.

The tradition of White Deer academy, had always been to avoid the wilderness.

Occasionally there would be students who did not listen, and after tentatively entering the wilderness, they would die experiencing the dangers hidden within. They did not even have a chance to do battle with the opponents, before dying in the hands of the demonic beasts and the dangerous terrains, indirectly confirming the words of the teachers.

But right now...

Even though the faces of the elders were still calm and peaceful, their hearts trembled slightly. Could it be that the wilderness area contained some secrets within?

And at this time, the formation projection suddenly changed, switching the perspective to another place.

Carnage, burned like fire.

Some students with slightly lower strength, before they could discern anything, a fierce battle had already ended in the North East canyon path.

In the projection, the conservative killing of demon rune soldiers by Xia Houwu was shown. However, at this time, his corpse was already lying within a pool of blood, dying through one strike alone. His spirit transformed into a streak of light, flying towards the direction of the headquarters...

Xia Houwu had died in battle!

The person killed him was a youth around the ages of eleven or twelve, wearing the robe of Azure Phoenix academy. He had a handsome appearance, a red mole between his eyebrows and a long sword held in his hands with an electric light lingering on the sword blade.

Death in one strike.

This red mole youth had scorn on his face, his attitude extremely leisurely, as if he had just done something insignificant. He casually stomped on the corpse of Xia Houwu, wiping the blood stains on his sword with the corpse. Shaking his head, the long sword swung out. The light of the blade was like a sky filled with floating snow, tens of rune soldiers turning into ashes immediately. Stream after stream of yuan qi energy entered into his body...

This youth, had never appeared before.

But once he appeared, in a split second, he had slaughtered Xia Houwu.

The difference, was really too large.

The people within Ascending heaven pavilion seeing this, was shocked speechless.

Disgracing the corpse of Xia Houwu, was obviously an act of provocation. The reason that everyone was silent, was not because they did not feel anger or fury, but it was because in the previous three rounds, such an humiliating action had already occurred too many times.

The teacher of white Deer academy had dark expressions, everyone filled with the look of defeat.

The students that they had bitterly nurtured, in their eyes were geniuses with bright futures, were the pillars that would cause the White Deer academy to flourish once again. They had placed great expectations upon them, but who would have guessed in front of the Azure Phoenix students, they were like children learning to walk, without any shred of power to resist.

Such a defeat, how could it not make someone grieve.

Within the crowd, only the old Dean and the head teacher of the first years, Wang Yan had a blank face throughout this, without joy or sorrow. They fully concentrated their attention on the formation projection, without displaying any hint of their thoughts.

“Ai, a crushing defeat, such a grand competition...is not worth watching ! ”An old teacher sighed, slumping and turning to leave.

There were also several teachers that had disappointment on their faces, about to leave.

“Students that you have taught by your own hands, representatives

that you have chosen yourself, even if they are stomped into the mud, you must finish watching their competition.” The gaze of the old Dean stared fixatedly at the projection, his tone determined and resolute. “You are not allowed to leave.”

## Chapter 074 – Sentry Guard

---

The leaving figures of the teachers stopped.

Numerous gazes focused upon the projection formation once again.

The red mole youth's figure floated through the air, as if he was an immortal in general. He flashed throughout the battlefield where hundreds of rune soldiers and demon rune soldiers were fighting. Every time his sword stabbed out, he would definitely kill a rune soldier.

Ever since he appeared, every rune soldier that died was killed by his sword, and not by demon rune soldiers.

This represented, that every strand of yuan qi from each rune soldier, was perfectly absorbed by the red mole youth. Nothing was wasted.

During Xia Houwu's performance, at the most he could do was to kill three out of every five deaths of a demon rune soldier. Compared to this teenager, it was like the difference between the clouds and the mud.

“Within [Boundary canyon battlefield], you must do your utmost to kill as many demon rune soldiers as possible, in order to maximise the yuan qi reward. The best method to do this, is when each demon rune soldier is about to die, to perform the last hit using your sword. This is not only the easiest method to turn the tides of battle but the final judgement will also award the kill to you. You will obtain the yuan qi energy contained within these rune soldiers...such a technique, is called the supplement strike.”

The old Dean suddenly spoke.

His voice resounded through the ears of every White Deer student present.

“Such a technique, I believe your teachers have already spoken to you before. Apart from the first year students who have not yet interacted deeply with the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the other representatives has already received specialist training. It’s a pity that this grand competition clearly shows the basics of your supplement strike, compared to the students of the Azure Phoenix, is by far lacking. You should carefully observe, the red mole teenager is only a first year student of Azure Phoenix academy, but his supplement blade technique is exceedingly brilliant. In terms of him seizing the opportunities in battle, he is near the summit. Out of all you, there is only Bai Yuqing and Han Shuangfu the two strongest of the fourth years, who are able to achieve this.”

The students of the White Deer academy lowered their heads in shame.

Within the battlefield, in every wave of assault, hundreds of demon rune soldiers and rune soldiers would do battle. The situation changed drastically every second, and in such a situation, to have a hundred percent success rate in performing the supplement strike, was too difficult.

But they could not deny, the red mole youth in the projection, only possessing the strength of a first year, yet he was able to perfectly achieve this.

“The reason I am saying this, is not to make you ashamed, or to humiliate you. I only want to remind you, to discard your muddled thoughts and observe in detail. Don’t let the rage and hatred blind you, you must learn from the opponents and improve.” The old Dean finally turned his head to regard the geniuses of White Deer academy. He suddenly smiled, with an gentle demeanour. “Therefore, don’t lower your heads. You must look carefully.”

After a moment of hesitation, the teenagers all lifted their heads, concentrating their attention on the projection above them.

Some people still fumed with rage between gritted teeth.

Some people’s vision gradually began to clear.

They all had a different power of comprehension, different temperaments and different aptitudes. With regards to the words of the old Dean, their understanding were also naturally different, and what they gained from these words were also different.

Jiang Xiaohan observed for a moment, then suddenly opened her mouth: “If Ye Qingyu did not selfishly enter the wilderness area, and instead went to one of the Northern paths, teaming up with Xia Houwu, perhaps they could suppress the red mole teenager. Even if they are not able to kill him, at least they can stabilise the situation...”

Some people subconsciously nodded their heads.



An elder who had previously scolded Ye Qingyu, hearing this nodded his head. “From the battle of the [Demon wolf valley], we can see that the battle strength of Ye Qingyu is remarkable. It is only a pity, that he has gone down the wrong path...”

.....

.....

Demon wolf valley.

Ye Qingyu woke up from his trance.

Within the dantian world, the second Spirit spring was bubbling and boiling with vitality. Clear spring waters jetted into the sky, like a pillar of water, completely drenching the desert thousands of metres around it, bringing with it liveliness and energy!

The second Spirit spring had been completely formed.

“I’ve finally entered into the second Spirit spring stage, I can fight in this battle now!”

Ye Qingyu stood up, the previous wounds and injuries on his body had completely disappeared. Under the nourishment of the inner yuan , not a single scar remained. He threw away the tattered clothing on his body, and changed into a tight fitting black garment, and tied his thick black hair behind his head.

The corpses of the wolf pack, had already completely disappeared.

The demonic wolves here, was in the end, life forms born from formations. A period of time after dying, they would dissolve in Heaven and Earth. After several months of time, under the special laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they would appear again.

Perceiving the inner yuan raging and boiling with his body, Ye Qingyu's mind was filled with a bottomless heroic spirit.

The domineering behaviour of Azure Phoenix had incited every White Deer academy student. To say that Ye Qingyu did not care about this, was false. In the end, what he also wore was the uniform of the White Deer academy, and on his chest was the badge of the White Deer academy. Of course Ye Qingyu wanted to reverse the situation, even if just by winning one round.

But the strength of the Azure Phoenix students, was really extremely powerful.

Ye Qingyu would not be able to completely dominate the other five people on his own. He must cooperate with his companions, but the representatives of the first years included Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu. From the start he had given up on them – they would never cooperate with Ye Qingyu.

Therefore Ye Qingyu must first raise his own strength in order to win.

Right now, after fully completing the second Spirit spring, he finally had confidence.

“By my calculations, eight hours should have already passed. On the three different paths, I estimate that the armies are about to come face to face.” Ye Qingyu estimated in his heart. The location he was in right now, reinforcing the Song sisters<sup>1</sup> in the Northern path, was the most logical choice.

He stood up, about to take action.

But at this time, an abnormality appeared.

In the sea of consciousness, the bronze ancient book, [Fiendgod titled chart] that had always been silent, suddenly vibrated. A strange stream of energy gushed out, crazily absorbing the inner yuan in Ye Qingyu’s body for the second time. The huge suction, made Ye Qingyu unable to control the flow of his inner yuan.

“Crap, it’s happening again .....

Ye Qingyu rolled his eyes.

Thankfully, a similar thing had already happened once. Ye Qingyu knew what it was doing, so he did not struggle anymore, allowing the bronze book to freely consume his inner yuan.

Time passed by minute by minute.

In the blink of an eye, fifteen minutes had passed. The two Spirit springs within Ye Qingyu's dantian world had dried up completely, and within his sea of consciousness, the bronze book became incomparably resplendent, blossoming with a glorious radiance.

After an abrupt quivering, pure inner yuan gushed out from the ancient bronze book. It scattered throughout Ye Qingyu's four limbs and his hundreds of bones, nourishing his joints, meridians and acupuncture points. Like rivers leading to the sea, it returned to his dantian world, once again becoming waters in the two Spirit springs.

The [Little Shang sword] nourishing in Ye Qingyu's first spirit spring, received an even purer inner yuan for it to be enveloped in. The sword produced waves after waves of sounds, as if it had gained intelligence, luminous and dazzling!

“So it was really the same as the first time.”

Ye Qingyu let out a breath of relief.

He suddenly realised, after the ancient bronze book had absorbed his inner yuan for the first time, the contents within this book had transformed greatly and he was able to see the four moves of the golden armoured king. And this time, would new battle techniques also appear?

Mindful of this, Ye Qingyu could not wait anymore.

He feared that the spectators of the Ascending heaven pavilion would

be able to discover the secret of the ancient bronze book. This time he did not summoned the ancient bronze book in reality, but directly entered into his sea of consciousness, and using his consciousness to peruse the ancient book.

.....

.....

“Eh? What’s happened? Why can we suddenly not see Ye Qingyu anymore?”

Within the Ascending heaven pavilion, some people shouted in surprise.

On the projection formation above their heads, when the image had switched to Ye Qingyu’s position, suddenly everything was inky black. Nothing could be seen.

“It’s been obscured by a fog formation!”

“Why would such a thing happen ? ”

“Could Ye Qingyu have died ? ”

“It can’t be, even if he died we would be able to see his corpse...”

“Such a situation has never occurred before.”

Even the teachers and supervisors began talking all at once. In the realm created by the Formation Emperor, [Boundary canyon battlefield], there had never been an error that had occurred before. The formation projection, above their heads, was also a part of the battlefield, and it had never been unable to observe someone on their side...this was slightly abnormal.

The old Dean and Wang Yan looked at each other, their expressions becoming serious.

.....

A short while later.

Ye Qingyu had finished reading the bronze ancient book.

“It’s a pity, the [Titled Fiendgods] section, nothing new has appeared that could be read, there is only still the four moves of the golden armoured king...”

“The section [Titled divine weapons] is still completely pale, with no way to investigate...”

“It seems like [Titled strange objects] section will not have any changes either...Eh? That’s not right, this section has some new information that has appeared, there’s something that is shining with light...But, this thing called [Sentry guard], what uses does it have? “

The [Fiendgod title chart] was split into three major sections. When Ye Qingyu looked at the third section, [Titled strange objects], his eyes brightened. On the first page of this section, he could see a small part that was currently radiating with a pale light.

This light could be read.

Ye Qingyu carefully examined the object radiating light. What glowed seemed to be something akin to a bamboo rod, from the proportion of it, the actual object should be something that was half a metre long. On the topmost part of this pole, there was a gem that was black on the inside but white on the outside, as if it was something like an eyeball.

The name of this object, was called [Sentry guard].

What use did it have?

Ye Qingyu's will activated, his consciousness interacting with the contents of this section. Information appeared in his mind.

Instantly, he understood the uses of the [Sentry guard].

“Hahaha, this really is when I want to sleep, someone will hand me a pillow. This is too amazing, I can completely dominate the Azure Phoenix academy now!”

.....

On the Northern path.

Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo were in the midst of battle.

This pair of sisters had already entered the Spirit spring stage, and in each of their dantian world, excavated one Spirit spring. The cultivation technique Song Xiaojun trained in was the flame mantra, able to control the power of flames. And as for Song Qingluo, she trained in the green wood mantra, able to control wooden attribute inner yuan.

Hundreds of rune soldiers and an equal number of demon rune soldiers slaughtered each other fiercely on the battlefield. The sound of their battle cries shuddered the Heavens, the bloody smell permeating throughout the entire canyon, the flow of blood like rivers...

-----

1. They are actually cousins, but in Chinese they can be called Song sisters [↩](#)



## Chapter 075 – Double Kill (1)

---

“Something doesn’t feel right.” Song Qingluo carefully evaluated her surroundings.

The two sides of the canyon, were rolling hills and forests. As if it was a jade like ocean of canopy, it undulated with the wind. The forest was dark and damp, and there would occasionally be the roar of ancient beasts that would reverberate from the forest, as if it was the growls of the spirits that had died in battle.

There was a murderous aura that indistinctly emitted from the closest under brush.

The sea of grass was enough to submerge a grown person. The shadows of this forest could hide anything and could also submerge everything.

Song Qingluo could clearly sense danger approaching.

“Run!” She shouted at little loli.

But——

“Wanting to leave now, is a little too late.”

A voice came from behind them.

Under the sunlight, a teenager with snowy white short hair appeared, the hair as if they were needles of cold steel that flickered on his head. Without knowing when he appeared, he walked out from the forest from the direction of the headquarters of White Deer academy, cutting off their path of retreat.

“Ai, this is really boring and senseless.” Another voice sounded.

This time it was a youth with fire red long hair. He yawned, with an extremely bored expression, both hands behind his head, walking from the other side. There was a smile of disdain on his face: “We originally wanted to finish you within ten breaths of time, but seeing that you were girls, me and Lin Nuo decided to sleep under the protector statue for a while. We’ve already given you eight hours of time to kill the soldiers... It’s fine, no need to thank us for our mercy. Now obediently die!”

A strong yuan qi turbulence gradually emitted from the bodies of these teenagers.

One front, one back, they completely surround them.

An unwilling nervousness appeared on the Song sisters.

The strength of the Azure Phoenix academy had already been fully exhibited during the previous three rounds. It had caused a psychological shadow to be born on the hearts of these girls.

“Hoho, two pitiful people. You must remember the people who killed you. We are the Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai of Azure Phoenix academy.” The

palm of the short white haired teenager, Lin Nuo, slowly extended outwards and a deep green fist blade could be seen extending from his hand. There was a faint odour of fragrance emitting from it.

Spirit weapon.

The moment he acted, he took out his Spirit weapon.

The next instant, his silhouette quivered for a second, then disappeared. As if he was a beam of light, he rushed at Song Qingluo, leaving a flickering image in the air.

“When you resurrect, you can come here again. Don’t worry, I am very easy to deal with. If I’m killing a woman, I will kill you quickly and painlessly.” The person with fire red long hair, Zheng Kai, both his hands gently pulled at the air. An orange light flashed and an enormous staff that was surrounded with mysterious runes and formation appeared in his hand.

It was also a Spirit weapon.

As the long staff was swung, the air was split apart like that of waves.

“Quickly retreat, under the protector statue!” Song Qingluo cried loudly.

The strength displayed by the two Azure Phoenix students, was not something that they could directly withstand. They could only temporarily retreat. The location they were currently in was around a thousand metres from the outermost line of defence of White Deer

academy. As long as they retreated under the protector statue, and borrowed the fearsome offensive power of this protector statue, they would be able to temporarily delay for a while.

A pale green sapling appeared in the centre of Song Qingluo's palm. In the blink of an eye, this sapling grew and spread, becoming a shield of vine and grass, protecting her. This was her life Spirit weapon [Qingluo<sup>1</sup>]. It contained the spirit of plants, and was the most precious asset of the Qingluo merchant company.

Song Xiaojun also knew they were in a desperate situation. With a clear shout, her entire body was enveloped in a scarlet flame, as if there was a forcefield covering her. At the same time, her dainty hands pushed outwards, and two fireballs shot out, aiming at the two opponents. While doing all this, she quickly retreated.

“Hahaha.....”

The cold and sharp laughter came with the wind.

They followed relentlessly.

Their figures flashed.

Song Qingluo could only feel an icy aura approaching, and after that, she could sense the vines that were in front of her and formed from her yuan qi, be sliced into pieces. She felt a chill on her thigh, a spurt of blood flying out, and a wound that was deep enough to be able to see bone appeared on her leg. Instantly, she could not keep her balance

anymore, falling to the ground...

Song Qingluo's pupil shrunk.

“Qingluo·Green spirit strangle!”

The second that she fell, along with her cry, within the air there were countless vines that were like green pythons that appeared without any signs. With a decisive force, the vines advanced towards the lightning quick figure, twisting all around him. Abruptly, a fierce force was applied and accompanied with a boom, the silhouette was crushed into pieces.

Success ?

Song Qingluo was overjoyed.

She had long made a decision, that she would pretend to make a blunder. But in reality, what she wanted to do, even if at the risk of an injury, was to capture the high speed figure of the opponent and use the Spirit weapon [Qingluo] defeat the enemy.

Song Qingluo had studied in the White Deer academy for long, and had experienced numerous spars and practical battle training. She had a rich fighting experience, so of course she would not lose her composure in witnessing the opponent for the first time. She had her own fighting wisdom that only belonged to her.

But —

“Haha... a crafty little girl. A pity, you were a tiny bit lacking.” Accompanied by a cold and merciless laughter, the figure of Lin Nuo appeared ten metres away, with a contemptuous sneer. “Such a pitiful scheme, do you really think it can fool me?”

What was torn into pieces, was only his mirage that he had left behind through high speed moment.

The speed of Lin Nuo, was really too great.

Song Qingluo’s heart, instantly sunk.

The other side, the battle had already been decided.

Accompanied by a dull sound, the earth shook. A crack on the earth slowly spread, the protective fire shield around Song Xiaojun had been scattered. A terrifying force transferred through the ground, and she was shaken till blood filled her mouth. She fell beside Song Qingluo, without a Spirit weapon in her hands...

“Not even able to withstand a single blow ! ”

Zheng Kai walked towards them dragging his enormous spear.

Within the first years of the Azure Phoenix academy, strength was his speciality. Born with herculean strength, the gigantic staff in his hand weighed over four thousand pounds. For a normal person, even lifting

this staff would be very difficult, not to mention wielding it in battle.

“This is really pointless, can the calibre of White Deer academy really be such? Too disappointing...” Lin Nuo shook his head and smiled contemptuously. “I really don’t know why the teachers of White Deer academy would agree to such a competition. They are really seeking their own humiliation.”

“Fine, kill these two girls, and quickly end this battle. Don’t forget, we have wagered with Du Sha, Xu Ge and Ding Liyou on who would be able to enter the headquarters of White Deer academy first...” Zheng Kai with a careless attitude lightly whistled.

“Hoho.....”Lin Nuo smiled frivously, a cold light appearing on the blade at the back of his palm. He bent his body, reaching out with his hand and delicately touching the exquisite and delicate face of Song Qingluo. As if wanting to experience the silky feel of her skin, he clicked his tongue. “Do I really have to ravage flowers with my own hands? Such a beautiful little girl, to be killed so easily, is really a waste of a precious resource...”

.....

“Ai.....”

Within Ascending heaven pavilion, there were elders that let out long sighs.

Today was really a humiliating day

Xia Houwu was slaughtered in an instant, and his corpse was trodden was used to clean the bloodstains off the sword. The Song sisters without any ability to resist, was flippantly mocked and harassed... They had never thought, that White Deer academy would be crushed so decisively. The five consecutive kills of Blue Sky could not represent everything, because Blue Sky's situation was special. The talent that White Deer academy had truly nourished and chosen with their own hands, could really not even withstand a single strike. It really made one's heart turn cold.

“The first defensive line of the Northern path, is about to be lost..”

Looking at the happenings on the formation projection, even an idiot would understand that the strength of Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai was too great, and was not something the Song sisters would be able to defend. At this time, they could only stand and watch silently everything that happened on the projection, watch as the Song sisters died in battle...

“Where's Ye Qingyu? If he was here...” Jiang Xiaohan abruptly opened her mouth again

After losing track of him in the Demon wolf valley, the formation projection had never displayed Ye Qingyu's figure again. This was very abnormal.

“That's right, if Ye Qingyu had not stubbornly chosen the wild area...” Han Xiaofei said, seemingly thoughtfully. “If he cooperated with Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun, they could at least defend one path...”



Many people hearing such words, also felt the same way.

And at this instant, many people suddenly realised, if not for Ye Qingyu's nonsensical actions, then perhaps White Deer academy would still have a chance? Such a tragic loss, at least a sacrificial lamb needed to be found? Or in other words, this situation needed someone to bear responsibility for this incident, no matter whether they were guilty or innocent.

Before his sentence had finished.

Xiu!

A sound of a weapon breaking through the air, resounded throughout the formation projection above them.

.....

Xiu !

A black spear one metre and seventy centimetres long descended from the sky.

Without any signs.

Without any fluctuations.

Therefore there was no way to evade or block such an attack.

The black long spear, looking like a streak of black light, descended from the Heavens. As if it was a punishment from a furious killing deity, before anyone could notice or react to the spear, it descended upon the earth.

The long spear was bitingly cold.

The spear pinned between Song Qingluo and Luo Nin. As if it was an insurmountable peak, it split the two people apart.

A faint smell of blood dispersed.

Lin Nuo dumbly turned his head to look at the blood that was like a fountain, spurting out from his left shoulder. And his entire left arm had been broken apart, it fell soundlessly towards the ground, his fingers still twitching slightly...

This was the hand that he had reached towards Song Qingluo with.

The long spear that had descended from the sky, in an instant, had chopped his limb off. The speed was too quick, making him unable to react at all. Till this very moment, Lin Nuo could not even feel a shred of pain, making him unable to believe that this was real.

“What’s happening ? ”

Zheng Kai was dumbfounded, then immediately frightened.

But his innate battle ability that was grown from a long period of time, made him step closer to Lin Nuo.

First, he must protect his comrade.

It was.....five hundred metres around them, there were no sign or traces of any other humans. This spear that had descended from the skies, where had it come from?

And at the very instant he neared Lin Nuo, he could immediately sense something. His pupils dilated, and the feeling of danger, like a flood, completely enveloped him. By the time he had barely managed to lift his head, in his vision, there was a cold star.

As if in the apprehensive pitch black night, a little star was flickering.

Behind the star, was the silhouette of a person.

Fast !

A figure that was even faster than Lin Nuo.

A tide of air that was visible with the human eye was split apart. A black human figure, quick as lightning and holding a spear in his hands, crushed everything in his path that was blocking him. With the momentum of thunder, the figure rushed towards Zheng Kai.

“Scram ! ”

Zheng Kai while one hand was supporting Lin Nuo, his other hand lifted the enormous staff, using all his power to strike out.

Boom!

A deafening metallic clash came.

Zheng Kai could only feel the skin between his forefinger and thumb burn like lava, the bones in his fingers breaking apart. The gigantic staff that normally was like a part of his own body, he could not control anymore. It flew several hundred metres from his grasp...

-----

1. Also translates to Green radish [↩](#)

## Chapter 076 – Double Kill (2)

---

“Who is it ? ”

“Extremely powerful ! ”

Zheng Kai and Lin Nuo both loudly exclaimed at the same time.

A figure like that of a ferocious dragon bringing with it the momentum of thunder, had already rammed into them. It brought with it the force and might like that of an ancient mountain, abundant and irresistible, ruthlessly striking against the bodies of the two Azure Phoenix students. It caused them to be sent sailing through the air...

Ka-cha!Ka-cha!

This was the sounds of bones breaking.

Lin Nuo was in mid air. He felt a strange energy influencing him, with his inner yuan unable to be activated. The lightning speed that he was so proud of, in the face of such a brutal impact, could not be displayed at all. He watched with wide open eyes, helpless, as he was struck. His chest caved in visibly, white bone piercing through his chest from inside his body...

Zhang Kai was in an even worse state.

The hand that he used to hold his staff was torn apart in the instant the enormous staff collided with the black spear. The residual impact tore apart his skin and his flesh was lacerated completely. His entire arm was covered in blood, his muscles broken down into fragments with white bone visible beneath the skin. Large mouthfuls of blood gushed out from him, his mind going completely blank.

The pain from his body did not count for anything.

The thing that made Zhang Kai lose his ability to think, was that in this world, that there was someone purely through physical strength able to completely suppress and dominate himself? And such a person, came from the first year of the White Deer academy?

In the time of a spark, the victor of this battle had already been decided.

The two Azure Phoenix student that had been knocked in the air, had utterly lost their ability to resist. The black silhouette that had attacked so rapidly, rose in the sky like an arrogant dragon ruling over the air. The long black spear in his hand trembled, and the cold light of the spear fell like a torrential rain downwards.

Pok!Pok!Pok!Pok !

As the cold star flickered, blood flowers blossomed.

When the bodies of Lin Nuo and Zhang Kai had reached the ground, their bodies had already been pierced tens of times. They lost their lives,

their souls transforming into light and heading towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix ...

Double kill!

A double kill that descended upon them in an instant!

From the moment the black long spear had arrived like a bolt of lightning till the dust had settled, not even three breaths had passed.

Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun did not even have time to react to what had happened.

Only until the battle was finished, did the black figure descend to the ground.

One hand holding the long spear, his black long hair dancing as if it was a burning flame. The wind blew his robe like a steel blade whistling through the air. He slowly turned his body around, the sunlight shining upon his body making him slightly unreal. On his familiar face, a warm and gentle smile appeared...

“Brother Qingyu!”

Song Xiaojun exclaimed, jumping up and rushing towards this figure.

.....

“Heavens ! ”

“Double Kill ! ”

“One against two ! ”

“How is this possible ? ”

“Terrifying ! ”

“This is.....Ye Qingyu ? ”

Within the Ascending heaven pavilion, exclamations and clamour filled the plaza. Various phrases that were used to express their shock, at this time, like a deep fat fryer, exploded out from the mouths of different people. Even the experienced and knowledgeable elders, at this moment, could not help but to forget themselves. As if below their bottoms was a fire, every single one of them jumped up in surprise.

Some representatives with slightly weaker strength, had not even reacted to what had happened.

“What’s happening ? ”

“When did Ye Qingyu arrive ? ”

Some people stared at each other blankly. They had not yet digested,



what had occurred in the split second.

After different expressions of shock, what followed was a deathly silence.

Within the crowd, both Jiang Xiaohan and Han Xiaofei looked at each other. Each of them could see the expressions in each other's eyes; surprise, shock...and a hint of fear.

.....

.....

Ten breaths before this event had occurred.

In the centre of White Deer academy's practice grounds.

In front of the ranking stone mirror.

When Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun's name began flickering quickly, the heads of many White Deer academy students lowered. Nearly everyone had an expression of complete and utter despair. The same scene had already occurred many times, and every time, without the slightest hint of things turning around, was the arrival of humiliation...

Experiencing this many times, their hopes had already turned into despair, the White Deer academy students already numb to such a scene. They could not wait for the arrival of dawn and the end of this

competition.

The lug, Xiong Yan and his companions next to him, everyone of them had tight frowns.

Until now, Ye Qingyu had not manage to obtain any kills.

And Du Sha of Azure Phoenix academy, had taken the lead and acquired a good beginning. In a flash, he had rapidly dispatched Xia Houwu at a speed so quick, that on the stone mirror, the process of Xia Houwu's name flickering in danger did not appear. What appeared instead were the numbers of death and killing...

It seems like they were really going to lose this wager.

“How is it? Trash that doesn't know how high the heavens is or how deep the earth is, do you have anything more to say now?” The female student with almond eyes giggled triumphantly. “It's time to wake up from your daydreams!”

The Azure Phoenix students next to her all began to laughing together loudly.

“You...Hmph, this round still has not ended yet. Senior brother Qingyu still has a chance...Don't get happy too quickly.” Xiong Yan said, biting his teeth. The big lump was praying in his heart, that senior brother Qingyu must live up to expectations.

“Not giving up until you see the yellow river, not shedding tears until

you see the coffin.” The almond eyed female student crossed her arms across her chest. She coldly sneered: “A group of trash, the dreams of an imbecile. Apart from your hard mouth, what else do you have?”

On the side, another Azure Phoenix student pointed to the gob of phlegm on the ground playfully. “Haha, quickly admit your loss and eat this phlegm. At least then you’ll gain our approval, and have the right to be called a man. Don’t make us look down upon you.”

“Haha, the garbage of White Deer, has always been unable to accept defeat...” The other students of Azure Phoenix academy burst into heavy laughter.

Within the laughter, there was a sense of superiority and pride.

Even if the target they were ridiculing at were the hundreds upon thousands of White Deer students completely surrounding them, even if they were currently within White Deer academy’s territory. Everyone only needed to swarm them and they could crush these Azure Phoenix students into smithereens...

But so what?

They were not afraid in the slightest.

In the martial world, only the strong were respected. Only after obtaining honour and glory, could you stand up and speak. The arrogance and status of the Azure Phoenix students, was simply not something the crowd of garbage could be compared to.

They had a natural superiority, so they did not worry at all.

This type of superiority, was only obtained after hard work and struggles, through battle after battle by the Azure Phoenix students. Only through experiencing ordeals of fire and blood and being tempered, could they acquire this ingrained superiority. This was the source for their superiority and arrogance.

They were a flock of white swans flying high up in the air and in their eyes, the White Deer students were no different to dirty roaches rolling in the mud. A loach wanted to defeat a swan?

If this was not a day dream, then what was?

Therefore the laughter of the Azure Phoenix students was so unbridled, so conceited.

And at the time when they were laughing, someone abruptly realised the smile on the almond eyed female student had consolidated. Her large and beautiful eyes suddenly widened rapidly, and within the pupils was a shock that was hard to describe using words...

They discovered, that the White Deer students originally grinding their teeth in fury, at this time were all looking towards the ranking stone mirror. In the gazes were shock, astonishment, wild joy, disbelief...

No one paid attention anymore to the Azure Phoenix students making things difficult.

A bad premonition, appeared in the hearts of the Azure Phoenix students.

They turned their heads, looking at the ranking stone mirror.

On the mirror, the rapidly flashing names of Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo, had regained their original light. And the incomparably bright names of Zheng Kai and Lin Nuo, before it could even flicker, were already extinguished. And at the same time, fifth on the list of White Deer academy's side, after Ye Qingyu's name, a dazzling appeared next to the kill score--

Kills: 2.

As if lightning had struck.

The entire White Deer academy was quiet.

Even the entire Deer city was quiet.

The silence was like the dark red sunset before the onslaught of a tempest.

Then, immediately, in who knows what corner, someone shouted hoarsely through their throat.

Cheers like the swelling of the spring tides, suddenly erupted from all

directions of the White Deer academy. In every plaza, surges of screams and shouts that could not be stopped, radiated outwards to all directions. In such a tsunami of screams and yells, the almond eyed female student and her senior and junior brothers, were like frightened little ducks in a rainstorm, shivering with cold....

“How is this possible ? ”

The almond eyed female student nearly lost her ability to stand, directly falling to the ground.

.....

.....

Boundary canyon battlefield.

Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun were sitting in a meditative stance on the ground, activating their inner yuan, racing against time to recover.

Ye Qingyu stood by one side protecting them.

Half an hour later, the injuries of these two girls had finally stabilised, with the ability to fight again.

From the inter dimensional pouch, Ye Qingyu took out some Spirit medicines emitting a rich herbal fragrance. “This is the herbs that I’ve gathered in the wilderness before rushing here, when placed on external

wounds, it will allow you to heal quicker!”

The boundary canyon battlefield had its own laws. The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth was much more concentrated than the outside world, causing the number of Spirit herbs to be much larger than the outside world. They were much older and hence possessed a more potent medicinal effect. Especially in the desolate wilderness, very little people normally entered, so under the accumulation of time, the number of Spirit herbs and rare medicines were significantly high in number.

Ever since departing from the Demon wolf valley, on the way back Ye Qingyu had gathered quite a large quantity of Spirit herbs. This could be counted as a decent reward even by its own merits.

“Brother Qingyu, you really are a warrior that fell down from the heavens. Hehe, does this mean you will remain behind and help us?” Song Xiaojun grabbed onto Ye Qingyu’s arm, rubbing her little face against his limb, a joyful expression evident.

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

“Eh? Brother Qingyu, you still have somewhere to go?” The little loli said in a panicked tone.

“That’s right, if you stay behind and cooperate with us, we can definitely destroy the first line of defence of Azure Phoenix academy...” Song Qingluo also opened her mouth. Seeing the battle strength Ye Qingyu just displayed, she was also completely astonished. She could see a faint hope.

“We have already lost three rounds. This round, we must obtain victory.” Ye Qingyu looked at the demon rune soldiers and rune soldiers fighting in close quarters far off in the distance, and gazing further, he saw statues upon statues of demon protector statues. “Not only do we need to win, we need to win beautifully.”

The little loli’s eyes, Song Xiaojun brightened: “Brother Qingyu, you must have a plan already?”

She had completely blind trust and confidence in Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“You only needed to protect yourself well. The other things, just leave it for me to handle.” Ye Qingyu pointed at the demon rune soldiers and the rune soldiers that were fighting and said, “The class of [Boundary canyon battlefield] we are in right now, both the rune soldiers and demon rune soldiers are without intelligence. They only have a basic battle instinct, so what you need to do currently, is control the line of soldiers...”



## Chapter 077 – He Possesses A Rare Treasure?

---

“Controlling the army lines?” Song Qingluo was taken back. “The most important thing that we should be doing, is it not to utilise the time before the two Azure Phoenix student resurrects and push the army lines towards their direction to destroy their first line of defence? You have to know this is an opportunity that is hard to obtain...”

Ye Qingyu shook his head: “In a situation where there is not much difference in strength, your words would be correct. But...this time, we will use another method, to obtain the final victory in this battlefield.”

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

The shock and cheers gradually subsided.

Ye Qingyu had managed to turn the tides at a critical and desperate juncture, allowing everyone to breathe a sigh of belief. This was from the start of the grand competition till now, the first true counter attack of the White Deer academy. It was a victory that deserved to be celebrated.

The pinched eyebrows of the teachers, seemed to have also relaxed slightly.

“This child’s performance is not bad. It’s worth heavily nourishing him...” One of the teachers said with a smile., The way he addressed Ye

Qingyu seemed much more amiable than before.

Another old teacher also spoke with a slight laughter: “I’ve already said; out of so many students, how can it be possible that no one can stand against them? This child is called Ye Qingyu is he? En, Not bad, in the future we must pay special attention to him, we can’t let a true genius be buried.”

The wrinkles on the faces of many old elders of White Deer academy relaxed

The higher ups largely understood, that the reason why the Dean had accepted this grand competition was not to find out who was stronger or weaker between White Deer academy and Azure Phoenix academy. This grand competition was only to sharpen and hone the little geniuses in the academy, to make them put away the arrogant complacency in their hearts. After realising the clear difference in strength, they would do their utmost to chase after them. This would pave the path of obtaining a good result in the glorious battle of the ten academies next year.

But even if so, the process of the grand competition for the entire White Deer academy, and even the higher ups, was something that was akin to a huge blow.

The consensus they had reached before, was that White Deer academy had a ninety percent chance of losing. But absolutely no one would have thought that they would lose so tragically. Apart from Blue Sky who playfully obtained five consecutive kills, the geniuses that they had been specially trained, not one of them had an exceptional performance...

Until Ye Qingyu descended from the sky.

Such a dazzling performance of a double kill, allowed the hearts of the higher ups to breath a heavy sigh of relief.

Hearing the discussions of the higher ups surrounding them, many representatives of White Deer academy, displayed expressions of envy and jealousy. They knew that, from today on, Ye Qingyu would be treated like the apple of their eyes — at the very least, he would be treated by some higher ups as an important target to assist and cultivate.

Bai Yuqing also could not help but be moved by this.

This genius young girl that was as cold as ice and as pure as jade, had never thought such an event would occur. The person who she had judged has passed his most optimal training period, a commoner that would have difficulty achieving anything, would display such a brilliant performance.

She could not help but admit, that Ye Qingyu's results had far exceeded her imagination.

Within the eyes of Han Shuangfu, there was a indistinct bright light. He had always been the greatest genius out of all the male students of the White Deer academy. No matter whether considering background, power, talent, or battle strength, he was the person standing at the tallest peak.

What had always accompanied him, were praise and cheers.

Along the way he had stepped on countless geniuses, singing and dancing as he went.

But even he admitted, that when he had only entered the White Deer academy for five months, he absolutely did not possess this kind of strength...this Ye Qingyu gave off a great sense of threat and challenge. Han Shuangfu could already indistinctly see that this commoner teenager would break the legends after legends that he had left within White Deer academy.

Within the crowd, Han Xiaofei and Jiang Xiaohan were terrified.

Before the grand competition, both of them had done some little tricks. Originally they wanted to destroy Ye Qingyu's martial heart, to give a memorable blow to this youth that were in their eyes, arrogant and despotic ...But from the situation right now, it seems that events were developing in a direction outside of their estimated trajectory.

Jiang Xiaohan could barely control the unwillingness in her heart.

She suddenly thought of something. As if she was mumbling to herself and as if she was reminding everyone. "The battle technique that junior brother Qingyu displayed...I have never previously seen such a technique before."

Han Xiaofei's eyes brightened.

Another student representative subconsciously replied: "That's correct.

From several hundred metres away, in a split second of time, to suddenly descend into the centre of the battlefield, as if it was the impact of a mighty dragon...such a technique is unheard of.”

Once these words were said, many peoples’ attention were drawn to it.

Some people were lost in thought.

“Your words are correct.” An old teacher with ashen grey hair lowered his head and pondered. “Within the curriculum of the first years, is there really such a battle technique? I can’t recall it at all...and besides, the power of that battle technique, it doesn’t look like something that would be possible for first years to learn.”

“Could it be a battle technique that he himself invented?” One of the student representatives opened his mouth and said.

In an instant, countless gazes that were as if they were regarding a retard, landed on this figure.

What kind of joke was that.

A first year student, creating his own battle technique?

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head, and then added: “Also, previously junior brother Qingyu has disappeared from the formation projection. When the projection should have been on him, we could only see a black screen...what reason could there be, that it blocked the projection of the [Boundary canyon battlefield, unless...”

Saying to here, she stopped for a moment.

“Unless what?” The previous ashen gray haired teacher asked.

“Unless on the body of junior brother Qingyu, there is some hidden rare treasure?” Jiang Xiaohan said, lowering her head.

“Rare treasure? What kind of rare treasure would be able to isolate the projection of the [Boundary canyon battlefield?” This ashen haired teacher said with a natural smile. “Even for the top Spirit weapons it is impossible for it to have this power, unless it’s a treasure tool of the highest quality...”

Saying this, as if realising something, his heart suddenly beated madly.

Treasure tool of the highest quality?

Could it really be, on Ye Qingyu’s body, there was a top treasure tool?

A hot flame, burned fleetingly in his eyes.

The surrounding people, suddenly had dry mouths and tongues, especially those higher ups of the academy who realised the importance of the words this teacher just said. That’s right, if Ye Qingyu really had a top treasure tool on him, then he could really block the surveillance of [Boundary canyon battlefield], and he could also perfectly kill the two Azure Phoenix students....

Could this be the only explanation?

Within Heaven wasteland domain, weapons and armours, such equipment could be split into categories depending on their level. The lowest level was Spirit weapon, then it was treasure tool, then it was Dao tool, then it was Saint tool, then it was Emperor tool, and above that was...

Spirit weapons were common. A normal person at the Sprit spring stage, would typically have their own Spirit weapon submerged within their Spirit spring. Even though the materials needed to create a Spirit weapon were rare, it was still obtainable. It only needed a weapon cast master to be able to created with a very high success rate.

But the requirements to create a Treasure tool, was much harsher.

From the moment White Deer academy was founded, they only possessed one single Treasure tool in the entire academy and this was only a basic treasure tool. According to the rumours, out of all the noble factions within Deer city, there was only the city leader's office that had a treasure tool given to them by the royal family of Snow country. No matter how deep the resources the other noble families had, they could only desire one but not obtain it...

For every martial artist at the Bitter sea stage and under, by possessing a treasure tool, you would have the battle power of someone a realm greater. And for every faction to be obtain a treasure tool, represented that they would be able to contest against numerous of their old opponents at once!

A Treasure tool, on some perspective was a weapon that could break the balance of power between the factions of a region.

And when the old teacher subconsciously said these words, many peoples' hearts began to madly beat.

Perhaps it was only a possibility.

A possibility that was so low it was ridiculous.

But many people were willing to prove the validity of this conjecture; what if it was real?

If it was really a top class Treasure tool, it was enough to make many people and numerous factions perform crazy acts. The temptation was too great, it was enough to make many people of modest and noble characters to shed their disguise and lose their reasoning.

The hearts of many people began to plan and scheme something.

“This is the teachings of Wen Wan, the special technique of Wen Wan. Elder Chu, do you remember?” The Wang Yan who had remained silent throughout suddenly opened her mouth.

“Wen Wan's [Urgent lightning chasing wind]?” The ashen gray haired teacher stared blankly then finally understood. Thoughtfully he nodded, “En, that's right, the ambush of this child is slightly similar to the



[Urgent lightning chasing wind]...”

“If it was really this, then everything can be explained. Wen Wan has always favoured this child well, teaching him his signature technique is within reason.” Another teacher also nodded.

Wang Yan did not say anything more.

Her gaze passed by Jiang Xiaohan’s figure, but did not linger there for long.

But Jiang Xiaohan could clearly sense, her soul was as if it was fiercely sliced by a blade. Inside Wang Yan’s gaze, there was a biting cold bringing with it an undisguised murderous intent.

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head even further.

She was not afraid.

Her mouth even curled up slightly.

No matter what, she knew that after the great competition had ended, Ye Qingyu would have problems. Enormous problems.

.....

.....

Boundary canyon battlefield.

Northern path.

The Song sisters were listening to Ye Qingyu's directions before he left. They carefully controlled the battle lines, allowing the demon rune soldiers to constantly be frozen at a spot near their first line of defence. The position of the battle, always maintained a hundred metres away from protector statue.

The attacking range of the protector statue, was fifty metres.

Once any Azure Phoenix student appeared again, the two of them could in an instant, retreat into the defensive range of the protector statue. The opponent could definitely not enter into this range, so therefore the two of them would not be killed in a short period of time.

This type of battle tactic, seemed to be defensive.

If this continued for a long time, apart from extending the time they lasted for a little bit, it was absolutely not possible for them to obtain the final victory. But out of the trust they had for Ye Qingyu, the two girls determinedly carried out Ye Qingyu's plan.

Approximately twenty kilometres away from the battlefield.

Ye Qingyu's feet were currently in a flood of water, treading through the

currents.

This was a river that passed through the entire canyon from East to West. The name of this river was called the [Quicksand river], expansive and wide, stretching over tens of kilometres. The crash of the current, was like the rumble of thunder, deafening.

## Chapter 078 – Spear Broken

---

“It seems like those sisters are temporarily in a safe state...”

A smile appeared on Ye Qingyu’s face.

Although he was tens of kilometre away, but he only needed a will of his heart, and everything that happened in the battle of the Northern canyon would clearly appear in his mind. It was as if he was at the scene to observe everything, without the slightest error possible.

This was the effect of the [Sentry guard].

It was one of the newly discovered mysteries Ye Qingyu had found in the [Fiendgod titled chart]. From the page shining with light in the [Titled strange objects] section, he could take out six [Sentry guards] and place it anywhere he wished.

And in the area where the [Sentry guard] was placed, everything that happened for a kilometre in all directions, Ye Qingyu would be able to observe anytime he wanted. It was as if he had placed a clone there, able to sense everything that occurred.

The effectiveness of the [Sentry guard], was similar to a high class surveillance formation. But to arrange such a formation, wasted both time and energy and also needed vast quantities of rare ingredients. It also needed a profound formation cultivator as a normal martial artist would not be able to create such a formation. For Ye Qingyu’s current level of cultivation, it was only something to be talked about and not

something he was able to achieve.

But the positioning of the [Sentry guard] was exceedingly simple for him. Only a slight quantity of inner yuan need to be expended to activate the [Fiendgod titled chart], and from then you could take out a [Sentry guard] from the [Titled strange objects] section where the page was flashing, and place this item anywhere you wanted.

Bam !

A huge wave rushed towards him.

Under the turbulent tides, a bulky and gigantic crab like water was hidden within. It soared to launch an attack.

Ye Qingyu leaped into the air, the inexorable spear in his hands as quick as lightning. The spear stabbed out, piercing through the giant crab's body. A strand of yuan qi rushed out, entering into Ye Qingyu's body and became part of the yuan qi spring that nourished his dantian world.

“Is it our physical bodies that have entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], or is it just only our Spirits?”

Ye Qingyu waded through the river, pondering in his mind.

This was his first time within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. It gave him a very strange sensation, especially the fact that after you were killed, you were given three opportunities to resurrect.

This made Ye Qingyu vaguely feel that it was not their true bodies that had entered into this canyon battlefield. It was only something that was akin to their Spirit or consciousness, which was inserted into a body made from runes and formations. The important point was that this constructed body was exactly the same as their original body, able to experience the same pain and injuries. Even if they had personally entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they were not able to clearly tell the difference at all.

The martial path of the Formation Emperor Luoso, was really endlessly profound and incredible.

“Xia Houwu has already died in battle once, so he should not have yet resurrected and returned to the front lines. The person most likely to be fighting right now, is Qin Wushuang’s North West path!”

Ye Qingyu travelled through the waves.

Because of the laws of [Boundary canyon battlefield], they were not able to travel through the skies. However, with the strength of Ye Qingyu’s physical body and the pureness of his inner yuan, his speed was still rapid. Like an arrow that had been released from the bow, he galloped directly towards the North West road.

.....

.....

“Imprison body talisman ? ”

Xu Ge frowned, an expression of astonishment appearing on his face.

On the North West canyon path, a ferocious battle had been temporarily halted.

Qin Wushuang's body were covered with wounds, scarlet red blood dyeing half his body. He panted loudly for air, fresh blood dripping down his arm. As it flowed, it painted the [Great Zhou sword] in his hands scarlet red. Following the ridge of the sword, it dripped down onto the point of the sword, drop by drop falling onto the ground...

And opposite him, Xu Ge had only lost a sleeve of his clothing.

Xu Ge was the widely recognised number one genius of the first years in Azure Phoenix academy. His appearance was extremely casual; white face was like jade, even breathing, confident and at ease, neat and orderly hair and eyes glistening with brightness. He evidently held a distinct advantage in this battle.

The battle that was halted, was just about to be decided.

At the crucial time, Qin Wushuang had abruptly attacked with an old and yellowish paper. Rotating and rolling, it had quickly expanded in mid air. On this paper, a scarlet red mysterious pattern was clearly drawn, emitting a pale crimson red glow. It expanded like a pair of shackles, confining Xu Ge within...

The situation suddenly reversed.

Xu Ge had continuously performed battle techniques after battle techniques, but he was not able to break through this constraint.

This made him realise that this old yellow paper, should be an extremely rare confinement formation. It was an imprisonment body talisman, able to restrict the opponent's figure so that it could not move in the slightest.

“Huhu.....give up on struggling.” Qin Wushuang panted raggedly, activating the inner yuan in his body that had been mostly expended. The Great Zhou sword gradually began to brighten, and he took step after step closer. “You’ve forced me to use the last trick up my sleeve. This should be enough to make you proud. For this round, I’ve won.”

Xu Ge really stopped his struggling, and with an indifferent smile, said: “Who would have thought, that there would be such a treasure in your hands...”

“Don’t worry, I’ll make you die crisply.” Qin Wushuang’s sword slowly stabbed out, the three feet of the sword shining a brilliant silver, inch by inch advancing towards Xu Ge.

Xu Ge’s face was still calm and peaceful, even holding a bland smile. “It’s a pity!”

The sword move of Qin Wushuang’s halted for an instant. “A pity about what?”



“It’s a pity that the imprison body talisman you’ve obtained is not complete. It’s only a defective product, and...” The smile on Xu Ge’s face, became wider and wider. “And, you have not truly assimilated and understood it, therefore...”

Before he had finished.

A curved crescent moon, one inch long, appeared suddenly on Xu Ge’s palm.

Whether it was just a mistaken sensation was unknown, but the moment this crescent moon appeared, the ambient light around dimmed.

As if it really was the appearance of the new moon.

It was as if the crescent moon within the skies, was harvested into Xu Ge’s hand. The crescent moon slowly rotated, filled with an quiet and ethereal beauty.

“Moon seal·Beheading the moon !” Xu Ge’s lips parted slightly, abruptly shouting coldly.

The crescent moon on his palm, suddenly enlarged. Striking out, by the time it had sliced upon the scarlet red imprisonment talisman, it was already a crescent blade one metre long. A bright and radiant light shone; at this instant, it was as like the beauty of the new moon after the murky grey clouds had passed.

Ding !

The scarlet red imprisonment talisman was shattered.

Xu Ge had broken through.

As if a fierce tiger was leaping out of the cage.

Qin Wushuang's facial expression changed greatly, retreating at the first instant.

But it was already too late.

The new moon held in Xu Ge's palm was already hurtling to kill.

"I'm still not his opponent even with this?" Qin Wushuang bitterly smiled, closing his eyes and waiting for his imminent death.

And at this time——

Xiu !

An explosion suddenly erupted next to his ear.

And after, there was a indescribable yuan qi that seemed to came from nowhere. From far away till it got closer, it brought with it a force that seemed like it could topple the mountains and overturn the seas, as if

ancient mountains were breaking apart and the very world had subsided under the sea.

The exclamation of Xu Ge were immediately heard after.

Qin Wushuang hesitated, and by the time he opened his eyes again, he saw an entirely different scene in front of him—

It was unknown when the black spear was erected one metre away from him. The Xu Ge who had been rushing at him, was knocked backward by a black figure in the air. As if he had lost control of his body, he was sent flying like a young child.

A black spear?

Ye Qingyu?

Almost without thinking, in a second, Qin Wushuang knew who had came.

This black spear for him, was incomparably familiar. This frightening silhouette, had time and time again appeared within his nightmares. More than three months ago, at the time when he had stepped upon the peak of the first year of White Deer academy, the owner of this spear, with an unequalled disposition, smashed apart all his glory.

Opposite.

“It’s you.....”Xu Ge was in mid air, opening his mouth to shout.

He was able to recognise that the figure that seemed like an divine soldier descending from the heavens, the black figure that had attacked him, was the white clothed youth from that time at the public library.

The true enemy, had arrived.

Xu Ge’s heart tightened.

The terrifying impact made him clearly feel that his ribs had fractured...being injured in their first skirmish, made his will to do battle exponentially rise.

“That’s right, it’s me ! ”

Ye Qingyu loudly shouted.

The other part of the spear in his hand shot out like a dragon emerging from the oceans, leaving a snowy white brilliance in the air.

Ding!Ding!Ding!Ding!

Rapid metallic strikes sounded out, sparks flying everywhere.

Xu Ge’s strength was evidently higher than Lin Nuo or Zheng Kai. Facing two of the four moves of the golden armoured king, [Banner of

Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon pierce], he still had the power to retaliate.

Bang !

The situation changed under the continuous direct impacts.

The crescent moon in Xu Ge's hand finally disintegrated, transforming into a scattering of snowy white powder, dispersing into the air.

And the inexorable spear held in Ye Qingyu's hand, mottled holes the size of soy beans covered the pale silver spear head. The spear head was close to completely useless.

The two figures landed on the ground.

"Extremely powerful continuous strikes...Haha, my judgement was correct that day. You really are a terrifying opponent." The figure of Xu Ge stood up straight on the ground, without the slightest hint of any injuries, a faint smile on his lips.

"You are also strong...you are so much stronger than when compared to people like Lin Nuo or Zheng Kai." Ye Qingyu's steps were somewhat weak, injuries evident near his abdomen. His skin and flesh were broken apart, blood dripping out. This was the injuries caused by the explosive and rupturing strikes of the [Moon seal]. He seemed to cut a more sorry figure.

"You've already fought with them?" Xu Ge was taken aback.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“Then how did they...” Xu Ge originally wanted to ask who won and who lost, but after a quick thought, he could not help but shake his head with a smile. “That’s right, with your strength, they are most likely goners. It is hard to contend against your repeated killing blows.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head again.

Bang!

A sound exploded.

The spear head of the inexorable spear suddenly shattered, turning into scraps of cold steel that careered everywhere.

The spear head had long been shattered by the power of the [Moon seal] and when the wind rustled pass, this minuscule movement had caused the spear head to shatter.

There was a shred of regret in Ye Qingyu’s eyes.

Although the inexorable spear was stupidly heavy, but it was a weapon tremendously compatible with him. It was a pity, that it had been half destroyed in this battle.

From far away.

Qin Wushuang retreated slowly backwards, step by step.

The situation in front of his eyes did not seem favourable. Even if Ye Qingyu had acted to save him, it seemed like even he could not suppress this fearsome Azure Phoenix student.

## Chapter 079 – A True Genius

---

But at this time, something unexpected happened —

Pu!Pu!Pu!Pu!

A chain of minute explosions sounded without any warning.

Clusters of blood, unexpectedly and strangely, spurted out from Xu Ge's chest.

Xu Ge lowered his head to look at the miniature holes on his chest, as if he had long known this would occur. A bitter smile appeared on his face, and his body gradually fell to the ground. With regret in his tone, he said: "If not for my previous battle with Qin Wushuang, and me using the [Moon seal·Beheading the moon] to break his imprisonment talisman, I would not have expended over half of my inner yuan. I would not have lost to you."

Ye Qingyu: "But this is a battlefield, and not a spar."

"I will come back." Xu Ge completely fell to the ground, his life completely gone. His spirit transformed into a ray of light, rushing towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix academy.

Qin Wushuang had wide open eyes, filled with undisguised shock and astonishment.



He suddenly understood, that when Ye Qingyu and Xu Ge had fought, in the strikes like that of torrential rain, Xu Ge was already heavily wounded. It was only that Xu Ge had used his inner yuan to suppress his wounds, but in the time of the simple exchange of words, the wounds could not help but finally appear. Xu Ge could suppress it no longer.....

Xu Ge had lost ?

Xu Ge had really lost ?

In the clash in mid air, what had really happened?

With his vision he really could not clearly discern in that exact moment in time, how Ye Qingyu was able to kill Xu Ge. In that cold light of the spear, in the torrential rain of murderous intent, how many spear strikes did he stab out with?

An indescribable sense of defeat, completely enveloped Qin Wushuang's heart.

He was not able to defeat the opponent even after using all the cards hidden in his sleeve. But in their first contact, Ye Qingyu was able to completely slaughter the enemy. Furthermore, even after the battle had ended, he was not able to realise in the first instant who was the victor... could the difference between him and Ye Qingyu, really be this large?

From far away.

It seemed as if Ye Qingyu had not noticed the subtle retreat of Qin

Wushuang. Without pausing to recover, he used the broken spear in his hands as a staff. In the time that he jumped and was in the air, tens of demon rune soldiers were slaughtered, and he managed to obtain strand after strand of yuan qi reward.

The inner yuan that was expended during the battle with Xu Ge, finally recovered a little.

Afterwards, the battlefield became peaceful for a short time.

The rune soldiers pushed towards the distance.

By the time Xu Ge had resurrected and returned to the battlefield, the demon rune soldiers and the protector statue would have killed all these soldiers. For Xu Ge, this could be counted as a huge loss as he would completely lose the yuan qi rewards contained within the rune soldiers.

Only then did Ye Qingyu turn and walk towards Qin Wushuang.

“That imprison body talisman, is the treasure you manage to obtain in the practical battle training several months ago?” Ye Qingyu asked.

During Ye Qingyu’s time in the Grievance hall, the little loli Song Xiaojun had once mentioned that in the time Qin Wushuang was outside training in the wilderness, he had managed to obtain a great treasure. This had caused his strength to rise momentarily, and thereafter immediately challenged Yan Xingtian. From what it seemed like, this defected imprisonment body talisman that nearly even finished Xu Ge, was the great treasure from the little loli’s words.

Qin Wushuang had a complicated expression. He nodded his head, and as if suddenly thinking of something, said with bitterness in his voice, “If I had not previously expended a large part of Xu Ge’s inner yuan, you would not have been able to defeat him so easily.”

Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulders. “What about it, do you want me to say thanks to you?”

Qin Wushuang did utter anything more.

He knew that everything he said was pointless. Decisively, he turned around and walked towards the protective statue. Within the defensive radius, he sat cross legged, activating his yuan qi to recover and treat his injuries. Closing his eyes, he did not speak again.

Ye Qingyu shook his head, turning to head towards the wilderness.

“That’s right, you relied on the power of the imprison body talisman, to defeat Yan Xingtian?” Ye Qingyu suddenly asked, just before he left.

The body of Qin Wushuang emitted a huge quiver. He suddenly stood up, his face red: “I know what you want to ask. I’ll say it again, the disappearance of Yan Xingtian had nothing to do with me...”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, saying again: “Fine... to change the topic, if I was you, I would not push the line of soldiers anymore but rather carefully keep the balance between the soldiers carefully at this position...”

Qin Wushuang was taken aback, then suddenly understood. “You will come again? You want to be the fisherman that benefits from the struggles of the clams<sup>1</sup>?”

Ye Qingyu turned his head and gave him a glance. “If you really want to win this grand competition, then I advise you to carefully consider my proposal.”

Finishing his sentence, his figure flashed.

Ye Qingyu’s figure finally disappeared within the tall desolate forest, into the wilderness.

Qin Wushuang stood where he was, his thoughts unknown. Only after a short while did he return under the protector statue. Activating his inner yuan to treat his injuries, he quickly utilised the time. But this time, he found that his heart was in turmoil, and he could not be at ease. At this time, he found it hard to concentrate and enter into a clear state of mind.

Ye Qingyu, in the time of a thunderbolt passing by, had killed Xu Ge. This type of scene had really given Qin Wushuang too great of a shock and impact.

Originally Qin Wushuang was filled with confidence. He had already made a plan, that he would challenge Ye Qingyu in front of the entire academy. Exactly like last time that Ye Qingyu had in front of all his seniors, knocked him off his pedestal, he would do the same to him. He wanted to fiercely break the glory of the demon king Ye. Qin Wushuang

had counted on the fact that Ye Qingyu would not be his opponent in the future. After all, he had been confined within the Grievance hall for three months, without the instructions of the teachers and he himself has had a fortuitous encounter...

But from what the current incident showed, the fortuitous encounter of Ye Qingyu, was even more mysterious compared to his.

“Can I really defeat this monster from the commoners?”

Qin Wushuang asked himself in his heart.

.....

.....

In the centre of the practice grounds of the first years.

In front of the ranking stone mirror.

The entire crowd on the grounds, at this time were already plunged into fanatical cheering. Various screams and cheers, was like a hurricane blowing on the surface of the sea, the madly swelling waves advancing towards all directions. The undulating heads were like black humongous waves. Apart from jumping and wild cheering, any other body movements or language could not express the excitement in their hearts.

The first year students had gone crazy.

“Do you see? Open your eyes wide and look. The peerless genius in your words, the Senior brother Xu Ge that is unbeatable, has died in battle once...” Yan Xiong face was so flushed that it was as if he was covered with chicken’s blood. Tearing apart his clothes, he roared at the almond eyes Azure Phoenix female student: “Who is it that killed him? Hahaha, it’s not an illusion! Everyone tell her, who is it?”

“Senior brother Ye Qingyu!”

“Haha, demon king Ye has killed Xu Ge!”

“Demon king Ye, only demon king Ye is able to be known as a true genius!”

“Hahaha, I knew it, I knew it. Demon king Ye would not disappoint us, he is a person that has always caused miracles. No one who has managed to offend demon king Ye is able to rest peacefully...this, is truly a peerless genius!”

“Haha, I’ve already said senior brother Ye is specially here to take care of those who don’t believe in him.”

Faces after faces of the excited expressions of the White Deer students dangled in front of the Azure Phoenix students. The foreign students at this moment, was as if they were undergoing the mourning of their mothers. The White Deer students were multiplying and returning the humiliation they had received, like a volcano that had been suppressed for countless of years, the force bursting breaking apart all their restraints.

The almond eyes female student stared fixedly at the ranking stone mirror.

She could not believe her eyes.

Senior brother Xu Ge—the existence in her heart that was unbeatable, and an existence that was forever invincible. The existence that, under the countless eyes of students from Azure Phoenix academy, had defeated who knows how many geniuses, had beaten who knows how many opponents, he really...had been killed once!

When the ranking stone mirror flashed with the final result, the almond eyed Azure Phoenix female student felt as if the apocalypse had arrived.

This was a sensation akin to someone's religion completely collapsing.

That person...senior brother Xu Ge, would really have lost?

The demon king Ye from the mouths of White Deer, the person called Ye Qingyu, what kind of monster was he? Where did he appear from, that he was able to kill senior brother Xu Ge? Why would such a monster appear in White Deer academy at such a time?

The surrounding Azure Phoenix students, their faces ashen all lowered their heads, tightly clenching their fists.

They had always been proud of their ranking within the ten academies. At this instant, this pride was broken apart. They had previously faced the thousands of students without the slightest hint of fear, because in their hearts, they had the support of honour and glory. But right now, seeing the faces filled with excitement and pride, expressions written with challenge and exhilaration, the tightly clenched fists of the Azure Phoenix students ultimately loosened.

The emotions of unwillingness and shock, transformed into a long sigh.

At this time, apart from being silent, they could only be silent.

.....

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

The teachers originally filled with seriousness, had evidently lightened up by a large margin.

The higher ups of the academy nervously stared at the formation projection, a bright light shining radiantly within their eyes. These two continuous battles that happened within the time frame of a spark, all ended in Ye Qingyu's victory as the final result. This made the teachers who had originally given up all hopes and expectations, able to see the final strand of light within this grand competition.

If Ye Qingyu was able to do the same as in these two situations, able to



provide reinforcements in time at every instant, then....perhaps the situation could really be turned around once?

Jiang Xiaohan was within the crowd, with her head lowered.

This time she did not say anything.

Because she was able to clearly sense, that the gaze of the head teacher of the first years Wang Yan was biting cold, like that of a blade. This gaze occasionally passed over her figure. This was a warning that was hidden extremely, but Jiang Xiaohan was able to perfectly understand it's meaning; if she dared to say one phrase more – even if it was only one word, Wang Yan would definitely shatter her with one strike.

In these three years that she had been in the White Deer academy, Jiang Xiaohan had always been the spoiled child of the teachers. She had never experienced such a hateful and murderous glance from any of the supervisors.

At this instant, Jiang Xiaohan asked herself in her heart: Was I really in the wrong?

After all, Ye Qingyu had once been her childhood friend and had never provoked her of his own accord.

But after a slight indecision, her heart became incomparably determined.

The things that she had abandoned, others could not possess. The

things that she was not able to possess, she could only destroy...she was forever in the right. Ye Qingyu did not follow according to her imagination and become a useless trash, a complete waste. If this was not going against her, than what was?

Therefore, he deserved to die.

-----

1. Chinese idiom: profit from the struggles of others [↩](#)

## Chapter 080 – The Enhancement Power Of Fire

---

Jiang Xiaohan believed her previous words, had already begun to cause an effect.

She took a quick glance at the people within the Ascending heaven pavilion – including those sanctimonious teachers. Every single one of them was complimenting and praising Ye Qingyu, everyone claiming that Ye Qingyu would become the unmatched genius of the White Deer academy in the future. But behind every single faces filled with genial smiles, who was filled with insincerity and how could you tell the difference?

Perhaps at this time the person that was amiably complimenting Ye Qingyu in the near future, for the top treasure tool, would secretly use all sorts of methods to target Ye Qingyu. Perhaps, even possibly personally destroying this so called future hope of the White Deer academy.

As long as Ye Qingyu's performance was even more exceptional, even more mysterious, it would only cause more and more people to be suspicious whether there really is a rare treasure on his body. She had only just added fuel to the fire, and planted a seed of doubt within everyone's hearts. Sooner or later, it would sprout and germinate.

“Therefore, my childhood friend, perform well.”

Jiang Xiaohan laughed in her heart.

At this time even she herself was beginning to suspect, that Ye Qingyu

perhaps really does possess some kind of rare treasure. Otherwise, why would his performance be so eye catching and radiant, why would his performance be so unbelievable...That's right, the counter attack of Ye Qingyu, perhaps it was done relying on a rare treasure?

It was only a pity that, the ordinary man was not wrong, but treasuring a jade ring would become a crime.

When he lost the secret on him, when he lost that rare treasure, without anything to rely on, very quickly he would fall back to the mundane world. He would return to being that pitiful trash, and at that time, would there will still be people cheering for you, would there will still be people treating you like something precious?

.....

.....

“The four moves of the golden armoured king really is powerful. Even someone with the strength of Xu Ge, finds it difficult to withstand. Especially at the moment of impact, there's a power akin to a law that at the moment the opponent is knocked in the air, they lose control of their body and cannot activate their yuan qi, losing their ability to resist...”

Ye Qingyu travelled through the river, reflecting in his heart.

Until today, within the four moves of the golden armoured king, [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon pierce], Ye Qingyu had already completely familiarised himself with these techniques. He had

already began to grasp the beginning stages of the [Protection of Heaven and Earth, and as for the fourth technique — the move with the most destructive power, [Heaven falls and Earth rends], he had finally managed to touch upon it a little. Ye Qingyu had attempted to perform it several times before, but this move was enough to completely consume his entire inner yuan in an instant, so he could not do it perfectly.

After continuously killing Xu Ge, Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai, he had only utilised the [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon path]. Only through using these two moves, he was able to gain the absolute upper hand. This made Ye Qingyu's heart full of expectation for the day when he would completely grasp these four moves of the golden armoured king and also towards the things within the Bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart].

Very evidently, as Ye Qingyu's strength was raised, and his inner yuan became more and more concentrated and more Spirit springs were excavated, every time the Bronze book [Fiendgod titled chart] would reveal new contents. As it absorbed and returned his inner yuan, then there would be more pages that are able to be read, with more things being exhibited.

The only negative aspect of this was that to perform these battle techniques, it was extremely costly in terms of inner yuan.

With the current inner yuan cultivation of Ye Qingyu, at the most he could perform the first three moves of the golden armoured king twice each, or the final move once. Then, he must find a place and spend time on recovering the inner yuan that he had expended.

But this was all within reason.

The teacher of White Deer academy, had constantly ingrained a law within the students. That is, the stronger and more powerful the battle technique, then an even higher quantity of inner yuan would be needed. There was a positive correlation towards the strength of the battle technique and the amount of inner yuan needed.

Ye Qingyu travelled like a bolt of lightning upon the turbid waves.

As he willed, different images from different locations appeared in his mind — before he had left, he had stealthily placed a [Sentry guard] on the North west canyon road and the North canyon road. This represented, that within the next twenty four hours, as long as he wished, he could clearly observe anything that occurred in these two canyon paths.

“There are currently nothing going on in the North canyon road and the North West canyon road. And on the North east canyon road, Xia Houwu has already died in battle. I believe that the Azure Phoenix students will definitely direct the demon rune soldiers along this path and fiercely assault this canyon road. I should go take of it...En, it so happens that there is something I need to do in the wilderness area next to the North East canyon road. Therefore, I shall head towards the North East canyon road.”

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu began to formulate a plan.

He travelled through water, and using the quickest of speeds and the most direct path, headed towards the battle at the North East canyon road.

Two hours later.

On the battlefield of the North East path.

The Azure Phoenix student Du Sha died in battle.

Hundreds of demon rune soldiers near their protector statue was swept away by the swing of Ye Qingyu's spear. A great quantity of yuan qi rewards gushed out from the corpses of the demon rune soldiers and entered into Ye Qingyu's body. At the moment, the danger of the North East canyon road was temporarily alleviated.

Thankfully, Ye Qingyu had arrived in time. If he came a moment later, then the protector statue of the first line of defence would have been destroyed by Du Sha.

The instant that Du Sha was killed, the silhouette of the Xia Houwu appeared behind the protector statue that was on the verge of collapse.

In reality, the resurrected Xia Houwu had already returned to the battlefield over an hour ago. It was a pity that he had already lost his courage to do battle, and only observed from far away. He did not dare at all to come within a thousand metres of the red mole teenager. After Ye Qingyu had appeared, he did not join forces and attack together.

Xia Houwu did not think that Ye Qingyu would really, in less than ten breaths of time, manage to eradicate Du Sha.

And Ye Qingyu was too lazy to pay attention to a noble student who used other methods to obtain the right to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. After sweeping away great numbers of demon rune soldiers, Ye Qingyu turned and entered into the [Quicksand river], treading through the river and departing.

Of course, before he had left, Ye Qingyu had also placed a [Sentry guard] at this battlefield.

He did not order Xia Houwu to do anything.

Because Ye Qingyu was able to tell, after the first death of Xia Houwu, he had completely and utterly lost his courage to do battle. He would not dare to enter deep within the battlefield in the slightest. With his cowardly disposition that feared death, he would not push the line of soldiers at all. He would only occasionally perform the supplement blade from far away, and would not affect Ye Qingyu's tactic at all...

.....

One hour later.

“If the booklet has not gotten it wrong, then it should be here...”

Ye Qingyu marched onwards through the waters, leaving the main river. After bypassing several valleys and ravine, he came to the mouth of a pitch black silent valley. This was a place that the sun would not shine upon at all. Miasma was left and right, a faint toxic air and the poisonous vegetation were all coloured completely black. The place was enveloped



in a deathly silence, and one was not even able to hear the chirps of birds or the rustle of insects. It was as if this place did not possess any form of life whatsoever.

The entire valley was as if it was the resting place of the Death God.

According to the information on the booklet, this place was the same as the [Demon wolf valley], it belonged one of the ten forbidden areas of the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. What dwelled within this valley, was far more terrifying than the demonic wolf pack. It was the [Flame devil beast] that possessed the power of the forbidden fire —from legend such a race had stolen from the hands of the divine race, the divine flame. It was able to burn all living things and was exceedingly frightening.

By killing the [Flame devil beast], one was able to obtain a large quantity of yuan qi as reward

But more importantly, after gathering the blood of the flame devil beasts, a martial artist would be able to obtain the temporary enhancement effect of the burning flame. Their offensive power would greatly increase, and their inner yuan would bring with it the power of fire and flames, with limitless wonderful uses. This was something that Ye Qingyu would rely upon to defeat the Azure Phoenix academy.

Ye Qingyu halted slightly within the entrance to the valley, adjusting himself to his most optimal condition, then marched into the valley upright and without fair.

Not even fifteen minutes had passed when within the valley, a angry roar that shuddered Heaven and Earth reverberated throughout. It was

as if something from a nightmare was forcibly awakened. A bloody and cruel aura spread out towards all directions. The temperature of the air abruptly heated up fervently, with a wide expanse of bright red clouds illuminating half the valley. The black rock, under such a high temperature, unexpectedly began to melt...

The roar of battle, endlessly sounded.

Only after two hours had passed, did the turbulence within the valley settle down.

Ye Qingyu was panting for breath, sweat covering his entire figure. He stood in front of a ten metre tall corpse of a monster.

This fight, had nearly expended his entire inner yuan. If not for the four moves of the golden armoured king, if not for the fact that the booklet had noted down in detail the weakness and strategy to defeat the [Flame devil beast], he would have lost. Ye Qingyu had feared that today he would not be able to kill the [Flame devil beast] but would rather leave in grief.

Very nearly, they were about to take each other down in mutual destruction.

Fortunately, at the last moment, he was able to kill this monster.

Like a ox chewing on peony flowers, he rapidly swallowed some Spirit herbs, quickly replenishing his inner yuan. Ye Qingyu observed all around him.

The rough outline of this monster was vaguely humanoid. It had three heads, with no ears or nose on the head but only a pair of eyes and a mouth. The body was entangled in poisonous vines, and the skin was like rock. In the location of its heart, there was a bloody hole the size of a bowl. The scarlet red blood was like lava, jetting out from this wound, and Ye Qingyu was completely drenched in this blood...

His body was bathed in the fiery blood of the monster.

In an instant, the tattered clothes of Ye Qingyu transformed into ashes. Even his eyebrows, stubble and hair, vanished in a puff of smoke. The dark red blood was like a liquid blaze, with a frightening and destructive temperature. But the strange thing was, this did not manage to scald the corporeal body of Ye Qingyu at all.

A scorching power, like being enveloped in burning lava, spread throughout his body. At this time, Ye Qingyu could not pay attention to anything else. Quickly following the instructions listed with the booklet, he brought out an already prepared formation jade bottle and used it to contain the blood of the Flame devil beast. Doing his utmost not to waste anything, he began gathering the vast majority of the blood that contained the essences of the flame devil beast.

At this time, the burning hot power on his body gradually began to subside.

Ye Qingyu discovered that the scorching devil blood, after bathing his body, transformed into runes after runes, as if drawn and carved with a natural blade and branded on his skin. At first glance, it seemed like

scarlet red tattoos, still and immobile at times but sometimes emitting faint movements. When it moved, there was an aura too profound for words!

“This is the enhancement power of the flaming devil blood!

Ye Qingyu was secretly awestruck within his heart. His fist struck out, and in the air a blaze began abruptly. The scorching hot power spread out in all directions and the power of this attack was comparable to powerful fire battle techniques.

## Chapter 081 – The Last Risk

---

“It seems like the things recorded down on that booklet was not wrong in the slightest.”

Ye Qingyu's heart became increasingly curious towards the contents of the booklet that the old guy had left behind. Within there were many information that even the elders specialising in studying the [Boundary canyon battlefield] did not know. But right now, this information was proven to be real and correct. The value of the booklet, absolutely exceeded his initial estimates.

After collecting all the blood of the flame devil beast, Ye Qingyu sat cross legged on a giant black boulder, recovering. Activating his yuan qi, he used it to restore his body's injuries.

The scarlet red brands imprinted upon his skin, were like mysterious natural runes, each around the size of a tadpole. As the inner yuan flowed through it, it constantly flickered as if they were alive. Ye Qingyu could distinctly sense, that as the tadpole sized runes flashed on his skin, a scorching and burning power.

As Ye Qingyu activated the nameless breathing technique, these scarlet red runes the size of a tadpole, gradually faded and eventually completely disappeared from his skin. But the strange flame like power, at the time when Ye Qingyu struck out with his fist, still remained.

One hour later.

Ye Qingyu stood up.

The eyebrows that had been burned off by the blood of the flame devil beast had already grown back. And as for his scorched off hair, it had already grown back to a length of around the width of two fingers. After entering the Spirit spring stage, one would enter the realm of a Xiantian life form. In such a stage where inner yuan could be activated to treat his injuries, the recovery of one's body was much more speedier than normal. After around ten days of time, the length of his hair should grow back to its original length.

“I wonder how the situation in the three canyon road is going?”

Ye Qingyu willed his mind and through the [Sentry guard], observed the state on the three battlefields.

After a short period of time he jumped out, soaring away like lightning. Exiting from the pitch black valley, he galloped towards the Northern battlefield.

Within the pitch black valley, the gigantic corpse of the [Flame devil beast] had gradually disappeared and transformed into a huge boulder. According to the formation laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], not long afterwards, a new [Flame devil beast] would be born and become the new ruler of this place. But this already had nothing to do with Ye Qingyu and the others anymore.

.....

.....

White Deer academy.

In the centre of the first year practice grounds, underneath the ranking stone mirror.

The cheers continued on, wave after wave.

As opposed to the lifeless atmosphere enveloped with despair, the grounds had now transformed into a joyous ocean of people. White Deer academy had lost the previous three rounds consecutively, with signs that it would be completely crushed. In the fourth round everyone had just hoped for a little pleasant surprise. But no one would have thought that as time gradually passed, the development of the situation, gradually made the students realise, that they had the possibility of victory!

On the ranking stone mirror, another new change appeared.

Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai once again died in battle.

And the person who did not even appear once so far, the Azure Phoenix student Ding Liyou had also died once.

Next to Ye Qingyu's name, his kill count had already become seven.

This represented that within this [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye

Qingyu had already become an existence like that of the Death God, ruling over all and becoming an invincible presence on this battlefield. Not only did he kill each of the five representatives of the Azure Phoenix students once each, he also managed to kill Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai twice over.

Seven consecutive kills!

This was something that even the Great demon king Blue Sky did not manage to achieve previously.

Although they were not able to spectate what exactly occurred within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], but only through a slight imagination, they could discern what had occurred. They were able to picture the image of demon king Ye, his figure like that of lightning and hurricane. Every ten steps he killed a person, not leaving any traces of his presence in a thousand miles,<sup>1</sup> this kind of heroic and valiant posture. Every White Deer student feel excitement, a hard to control excitement. It was as if the person obtaining such a earth shattering victory was they themselves.

“Quickly look, there’s another new change on the ranking stone mirror...”

“Really? Ahahaha, naturally, demon king Ye does not disappoint us. He has killed another person...Du Sha has died once again. Hahaha, delightful, this is really delightful!”

“Isn’t it eight consecutive kills?”



“I don’t care anymore. From now on, if anyone is to speak bad of the demon king Ye in front of me, then I will definitely fight him over it.” A noble student was so animated that he had forgotten himself, rolling up his sleeves and loudly shouting.

Every White Deer student stared fixedly at the ranking stone mirror, not letting any change that occurred pass through their notice.

“Eh? Xia Houwu has died in battle yet again...”

“This...his three chances of resurrection, will all be used up now?”

“Haha, I’ve long said, that Xia Houwu’s strength is not up to standards for this competition. At the start, he was not able to enter the list of ten. This time, I don’t know how or why he was able to obtain a place to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. This is really too embarrassing and shameful – if it was me, then I would forego my place and give it to someone that actually possesses true strength.”

“After entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], there is not only fights, but also various types of fortuitous encounters. You can harvest spirit herbs and precious medicines, and you are also able to obtain the yuan qi reward left behind by the Formation Emperor Luoso. This can be counted as something extremely beneficial for the participant so the Xia Hou family paid a huge price and managed to allow Xia Houwu to enter...”

From within the excited crowd, different analysis and explanation were made for every change of the stone mirror.

Some people became heroes.

Some people became cowards.

In this stark contrast and comparison, the success of the victors and the defeat of the losers were even more evident.

“Quickly look, another change has occurred on the stone mirror...Haha, that Ding Liyou has been killed yet again...This time, eh, the little loli Song Xiaojun managed to obtain a kill, what happened? Could the strength of this Ding Liyou really be this weak?”

“Song Xiaojun was able to obtain a kill. She is the third person from the White Deer academy able to kill the Azure Phoenix students.”

“Hahaha, this is too great. I feel like in this very round we will be able to prevail and win.”

“You little brat shut your mouth, we have to preserve our character and must not become someone who has made an inauspicious remark...”

The students of the White Deer academy were both excited but conflicted at the same time. If this round had progressed exactly the same as the previous rounds, and from the start they had been completely suppressed, then the crowd would not have any expectations whatsoever. But when suddenly faced with hope, everyone began to worry that some unexpected incident would occur that would take this hope away from them.

.....

Boundary canyon battlefield.

The battlefield at the North path.

“Thank you brother Qingyu...” The little loli Song Xiaojun jumped up and down excitedly.

With Ye Qingyu’s aid, she had managed to obtain a kill and receive the reward of the battlefield.

The formation corpse of Ding Liyou was felled several metres away.

With the cooperation of Song Xiaojun and Ye Qingyu, she surprisingly managed to kill Ding Liyou.

This Azure Phoenix student walked a similar martial path to hidden assassination, so he previously had hidden himself and did not come out. Previously this person had not appeared in either of the three battlefields, but rather hid and prepared himself to assassinate someone. The assassination technique of this person was absolutely penetrative, erasing all traces of his presence. The moment he appeared from beside you, represented the arrival of your death.

It was a pity that through the Sentry guard, Ye Qingyu was able to discover traces of his movement.

The prepared person met the unprepared person, so therefore Ding Liyou was killed once again.

The previous time that he was killed, was when he had wanted to eliminate Ye Qingyu from the shadows — in reality, he really did manage to heavily injure Ye Qingyu in their first moment of contact. This was the first time that Ye Qingyu had managed to obtain such a heavy wound since entering the Boundary canyon battlefield. But when comparing direct battle power, Ding Liyou could not even match Qin Wushuang and the others. In the end, he was defeated by the moves of the golden armoured king.

And at this time, everyone had fought for a total of two days and one night within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

The five representatives of the Azure Phoenix academy, Lin Nuo, Zheng Kai, Du Sha, Ding Liyou each of them had died twice already, leaving them on their last chance. And the person with the greatest strength, Xu Ge, still had two opportunities remaining. But Ye Qingyu did not give them a chance to directly fight with him. Using the [Sentry guards], he continuously discovered their location and movements, ambushing and killing them. The situation had already turned extremely unfavourable for the Azure Phoenix academy.

On the battlefield of the Northern path.

“Continue following my previous instructions. Control the lines of soldiers and maintain such a position.”

Ye Qingyu left behind this phrase and once again entered into the

desolate wilderness.

Because of the appearance of the [Sentry guard], the development of this competition proceeded along extremely smoothly. If things continued on at such a rate, at the most in a day's time, Ye Qingyu would be able to kill each of the geniuses of the Azure Phoenix academy three times each. After these haughty geniuses were forcibly ejected from the battlefield, there was no longer a need to destroy the headquarters of the demon rune soldiers for White Deer academy to obtain the final victory.

But Ye Qingyu did not wish for the battle to end so quickly.

Because he still needed to acquire two more important opportunities within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

Ye Qingyu was absolutely clear in his heart, the opportunity to enter into such a realm like the [Boundary canyon battlefield], would not occur again for a very long time —After all, to open this time's [Boundary canyon battlefield], it needed the combined cooperation of the two of the great academies. Just through White Deer academy alone, there was no way they would be able to activate the battlefield again.

Therefore, he must utilise this opportunity, and firmly grasp every opportunity that was described within the little booklet into his hands.

After leaving the Northern battlefield, he activated his inner yuan and headed towards the West.

Two hours later.

He came to the third valley that was one of the ten forbidden areas of this battlefield.

[Yuan Qi Giant valley].

According to the information recorded within the booklet, the [Yuan Qi giant] was an existence that was comparable to the [Flame Devil beast]. It possessed an extremely dominating strength, with an outer appearance the same as a rock giant. It was also a humanoid monster. This yuan qi giant had inhabited within this valley for generations, absorbing the yuan of heaven and earth at every moment in time. Its blood had already been completely refined to the purest yuan qi energy within this battlefield.

The blood of the [Yuan qi giant], had an amazing property. As long as you swallowed a small mouthful, then it could completely recover your yuan qi if you were at the beginning stages of the Spirit spring stage. It was a rare divine ingredient, comparable to the [Flame devil beast blood]. For Ye Qingyu, this was extremely important because this represented the fact he could constantly perform the four moves of the golden armoured king without rest, and not worry about his yuan qi being completely expended.

He rested a bit at the entrance of the valley, regulating himself to his most optimal condition. Ye Qingyu took a large step in to the valley.

Two hours later.

A Ye Qingyu with tattered clothing walked out of the valley.

“It seems like I have to buy more pairs of clothes in the future. Otherwise, after the fight has ended, I’ll be completely naked....” Ye Qingyu carefully stored away the [Blood of the yuan qi giant] away carefully.

The two bottles of [Blood of the flame devil beast] and the [Blood of the yuan qi giant] could be taken away and brought out of the battlefield. This was an extremely important spoil of the battlefield.

The Ye Qingyu at this time, seemed to cut a sorry figure. But the fluctuation of yuan qi in his body was vigorous and forceful, his eyes bursting with vitality. His strength had constantly increased, his inner yuan like that of a large river surging within his body. In the dantian world, the third [yuan qi kindling] had already been planted, and when the opportunity was right, the third Spirit spring would be excavated.

Such a rate of progress for his strength, made demon king Ye extremely satisfied.

His original plan was to rely upon the rewards of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and take a step forward to enter the third Spirit spring stage. From the current situation, this plan had already half succeeded.

“Now the only thing left is the last opportunity, but it is also the one with the most danger and risk. But danger and return goes hand in hand; if this gamble pays off successfully, then after leaving from this [Boundary canyon battlefield], I fear that no one will be my opponent within the entire second year of the White Deer academy and I can jump straight into the third year!”

Ye Qingyu was pleased in his heart.

.....

.....

The headquarters of the demon rune soldiers.

Lin Nuo, Zheng Kai, Du Sha and Ding Liyou stood upon the resurrection altar. They all looked at each other, not knowing what to say.

“I would never have thought that we would encounter such a monster.” Lin Nuo lowered his head and sighed, already feeling powerless in his heart.

He and Zheng Kai had been continuously killed directly by the attack of Ye Qingyu. If the first time could be partially counted as an ambush, then the second time was truly a complete domination. Even the two of them added together was not Ye Qingyu’s match, causing the self confidence of these two to completely crumble. No matter whether it was Lin Nuo or Zheng Kai, they firmly believed that if they met Ye Qingyu again, they would still not be his opponent.

“When did White Deer academy manage to recruit such an expert?”

Ding Liyou also had a countenance filled with worry.



He had continuously attempted to assassinate Ye Qingyu, but every time he had returned with defeat. Especially the second time, he was completely toyed with, and in the end killed by the little girl. This was complete humiliation, but there was nothing he could do. For an assassin, the most important weapon was their confidence. But whenever Ding Liyou thought back to the image of that figure, he could not help but feel a sense of defeat; he would never be able to kill that person.

“What should we do after?” The red mole between the brows of Du Sha moved slightly. “We haven’t been able to contact Xu Ge in the slightest. But with his biased views towards us, he is definitely not willing to act in concert with us. Out of the four of us, none of us are able to defeat him, and two on one holds a high chance of failure too. Only if we manage to surround him with three or more people, do we have a chance...”

“But that person appears like a deity and fades like a ghost, as if he had long calculated our location! Every time he is able to accurately grasp the location of our appearance. To want to ambush him, this task is too difficult!” Lin Nuo bitterly smiled.

Du Sha hesitated, then realised it was indeed so.

The group could not help but return to a loss state yet again.

The four of them could be considered famous people within the Azure Phoenix. But in this tiny White Deer academy, they had really encountered such a difficult issue. If such a situation was passed back to the Azure Phoenix academy, then they would be laughed at by countless people, and this incident would be nailed upon the humiliation pole.

“We can only give it a try. I feel that this person is extremely considerate of the two female white Deer students in the North path. Why don't the four of us, focus all our offensive energy in this canyon path and bait that person out to decide victory there and then.” Du Sha abruptly stood up, his face filled with a murderous intent.

After a slight hesitation, the three people all nodded their heads in agreement.

They had a desperate and ridiculous sensation that they were people attempting everything in a crisis, like a patient turning to any doctor at all when critically ill. They pretended the dead horse was alive and treated it as such<sup>2</sup>.

-----

1. **It's from a Chinese poem.** 李白的《侠客行》 [↵](#)
2. **Chinese idiom, doing everything in a desperate situation.** [↵](#)

## Chapter 082 – The Blood Pool Of The Dragon’s Den

---

### 【Abyss whirlpool】

It was the most dangerous area in such a level of [Boundary canyon battlefield] and was also the most terrifying place in the entire battlefield. This was the place with the highest risk.

Ye Qingyu followed the flow of the Quicksand river in order to reach this place.

This wide and expansive river, roiled turbulently and swept up countless sand. It was an extremely magnificent sight.

And as the river finally came to its end, there were dozens of gigantic whirlpools rapidly rotating. From far away, the large yellow river was like the enormous and hideous mouth of a yellow dragon. The head of this dragon was buried under the roiling vortexes, entering into the mysterious ground below. The floating water vapour above these whirlpools were like clouds, enigmatic and frightening.

“According to the information within the booklet, at the end of the [Quicksand river] there lives a dragon.”

Ye Qingyu once again brought up the information within the booklet, reminding himself constantly of this fact. Finally, he did not hesitate anymore. Jumping and diving downwards, he went into the terrifying vortex. A giant tearing force was instantly upon his body, as if he was being torn apart by numerous ancient beasts, enough to rip anyone to

shreds in a split second.

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan to its fullest. Only then, was he able to barely withstand such a pressure.

In the time of a breath, he had gone down several hundred metres.

When ten breaths had passed—

“It should be around this time.”

Ye Qingyu loudly cried, the Inexorable spear in his hands shooting out.

The power of the [Banner of Heaven and Earth] broke apart the layer of water in the Northern direction. And nearly at the same time, the other half of the Inexorable spear also pierced out, the cold light of the spear tearing through the water and causing a vacuum to be formed within the endless waters. The [Fierce dragon pierce], part of the four moves of the golden armoured king, had been completed.

The power of these consecutive techniques blossomed.

Ye Qingyu's body flew out, breaking apart the water layer of the vortex.

In an instant, he travelled over a thousand metres.

Then, he came out from the endless waters.

Ye Qingyu discovered that he was standing in front of a giant cave on a cliff.

Turning his head backwards to look, he could see that a hundred metres away, accompanied with the sound of the roaring waters, was a silver-yellow waterfall a thousand metres wide falling from the sky into the endless void below. The scene shook him to his core. The waterfall was as if it came from thin air, and disappeared into the endless space like a river flowing through the vast and boundless void of space.

The location that Ye Qingyu was currently in was at the entrance of a cave on a cliff, a hundred metres away from this awe inspiring waterfall.

The whistling astral wind, came from deep within the cave.

Within the astral wave, there was a faint smell of blood. If one was not careful and deeply breathed in such an air, it was enough to make one dizzy as if they had ingested poison or as if they were completely submerged in sticky blood.

“It seems like this is the dragon’s den.”

Ye Qingyu understood this in a split second.

That’s right, he had come here to slay a dragon.

A dragon, was a terrifying existence.

According to the information Ye Qingyu was able to gather in the various public libraries, in the wild and desolate wastelands that had been reclaimed in the Heaven Wasteland domain, the ancient life form known as the 'dragon' had not yet been discovered. And at the same time, within the other domains, it was rumoured that the dragon race had nearly gone extinct, with thousands of years gone past without a single sighting.

The existence of a dragon was a pronoun for power and terror. The Dragon race formed the three great golden races along with the Divine race and the Devil race. Slaying a dragon was only a beautiful legend. It was impossible for it to happen.

But within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], everything was created by the laws of the runes and formation. It was said that the Formation Emperor Luoso had once done battle with these divine dragons, and was able to understand their power and bloodline. Using the power of runes and formations, to be able to create a rune dragon, was not something impossible for him. According to the information contained within the booklet, at the very end of the [Quicksand river] beneath the swirling whirlpools, was a dragon's den.

And within the dragon's den, there was the existence of a rune dragon.

Although it was not a true dragon, but if he was really able to kill such an existence, not only would he receive an astronomical quantity of yuan qi as reward but there would also be inconceivable benefits and advantages.

The mysterious writer of the booklet, pointed out that very few people knew of this secret. This was due to the fact that the location of the dragon's den was extremely hidden. Furthermore many people had the notion that jumping into the [Abyss whirlpool] would cause a true death to occur. So many years had passed, yet very little people would enter deeply within to investigate the secrets of the dragon's den. The writer of the booklet had advised Ye Qingyu to venture into the dragon's den, perhaps he would be able to harvest an unexpected prize.

At least from the present, the things recorded down within the booklet was correct so far.

Ye Qingyu had truly found the entrance to the dragon's den.

“Perhaps what is waiting for me, is a horrendous and difficult battle. Therefore...”

After considering for a moment, Ye Qingyu retrieved a drop of the [Blood of the yuan qi giant], and stored it within his mouth making preparations so that at any time so he would be able to restore his inner yuan. Then he activated his inner yuan to its fullest, a dazzling brightness shining in his eyes. His gaze pierced through the darkness, able to clearly discern anything within ten metres of him. Both hands grasping the Inexorable spear, he entered step by step into the dragon's den.

Inside the cavern, the path was extremely craggy and rugged.

On the way, shattered rocks was everywhere below his feet.

Ye Qingyu squatted down to carefully investigate.

“This is.....it seems like it is the vestiges left behind by the friction of the abdomen of some kind of organism as it walked.”

He discovered, that the exterior of these rocks was extremely smooth, as if it had been polished by something like the surface of a mirror. There was even a small quantity of powder upon it that glowed faintly in the dark. And between these pieces of shattered rocks, were the white bones of the dead dispersed between. Faintly discernible, there were also white phosphorous will-o-wisp in the air, like stars in the pitch black night, fluctuating up and down along with the drift of the air.

As he went even deeper, the bloody smell and poisonous air was even more concentrated.

In the cavern, the scattered white bones had become more and more. They were all the disseminated remains of unknown creatures.

There were some skeletons that had been preserved completely, and one was able to tell the terror and struggle in them before they had died. But in the end they were not able to evade the scythe of the dead death god. Some skeletons had already died for who knows how many years, and was as translucent and smooth as jade, but when Ye Qingyu only lightly touched it, it immediately crumbled into dust. With a bang, it smashed into pieces and scattered everywhere, greenish black smoke dispersing in the air.....

As he went even deeper, the scattered skeletons became piles of mountains.



On the ground, there was already not a path. Everywhere step that Ye Qingyu took, was done by stepping on the piles of bone.

Ka-Cha. Ka-Cha.

The sounds of the white bones snapping, in this deathly silent cavern seemed incomparably abrupt and horrifying.

“Some of these skeletons, when they were alive must have been extremely powerful. Although their flesh body has decayed, but after so many years the skeletons of these corpses are still as tough and rigid as steel...En, the majority of these bones seems to be from the demon race and is not humanoid.” Ye Qingyu carefully maintained his caution, and investigated slowly at the same time. “If my guess is not wrong, then these lifeforms should be captured here and eaten as food by the dragon within this cavern.”

As if ascending a snow mountain, he stepped on the snowy white skeletons. Constantly climbing, he was surrounded by the flicker of the will-o-wisps.

The space within the cavern, turned more and more expansive.

Suddenly, Ye Qingyu's figure quivered, as if realising something.

“That's not right. Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], every living organism is constructed using runes and formation. After dying for a while, the corpses will transform back into the laws that govern this

realm and disappear from this world. But then why would there be so many skeletons, so many living things here? Could it be that these are not existences that belong to the [Boundary canyon battlefield], so therefore it will remain here even after it has died?”

Realising this, Ye Qingyu's figure shivered with cold.

Could it be really as the rumour said? Dying here, did it represent a true death?

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised that the secrets within this [Boundary canyon battlefield] were not something that even the White Deer teachers specialising in studying this realm knew fully. It even far exceeded the information he had read from the booklet. Everything was not as simple as what it seemed on the surface.

But since things had developed to such a stage, he had no path of retreat.

According to the information in the booklet, only after slaying the dragon could you truly leave.

Ye Qingyu walked step by step forward.

He climbed to the top of the mountain of bones.

The sight in front of him suddenly cleared, and a corridor of white bones appeared in front of him.

The passage was constructed from an unknown gigantic skeleton, every bone being tens of metres wide, like pillars of stone. The path below him, was also constructed from bones throughout the entire skeleton. Perhaps it was just a mistaken sensation, but beneath the bones, Ye Qingyu could seem to hear blood surging, like that of a gigantic red ocean.

This passageway of bones extended over a thousand metres.

The space of the dragon's den had finally reached its end.

A colossal pool of blood, appeared in Ye Qingyu's eyes.

The steaming blood like boiling water, gurgled and bubbled.

Scarlet red mist enveloped this entire space, the scene bizarre and terrifying. The floor and walls of this room were also constructed from bones and these bones were as translucent and as smooth as jade. The entire pool of blood was around six metres by ten metres, with an unknown depth. The red blood completely crammed the pit of white bones, and there was constantly blood red mists steaming up...

Ye Qingyu examined his surroundings.

“Eh? Why is it like this? Where is the dragon?”

The last space of this cavern was extremely expansive, but apart from a single boiling blood red pool, there was no hint of an existence of a

dragon —there was not even a single dragon scale to be seen. This large space was made from the white bones, and everywhere will-o-wisps-were floating, brightening the entire space. Everything could be clearly observed.

Not to mention the dragon, there was not even a hint of any dragon's egg or a dragon scale.

Could it be that he had come to the wrong location?

Or the dragon had gone out hunting?

Ye Qingyu carefully approached the blood pool.

A scorching hot heat, emitted from within the blood pool.

After observing again, and confirming there were no signs of any danger, Ye Qingyu gradually reached the edges of the pool of blood. Then, using the already crippled Inexorable spear, he slowly stabbed it deep under the pool of blood. After swirling it around, no signs of any abnormality appeared.

When he retrieved the body of the spear, the blood stain on the spear was translucent. Drop by drop, it fell to the ground of white bones below.

“What kind of blood is this? Why it is boiling and steaming?”

He slowly crouched down, wanting to examine this drop of blood in

detail.

But at this time, something he did not expected, happened. The scarlet red drop of blood lying on the blood, as if it was alive, gradually moved along the ground like a freely moving blood snake. Without any obstacles or blockages, it once again returned to the pool of blood.

“Could it be that the blood is alive?”

Ye Qingyu was astounded.

And when he turned his head towards the inexorable spear, his shock was even greater.

Because the spear that had been deeply plunged to investigate the pool of blood, had undergone a change — Who knows when, from an inky black the spear had transformed scarlet red, without any shred of any impurities in the colour. Like a divine blood jade, it issued a faint radiance, tinted with a dream like colour.

The pool of blood had changed the inexorable spear?

Just what kind of existence was the blood pool?

And in the time Ye Qingyu was pondering, a faint fragrance wafted without any signs from the pool of blood. This slightly sweet fragrance, was as if it was made from the combination of various Spirit herbs. With Ye Qingyu's strength and caution, without any signs or warning, this scent entered straight into his nostrils. Only then, did he realise what

had happened.

“Not good.....”

A spell of dizziness and faintness came over Ye Qingyu. Silent cursing in his heart, his head fell below his feet. With a splash, him along with the two parts of the inexorable spear, entered at the same time into this mysterious and steaming pool of blood, causing a metre tall splash of blood.

## Chapter 083 – A Dog?

---

The feeling he felt at this moment, was as if his entire body was thrown in scorching hot molten lava.

Such a degree of heat burned every inch of his body. As if there were countless tiny fire insects that were piercing through his body, drilling with their utmost to enter into his muscles. First it was the layer of skin, then it was his muscles and finally it was his bones. Within his meridians, it was as if ten thousand steel needles the thickness of a bull's hair were travelling through. A type of pain, a thousand times, ten thousand times more painful than execution by tiny cuts, came like a flood, completely enveloping Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu had a mistaken feeling —

At this instant, it was as if he was about to be dissolved in this pool of blood, becoming part of this body of water.

The previous fragrance that had entered into his body, had a terrifying and mysterious power. It completely froze Ye Qingyu's body so he that he lost his ability to resist. Even moving a finger was something extremely difficult for him. At this moment, demon king Ye was like being confined by a body imprisonment talisman. An unending and terrifying pain travelling throughout his body, but he still managed to retain consciousness.

“Pain...this is too painful, aaaaaa....”

He opened his mouth to loudly scream.

But the moment he opened his mouth, endless blood water crazily entered into his body. Following his throat and esophagus, it madly entered inside his body. It was as if he had swallowed a boiling mouthful of lava and his internal organs was currently being burned by a blazing and destructive fire.

At this instant, Ye Qingyu was sure, that death had already fallen upon him.

This pool of blood had a demonic property. It wanted to destroy everything.

In the face of this treacherous pool of blood, Ye Qingyu's tough and sturdy body along with his inner yuan at the second Spirit spring stage, could not even withstand a single strike. As if a strand of grass had been thrown into molten lava, it would be destroyed and turned into smoke in a mere moment.

But, when Ye Qingyu felt his life was about to end, an abnormality happened.

As if an existence that was in deep slumber had been disturbed, it sleepily issued a furious roar. And afterwards, a mysterious power suddenly activated from the depths of Ye Qingyu's mind. This power was like the arrival of the monarch, unmatched and unstoppable. Like a spring, it spread throughout his entire body, instantly dispelling the horrible burning power of the pool...



Every pain that he felt in this instant, completely disappeared.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then was madly delighted.

He was saved?

But after this joy had passed, he very quickly discovered there was still no way that he could move his body.

His body seemed to have turned into a piece of rock. Slowly sinking down into the depths of the blood pool, his back touched the hard surface of bone pit feeling the rough sensation of contact. But what was strange was that although he was completely submerged in the blood pool his breathing was completely normal, as if the blood pool contained a sufficient concentration of air. During the time that he was breathing , there was a indescribable feeling of comfort and relaxation.

“This shocking power...it came too suddenly, just where did it came from?”

Even though his body could not move, Ye Qingyu's mind was thinking rapidly.

He was extremely clear that if not for this sudden change, and the appearance of this shocking energy, he would have been completely dissolved by the pool of blood. This kind of energy, just where did it originate from?

Could it be...it came from the bronze book?

That was a possibility.

But Ye Qingyu could faintly sense, that this kind of energy had already appeared several times before he had even obtained the bronze book, so it was not too likely.

After thinking for a long while, he still could not reach any conclusions.

His body was still and as stiff as a piece of ice or rock, not being able to move in the slightest. It was as if he had really transformed into stone.

“Just what is happening to me, I came to slay the dragon but I did not even manage to find a whisker of the dragon. Now I have turned into a drowned corpse...” Ye Qingyu could neither laugh or cry. This could not carry on. The situation outside was urgent and desperately needed him. Song Xiaojun and the others were in the midst of battle.

And at the time Ye Qingyu was racking his brains for a solution, another change occurred.

The clear and refreshing energy in his body, as if it had been completely expended, suddenly shrunk. It disappeared.

The burning and scorching power of the blood pool, slowly repossessed Ye Qingyu's body.

The blazing pain like that of being bitten alive by ten thousand insects,

returned and attacked with a vengeance in a split second.

“Shit, what is happening? Am I about to die again?”

Ye Qingyu was extremely shocked.

The acute pain only lasted for approximately for ten breaths of time, but it seemed to extend like an endless era. Just when Ye Qingyu felt that he would absolutely dissolve into the pool, the refreshing power that had disappeared, unbelievably appeared again. It spread throughout his body, immediately halting the burning pain and returning to the previous feeling of incomparable comfort.

Then, the refreshing power gradually disappeared.

The blood water once again entered into his body again, madly burning.

Ten breaths later, the refreshing appeared again...

And disappeared...

And appeared...

Disappearing again...

It continued in such a cycle.

Without end or rest.

The refreshing power was like the prank of a naughty child, or if it was intentionally doing battle with the power of this blood pool. Sometimes appearing, sometimes disappearing, it was as if it followed some unwritten laws, like the ebbing and receding of the tides, surging and fading. These two different kinds of energy, alternately occupied Ye Qingyu's body, making Ye Qingyu feel as if he was being rotated between Heaven and Hell.

Ye Qingyu could only passively accept this. There was nothing he could.

Time passed by second after second, in such a situation.

Ye Qingyu gradually entered into a strange state, where light and cold alternated, his consciousness forgetting everything. Time and space had lost its meaning. He forgot everything, forgetting his surrounding, forgetting himself. His entire person was in a state of blurred primal chaos.

This seemed like it lasted for a very long time, but also seemed as if it only happened for a short blink of time.

An unknown time later, Ye Qingyu suddenly quivered abruptly, awakening.

He subconsciously opened his eyes, both his hands touching the floor and sitting up.

“This...I can move?”

After a stunned moment, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised. He looked under him, and was dazed yet again.

Just what had happened?

Was I not...being submerged in the pool of blood? Then where did the ...pool of blood go?

Had everything finally ended?

Ye Qingyu dumbly stared at the surrounding bone walls that was as smooth as jade, and below his bottom was also the smooth bones that was as polished as a mirror. The breath he breathed in was bitingly cold, and his position was within a sunken pit of bone – if he did not guess wrong, then it was the place where the pool of blood contained.

But at this time, the blood water was completely gone.

The scorching and blazing power had disappeared without a trace, not even leaving behind a drop of blood.

It was as if the previous encounter, was only a bizarre dream.

After a short while, with a thoughtful expression, Ye Qingyu slowly stood up.

Within his body, was a surging enormous strength.

He attempted to move his body, and could hear a series a pops like beans exploding, that came unceasingly from within his body. His bones vibrated, muscles unfolding the joints and his bone in his body constantly rubbing against each other. It was as if he was a machine that had stopped functioning for hundreds of years, being activated for the first time. He was currently being broken in.

It was an experience that he had never felt before.

Ye Qingyu could faintly sense, that within his body, there was something extra.

But if he carefully examined, he conversely could not sense anything.

He lightly jumped.

Out of the bone pit.

“I really am still within the dragon’s den. It’s just that the previous pool of blood, has completely dried up, without even a single drop remaining.” A baffled look was on Ye Qingyu’s face. Such a large pool of blood, even though using an inter dimensional bottle would not be able to completely contain such a body of liquid. Just where did it go?

The events that had just occurred, was incomparably peculiar.

He carefully examined the space around the dragon's den, but there was not any other discovery.

There was no signs of the existence of the dragon like it was an abandoned tomb

If he had not seen with his own eyes that pool of blood, he would have only thought this place was a strange location layered with bones.

Ye Qingyu did his utmost to remember what had happened, but within his memories there was a completely blank segment. This was namely when he was in his mindless state. He absolutely could not remember anything that had occurred during this time. He did not know where the blood water went, and at this time he could not be sure how long he had tarried here.....

“Fine, lets just first leave here.”

Ye Qingyu had the intention to depart.

After all, the battle occurring in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] had not yet ended and the so called dragon's den, did not contain any treasures, divine medicines, divine herbs or rare materials. It was completely desolate of rewards. Continuing to stay here did not have any meaning whatsoever. Perhaps the dragon had gone out to play, who knows when this fellow would return.....

In short, Ye Qingyu felt his choice to come here to slay the dragon, was

a wrong decision.

And at the time when Ye Qingyu was turning to leave, suddenly —

“Huchi Huchi<sup>1</sup>.....”

A short but peculiar breathing came from behind him.

Ye Qingyu's body froze, then slowly and incredibly turned his head around.

A snowy white cute little creature, was squatting next to his leg. It was only about the size of a palm, doing its utmost to lift its head. Its large glistening eyes was staring at him in happiness, his long pink tongue stretching out, his tail swaying delightedly. Seeing that Ye Qingyu had turned around, this little fellow excitedly shook his head, and strived to place his little head upon Ye Qingyu's leg intimately...

Ye Qingyu was so scared that he jumped ten metres away in an instant.

This was...a ....a puppy?

A puppy?

Ye Qingyu could not believe his eyes.

This was something that was absolutely impossible.



He had just previously examined and observed in detail every inch of this space. There was absolutely nothing here. Then why did, in the blink of an eye, a little puppy appear?

Just where had it come from?

Ye Qingyu was stupefied.

After observing carefully, it really was just a snowy white puppy.

This little fellow did not have any impurities of any other colour in its fur, as if it was just a snowball. His glistening large eyes were clear, as if it was a pair of jewels that were shining with radiance. The little infantile teeth of the puppy were snowy white, and when he opened his mouth, you were able to see his pink little tongue.....From head to toe, it emitted an aura of adorableness.

There was nothing strange about a little puppy.

But to suddenly appear in such a place, it was really too peculiar.

Far more than peculiar, it was bizarre.

“Huchi Huchi.....” Seeing Ye Qingyu jumping away, the little fellow panicked. It crawled and rolled towards Ye Qingyu, his actions extremely intimate. Like a little child, it came stumbling towards him, its tongue stretching out with a flattering grin, giving Ye Qingyu a completely

harmless look.

Ye Qingyu did not dare to be too careless.

“What has really happened? I’ve evidently searched through this space entirely, without discovering anything...”Ye Qingyu was baffled. And at this time, a bolt of lightning flashed through his mind. He suddenly realised, that when he had searched through this space, he did not search the sunken in bone pit that used to hold the blood water.

Could it be...

That this little fellow, really came from the pool of blood?

-----

1. Sound of panting ↵

## Chapter 084 – Four Versus Four

---

Could it be that this little puppy had really jumped out from the bone pit that he had passed over in his inspection?

Ye Qingyu could only form such a conclusion.

He avoided the little white fellow with an unknown background and undetermined danger. Jumping once again into the bone pit, he carefully investigated.

But there was nothing to be discovered.

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu?” The little fellow crawled towards the edges of the bone pit, curiosity in his eyes. He shook its head and his chubby little tail constantly wagged, repeatedly expressing goodwill towards Ye Qingyu. The enthusiasm and intimacy reflected in his clear eyes was enough to make the heart of anyone melt.

Ye Qingyu tentatively extended his hand.

The little fellow spun around in a circle a few times, then unhesitatingly rushed at Ye Qingyu, as if he was a little snowball that was being rolled down a slope.

As he slid downwards into the bone pit, the little fellow jumped and landed onto Ye Qingyu's palm.

“Huchi Huchi, Wu Wu Wu!” The little fellow’s chubby little head constantly rubbed against Ye Qingyu’s palm. His mouth constantly emitted panting sounds, nodding his head and wagging his tail, a perfect picture of a someone out to please.

“Interesting.” Ye Qingyu examined the little dog meticulously.

“Eh? It seems like it really is a little puppy...But, it seems to have suffered an injury...It doesn’t have any forelimbs? No, it’s only because the forelimbs are too small...this...could it be because he is malnourished and grew up unhealthily?” After examining it for a while, he was shocked to discover some peculiar aspects.

This little fellow that looked like a snow ball had some strange attributes.

His head was larger than a normal dog by a fair margin, possessing over a third of his entire body. From the outer appearance, he was foolish looking but adorable at the same time. His forelimbs seemed to have been injured before, with the limbs being small and short. Evidently, it had grown in a wrong way. But it was hidden under the white fur, and could not be discovered unless one looked carefully. It’s hind limbs was evidently much stronger, supporting its entire weight.

From his entire body, the torso occupied another third of the total body. And the third of the body left, was taken up by a beautiful large tail that was constantly wagging behind his chubby little bottom.

Apart from these little peculiarities, this little fellow seemed exactly the same as the other dogs.

At this time, Ye Qingyu could not be sure whether this creature really was a dog.

Could it be some kind of rare life form?

Perhaps a divine beast or a spirit beast?

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then laughed at himself. He shook his head.

How could it be possible that a divine beast looked like this? That was simply too unlikely.

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu.” The little fellow continued to intimately rub himself on Ye Qingyu’s arm.

Ye Qingyu did not know why but seeing this little fellow doing its utmost to please him, a feeling of intimacy could not help but be born within Ye Qingyu. It was obviously their first meeting, but he had the sensation that he had already raised it for an extremely long time, as if it was part of his family.

He still had questions in his heart, but after hesitating back and forth, Ye Qingyu ultimately decided to bring the little fellow along with him.

From the little fellow’s body, he could not sense the slightest hint of energy fluctuation. He should not pose a threat at all.

Appearing so mysteriously here, perhaps the little dog had some relation to the pool of blood. If he kept the puppy beside him, perhaps he could discover something in the future.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu had a vague premonition, that everything that happened within the dragon's den today was definitely not as simple as it seemed. Perhaps it would have an extremely significant impact on him in the future, but at the current point in time, he did not discover what this effect would be. And it seemed like this little snowball would be one of the important clues to finding out.

“Huchi Hucchi!”

Like he had sensed Ye Qingyu's acceptance, the little fellow began to pant excitedly.

After receiving Ye Qingyu's approval, excited noises emitted from his mouth. He followed along Ye Qingyu's arm, and clumsily climbed onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder. His little pink tongue constantly licked Ye Qingyu's ear and his furry little head incessantly rubbed against Ye Qingyu's face.

“Haha, this little fellow...” Ye Qingyu began laughing.

This little fellow unexpectedly understood human nature surprisingly well, or as if their hearts were connected, he instantly understood Ye Qingyu's feelings.

“Since its like this, than I'll temporarily carry you along. Hehe, lets first

think of a name for you.” Ye Qingyu jumped out of the bone pit, and headed towards the outside. After a short consideration, he said laughingly: “Since your head is so large, than I shall call you Big Head from now on. Haha, this is concise and comprehensive. Strange creature, how about it?”

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu!” The little fellow did not know how to speak, but still remained hopping up and down in enthusiasm.

“Haha, that means you agree to your name, Big Head.”

Huchi Huchi, Wu Wu!”

“Fine, Big Head it is.”

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu!”

“Good Big Head!”

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu!”

A man and a dog, conversing in such a manner followed along the white bone path leading towards the exit of the dragon’s den. Their voices in such a pitch black and large environment resounded clearly and amusingly. Ye Qingyu’s mood instantly took a turn for the better, unwittingly letting out sounds of laughter.

But very quickly demon king Ye became worried.

According to the information written in the booklet, only after slaying the dragon would the passageway to exit this place appear. By following along this passage way, you were able to exit the dragon's den. But from the very start he had not discovered a dragon but only fostered a big headed dog by mistake. Then how would he be able to escape from the surging vortex of water? He definitely could not exit by following the method he had used to enter. With Ye Qingyu's current level of strength, wanting to go against the flow of the waterfall along with the suppressive laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was something impossible for him to achieve.

A short while later.

Ye Qingyu discovered that his worries was completely unfounded.

Because at an unknown time, the waterfall that seemed to appear from nowhere and seemed to originate from the imposing and magnificent stars, had disappeared. He walked to the exit of the dragon's den and emerged from the inky darkness. The surging water vapour had gone, and the roaring thunder of the waterfall had also disappeared. He could only see the wall of the cliff extending upwards, and faintly he could see a bright glow thousands of metres above him.

“What has happened?”

Ye Qingyu felt he had encountered all the bizarre things in his life today all at once.

But since the waterfall formed from the [Quicksand river] had



disappeared, and he could see a light above him, did it mean that as long as he climbed and followed this wall upwards he would have a chance of leaving?

Considering this, Ye Qingyu decided to give climbing upwards a try.

“Big Head, pay attention. You must grip onto me tightly.” Ye Qingyu patted the big headed dog.

“Huchi?” The little fellow hesitated, question marks filling his eyes.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu had already chosen the direction and activated his inner yuan. Like a large bird, his figure soared upwards, jumping up tens of metres in a split second. His hand grabbed a jutting out rock, and using this to leverage his power, he continued soaring and climbing along the stone wall of the cliff.

“Wu Wu Wu...Huchi Huchi!”

Big Head was slightly dazed, not understanding in the beginning. But as Ye Qingyu soared upwards for the third time, he instantly understood. Looking at the pitch black darkness of the endless abyss below, he was so scared that every hair on his body stood up. His mouth bit tightly onto Ye Qingyu's ear and the chubby little tail stood straight up. His little hind legs was constantly kicking, his whole body shivering.

“Hahaha...” Ye Qingyu was in mid air, but he could not help but laugh loudly.

This big headed dog, was really too funny and amusing.

.....

.....

[Boundary canyon battlefield].

Northern canyon road.

Within the battlefield, the shouts of fighting reverberated throughout the skies.

Qin Wushuang had a serious expression as he regarded the four opponents that was approaching. He could not help but secretly cry with bitterness in his heart.

Fear had already coloured Xia Houwu's face.

Both of them two had never thought that before they could enact on their plan, they would encounter such a large problem. Both of them left the North East and the North West road to regroup with Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo. They originally wanted to consolidate their strength and completely reinforce one of the battlefields to push through. This way, with Ye Qingyu's coordination, they would really be able to defeat the Azure Phoenix academy once and for all.

From their originally hopeless situation to the current events, even an

idiot could sense that their opportunity had arrived.

If they were able to win just once, then the five people who won this round, would immediately become the heroes of the White Deer academy. All sorts of resources and techniques, would become slanted towards them. Even if Xia Houwu and Qin Wushuang did not care about the resources of the academy, but the fame from defeating the Azure Phoenix academies held great attraction for them.

So therefore in such a situation, not long ago, Qin Wushuang had cast aside his status and discussed matters with the Song Sisters. The four people were now gathered together in the Northern battlefield.

From the point of view of Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun, this was a decent enough proposal.

After all, four people gathered together definitely resulted in them being slightly safer. And if they were all in one spot, Ye Qingyu did not need to rush left and right at all times. He only needed to hide in the background and correctly respond. This was a comparatively perfect plan.

It was only that Ye Qingyu appeared like a deity and faded like a ghost. There was no way to discuss such a strategy with him.

But from Qin Wushuang's perspective, Ye Qingyu had taken the most care in protecting the northern canyon road of the Song sisters. This was one of the reason he had chosen the Northern path as the focal to gather together. This was definitely the road that was going to receive the largest amount of Ye Qingyu's assistance.

In truth, the impact was extremely large on Qin Wushuang after seeing Ye Qingyu's kill Xu Ge.

He was utterly bitter, not admitting to the fact that he was in any way worse than Ye Qingyu.

But after experiencing so many things Qin Wushuang must acknowledge that a commoner scum like Ye Qingyu was definitely luckier than him. At least the key to this round's victory, was tied around Ye Qingyu. Especially after seeing the chance to truly win once and for all. After long consideration, Qin Wushuang suddenly felt that it was not such a big deal to lower his head once. Even if he was accused of relying on Ye Qingyu to triumph by the lowly commoners — as long as they won, Qin Wushuang had the confidence he could claim more of the credit for this victory.

But they would never have thought that not long after the four had gathered together, the Azure Phoenix students would appear.

And that four of them would appear at the same time.

Their original plan was that it would be four versus one or versus two. Immediately became four versus four.

The situation had suddenly worsened.

Why was it like this?

After a slight daze, Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu was shocked.

If it could be said that Qin Wushuang still had a will to battle and was still calculating how it was possible to win this grand competition, then the Xia Houwu who had already died two times, had long become a bird frightened at the mere twang of a bow<sup>1</sup>. He only wished to fish in troubled water<sup>2</sup>, and wanted to survive onwards through such a method. He absolutely did not want to risk his life. Therefore, when he abruptly saw the appearance of the four students, his first thought was to quickly flee.

Opposite them.

Lin Nuo, Zheng Kai, Du Sha and Ding Liyou were also shocked.

What was happening?

They had gathered together in the Northern path for one reason: to ambush and kill Ye Qingyu, risking their lives for the last time. They would never have thought, that the White Deer academy had also gathered in such a location...Was this the scheme of the White Deer students? If it was really so, did this not represent that the demon king like figure, was also lurking nearby?

Fight?

Or flee?

At this instant, both sides was in a state of hesistation.

-----

1. someone who frights easily due to past experiences ↵
2. take advantage of a crisis for personal gain ↵

## Chapter 085 – Blood Red Gaze

---

And at this time, Xia Houwu gave a signal to Qin Wushuang next to him. As if suddenly mustering his determination, he loudly roared: “Why are you still hesitating, charge them....”

Saying this, the long blade in his hand struck out. He was the one who rushed to make the first move.

Xiu !

A cold blade, sliced through the air towards Lin Nuo.

Strong winds violently formed.

Such an action instantly broke the peculiar stand off within the battlefield.

The figure of Lin Nuo flashed like a streak of lightning, instantly evading the strike of the blade. A bright fierce light suddenly gleamed from within his eyes, coldly laughing and gritting his teeth: “Haha, you really think our Azure Phoenix academy is easily pushed around? What are you still waiting for, act!”

The battle exploded in an instant.

Zheng Kai, Ding Liyou and Du Sha all of them with gloomy

expressions, at this instant struck out.

They really had been imprinted with fear after being killed by Ye Qingyu so many times over.

But this did not mean that when facing Qin Wushuang and the others they would retreat.

Because the Azure Phoenix students believed that the elders of their own academy was able to see everything that was occurring through the formation projection at this moment. They could not retreat. Since events had developed to such a stage, taking even one step backwards signified humiliation and cowardice.

“Act together and defeat the enemy.”

Qin Wushuang loudly roared, and the Great Zhou sword in his hands began vibrating. A pale silver formation light emitted from within the sword, as if a silver dragon was entwined around the sword. Yuan qi trembled violently in the radius of the sword. He was currently the strongest person out of the four students of White Deer academy. Through this display, it seemed he really had momentum and the aura of an expert.

“Haha...” Zheng Kai laughed and the enormous staff in his hand swept out, directly receiving Qin Wushuang’s attack.

The two of them instantly fought against each other.



Sand and dust spread throughout the air.

Xia Houwu had exchanged a single strike with Lin Nuo and was instantly placed in a disadvantage.

He was sent flying, landing near the location of the Song sisters.

Lin Nuo came to finish the kill with a cold smile.

“Save me...” Xia Houwu screamed, begging for aid from the Song sisters.

The field of battle instantly extended to the location of the Song sisters.

Song Qingluo also knew that this battle was unavoidable. Patting Song Xiaojun’s shoulder and warning her to take care, her dainty hand grasped thin air causing the Spirit weapon [Qingluo] to instantly appear in her hand. The emerald green sprout, in an instant transformed into a python like vine. Like green lightning, it shot out and began its attack.

The green vines turned from one into two, two into three, three into ten within the air. Like an anaconda, it madly strangled towards the enemy.

The little loli Song Xiaojun also fully activated her inner yuan, a fire shield appearing all around her. In the quickest time possible, she came to assist Song Qingluo. Two fireballs shot through the air, bringing with it a blazing power that sealed off Lin Nuo’s path of evasion.

Lin Nuo's speed increased, mirage after mirage appearing in the air. He changed his target, forgoing finishing off Xia Houwu and struck towards the Song sisters.

Xia Houwu fell to the ground, staggering. He did not immediately return to the fighting, but gradually retreated to the edges of the battle. His eyes flicked throughout the battle, closely observing the movements of the two left over members of the Azure Phoenix academy....

Ding Liyou and Du Sha, both of them did not immediately join this battle.

After being ambushed by Ye Qingyu so many times, a shadow had been cast in their hearts. They regarded their surroundings cautiously, deathly afraid that demon king Ye would appear like the previous times. That he would descend from the heavens like a divine soldier, and suddenly slaughter all of them. Such a scene was completely like an nightmare for them. In the eyes of Ding Liyou, Du Sha and the other Azure Phoenix students, the greatest worry was Ye Qingyu. The other white Deer students, they completely did not care about at all.

As long as they confirmed that Ye Qingyu was not near, they were confident that they could completely slaughter the four White Deer students in an instant...

"As long as I flee to under the protector statue, then I will be completely safe. However, if those two does not act, then I won't be able to escape at all..." Xia Houwu's eyes flickered. Seeing that Ding Liyou and Du Sha had no intentions of joining the fray, he became slightly panicked——Especially the Du Sha who had already killed Xia Houwu twice over created an enormous psychological pressure in Xia Houwu's heart. He

was absolutely clear, that within this five hundred metre radius, there was no way he could escape from Du Sha's attack.

Unless Du Sha was occupied by someone else.

Slowly, a scheme began to form in Xia Houwu's heart.

Deciding, and giving Qin Wushuang a signal, he grabbed his long blade in his hand. Pretending that he was about to rush in and help, he slowly approached the battle between the Song sisters and Lin Nuo. His long blade sliced apart the air, pretending to strike....

“Careful ! ”

Panting heavily, Xia Houwu neared Song Qingluo and neared her.

Song Qingluo was about to say something, when the expression on Xia Houwu's face completely transformed. A sinister smile appeared in his face, and he fiercely struck out with his palm, slapping it against Song Qingluo's back. She could not react in time, and was sent flying by this strike, her figure heading straight for the Du Sha and Ding Liyou standing far away.....

“What are you doing?” Song Xiaojun was dumbfounded.

In a split second, this innocent little loli could not comprehend what was going on.

“I’m not so stupid as to accompany you guys to die. I have already died twice, I know how the pain of death feels like...” Xia Houwu laughed maliciously, and his palm struck out again, inner yuan spitting out. Without the slightest trace of mercy, he sent the dainty little body of the little loli in mid air. Accompanied by the explosion of yuan qi, the figure of Song Xiaojun was sent flying towards the direction of Lin Nuo.

Such an unexpected change was like an arm suddenly transforming into something else.

Everyone on the battlefield was flabbergasted.

Both Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo had never expected such a betrayal to occur.

Neither did Lin Nuo, Du Sha and Ding Liyou expect this.

Facing the Song Qingluo that was sent sailing in their direction, Du Sha and Ding Liyou acted instinctively. Under the flickering cold light of their blades, razor sharp yuan qi sliced apart the air. The Song Qingluo that was in mid air could not evade in the slightest. Even if her [Qingluo] was activated to its fullest, at the very most she could do was directly face this attack. In an instant, their blades were dyed red. Her delicate body was directly struck. Not even a single cry of anguish could be emitted before she transformed into a bloody mist that ruptured throughout the air

Song Qingluo was also injured at the same time.

She was also sent flying, and landed upon Lin Nuo's fist blade. Her abdomen was stabbed through.

Blood jetted out.

At the same time, Xia Houwu performed the act that he had been planning.

Like a stray dog, he ran for his life towards the protector statue of their side. Even if Lin Nuo and the others were in a high state of caution, they had not planned for such a shocking turn of events. Before they could recover their composure, Xia Houwu had already taken advantage of this lull. He was like a out of control feral dog, running for his life to enter into the defensive radius of the protector statue. He was temporarily in a safe location...

The second person to react, was Qin Wushuang.

At the same time Xia Houwu acted, Qin Wushuang as if they had made a tacit agreement long ago, also roared loudly. Exploding with the strongest possible power he could muster, the Great Zhou sword struck fiercely on the enormous staff. Using the rebounding force of this strike, Qin Wushuang floated backwards hundreds of metres in the direction of of the protector statue. Like two thrown balls, both of them entered into the defensive radius of the protector statue.

The two noble students, in an instant had escaped from their dire straits.

At this moment, the battlefield was deathly silent.

After a short time of shock, Lin Nuo and the others looked at each other. On their face were expression of incredulity.

This...what had just happened?

As a great academy that ranked in the upper ranks of the ten great academies, the students from Azure Phoenix had participated in great competitions like the [Boundary canyon battlefield before]. Therefore previously, they had met many different kinds of opponents and encountered different kinds of strategies. But they had never ever witnessed such a evident and open betrayal of their comrades.

The students of Azure Phoenix was well aware that everything that happened here would be seen by the higher ups of the academy.

The White Deer student far off in the distance performed such a betrayal without the slightest trace of fear. After he jumped under the protective statue, he suddenly smiled joyously, as if he had really won. Could this fellow really be a mentally disabled retard?

He really dared to perform such a betrayal that was equal to murder?

Did he really not fear, that after the end of the great competition, he would receive the punishment of the White Deer academy?

Or did this mean that the White Deer academy would not punish such an action?

Lin Nuo retrieved his fist blade, retreating with a peculiar expression on his face. He knew the power of his own fist blade clearly; after being injured to such an extent, this little girl would be unable to turn around a desperate situation. She could not live for much longer.

Pu !

A stream of blood from the injury suffered in Song Xiaojun's abdomen spurted out like a fountain.

The little loli's figure, trembled slightly.

As if she was using all her energy to remain upright, she did not fall over. With great difficulty, her petite body remained standing and shaking, as if she was a willow branch in the face of a tempest. Bright red blood dyed the earth around her. In her pure and beautiful eyes, her expression displayed bewilderment and anger. She looked at the Xia Houwu who had jumped away towards the protector statue. She asked: "You...why?"

Xia Houwu only smiled maliciously.

"You...brother Qingyu, will not let you get away."

As she said this name, the eyes of the little loli brightened with an inexplicable glimmer.

But Xia Houwu only casually smiled: “Before the end of this grand competition, he won’t know anything that happened here. And after the grand competition is over, everything is too late...Hehe, furthermore, you died at the hands of the enemies, and it wasn’t I that killed you...you are only an illegitimate child and Song Qingluo is only a daughter of the president of a commerce company. It doesn’t matter if you die or not, and besides, this isn’t a real death anyway.”

“You...bad person...scoundrel....” A pale blood colour, slowly appeared and spread throughout the little loli’s originally clear eyes. Her petite little body began quivering, as if this was the reaction from her heavy injury and losing too much blood or as if within a body, a strange transformation was currently undergoing. She cursed with the what the little loli thought was the most grave and severe profanity: “You’re despicable!”

“Despicable?” Xia Houwu coldly smiled. “Fine, insult me all you want. You’re about to die, I won’t hold grudges with a dead person.”

“I....” The figure of the little loli, began trembling even more violently.

Rage.

Hatred.

Rage and hatred that she had never experienced before, completely submerged the little loli’s heart.

She was possessed by a desire she could barely control. She wanted in



this instant to rush over and make this despicable scoundrel pay, tearing him into pieces. Bit by bit, she wanted to ground him into waste. In her heart there was something occurring. As if there was a scorching flame that was blazing, as if there was something that was about to explode in her chest.

Then, the change came.

Her eyes, was completely covered with a scarlet red.

It was a concentrated blood red.

A colour that represented destruction and death.

Her eyes did not have either whites or pupils. From her eyes, two rays of red light shone as if the Death God had come to reap apart all life. Such a terrifying aura emitted from her red eyes. As if there was a monster that was being slowly awakened from within the body of the little loli. Even through such a slight release of this destructive power, it could not help but make one shiver in fear.

## Chapter 086 – I Have Something More Important To Do

---

“What kind of power is this ? ”

“This is impossible ? That girl.....”

Lin Nuo and the others felt a trepidation, like they were in the midst of a disaster.

In this instant, the red light that was radiating with a thick stench of death and destruction made the four Azure Phoenix students felt the terror of being utterly annihilated. This was a too terrifying, too powerful strength. It fundamentally did not belong on the body of a human. Even if this power had not truly broken out, but even under the pressure of of this tiny glimpse was enough to make Lin Nuo and the others feel like they were wheat in the face of a hurricane, able to be destroyed at any second.

In the battlefield of the Northern canyon road, it was as if a God or a Devil had descended.

This terrifying aura extended outwards in all directions. The clouds in the sky were moving, the sunlight dimming at this moment. Even the demon rune soldiers and the rune soldiers without intelligence could also feel unease, stopping their endless battle.

Qin Wushuang was dumbfounded.

The smile on Xia Houwu's face froze.

Song Xiaojun really did exhibit an exceptional talent within the first year students and her improvement was extremely rapid. Otherwise, she would not have been able to enter into the list of ten nor receive the opportunity to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. But even if the little loli was stronger still, she absolutely should not be this powerful.....

Xia Houwu could faintly feel the turn of events was not favourable for him.

As if he had done something wrong, as if he had enraged an existence that should not be incited.

At this time--

“You deserve to die!”

The little loli seemed as if she had turned into a monster. Her voice was an icy metallic friction. It did not contain any hint of human emotion, as if it originated from the depths of hell and was not like that clear and crisp voice she normally possessed. Like the sinister smile of the Death God, there was an indescribable terror.

Along with this voice, a scarlet red light came from within the little loli's body.

“This is bad!”

Xia Houwu was in a complete panic, doing his utmost to avoid this ray of light.

Boom !

The scarlet red ray of light rubbed past Xia Houwu's body, hitting the protector statue of the White Deer academy. A huge explosion. The structure collapsed with rocks falling and dust rising to the air. The protector statue had been destroyed!

At the same time.

The little loli was devoured by this scarlet red light, finally dissolving into dust and smoke.

Such an explosive power was not something she could control. Adding to the heavy injuries she had sustained, the little loli had no way of controlling this power. Her body transformed into dust and smoke with her spirit flying to the skies and soaring towards the resurrection altar.

The dust covered ashen face of Xia Houwu, crawled out from the rubble.

There were many injuries on his body, and his face was deathly pale in fright. But ultimately he was able to avoid the killing stroke of the red light, and avoid a catastrophe.

Qin Wushuang's body was also covered in dust, the skin near his eyebrows sliced apart by the rubble. His scarlet red blood slowly dripped down, his expression bewildered. He could faintly sense that on the body of Song Xiaojun, a transformation had occurred that was definitely not simple. What followed after would be a surging wave --an immense wave that was sufficient to plunge the entire Deer mountain range into a perilous situation.

Opposite them.

“Destroying the protector statue with one strike?”

“Only a power of the Bitter Sea stage or above is able to do this...”

“What kind of secret is hidden within this little girl's body?”

Lin Nuo, Du Sha, Zheng Kai and Ding Liyou all looked at each other. They were all stunned by the abnormal change that they witnessed on Song Xiaojun's body.

And at this time, a voice spoke into their ears all at once: “What are you hesitating for, the protector statue has already collapsed. Quickly act and kill the two remaining students of the White Deer academy and crush them in one go...this is our last chance.”

Lin Nuo quivered, able to recognise the owner of this voice.

Xiu!

He became a shadow, the first person to strike out.

Du Sha and Ding Liyou quickly followed.

Indeed, such a turn of events was surprising but this was absolutely the opportune moment for the Azure Phoenix academy. As long as they were able to kill Xia Houwu and Qin Wushuang and charged forward in one go, before the four could resurrect, they could absolutely rush to the headquarters of the White Deer academy. At that time, even if Ye Qingyu appeared, with his power alone, he would not be able to defeat the five people of Azure Phoenix academy...victory was firmly in their grasp!

Opposite.

Under the collapsed protector statue.

Through just one glance, Qin Wushuang was able to understand the intentions of the Azure Phoenix students. His expression paled greatly.

But before he could react at all, a sudden bolt of black lightning, without any noise or signs struck down from the heavens. Like a falling black star, he could only discern a black light flashing through the air before a black coloured spear appeared on the ground.

Xiu!

The sharp piercing explosive like sound was finally heard.

The heart of Lin Nuo leading the charge, suddenly madly shuddered.

He had come.

That demon king....the strongest person of the White Deer academy, had arrived.

They had already experienced such a technique several times before.

As expected in the next second, as if a mountain from far away had collapsed, or as if a hurricane blew past, or as if a surging river had flooded, a black figure approached from far away. Wrapped in light and electricity, in the time of a spark with speed like that of light, before Lin Nuo's brain could perform any sort of reaction, he had already neared.

The same technique.

Lin Nuo had already imagined such a technique being performed in his mind countless times. Lin Nuo thought he already deeply understood the essence and secrets behind such a technique. He had been confident that the next time he met Ye Qingyu, he would definitely be able to avoid such a deadly strike. But when the moment finally arrived, this confidence was destroyed in their first contact.

Without a question, Lin Nuo was sent flying again.

Such a terrifying impact, made him feel as if every bone his body had broken. He felt a sweetness in the back of his throat, and he opened his mouth, blood spurting. His vision grew dark and he lost his consciousness, only able to sense that his body was currently flying backwards....

What was also sent flying, was the Ding Liyou and Du Sha following behind him.

The two before they reached the ground, also madly vomited blood then landed on the surface. Not able to move in the slightest, they had temporarily lost their ability to do battle.

“Heavens.....this.....how could it be?” Zheng Kai stood stunned a hundred metres away, terror freezing his footsteps. “It shouldn’t be like this...even Ding Liyou and Du Sha has been hurt...this is outside the previous effective range of that technique, could it be that the strength of this demon king has risen yet again?”

Zheng Kai and his comrades had once theorised about the effective range of Ye Qingyu’s battle technique. After fighting with Ye Qingyu several times previously, they had concluded that the impact of his attack should only be within a metre around the target. But this time, the Ding Liyou and Du Sha that was over a metre away from Lin Nuo had also been sent flying?

He had gotten stronger.

Zheng Kai did not have the courage to continue the attack.



He staggered backwards.

Ye Qingyu also did not keep on pressing forward.

He turned around, walking step by step towards the collapsed protector statue.

“Tell me, what has happened?” The voice of Ye Qingyu was like the metallic clash of swords. There was a killing aura emitting from him that pierced chillingly into the depths of their bones.

Xia Houwu could sense something was wrong. He looked at the Qin Wushuang beside him, and a sly light flashed by in his eyes. Slowly retreating, he pretended to be surprised and stammered authentically: “It’s too great that you’ve come...we’ve been ambushed...Xiaojun and Qingluo has both died, we were not their opponents...”

“A trash such as you, deserves to die. You deserve to die ten thousand times over.”

Ye Qingyu pressed ever closer in large and furious strides.

His gaze was like a blade, a murderous intent completely covering his body. A rich bloody odour enveloped his body.

“You...just what do you want to do?” Xia Houwu said in panic, his face flushed. “It has nothing to do with me...it’s the people of Azure Phoenix... we weren’t their match, we couldn’t save Song Qingluo or Song Xiaojun... don’t blame me, just what do you want. If you want to blame someone,

blame yourself for not appearing...”

“Shut your mouth!” Ye Qingyu loudly roared, his voice like the fierce clap of thunder.

“A scum like yourself, just exactly what you have done, you should be very clear. Do you think that I don’t know? Fearing for your own death, attacking your own comrades...being despicable to such an extent, you are not fit to be a human...Even if I am breaking the rules of this battlefield, I will definitely kill you.” Ye Qingyu dragged his spear along the ground as he walked towards Xia Houwu, the heavy body of the spear causing sparks to be created from this friction.

His eyebrows was raised and an unsuppressed fire burned within his eyes.

“You....” Xia Houwu was in a state of extreme shock.

How could Ye Qingyu know what had occurred?

“We should prioritise on the overall situation first. Such a thing...” Qin Wushuang frowned, opening his mouth to say something.

“You are also not a good person.... just go die together.” Ye Qingyu coldly gave him a glance, his voice like it came from the depths of hell. The spear that was originally erected on the ground, shot out by itself with a whistle, transforming into a ray of black light and striking towards Qin Wushuang.

“You.....”Qin Wushuang was both shocked and angry. The [Great Zhou sword] in his hand activated, blocking the sudden attack of the spear.

Boom!

The weapons clashed.

The [Great Zhou sword] flew out from his hands, disappearing in a point of light high up in the air.

The skin between Qin Wushuang’s thumb and forefinger had broken apart. He was absolutely not able to block this spear strike, his long sword being sent flying. The inexorable spear stabbed through his body, bringing with it an enormous force. Nearly in an instant, it destroyed his body. His entire figure turning into bones and a bloody mist that dispersed throughout the air. There was nothing he could say before he died.

A spirit transformed into light, flying towards the headquarters.

Ye Qingyu’s gaze was like a blade, regarding at Xia Houwu.

Pu-Tong.

Xia Houwu’s knees instantly softened, kneeling on the floor.

Without knowing why, when he saw Ye Qingyu’s gaze, the triumph in his heart disappeared like smoke in thin air. He was fundamentally not

able to speak, the subterfuge and artifice that he had prepared beforehand fading. Even his words of begging was stuck in his throat. He did not even have the courage to speak anymore.

What kind of person Ye Qingyu was, Xia Houwu knew perfectly well.

Demon king Ye was in the midst of rage. There was completely no degree of sentiment or face that he would give to him.

“Dying like this is really too convenient for you!” Ye Qingyu’s wrists moved, the cold light of the spear blossomed. Blood jetted from Xia Houwu’s body, his heart instantly being shattered into pieces. Before his spirit had left his body, he could indistinctly hear Ye Qingyu’s voice, as if he was passing judgement on him: “Such an action will absolutely not end with just this. When we return to the real world, I will make you pay the true price for what you have done.”

Boom!

His inner yuan exploded.

Xia Houwu’s body cracked and fractured turning into a blood vapour.

Not even fifteen minutes had passed, and the White Deer academy that originally held the absolute advantage, out of five people, four of them had already returned towards the resurrection altar. There was only Ye Qingyu left.

And at the same time, on the side of the Azure Phoenix academy , there

were still four people present.

Apart from Lin Nuo who had experienced the full power of Ye Qingyu's [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon pierce] directly and died straight away, the rest could still battle. Both Ding Liyou and Du Sha had received significant injuries in this skirmish but they could already stand up. They possessed the ability to fight.

But facing the Ye Qingyu who was like a god of slaughter, Zheng Kai and the others died not dare rush forwards.

Ye Qingyu's thick black hair was flying, the long spear behind his body, the point of the spear pointing towards the heavens.

A black robe and a black spear.

The black hair was like a blazing black flame.

"Xu Ge, come out. I know you're there." Ye Qingyu took a deep breath, looking towards a forest far off. "I know you're there. Right now, everyone of you come at once and end this competition as quickly as possible. As of this instant, I have something more important to do."

## Chapter 087 – The Final Move

---

Before he had finished his sentence.

A silhouette came from deep within the forest far away. Every step he took he travelled over ten metres. In the blink of an eye, he had arrived at the battlefield. His white robe like jade, a handsome appearance with a confident and at ease manner. This figure was namely the person known as the number one peerless genius of the Azure Phoenix academy, Xu Ge.

He was the person that had secretly spoken to Lin Nuo and the others, urging them to act.

“Who would have thought I would be discovered by you.” Xu Ge had a serious expression as he spoke. “Your strength compared to what you were like at the start of the grand competition has grown by so much. If my guess is not wrong, you have always been rushing through the desolate wilderness. Could it be that within the wild there is some sort of secret hidden inside?”

Ye Qingyu’s left palm slowly stretched out, his palm becoming a fierce claw shape. The crippled long spear stabbed into the ground far off in the distance was grabbed through the air, sailing towards Ye Qingyu.

With both spears in his hands, his aura explosively increased.

“My mood is not good right now. I don’t want to speak useless words. Quickly attack.” Both spears in Ye Qingyu’s hands formed a cross behind him. Step by step, he pressed closer. “If you won’t attack, then I will.”

The spear in his hand shot out.

[Banner of Heaven and Earth] of the golden armoured king.

Xiu!

Nearly at the same instant it left Ye Qingyu's hand, the spear was nailed beside Ding Liyou.

The large impact, caused the originally heavily injured Azure Phoenix student to be killed in an instant.

This was an extremely peculiar scene. His circumstances was the same as Lin Nuo. Ding Liyou had already fought against Ye Qingyu previously so he was familiar with his battle techniques. He should have long prepared himself to defend against Ye Qingyu's technique, [Banner of Heaven and Earth]. But the moment the long spear like a war banner descended, he had evidently reacted and evaded but could still not escape death.

“Kill! [Fierce dragon pierce]!”

The spear in Ye Qingyu's hand stabbed out.

This time, Xu Ge was able to clearly see the entire process of Ye Qingyu performing the technique.

As the long spear stabbed towards the spear nailed towards the ground, a energy like that of a law attracted Ye Qingyu's figure towards it. As if he was a dragon soaring out, he brought with him a force like that of a mountain or tsunami, like light or electricity, holding an irresistible aura that rammed towards you.

The speed was fast.

Fast to the extreme.

The moment the spear in Ye Qingyu hands stabbed out, the lightning like impact had already arrived.

Xu Ge's mind quickly reacted, using nearly the absolutely fastest reaction and strongest energy to resist and evade. But even he was affected by this lightning like power, his body could not help but be thrown in the air by this strike. At the moment he was knocked in mid air, Xu Ge was able to feel a peculiar sensation — his inner yuan had consolidated, and he had no way to activate it making him unable to effectively resist.

In the corner of Xu Ge's eyes, he was able to see Zheng Kai and Du Sha, also been struck in the same moment.

"I understand....."Within Xu Ge's mind, a bolt of lightning struck. "So the secret behind Ye Qingyu's battle technique, is that one doesn't have to be touched by his body to be sent flying. It hits only if you are within a certain area...this is approximately 20 feet around?"



His mind quickly calculated the range and power of his opponents technique.

And at the same instant.

The Du Sha who had been heavily injured previously spurted a jet of blood from his mouth, his body completely breaking apart. Under the impact of this lightning strike, he had fallen in an instant. His spirit transformed into a ray of light and headed in towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix academy.

The Zheng Kai famed for his physical prowess only received light injuries and was knocked tens of metres back.

This was because Ye Qingyu's principal target was not him.

Striking out with the force of thunder, he had slaughtered Du Sha and Ding Liyou in a split second. Ye Qingyu's aim had already been half achieved: to reduce the number of his opponents as best as he could to prevent them from recovering and surrounding. Only through doing this, could the scales of victory begin tipping towards the White Deer academy.

“Then let me try out another move...[Protection of Heaven and Earth]!”

Ye Qingyu loudly roared.

He suddenly stamped on the Earth, cracking and fracturing the ground. Then a surge of dense golden radiance, bringing with it a divine aura,

erupted from his body. Like layers and layers of light with Ye Qingyu's body at its centre, this golden light radiated in all directions.

Xu Ge and Zheng Kai was in a huge daze.

A new battle technique?

In their previous battles, Ye Qingyu had never utilised such a move before.

The dense golden light radiated enveloped his entire body, as if this world had placed a divine protection upon Ye Qingyu.

A viscous power, along with this divine golden light snaked out. In a short amount of time, it had already completely covered everywhere within a hundred feet. The air was as if it had thickened. Both Xu Ge and Zheng Kai could feel an invisible rope tying them down, making their movements becoming more sluggish. It was as if their bodies were being pressed down by an ancient mountain, even taking a step became difficult...

The Zheng Kai next to Xu Ge was the worst off.

He struggled to take even a single step, madly resisting.

Under the immense power of the great Earth, ripple like patterns twisted. It was as if both his legs were submerged in a viscous substance and around the body of Zheng Kai there was a pale yellow light flickering madly. This was a sign that his inner yuan were being activated to its

absolute fullest. He wanted to break free from this sudden constraint.

But Ye Qingyu would not give him this opportunity.

Xiu.

A star in the night sky.

A cold star first arrived, then it was the spear following behind it like a dragon.

The light of the spear pierced through space, a torrential rainstorm pouring down. Zheng Kai screamed crazily, both hands gripping his Spirit weapon the enormous staff, his inner yuan functioning to its fullest capacity. His staff swung out in a blossoms of swings, making it seem as if a bronze shield had appeared in front of him.

Bang!Bang!Bang!Bang !

The metallic clashes that was enough to deafen one's ear sounded unendingly.

Clusters of sparks exploded, hysterically sputtering.

The shadows of the spear was singing.

The swing of the staff became confused.

Such an apocalyptic clash did not last longer than three breaths of time, before it suddenly stopped.

The light of the sparks, disappeared like smoke in thin air.

“Fast...an extremely fast spear! I...admit I’ve lost, I’m not...your match...Pok...Pu!”

Zheng Kai stood at his original position, his hands still gripping onto his staff that was mottled with marks. His fingers quivered slightly. With great difficult after saying such a sentence, his body that seemed unharmed at first glance, suddenly jetted out streams of blood. His entire figure was like a blooming fountain of blood. His body fell to the ground, his spirit shooting out and heading towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix academy.

Even though the rotation of the staff was rapid but it still could not withstand the light of the spear that covered the sky.

The Zheng Kai that specialised in physical strength, in a short amount of time, his staff techniques was completely broken by Ye Qingyu using an even greater power. This brute strength had disrupted his moves, and the spear stabs pierced into his body like that of a torrential storm. In a moment of time, his body had endured hundred of wounds and the life force within his body had broken.

At this time, the protective golden energy gradually dispersed.

And at the same moment, Xu Ge who had finally broken through the restraint of the [Protection of Heaven and Earth]. Without saying a word, he rushed forward like lightning, his speed not less in anyway compared to that of Lin Nuo. His silhouette left mirage after mirage in the air. Within his left and right palm, each had a bright silver crescent blade, cutting through the smoke in the sky to attack.

The power of the [Moon seal] was mustered to its extreme without any sounds or sign.

Ye Qingyu turned around, his long spear blocking.

Ding!Ding!Ding!Ding!

A clusters of close impact noises emitted.

Crescent moon after crescent moon struck against each other, forming a strange trajectory within the air. Like a complex silver net, it constantly struck against the inexorable spear and continuously pervaded the air around Ye Qingyu. The crescent blades sliced past without any signals, ripping apart Ye Qingyu's black robe.

This was the true power of the moon seal.

Every time the moon blade clashed, after a slight vibration, one blade would turn into two. After following an incredible arc in the air, it returned again, constantly striking out. As if it possessed life, in the blink of an eye, Ye Qingyu was already completely surrounded by hundred of moon blades. Surging back and forth, like a stormy assassination,

impossible to defend against effectively.

“This is the true strength of my [Moon seal]!” Xu Ge inner yuan was completely activated, his entire figure being covered in a silver inner yuan light. His voice was like the cold essence of the moon : “Last time I was not familiar with your technique and suffered a heavy loss. This time, I have seen through the mysteries behind your battle technique. Using the same technique on me twice is useless. Ye Qingyu, you’ve lost already.”

Ye Qingyu held his mouth shut without saying anything.

He was examining in detail the moon blades shooting out in strange arcs, but was immediately disappointed.

Because each and every trajectory of each moon blade, was like the curve of an antelope’s horn, with no signs of any flaws or distinct patterns. Especially as they constantly clashed against each other, these trajectories would constantly change. One would turn into two, two into three, three into tens of thousands. Like the full moon, this technique emitted a radiance that would make people feel dizzy and faint when they looked into it. There was a peculiar charm like power.

“The [Moon seal] really is a high class battle technique. The mysteries of it are limitless, its not something that can be broken apart in a short time...if this continues on, when Xu Ge’s [moon seal] has been fully performed, then the momentum of my spear will break for sure. At that time, I will not be able to avoid tens of thousands of these moon blades.”

Ye Qingyu clearly understood.

“This is my true strength. Ye Qingyu, your White Deer academy, will still lose.” Xu Ge loudly roared, the inner yuan in his body vibrating, and an immense pressure slowly emitted, as if he was carrying the aura of the Moon god.

“That might not be.”

Ye Qingyu shouted, the swings of his spears changing.

“If I can’t break apart his technique, then I’ll just crush it using brute force!”

As he screamed, Ye Qingyu’s figure suddenly soared into the sky, as if a dragon gliding through the air. He did not care about defending anymore, allowing the thousands of moon blades to slice apart his body. As the spurts of blood flowed, there were countless wounds on Ye Qingyu in an instant. In this short amount of time, his body was completely torn apart by the moon formation and his body flew hundreds of metre high up in the air.

Such a height, completely defied the laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

Xu Ge lifted his head to look, shock in his eyes: “What? How is this possible?”

“The fourth move of the golden armoured king — [Heaven rends and Earth destroys]!”

Within the atmosphere, the sound of Ye Qingyu's roar sounded. His silhouette suddenly swooped down accompanied by the rumble of the air. It brought with it the force of thunder and lightning, similar to a star falling from the furthest reaches of heavens. Within the reverberating blaze, there were burst after burst of dragon's roars. Rapid like lightning and thunder, it was as if it would destroy this entire world.

“What kind of technique is this?”

Xu Ge screamed.

The next instant, the Heavens collapsed and the Earth cracked.

Within the huge explosion, the earth shattered and fractured into a huge crater.

Under this indescribable immense force, the ground subsided but the Earth's crust ascended, striking into each other, forming a surrounding rock fragments that were tens of feet high. Like a newly created mountain range, this chaotic energy revolved all around, causing a strange forcefield to appear. If you were within this area, then your senses and thoughts would become disordered and deranged.

Xu Ge in this confusion, felt that is if the world had really been destroyed.

In a second, such a terrifying impact had made him spurt out blood from his mouth and nose, his limbs breaking apart. The inner yuan



within his body had gone crazy and chaotic, disordered and messy in his meridians. He could not muster his inner yuan to resist anymore, and the essence of the [Moon seal] was destroyed. The countless of moon blades in the air disappeared like thin smoke in the bright glare of the sun.

“I’ve...lost again!”

In his last glance, he was able to see Ye Qingyu covered in blood, standing amidst the smoke and dust. His figure was like a spear, and Xu Ge’s mind constantly returned to the image of this teenager breaking apart his moon formation through such a decisive act where he abandoned all defence. Xu Ge suddenly felt, that this was what a true practitioner should be. Perhaps the two times that he had lost to this student of White Deer academy was not simply because of the difference in battle techniques.

## Chapter 088 – He Wants To Murder Someone

---

Ascending heaven pavilion.

When the scene of Ye Qingyu, like a dragon soaring through the heavens, slaughtering the students of Azure Phoenix students appeared in the formation projection, the cheers that had been suppressed for a long time finally sounded. Everyone understood, that the death of Xu Ge, signified the complete defeat of the Azure Phoenix academy. Because at this time, only Xu Ge had a chance to resurrect. The other four people had already died three times, and had already been forcibly ejected from the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

And Ye Qingyu had already defeated Xu Ge in a one versus one direct battle, so even if Xu Ge was resurrected, he could no longer cause anymore waves.

A large number of second, third and even fourth year student representatives, also could not suppress their cheers and screams.

Even if they did not manage to obtain victory personally, but the honour and glory from winning one round belonged to the entire White Deer academy. And they were a part of the White Deer academy.

Bai Yuqing had a complicated expression on her face, but even she could not help but applaud.

She must admit, that this teenager called Ye Qingyu, had given her too much shock and astonishment. She must also acknowledge that her

previous evaluation was too hasty and she had misjudged this teenager. At the same time, the girl that was in the eyes of many male students of White Deer academy a goddess, began to become curious towards Ye Qingyu.

In the places where the formation projection did not show his figure, just what had occurred?

This youth that had originated from the commoners displayed a battle technique that was bursting with explosive power. It seemed extremely simple, but the strength was absolutely frightening...just where had he learned such a battle technique from?

From within the crowd, Jiang Xiaohan and Han Xiaofei exchanged a glance.

Both of them could see the other's shock and unease.

Especially at the moment when Ye Qingyu had performed his last technique. A violent and direct dive as if a dragon was descending, like a star was falling, simply nothing could match him. In a moment of time, he had completely changed the terrain, causing a miniature mountain range to appear. The two asked themselves this question: if it was me on the receiving end of such a strike, what chances of victory do I have?

The person that they had treated like a loach, that commoner student that they thought was impossible for him to rise to prominence ever again, caused them to be uneasy. It made them who regarded themselves as the favoured children of heaven to sense a huge threat.

The large majority of the teachers were also elated.

“Haha, that child is really the lucky star of our White Deer academy.”

“I haven’t accepted a disciple in over ten years. This Ye Qingyu, suits my taste very much. From now on, let me teach him personally, I’ll accept him as my disciple!” An elder with snowy white hair said laughingly.

“That can’t be, this Ye Qingyu is the perfect inheritor that I’ve bitterly searched for to learn my skills. I want to pass on [The will of Heaven sword style] to him. Old fellow, don’t fight with me over him...” Another elder with snowy white hair said with a glare.

“Hehe, Elder Liu, Elder Zhu, does that mean both of you have the intention to accept a disciple? Haha, but to tell you the truth, before Wen Wan had left the academy, he had personally given Ye Qingyu for me to take care of. Haha, then this Ye Qingyu could be counted as half my personal disciple, why don’t you guys stop trying to steal my fortune?” A middle aged teacher said with a beaming smile.

“No matter what, the academy from now on will heavily nourish this child.”

“Perhaps in the glorious battle of the ten academies a year later, this child will give us an even greater surprise.”

A large majority of the teachers had faint smiles on the faces, discussing the events joyously. Unexpectedly winning the fourth round

had given the entire White Deer academy a cardiac stimulant.

Of course, not everyone regarded Ye Qingyu with favourable intentions.

Some old elders that came from a noble background, emitted several snorts.

“Could it be that everyone has forgotten, before defeating the Azure Phoenix academy, Ye Qingyu personally killed two students of White Deer academy? This person cannot be tamed, with a traitorous bone in his body, and heavy murderous intent....” This noble elder shook his head with a cold laugh, “Such a person, is he really worth us heavily investing resources to nourish him? I fear this is equal to nurturing a tiger and inviting calamity!”

.....

.....

The practice grounds of the White Deer academy.

In front of the ranking stone mirror.

Vast crowds were present on every single practice grounds and had been long simmering. The excited people were like a bubbling current, with more and more people rushing to join.

“We won ? We’ve really won? ? ”

“Ye Qingyu managed to save a desperate crisis.”

“This is absolutely all due to the effort of demon King Ye. Look at the change on the stone mirror. Haha, I can imagine what exactly has happened on the battlefield—both parties had a direct battle. Qin Wushaung, Xia Houwu, Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun first died in battle, but demon king Ye fought against the crazy tide alone, turning around the situation. Hahaha, this is too satisfying.”

“Demon king Ye is really too strong, strong!”

“I completely can’t believe what my eyes are telling me.”

“Haha, let me see what that group of Azure Phoenix can still say. Hehe, lets go to the arena and rip the two banners that are erected there..”

“Eh? Where is the people of Azure Phoenix? When exactly did they slink away?”

The crowd was boiling with triumph.

The situation was filled with so much excitement and bustle that it was like a grand festival.

Especially the first year students. Everyone held their head high with pride and joy. Some people bragged, bringing up the fact that they had attended lessons with Ye Qingyu before. Some people told the story of Ye

Qingyu's shocking training speed when he was body refining and the powerful effects of this training. And some people were like story tellers, retelling the incident when Ye Qingyu had used a single punch to disperse the Azure Phoenix student in front of the library, exaggerating it and repeating the tale....

This was a common sense of public glory.

Ye Qingyu used his own strength and actions, to win the glory of the academy, therefore the students also managed to obtain glory. Ye Qingyu did not only obtain victory but he also won the heart felt respect and acceptance of the majority of the students.

Cheers and screams like that of the thunder's roar, sounded from every practice ground.

The news also spread out from the ranking stone mirror. The leaders of various interest groups and factions that had always been paying attention to the competition between the two academies in Deer city, also received such information.

The reaction of them differed.

But everyone at the first moment, thought of the prediction of the previous Dean?

Could it really be that a peerless genius would be born within Deer city?

Very quickly, the final result was announced on the stone mirror. The judgement of the [Boundary canyon battlefield] announced that the White Deer academy had obtained the final victory. From the little characters on the stone mirror, the Xu Ge who had just resurrected chose to directly surrender, and did not struggle till the bitter end.

It seemed like Xu Ge realised, that even if he was given another opportunity, there was no way he would be able to prevail against Ye Qingyu directly.

In the heart of the Azure Phoenix genius, a psychological shadow that he was inferior to Ye Qingyu had already been planted.

Within the White Deer academy, the cheers became even louder.

.....

.....

In Ascending heaven pavilion.

A heated debate was still in the midsts of discussion.

“Peh! You have the nerve to say such things. Then what about Xia Houwu attacking his own comrades, what about that?” Hearing the accusation of the noble elder, a short tempered teacher could not help but angrily shout.



“Xia Houwu will naturally receive the punishment he deserves. But Ye Qingyu should also pay the price for his actions.” The noble elder said neutrally. “Besides, Xia Houwu did not personally kill his comrades by his own hand. But this tyrannical Ye Qingyu, I think that his punishment should be even greater.”

“Sophistry ! ”

“Completely shameless”

“Everything has cause and effect ! ”

Various types of shouts resounded throughout the Ascending heaven pavilion.

In this time, the victory of the round did not seem that important anymore. Many teachers that came from a noble background, finally opened their mouths. After all, the seed of victory were already in their hands and many people subconsciously began scheming for the distribution of the rewards. Different factions also began plotting. Just what exactly did this victory represent in the ongoing battle between the commoners and the nobles?

“Enough, stop arguing.” The old dean finally spoke.

“Dean, Ye Qingyu slaughtered his own comrades, we must teach him a lesson otherwise...” This noble elder would still not let this matter go.

“Am I the Dean, or are you the Dean?” The tone of the Dean became

severe, and a light like the sheen of blade came from his eyes: “How I do things, could it be that I need you to teach me?”

This noble elder was dumbfounded. He shivered in his heart, quickly saying: “I don’t dare, I only wanted...”

But he could not speak on, his face turning red.

The people around him, also did not know what to say.

In their memories, this amiable and gentle Dean, had never raised his voice. This was his first time being so severe when he spoke. In this very long time period of time, this number one person of the White Deer academy had always treated things with one eye closed and one eye opened. There were many incidents in the academy that he simply did not manage, and in the end only had a casual smile when these were reported back to him. He had never lost his composure and become so enraged before.

The old Dean at this time, was like a fierce slumbering dragon suddenly opening his eyes. The inner yuan deep like a ravine began activating, vibrating and humming. The entire Ascending heaven pavilion seeming to be shaking. Everyone became silent, not daring to say anything more.

And at this time —

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

Above the sculpture of the Formation Emperor Luoso, golden lights

flickered. Lines upon lines of runes began activating, and the five first year students that were transferred into the [Boundary canyon battlefield] were ejected out.

The eyes of everyone, all focused on the figures of these five people.

Especially Ye Qingyu.

He was the person that managed to turn a desperate situation around, and created a miracle. He received the attention of many.

Xia Houwu lowered his head and looked down at both of his hands. He was able to sense the greatly increased quantity of inner yuan in him, and could help but be excited.

This was the yuan qi rewards that would persist for ever through killing the demon rune soldiers in the battlefield.

Carefully calculating, he had slaughtered over a thousand demon rune soldiers. The reward that he managed to obtain was equal to him bitterly training for half a year in the real world. The inner yuan within his body was vibrating, showing signs that it was about to break through to the next stage.

A faint smile appeared on his face, and he was about to say something when he felt a blur in his vision...

Boom!

In an instant, Ye Qingyu appeared in front of him. His steel like fist moved, striking out directly in his face.

Half the face of Xia Houwu, visibly caved in through such a force. White teeth and scarlet red blood water jetted out, and the muscles on his face shivered like ripples. His entire person had gone dumb, like a massive axe chopping a tree, sent rolling and flying away!

WengWengWeng!

Xia Houwu could only feel that everything in his vision was rotating. A buzz was in his ears and golden stars flickered in his vision.

He was completely beaten to a daze by such a strike.

Everywhere, there were gasps of shock.

No one would have thought, that in the instant they departed from the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu would attack. He used the most simple, most direct, and most violent way to indicate his perspective and stance.

After this punch, Ye Qingyu still did not stop.

Xiu!

The spear tore through space.

The cold light of the spear was like lightning, directly stabbing towards Xia Houwu's heart.

The intention to kill was evident.

He really would, in the midst of the Ascending heaven pavilion, in front of the elite of the students of every year, in front of the higher ups of the Academy, lift his spear and kill someone.

## Chapter 089 – Words Reverberating Throughout Ascending Heaven Pavillion

---

“Aaaah, save me...”

Xia Houwu finally reacted. Like a dog crawling backwards, he screamed like a pig squealing as he was being slaughtered.

From Ye Qingyu’s cold and imposing gaze like that of a blade, Xia Houwu was absolutely sure that he really was going to kill him.

If it was any other person, Xia Houwu would not have been afraid.

Because there were so many higher ups of the academies and different seniors of different years present. Killing him in such an open and evident fashion, was simply looking for their own death. Even an idiot would avoid shooting at the rat to refrain from breaking the vases. Normal people would have some apprehensions about killing someone so openly. But this was Ye Qingyu, a demon king like existence. When he went crazy he was willing to do anything and everything. If there was one person, that really dared to kill someone in this place, this person was definitely Ye Qingyu.

Xia Houwu scrambled backwards in terror. He could not care about the numbness in his face from the strike anymore, quickly crawling away to avoid the next attack.

“You dare!”

“Impudent!”

Several noble elders shouted loudly at the same time, acting out to block.

A terrifying yuan fluctuation, in a flash surged throughout the entire Ascending heaven pavilion.

Ye Qingyu held his spear across his chest, directly taking such a strike. His entire figure was sent soaring through the air by the impact. A trace of blood was evident in the corner of his lips, but even in mid air, he still cried loudly the spear in his hand flying out. As if it was a weapon that shot out from the siege bow to destroy cities, it streaked towards the terrified Xia Houwu retreating in terror.

“Aaa.....”

Xia Houwu screamed horrendously.

The long spear pierced through his left shoulder then continued flying out. With a boom, it nailed directly on a statue far off.

“Save me...Aaaaaaa, I’m about to die.....Save me!”

Xia Houwu began screeching like the wails of a ghost and the howls of a wolf, pain emitting from the very depths of his bone marrow. He felt as if death had really arrived. This place was different to the [Boundary

canyon battlefield]; to die here, represented a true death. There was no way of resurrecting.

“Outrageous, to dare to try to kill someone right in front of us!”

“This is truly unforgivable!”

“Too arrogant!”

The elders who were from the noble organisation, that had already expressed their dissatisfaction with Ye Qingyu, finally found their opportunity. Everyone of them was enraged and shouted to discipline Ye Qingyu, all of them righteously indignant. Especially the elder who led the pack, he was so angry that his figure was quivering.

“Do you see? Does everyone see? This child is vicious to what degree?” The leading noble elder pointed at Ye Qingyu, his face filled with rage. “In Ascending heaven pavilion, such a holy place, you dare attack and injure someone without the slightest trace of regret. Such a rebellious child, what’s the point of teaching him? I advise that we take away his position of White Deer student, and give him to me for severe treatment!”

“Junior brother Ye, you really have taken things too far...”

Jiang Xiaohan slowly walked beside Ye Qingyu, a perfect picture of someone trying to kind heartedly correct someone. She shook her head. “No matter what, we are all students of the White Deer academy. Even if junior brother Xia Houwu was wrong, this should be left for the elders of the academy to manage. Even you do not have the right to meddle with



an ordinary student. Not only is that exceeding your place and meddling in the teacher's affairs, your attack was far too serious!””

Ye Qingyu rotated his head fiercely, looking at Jiang Xiaohan.

Jiang Xiaohan originally wanted to still say something, but facing this cold and disdainful gaze, her heart shivered. The things she wanted to say, she could not speak it out.

Such a gaze, she had never ever seen in Ye Qingyu's eyes before.

This was a gaze that was for enemies, for people they loathed.

It was not the gaze of someone regarding their childhood friend.

Jiang Xiaohan thought that this teenager in front of her, no matter what the time, would be humble and flatter her.

But currently...

A shiver that came from her soul, made Jiang Xiaohan embarrassed and angry. She hesitated, then opened her mouth to say something again: “I only want the best for you, I ...”

“Shut your mouth.” Ye Qingyu coldly broke off her words. He said, word by word: “This has nothing to do with you. Scram!”

Jiang Xiaohan was as if she was struck by lightning.

She could not believe the words she had heard. Such a decisive and abhorrence in his tone, did it really came from the little boy that listened to her every word from when he was small? That little boy, that no matter what she did, would smile graciously at her? He really told her to scram?

At this time, the little loli Song Xiaojun that had recovered, walked over lightly. She pulled on Ye Qingyu's arm.

She was evidently scared by such a scene, but she still resolutely stood beside Ye Qingyu.

“Xia Houwu attacked me and sister Qingluo from behind in the battlefield.” Her little voice, clear and determined, reverberated throughout the entire Ascending heaven pavilion: “He was the person who was in the wrong. He's the bad person, you shouldn't punish senior brother Qingyu!”

After hesitating for a moment, Song Qingluo also took a step forward. “Regarding this situation, I can vouch for it. Xia Houwu feared death, and fled in the face of the enemies, causing us to nearly lose this round. If not for brother Qingyu....”

“Shut your mouth!”

The noble elder loudly roared, his voice like thunder. Yuan qi energy exploded from him, jolting the Song sisters backwards like a little boat in

front of a surging wave. Under such a terrifying yuan qi energy, the two girls had trouble even opening their mouths, they completely could not say anything more.

He waved his hand. “There’s nothing here that relates to the two of you. Move aside. The matters regarding Xia Houwu, I will naturally take care of. But what I need to manage right now, is Ye Qingyu this bastard who dares disrespect his teacher....”

“Hahahaha...” Ye Qingyu abruptly began laughing.

“Impudent. Rebellious student, what are you laughing at?” The noble elder shouted.

Ye Qingyu was like a blade making a judgement, his eyes icy cold. “I’m laughing at a old dog like yourself. Unable to distinguish between right and wrong, not understanding gratitude and grudges, using one’s position to bully others, distorting the truth deliberately. I don’t believe that you did not see the things that happened in the battlefield through the formation projection. What about it? To protect a scum like like Xia Houwu, you don’t even need your old face anymore? Really pitiful and lamentable, you have lived so long in vain, have you lived to turn into a dog? Such an old dog like yourself, relying on your age to do what you want, to be able to become an elder of White Deer academy, is really one of the legends of this world!”

Every word was clear and distinct, like a sword or a blade. It had the power to quiver one’s heart.

After finishing, Ye Qingyu did not take a step back in the slightest. His

pair of eyes was flickering with electricity, furiously glaring at the elder.

Such words resounded for a long time throughout the Ascending heaven pavilion.

Once these words were said, numerous people were dumbfounded.

He was only a tiny little student...how could he dare...to speak to an elder of the academy like this...he had gone mad!

Bai Yuqing lowered her head in shame.

Even she felt disdain for the shamelessness and biased stance of these noble elders. But such words, even she would not dare to speak it out in such a way.

“You.....you...you..” this noble elder face was filled with shock, so angry that his entire body was shaking.

He did not expect at all, that a student who in his eyes was a pig that he could slaughter at any time, really dared in front of so many people, to speak such words. In this moment in time, he was so angry that he could not formulate a word. After spluttering ‘you’ for a long period, finally killing intent appeared sinisterly on his face. “You are looking to die!”

Before he had finished.

His palm struck out

A saffron yellow enormous palm formed from yuan qi advanced crushingly towards Ye Qingyu.

This was the enraged strike of someone at the Bitter sea stage, possessing a terrifying aura. Once the palm struck out, the majority of the people within the Ascending heaven pavilion felt as if they were ants being thrown into the ocean. They could sense a suffocating pressure that made them unable to stand stably.

Ye Qingyu stood at the very front and bore the full brunt of this attack, engulfed by this gale.

He laughed madly, snapping but not bending. Contempt in his face, he would rather die than take a step back.

Seeing the humongous palm about to crush Ye Qingyu, at this time, the little loli Song Xiaojun being suppressed reacted. Extreme worry and panic appeared on her face. She wanted to struggle from the restraints of several of the noble elders, but was not able to do. Without realising, an abnormal change began to happen within her body. Her body suddenly began shaking, a shred of scarlet red air, began to leak. It was so tiny and minuscule that it could not be seen from her petite body ...

The Wang Yan who had not spoken all along, suddenly noticed something. Her figure flashed, instantly appearing beside the little loli.

Her palm light like a blade, slicing the back of the little loli's head...

The figure of the little loli quivered, but she did not stop shaking. In fact, a ray of scarlet red light, began growing from within her clear and bright eyes, taking a very strange shape...

Wang Yan's palm was bounced off.

Shock and worry appeared on Wang Yan's face. However, her hand did not hesitate in the slightest, striking at the back of the little loli's head again. This time, one could distinctly see the Wang Yan's palm was wrapped by a green aura. Very evidently, this was the sign that she had activated an extremely powerful yuan qi.

The little loli's figure only fell then, the scarlet red aura disappearing in the air. Slowly, she sank into the embrace of Wang Yan.

Song Qingluo was shocked and was about to say something, but Wang Yan shook her head slightly.

The other side.

As the noble elder's yuan qi giant palm was about to completely crush Ye Qingyu, the old Dean who had remained silent finally acted. Everyone only felt their vision blur, before the figure of the old Dean shockingly appeared in front of Ye Qingyu.

This old man's palm filled with wrinkles slowly stretched out, pushing lightly in the air.

There was no fluctuation or aura....

But this crushing giant yuan qi palm, like a sand statue within the wind, when it was less than one inch from the old Dean, disappeared!

“Pu...Pok!”

This noble elder's figure quivered, opening his mouth and spurring out a mouthful of blood.

His entire body staggered backwards, his face instantly turning deathly pale. Within his eyes, it flickered with both rage and fear.

He had never thought, the old Dean who had always concealed his strength and bided his time, would act and protect Ye Qingyu at such a time.

What he did not imagine even more, was that the old Dean had not just simply protected Ye Qingyu. He had secretly punished himself—while it may seem that the old Dean had just resolved his attack, but this noble elder was clear, that a hidden force had emitted from the palm of the old Dean. Soundlessly and without any signs, it had entered into his body. Without three or four months of rest, such a wound could not recover!

“Enough, the things today shall end here.” The tone of the old Dean was icy and dominating, glaring at the noble elders. “Lin Weifeng, even if you don't need your face, our White Deer academy needs our face. The things that happened here today, who's wrong and who's right, everyone knows clearly within their hearts. Don't pester endlessly...” Saying to here, he looked at the other elders and teachers, his tone severe: “Recently a lot has been happening within the city. I hope that everyone

can fulfil their own duties and roles, and don't disrupt order, nor to see profit and forget morality. The affairs that has nothing to do with you, there is no need to care about it. Wanting to act for someone else and inciting trouble, the White Deer academy will not be responsible for it."



## Chapter 090 – It Doesn't Matter

---

The hearts of the elders and teachers within the ascending heaven pavilion quivered together.

The old Dean today was evidently from normal. Within his words, there contained an obvious warning.

Pausing slightly, the old Dean spoke again: “From today onwards, Xia Houwu is no longer a student of White Deer academy. He is forever forbidden from entering the White Deer academy, and Qin Wushuang is to be confined for three months to reflect on his wrong doings. Even though Ye Qingyu has injured a fellow student and disrespected an elder, but the victory of this grand competition was all thanks to him. The merits and demerits offset each other, so he will take no further responsibility for his action....”

A commotion.

No one would have thought the final judgement of the old Dean would be such a result.

The old Dean who had always remained neutral and kept things in balance, this time clearly stood on Ye Qingyu's side.

“The upcoming fifth round of the battle between elites, will be conducted by Elder Zhou Yun. I have some matters so I will depart first.” Finishing speaking, the Old Dean turned and walked towards the exit of the Ascending heaven pavilion.

His ancient figure, quickly disappeared off into the distance.

Silence completely enveloped the Ascending heaven pavilion.

The people left here at this time, did not know what to say.

According to the previous agreement between Azure Phoenix and White Deer, after the first, second, third and fourth years had finished their battles, there would be one extra battle. They would pick the five students who had performed exceptionally and form a new team, to conduct the final battle —according to common sense, the reason why this fifth round was needed was in the case of the previous four rounds reaching a tie.

In the grand competition this time between the two academies, from the previous results, there was no longer a need for the fifth round to continue.

But many people still hoped to obtain the opportunities and rewards within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. They still wished to participate onwards into the fifth round. Even if they were still absolutely crushed by the Azure Phoenix academy, at least they could in a set amount of time, obtain the rewards of the battlefield. Such a convenient benefit really could not be passed up.

Ye Qingyu had the most exceptional performance in the previous competition.

According to logic, he should possess the chance to continue to remain within the battlefield.

But Ye Qingyu did not want to enter anymore.

The things that he wanted to obtain, he had already managed to obtain.

In truth, he was very disappointed in White Deer academy. He did not want to interfere in the conflict between the two academies anymore, especially within the last round. From Ye Qingyu's point of view the performance of the Azure Phoenix students were far, far more deserving of admiration and praise than Xia Houwu and Qin Wushaung.

Ye Qingyu with the intention of leaving, slowly turned around.

His gaze, passed through the entire crowd. Suddenly realising something, his heart shuddered. There seemed to be one person missing from the gathering.

“Where's Xiaojun?” He looked towards Song Qingluo.

Very few people had seen that Wang Yan had attacked and knocked Song Xiaojun unconscious, bringing her away. At that time, Ye Qingyu was receiving the full brunt of the noble elder's attack, and was concentrating solely on this so he naturally did not perceive what had occurred.

Song Qingluo whispered a few words in Ye Qingyu's ears.

A confused expression appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

What had happened?

Why would Wang Yan knock the little loli unconscious?

Ye Qingyu had a vague feeling, that could it be related to the scarlet red power exploding from the little loli's body?

He remembered the events in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] during in the last battle, when the little loli was betrayed by Xia Houwu. Under this stimulation, she exploded with a tyrannical power that was enough to make one shake in terror. At that time Ye Qingyu was able to observe this through the [Sentry guard], and was also greatly taken aback. But right then, he was too enraged by Xia Houwu's shameless action so did not pay too much thought to it.

But thinking back in detail, Ye Qingyu became slightly worried for the little loli.

But since Wang Yan had acted, it seemed like the situation would not be as serious as he thought. This head teacher of the first years was someone that Ye Qingyu respected very much. From demon king Ye's perspective, there was not many people worthy of his trust and respect in White Deer academy but Wang Yan was definitely one of them.

“Everyone, let's discuss the choice of participants for the last round.”

The head elder of the White Deer academy, Zhou Yun finally opened his mouth. He was also an elder with snowy white hair but a rosy complexion. He very rarely appeared in public, but had great contributions towards White Deer academy in the past. He possessed a prestigious status and had high reputation, otherwise the old Dean would not name him to be the person who would manage the following events after he had left.

Instantly, everyone began proposing different student representatives.

Zhou Yun smiled towards Ye Qingyu, and said extremely amiably: “Qingyu, your performance was exceptional. You absolutely have the right to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield], do you wish to fight for the academy in this last round?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

As if Zhou Yun had long seen through Ye Qingyu’s intentions, he did not display any signs of shock. Nodding his head, “That is fine too. A child like you knows how to modestly decline. You’re a good child that wants to give this opportunity to other students. Since it is like this, then return and rest well.”

In his words, he made an excuse for Ye Qingyu.

It seems like this head elder, also admired Ye Qingyu very much.

But the words of elder Zhou Yun were not false; Ye Qingyu really was slightly tired and wanted to rest well, wanted to sleep. Of course, he was

still extremely concerned over the little loli's situation. He decided that straight after he would go and find Wang Yan and ask about her situation, and to find out everything. Ye Qingyu nodded his head slightly, about to turn and leave.

At this time ---

“Huchi Huchi....Wu Wu!”

A strange and peculiar sound, came from within Ye Qingyu's chest.

The furry head of Big Head poked out and exposed himself from the clothes on Ye Qingyu's chest. His glistening large eyes curiously examined every person present, then agilely snaked out from Ye Qingyu's embrace, landing on his shoulder and intimately rubbing his head against Ye Qingyu and licking his ear.

The gazes of everyone focused on this little thing.

A white and adorable little puppy?

Ye Qingyu really had brought such a little pet with him?

Some people could not help but giggle. No one had thought that demon king Ye that killed people so decisively would raise such a cute pet, could it be that even he had softness within his heart?

And some people eyes brightened, realising something.

The rage and anger in Ye Qingyu's heart slowly subsided. Seeing the silly Big Head incessantly pretending to be cute on his shoulder, after a slight fright he also realised something.

In general, regarding the life forms within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], there was no way it could be taken out. After the competitors were forcibly ejected from the battlefield, apart from the yuan qi rewards and some spoils of battle like [Blood of the Flame devil beast] and the [Blood of the yuan qi giant], there was no way to transport the living creatures away from that realm.

Previously when Ye Qingyu had brought along Big Head, he only felt that he could keep him beside him during the battlefield with no way of bringing Big Head out from the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. But right now, seeing the little fellow licking his ear in joy, Ye Qingyu finally realised that he had brought this little dog out of the battlefield.

This was in all of history, the first creature that was brought out from the [Boundary canyon battlefield]!

"I never thought that I would really manage to bring this little fellow out." Ye Qingyu noticed the gazes of the people around him and the emotions behind these eyes: curiosity, shock, greed and lust. He smiled, silently stuffing the little fellow back into the place on his chest.

"Wu Wu... Huchi Huchi!"

The little fellow expressed his dissatisfaction, barking in objection.

He forcefully squeezed his head through the clothes, leaving his head out in the open, with his pink little tongue sticking out. On one hand, he was trying to curry favour with Ye Qingyu and on the other hand he was like an inquisitive baby, inspecting everything all around.

“A very cute little puppy.” Jiang Xiaohan smiled.

This girl acted as if she had repaired the relationship between her and Ye Qingyu. She smiled authentically, and said very casually: “It really is too cute. Junior brother Ye, is this the pet you’ve raised? I remember that before entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], you did not bring a little puppy....” Speaking to here Jiang Xiaohan seemed as if she had only just appreciated something, her face full of shock. “Ah, could it be that this little puppy, was brought out from within the battlefield? This is too impossible, I have never heard of someone able to bring out a living creature from within the battlefield. This little puppy must be something special, could it be that he is a Spirit beast or a Divine beast?”

As these words were said, the hearts of countless people instantly pulsed madly.

Now even the insensitive people who were not able to at the first moment understand what the big headed dog represented, at this moment instantly comprehended the specialness of this adorable little puppy.

After finishing her words, Jiang Xiaohan quivered violently. She looked at Ye Qingyu, then immediately covered her own mouth, as if she had only just realised something. With an embarrassed and apologetic



expression, she quickly rushed to say: “I’m sorry, I’m sorry, I’m sorry. Little brother Qingyu, I really wasn’t...I should have said so much, this really wasn’t intentional.....”

Ye Qingyu only smiled.

“It doesn’t matter.” He looked at Jiang Xiaohan with a smile.

Jiang Xiaohan’s heart was delighted.

But Ye Qingyu continued on: “That’s right, please don’t call me little brother Qingyu in the future. If I remember correctly, when you always followed behind me, you have always called me big brother Qingyu...Of course, what I want to point out is that me saying ‘it doesn’t matter’, is not because of your clumsy acting has really fooled me nor does it mean that someone like you deserves forgiveness for plotting time after time against me. It’s only just that, to bicker with a woman that thinks herself so clever, that always plays with schemes and factions, is really something that is far, far too pointless.”

The complexion of Jiang Xiaohan’s face instantly grew deathly pale.

Ye Qingyu continued on: “Your words are correct. This little fellow, is really something that I’ve managed to obtain from the [Boundary canyon battlefield] and is even something that I’ve managed to obtain from the dragon’s den in the middle of the wilderness. It’s incredible, your words are not wrong, it very possibly could be a Spirit beast, En, or perhaps it is even an even rarer Divine beast....I had never thought that I would be able to bring it out from within the battlefield. How about it, isn’t my luck good?”

The eyes of the surrounding people instantly began burning.

With Ye Qingyu's honest and direct admittance it instantly made the cute and foolish Big head, in the eyes of everyone here, became holy and mysterious. Even if it was only a Spirit beast, it was absolutely a treasure given from the Heavens. No matter what the faction or group, to obtain this big headed dog , their status would instantly surge and their power explosively grow.

## Chapter 091 – He Can Eat More Than Me

---

“However, the moment I left the battlefield, I could faintly hear his imperial highness, Formation Emperor Luoso’s voice from beside my ear. His highness said, that whoever forcefully seizes this little fellow, will inherit his curse and fury. Their family will break apart and die, eternally crushed by the curse of his formation.”

At this point, Ye Qingyu laughed. Looking at the crowd, he said indifferently: “I don’t know whether this is true or false, but at least I believe it. Whoever doesn’t believe in this, can try for themselves and see if the Formation Emperor Luoso is just scaring people and playing around.”

The burning gaze of everyone, finally awakened a little.

Regarding the legend and curse of the Formation Emperor Luoso, it had spread throughout the entire Heaven Wasteland domain.

In history, there had been several world shaking events that had occurred regarding the formation curse. There was once a royal member not of this generation that did not believe in this, and insulted the Formation Emperor Luoso through his actions. The curse that he provoked ultimately caused his royal court to be annihilated and he himself vanished. There was a nearly invincible demon with an insolent mouth, arrogant and wilful. He directly offended a religious altar of the Formation Emperor. As a result, he was struck by formation lightning descending from the skies, turning into ashes...

The martial artists of the Heaven Wasteland domain what they trained and cultivated in was originally from the formation martial path. The origins of their power and battle techniques was intimately related to the formation martial path. They treated the Formation Emperor Luoso like a religion, revering and venerating it to the extreme, treating him like a god. Therefore the words from Ye Qingyu mouth caused many people to shiver in fear. It could not help but make people think twice before acting.

Moreover Ye Qingyu's performance was too amazing, making him seem mysterious. Even the formation projection had no way of capturing his figure within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], causing him to be painted in an enigmatic colour. Creating miracle after miracle, there were many things that could not be explained simply by common logic. It was as if the Formation Emperor himself was really protecting and aiding him.

Such words, in the mouths of other people, would be a ridiculous joke. But when spoken from the mouth of Ye Qingyu, it added to the trustworthiness of such a statement. It could not help but make people evaluate his words carefully before acting.

Finishing saying these words, Ye Qingyu became much more relaxed.

His gaze, once again returned to Jiang Xiaohan's face.

“A woman like you, petty and vain, chasing after wealth and glory. Time and time again, you have plotted against me, attempting to humiliate me. You rely on the fact that you were once my childhood friend so I won't become angry at you, won't retaliate at you. Then I will tell you, from today onwards, everything that has happened between us

is now smoke disappearing in thin air. I have nothing to do with you anymore....if you dare try to scheme against me again, to plot against my friends, then you will become my personal enemy.”

Jiang Xiaohan’s figure was tottering, on the verge of collapse.

In a daze, she looked at Ye Qingyu. Abruptly, she felt as if something special and beautiful had finally left her.

Such a Ye Qingyu was really too unfamiliar to her.

“From now on, if you act against me, then don’t blame me for being merciless.” Ye Qingyu said decisively. He looked at the deathly pale face of Jiang Xiaohan. Pausing for a bit, “It seems I’ve hurt you...En, I originally wanted to say many callous and ruthless words, and wanted to rip my robe as a sign to repudiate our friendship and draw a line on the ground, to break off all ties with you. But my robe is very expensive, and this ground here is hard so this is somewhat impractical. Seeing your wretched appearance...forget it, look after yourself from today onwards.”

Jiang Xiaohan’s entire body began shaking.

The far away Song Qingluo witnessing this scene, could not help but feel a pity that could not be suppressed for Jiang Xiaohan.

This senior sister that she had once talked and laughed with, was in truth a tremendous character within White Deer academy. No matter considering her strength or her schemes, within the entire academy she could be ranked in the top ten. She basked in the limelight for a lot of

things, but at this time, facing Ye Qingyu, she was placed in a completely disadvantageous position. Like a candle in the wind, helpless and without power.

Not only did demon king Ye possessed fierce techniques, his mouth was also really poisonous.

Song Qingluo sighed in her heart.

“Fine, what I should say, I’ve finished saying……I’m leaving.” Ye Qingyu waved his arm, turning and heading outside the Ascending heaven pavilion.

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head and in her beautiful eyes, endless fury and hatred simmering.

Her body was quivering, her hands tightly clenched into fists. She was like a volcano that was about to erupt. She asked herself again and again in her heart, why would he dare to say such words? This boy that must have a crush on her, why would he dare speak such words, for what reason?

Did he wanted to use such a method to attract her attention?

He must want to use such a method so she would forever remember him.

It must be so.

Jiang Xiaohan's heart was full of bitterness. Lifting her head, she opened her mouth, wanting to say something more. But for some unknown reason, seeing the back of this youth, despite her strength evidently being higher than him, ultimately not even one word was said.

“Hmph ! ”The injured noble elder coldly snorted. In his eyes was a chilling killing intent: “A ridiculous mad student. I’ll see how long you can be arrogant for, you’re just a clumsy clown.”

Hearing this, Ye Qingyu turned around with a grin.

“Old bastard, you have so many useless words. Don’t pretend to be hunting just because you have several dead rats in your pockets. Let me ask you one question, do you dare kill me right now? If you don’t dare, then shut your mouth....Since we have lost all pretense of cordiality, what’s the use of insults? Haha, old bastard, I’m waiting for you to kill me, if you have the guts then come.”

Saying this, he dragged his hand across his neck, in an action similar to cutting his throat than walked out, laughing loudly.

The noble elder was so angry that his body began trembling.

Such an action, such a laughter, was like razor sharp blades, being sliced again and again into his face.

At this instant, he hated that he was unable to slap to death this trash that dared to provoke his authority. But remembering the icy warning of

the old Dean and sensing the disordered inner yuan that was within his heavily injured body, he ultimately managed to endure Ye Qingyu's taunt. A mouthful of involuntary blood was nearly spat out from his mouth.

He had never met such an arrogant and senseless student before.

The people within the Ascending heaven pavilion, was once again stunned by the arrogant and domineering words of demon king Ye.

This noble elder was normally harsh and had a tendency to use his power to bully others. He often utilised his status to suppress others and was easily provoked to make someone's life to difficult for them. But until this moment, no one had really dared to directly confront him. There were many people dissatisfied by this tyrannical noble elder, including even some of the teachers. But they could only secretly curse at this noble elder.

Ye Qingyu was the first person who would argue so openly against him and tear his face in such a public manner.

In this instant, this teenager proudly laughing, possessed a courage that was hard to describe using language alone.

Until the figure of Ye Qingyu was gone in the exit far off, the Ascending heaven pavilion was filled with a serious silence.

For many students, the things that had happened here today was like a dream passing by.



“Fine, if there is no more private matters, then lets select the competitors for the last round.” The grand elder Zhou Yun opened his closed eyes that had always been shut, as if not he had not noticed anything. Saying slowly and politely; “If anyone have any good proposals, then just say it!”

.....

.....

“Such a disturbing competition has finally ended. The leftover affairs, has nothing to do with me.”

Both Ye Qingyu’s hands was placed behind his neck, and on his shoulder was Big Head. They walked out of the Ascending heaven pavilion.

The sunlight shone through the cloud layers. The golden radiant light, made Ye Qingyu squint his eyes slightly.

Long winter was slowly arriving in Deer city. The air became icier by the day. These days, gloomy clouds nearly always covered the sky. Only occasionally , when strong gusts blew past, would the sky brighten up. But very quickly, it would once again be replaced by the heavy clouds. The cold currents that came from the North of the Deer mountain range made the air thousands of miles around colder by the day.

As expected, the sunlight only shone through for a short time. Before

Ye Qingyu had returned to the second year area, it was once again replaced by a heavy grey cloud layer.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu's mood was not that good.

Big Head was whimpering on his shoulder, suddenly becoming impatient.

Ye Qingyu abruptly missed the first year canteen that he had spent a majority of his time within.

Therefore he did not directly return to the dormitories of the second year, but went straight towards the first year area.

There were still countless first years crazily converging towards the practice grounds. The victory in the grand competition, had caused an explosion in the moods of the first year students. The atmosphere was saturated with the taste of excitement and joy.

There were two first year students in high spirits, that were bragging loudly about how close their relationship was with demon king Ye. They passed straight by Ye Qingyu, but did not recognise him at all.

“Eh? How could this possibly be.....I'm Ye Qingyu, I'm the great hero. You guys would really ignore me.....”Ye Qingyu thought indignantly, intensely criticising these two in his heart.

I am so famous, why is it that these two scoundrels did not recognise me, and come idolise me?

With such a limited perception, how did they manage to become students of White Deer academy ?

Originally Ye Qingyu felt that he should have disguised himself a little bit, to prevent himself from attracting an ocean of spectators that would surround him. But from the present situation there was no such a need. Because the attention of everyone, was still focused upon the ranking stone mirror, waiting until the completion of the last round. There were absolutely no one who recognised that the person walking by with a dog on his shoulder, was the hero in their hearts, Ye Qingyu.

The demon king Ye who had not managed to satisfy his vanity, arrived with a bellyful of complaints at the canteen.

“Let’s just ferociously eat for a while.”

He greeted the chefs of the canteen, then like a carriage on a familiar and trodden path, brought large bowl of rice and two little dishes to the place where he always sat. He placed Big Head on the chair beside him and turned to fill up on soup --Demon king Ye always felt that before partaking in a meal, one should always drink soup before. He insisted that this was a extremely good practice when eating.

But when he came back holding a large bowl of meat soup.....

“Eh? Eh Eh Eh? What’s happening? Where’s my rice? Where’s my dishes?” Ye Qingyu looked speechless at the empty containers and then looked at the stupidly panting Big Head. He was wagging his tail and had jumped onto the table. At this moment, Ye Qingyu could still not

figured out what exactly had occurred.

“Wu Wu....Huchi Huchi!” Big Head’s tail bobbed up and down affectionately.

He eagerly looked at Ye Qingyu.

No, what was correct that he was looking at the meat soup Ye Qingyu was carrying.

Ye Qingyu looked at him, taken back: “Big Head, don’t tell me that all the food was completely devoured by you.....my heavens, are you a pig, how could you eat so much and in such a short time....You stupid dog, shouldn’t you be a divine beast that doesn’t partake in mortal food? Why can you eat more than me?”

## Chapter 092 – I Admit Defeat

---

“Huchi Huchi.....Wu Wu!”

This little fellow did not pay the slightest attention to the fact that he was currently being scolded by his master. He jumped towards Ye Qingyu's arm. Ye Qingyu only felt his vision blurring, then his hand was abruptly lighter. When he looked down, he discovered that the meat soup in the bowl had completely disappeared.

“Hachi Hachi ! ”

The big head licked his lips appreciatively, and a drop of clear soup was still dripping from the corner of his mouth.

My God!

Ye Qingyu did not dare to believe what he had just witnessed.

Even if it was an expert at the six Spirit springs stage that had acted in front of him, it was not possible to suck away the entire bowl of soup without even a drop left in an instant. This big headed stupid dog, just what was it's background that it's speed could be so quick?

Could it be that he was mistaken?

Ye Qingyu once again filled up on a big bowl of meat soup, placing it in

front of the stupid big headed dog, then widened his eyes to observe carefully.

It must a mistaken sensation, it must be a mistaken sensation.

Ye Qingyu widely opened his eyes.

The silly big headed dog hopped up and down excitedly as if springs had been installed in his hind legs. He leapt onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder, affectionately licking Ye Qingyu's face and then instantly whooshed onto the table.

“Che-Liu! ! ”

A faint sound like lightning. The big bowl of soup instantly disappeared.

Ye Qingyu's eyes was glazed with shock.

This time he was able to see what had happened more clearly than last time. The pink little tongue of the big headed dog could extend and shrink. In an instant, it had stretched over half a metre, like a suction rod. Quick as lightning, with a faint suction, this big bowl that was enough to feed four or five burly men disappeared in a instant.

“Hachi....Hachi?”

Big Head had a countenance that he was still not satisfied.

The little fellow wagged his tail to gain Ye Qingyu's favour, his saliva nearly dripping out.

It still wasn't enough?

Ye Qingyu's chin had nearly dropped to the ground.

The things that this foolish dog had eaten, was enough to last Ye Qingyu himself for three days. How could he still not be full? And his little body, was not even the size of that large bowl of meat soup. His little belly could definitely not contain such an amount. After eating so many things, his little belly had still not expanded in the slightest. The consumed meat soup, just where had it gone?

Could it be that his stomach was something like an inter dimensional pouch?

“Huchi Huchi?”

The Big head licked Ye Qingyu, then opened his mouth and jumped about, biting his tail and glancing at Ye Qingyu meaningfully. Expressing that he was still not full, he wondered why Ye Qingyu did not continue to feed him.

Ye Qingyu grinded his teeth.

“Fine, lets see how much you are able to eat. I won't admit that it's

impossible to feed you till you're full!"

Demon king Ye became ruthless, coming back and carrying a tub of meat soup a metre tall. The tub of meat soup thumped onto the ground. It was placed right in front of the big headed dog, foolish and adorable at the same time. The container emitted the rich fragrance of meat.

This foolish and adorable big headed dog began barking excitedly. After rubbing his white furry head onto Ye Qingyu to express his thanks, his hind legs moved. He jumped above the massive tub, and his tongue once again forming the shape of a suction rod and sticking into the soup. Panting, he appreciatively began sucking. No two breaths had passed before the giant tub of meat soup was entirely gone.

"Hachi Hachi?"

The little fellow eagerly looked at Ye Qingyu.

"You still want to eat?" Ye Qingyu became interested. "Fine lets see just how much you can eat. If I can't gorge you to death, I won't accept it..."

Pak!

Another giant tub of meat soup was brought over.

"Hachi Hachi....Wu Wu?"

The little fellow once again to pant excitedly.



“You still want more? Hmph, I don’t believe that you can eat so much!”  
Ye Qingyu pulled up his sleeves.

Pok!

There third tub.

“Hachi Hachi....Wu Wu?”

The little fellow still did not reject what was placed in front of him.

“You can still eat? I still don’t accept...”

Pok!

The fourth tub.

“Chi Liu Chi Liu.....”

“Shit, I can see the bottom again.....I still won’t accept!”

Pok!

The fifth tub.

“Chi Liu Chi Liu...Hachi?”

“You can still eat? I .....I really can’t accept.....”

Pok.

The sixth tub arrived with a bang.

“Hachi Hachi.....Chi Liu?”

“Fuck, you can really eat so much. I stil won’t accept.....” Ye Qingyu was about to go crazy.

Pok!

The seventh tub had arrived.

“Hachi Hachi .....Chi Liu?”

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded. He felt like the stomach of this foolishly cute dog, was really an endless hole. It absolutely could not be filled.

“You can really motherfucking eat, but I still won’t accept.....Fine, I accept defeat. What kind of thing did you transform from, to be able to eat so much. I accept defeat, but if you continue to eat so much, I really don’t have the resources to raise you, you’ll eat me poor!”

Ye Qingyu dragged the silly big headed dog away. In the shocked gazes of everyone, as if they were looking at a monster, they left the public canteen.

.....

.....

After departing from the canteen, Ye Qingyu went to the first year teaching house to find Wang Yan.

He wanted to find out clearly, just what had happened on the little loli's body.

But only when he arrived, did he find out that Wang Yan had still not returned. After asking the other teachers, Ye Qingyu discovered they also did not know where the head teacher went. With no other methods, Ye Qingyu could only temporarily return to the dormitory of the second year.

“You can really eat too much. Just what type of monster did I pick up.”

After returning to the dormitory, Ye Qingyu investigated the big headed dog thoroughly.

But he still could not see any abnormalities.

Ye Qingyu had no way of explaining, that something the size of his palm, just how was he able to consume so many things. Ye Qingyu was

possessed by a strong curiosity have an urge to dissect the stomach of this foolish dog to see what his belly was made of.

“Wu Wu!”

The silly big headed dog affectionately licked at Ye Qingyu’s palm.

The little fellow from the beginning had an countenance that he was extremely familiar with Ye Qingyu’s abode. He jumped onto the bed, lying down down with his tongue sticking out. Closing his eyes, he had a tired appearance.

After thinking of the bizarre background of this little fellow, and remembering the peculiar things that happened to him within the blood pool in the dragons den, Ye Qingyu regarded this little fellow more importantly. Today at Ascending heaven pavilion, his departing words were not entirely just a story that he had made up to threaten them. In reality, within the depths of his heart, Ye Qingyu really had some expectations. He wished that this little fellow was really some kind of Spirit beast or Divine beast.

Today since Jiang Xiaohan had intentionally pointed out the background of the silly big headed dog, Ye Qingyu could be said to have attracted some trouble.

“You are able to eat so much, I can’t afford to raise you. If some noble factions really want to rob me from you, then I’ll just let them take you. Then you can do whatever you wish, isn’t that good?” Ye Qingyu began joking.

The big headed dog gave him a supercilious look.

Ye Qingyu chuckled loudly. Taking off all his clothes apart from his underwear, he went to take a wash. After spending time in battle in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] for so long, and being bathed in the viscous pool of blood for who knows how long, his entire body emitted a bloody odour. He could not wait to wash himself thoroughly.

After he returned from his wash, he discovered the big headed dog had already curled up on his bed in the midst of slumber.

Ye Qingyu dropped a piece of clothing over the little fellow. A faint smile could not help but be shown on the corner of his lips.

The little fellow in the midst of his dreams, subconsciously rubbed his head against Ye Qingyu's palm. The warm and fuzzy feeling of this contact, caused a itchy feeling to be born within Ye Qingyu's heart.

After resting for a while, he activated the formation within his room, isolating himself and closing himself from the outside.

This time, the rewards he obtained from the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was plentiful. Not only did he obtain the [Blood of the Flame devil beast] and the [Blood of the yuan qi giant], he also obtained a large quantity of yuan qi rewards. Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative position, activating his nameless breathing technique. The yuan qi within his body began circulating rapidly. Around his entire body, there was an invisible forcefield that slowly swirled. As if it was a streaming fog barrier, it enveloped him within.

In his dantian world, another change had occurred.

He had already successfully excavated two Spirit springs. With a roar, clear Spring waters shout out, soaring hundreds of metres into the sky. Hundreds of metres around the Spring, a small lake had already been formed that was so clear, one was able to see the very bottom. It unceasingly nourished the dead Desert world within his Dantian, bringing with it surging vitality.

Of course, for the boundless and endless desert in his dantian, these two Springs was like a cup of water on a burning cart of firewood. It could not fundamentally change anything.

Apart from the number of Spirit springs deciding the future success of the martial artist, there was another theory in the yuan qi martial way. It was said that the greater the potential of the martial artist, the larger would the desert world in their dantian be. And furthermore, the desert in their dantian world would continue to grow along with the increase in strength of the martial artists. From this perspective, the common saying of the White Deer teachers 'There is no limits to the martial way' was completely correct.

From the moment he could observe inside him through inner vision, there was no way Ye Qingyu could clearly discern, exactly how large his desert dantian world was exactly.

But he did not think too deeply about such things.

At this time, during the fighting within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu had already planted the third [Yuan qi kindling]

within his Dantian world. The crystal was already translucent, buried deeply within the Dantian desert. After Ye Qingyu concentrated and entered into the state of inner vision, he could begin to excavate his third Spirit spring.

As he progressed, the difficulty of excavating the Spirit spring would increase.

Ye Qingyu did not dare delay. He took out a drop of the [Blood of the yuan qi giant]. Placing the blood that had already been consolidated into clear pearls, he kept it under his tongue. Then he activated his nameless breathing technique, beginning to absorb the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth. Coordinating with his inner yuan, he began agitating the third [yuan qi kindling], excavating the Spirit spring.

With the two previous experiences, this time around he was extremely familiar and clear about what he had to do.

With Ye Qingyu's dormitory at the centre, all the yuan qi in a radius of a thousand metres rapidly gathered together. The mist vapour took shape, visible to the naked eye, just like a violently rotating mist funnel, rapidly compressing and ultimately entering into Ye Qingyu's body. Passing through his four limbs and hundreds of bones, his internal organs. Finally it transformed into a hurricane, taking shape within the desert dantian world. It caused flashes of lightning and the roar of thunder throughout the desert dantian world, as if this magnificent world was being newly created.

The hurricane finally stabilised above the third [yuan qi kindling], congealing there without dispersing.

Ye Qingyu gradually entered into a blank state of mind, able to sense every minute change happening within his body.

“That can’t do, a little bit is still lacking.....there is not enough yuan qi from Heaven and Earth!” Ye Qingyu could clearly sense the difficulty of excavating a high number of Spirit springs. The entire Deer mountain range and Deer city was an area concentrated in yuan qi, but at this time the yuan qi gathering from the outside world was ultimately lacking.

Having no other choice, Ye Qingyu diverted the yuan qi waters from his two other Spirit springs that had already taken shape.

A little bit was still lacking.

“I can only rely on the drop of yuan qi liquid then!”

The back of Ye Qingyu’s tongue moved, and swallowed the pearl shaped blob of yuan qi blood into his stomach.



## Chapter 093 – Third Spirit Spring

---

Fundamentally the [Blood of the yuan qi giant] was consolidated from the purest yuan qi of Heaven and Earth within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. This was due to the fact that the body of the yuan qi giant was originally made from the laws of yuan qi. It's blood did not contain any impurities at all, and after ingesting it into your body, it would transform into surging yuan qi. Even if it was just a tiny drop from [Blood of the yuan qi giant], it could turn into a vast quantity of yuan qi, quickly restoring his body's needs.

Ye Qingyu swallowed the drop of [Blood of the yuan qi giant].

After the blood was in his stomach, he really could clearly feel a strong and chilly energy being activated. It flowed throughout his limbs and bones, nourishing every single area. Then it gushed like the rush of a large river, finally converging within his limbs and bones and ultimately entering the dantian world.

In a short amount of time, within the dantian desert world, the weather completely changed. Thunder and lightning erupted.

The yuan qi hurricane that had always remained above the third [yuan qi kindling] abruptly transformed. As if it was being assigned its final task, it expended the last of its life energy. Like an enormous silver dragon, it bellowed and roared. From the air, it dived down, frantically rotating. In a moments time, it had already drilled past the surface layer of the desert, advancing rapidly towards the deeply buried yuan qi kindling.

“Success ! ”

Ye Qingyu was overjoyed.

When the yuan qi silver dragon impacted against the [yuan qi kindling], it was as if the sky's thunder had incited the fire under the earth. The earth exploded, the ground cracking apart. A clear yuan spring emerged in the rumbling, breaking out from the underground desert and soaring into the sky hundred of metres high. Then it became rain and mist, full of vitality, spraying it everyone around the surroundings.

The Spirit spring had been excavated successfully.

The third Spirit spring had appeared.

Ye Qingyu's power had taken yet another step forward towards the ultimate level.

“This time the yuan qi of this Spirit spring, is much more explosive and turbulent than the first and second Spring. From the very beginning, I am reached the full Spirit spring stage.” Ye Qingyu gradually opened his eyes, a satisfied smile appearing on his face. “It seems like the fighting and yuan qi rewards within the [Boundary canyon battlefield] has stockpiled to some extent. Preparations paved the way for success. I succeeded in one strike.”

He stood up. He could feel the fluctuating yuan qi that was within body was like the violent swell of a river.

It was as if the world in front of his eyes had become ever clearer and more vibrant. After opening his eyes, he could see every minute detail within his room. Even if it was just a speck of dust on the table he was able to see the protrusion and craginess of it. When he closed his eyes, it was as if he could hear the various formations of different colours functioning on the walls, yuan qi energy flowing through.

Ye Qingyu senses were at least three or four times more sensitive than before.

This was not the only change. When Ye Qingyu gradually moved his body, he could clearly sense, that after entering into the third Spirit spring stage, every inch of his body felt far more sensitive. As long as he concentrated slightly, he could clearly discern every tiny change occurring within his body.

When Ye Qingyu awakened within the pool of blood, he had vaguely felt that the toughness of his body, because of some mysterious reason, had multiplied several times over. This gave birth to a strange impression within him, as if his will could not keep up with the growth and development of his powerful body. He could not control his body as his heart willed because his consciousness and inner yuan were still far too weak, incapable of becoming compatible with his vigorous body.

After entering the third Spirit spring stage, such a feeling disappeared to a large extent.

As every Spirit spring was opened, for the martial artist, it was tantamount to a peaceful rebirth. There were many benefits apart from purely the growth in their inner yuan. Accordingly, the martial artist's familiarity with their own body would also become clearer. The lifespan

of this martial artist, his vitality, and various other functions of the body would also strengthen.

For a martial artist to cultivate, they needed time.

They needed a large amount of time.

Normally, for a person of the one Spirit spring stage to enter the second stage, with average talent, the students needed around two years of time. Little geniuses with exceptional talent, only needed approximately a year of time —of course, noble youths with powerful family backgrounds, such as Xia Houwu, had always been nourished with Spirit herbs and pills, so therefore he did not need a year to achieve this.

And Ye Qingyu, from someone with completely no foundations to the third Spirit spring stage had taken him less than half a year of time. This sort of cultivation speed could definitely shock the whole of society. Once this news was spread out, it would definitely cause a huge sensation with the end result that Ye Qingyu would be recognised as a peerless genius.

With Ye Qingyu's present level of strength, he could directly enter the fourth year of the White Deer academy.

And even after entering the fourth year, such a strength could definitely be placed above average in the fourth year rankings.

But at this moment, Ye Qingyu was not preparing to do this.

Ye Qingyu began to have a new way of thinking.

Especially after experiencing the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu suddenly became disappointed in the entire White Deer academy.

This was not simply because of the arrogance and despotic nobles, such as Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu. It was also not only because of the fact that his strength was neither taught nor instructed by the teachers of the academy. The reason he was disappointed was because from the bodies of the noble elders, Ye Qingyu was able to smell a rich odour of rot and decay. He was able to understand that the White Deer academy today, was like a person about to die. The disease has already attacked the vitals and ingrained habits were hard to overcome. White Deer academy had lost their heart to forge ahead. Like a putrid and rotten pond, it would be very difficult to give birth to a dragon in such an environment.

These days, everything had changed. From a great academy that had ranked in the upper rankings of the ranking of the ten academies, from a holy martial place that had once nourished and raised countless experts of the country's army, White Deer academy had become the bottom of the ten academies. There was a reason for why the academy became a tool for the children of the noble families in the Deer mountain range that was used to bully others.

Ye Qingyu pondered and questioned himself. In such an academy, just what could he learn?

Even though he had regained some glory and dignity for the academy in the fourth round of the grand competition, turning around a desperate situation. But when he returned to the Ascending heaven pavilion, there were several noble elders that made a deer out to be a horse<sup>1</sup> , making

things difficult to him. They wholeheartedly wanted to him to lose his standing and fall from grace. Such a sinister intention, if he stayed for long within the White Deer academy, just what would his final ending be?

Both the old Dean and Wang Yan evidently favoured him, but they could only protect him for a period of time, could they protect him his entire life?

But if he left White Deer academy, just where could he go?

Ye Qingyu at this time, felt slightly lost.

White Deer academy was the entity that gave Ye Qingyu the opportunity to become a martial artist. But he did not feel that it was the best choice to continue in such a place.

Countless ideas flowed within his mind. Ye Qingyu found it difficult to make a choice.

In his hesitation, he slowly extended his arm. Within his palm, a bright light flickered, and the [Little Shang sword] appeared in this gentle glow within his hand. Like a throbbing pool of limpid autumn waters, the back of the sword was like the surface of a mirror, flickering with radiance shining onto Ye Qignyu's face.

Compared to the time six months ago, after experiencing the trials and hardships, Ye Qingyu's face had matured very much. His face seemed sharper, the pupil of his eyes like bright stars, eyebrow like swords, his

hair cut apart and his nose suspended firmly. His entire figure emitted an aura of thin heroic spirit.

Ye Qingyu touched the Little Shang sword in his hand.

After retrieving this Spirit weapon from the two River organisation, Ye Qingyu had always kept this Spirit weapon submerged within his first Spirit spring. After receiving the nourishment of his yuan qi, the Little Shang sword appeared increasingly resplendent. Without the slightest impurity, as if it was a pearl that was covered in dust finally being cleaned of its murkiness. The sword ultimately issued the lustre that had always belonged to the weapon.

Feeling the energy within this weapon, Ye Qingyu could easily judge that the power of the Little Shang sword was at least four times greater than the Inexorable spear.

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], despite encountering dangers several time, Ye Qingyu did not summon the Little Shang sword to not expose the existence of this Spirit weapon. One reason for this was because he did not train in any sword techniques. The other reason was that Ye Qingyu did not want to expose all the cards under his sleeve in front of all the higher ups of the academy and the elites of each year.

“I have to find a day to go to the public library of the fourth years, to see if there is a suitable sword technique for me.”

Ye Qingyu was eager to give it a try. The Inexorable spear had been crippled within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. Ye Qingyu felt this was a great pity. At the present time, the only weapon that he could

utilise was the Little Shang sword, so he had the intention to begin training in sword techniques.

As he pondered, within his dantian world, an abnormal change began happening.

The yuan qi waters within the third Spirit spring, suddenly soared into the sky, transforming into a yuan qi silver dragon. Flowing throughout his limbs and bones, it ultimately converged towards Ye Qingyu's brain. The speed was extremely quick and the process was not something Ye Qingyu could fundamentally control.

“It's come again ! ”

Ye Qingyu did not panic.

In his two previous attempts where he succeeded in excavating a Spirit spring, the bronze book in his sea of consciousness [Fiendgod titled chart] would crazily absorb the yuan qi of that spring. After doing so, it would purify the yuan qi and return it back to him. Then, the seal of some sections of the book, would be unlocked. In this time yet again, not long after the third Spirit spring had been excavated, the same thing really occurred again.

Ye Qingyu stood where he was, activating the nameless breathing technique.

In the blink of an eye, the inner yuan in his body was crazily absorbed by the bronze book.



Ye Qingyu once again returned to a death like state. His body withered away. His life force was about to snap, as if it was a candle in the wind, able to be extinguished at any moment. But it always maintained that tiniest thread of connection, close to indistinguishable. It was a very peculiar state of living death.

After a short while, the energy fluctuated within the bronze book.

A purified yuan qi to the extreme like the torrent of a mountain landslide rushed out from the book. Entering into Ye Qingyu's body, it nourished the majority of the organs that had nearly been completely withered and consumed earlier. This type of method was similar to the body refining techniques where one trained to the extreme limits. Although this type of training was difficult to undergo but the effect was exceptionally good.

Fifteen minutes later.

Ye Qingyu let out a comfortable and long exhalation.

Not only had the inner yuan in his body completely recovered, but the yuan qi was even purer and the flow was quicker. The compatibility with his body was also higher. Inner yuan could be directed wherever he wanted like it was his own arm. Practically, as long as he willed it, he could make the inner yuan do as his thoughts wished.

His will and the inner yuan was united, down to the tiniest of details.

This was a level of control over their inner yuan that only people who excavated over twenty Springs should be able to achieve. But after several fortuitous encounters and the Bronze book, Ye Qingyu had already achieved this today.

After the repayment was over, the thing Ye Qingyu was looking forward to even more happened.

Every time the repayment was complete, part of the contents within the [Fiendgod titled chart] would be unsealed. The first time was the four moves of the golden armoured king, the second was the [Sentry guard]. And this was the third time, just what kind of new page would be unsealed?

“If it is a technique for the sword, then this is the best!”

Completely submerged by expectations, he summoned the bronze book [Fiendgod titled chart].

-----

1. Misrepresenting a situation [↩](#)

## Chapter 094 – The Four Moves Of The Unmatched General

---

The contents that would be unlocked within the bronze book, just what section would it be?

Ye Qingyu eagerly flicked through the pages.

The [Fiendgod titled chart] could be divided into three sections: [Titled Fiendgods], [Titled divine weapons] and [Titled strange objects]. According to Ye Qignyu's previous experience, the only section that would display yuan qi battle techniques was the [Titled Fiendgod] part. Therefore, in his very first moment of opening the book, he immediately went to the [Titled Fiendgod] section in search for it.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu became excited.

The second row in the [Titled Fiendgod] index was no longer pale and dim. It was flickering with a faint glow, emitting an extremely disturbing dream like colour and lustre.

The section that was unlocked really was the [Titled Fiendgod].

What Ye Qingyu obtained the first time that this section was unsealed was the four moves of the golden armoured king.

This time, just what sort of battle technique would it bring Ye Qingyu?

Ye Qingyu's heart palpating furiously. According to the unsealed index, he directly flipped to this page.

Sure enough as Ye Qingyu was expecting, on the page of the bronze book there was a meticulous portrait of a figure depicted within. But this person was different from the awe inspiring presence of the golden armoured king. The portrait of this character was tall and sturdy, maroon short hair, with a determined and solemn expression. He was wearing a sky blue armour that could not be said to be grand. A broad double edged sword was stabbed into the ground, towering majestically. He was like a person charging and breaking through enemy lines, an unrivalled and unique fierce general.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, in the first instance, landed on the broad double edged sword!

Sword!

It really was a sword!

The weapon of this titled Fiendgod was a sword, then did this represent that the battle technique he could obtain this time, was likely to be a sword manual?

In a expectant mood, Ye Qingyu, he inserted yuan qi following the pattern within the page of the bronze book.

A sky blue brilliant radiance instantly shimmered from the page.

The person on the page, abruptly began moving.

“Follow my lead and charge forward!”

Indistinctly, a resolute and imposing shout sounded from next to Ye Qingyu's ear

It was the same as the first time when the illusion of the golden armoured king had rushed out from the page. This unmatched general plucked out the broad sword stabbed into the ground and held it with both hands, leaning the sword against the left of his chest. He took a step out, instantly charging out of the page and appearing in front of Ye Qingyu, then halting abruptly. Around his entire figure were flickers of green light. A strange green patten moved and fluctuated according to these bizarre lights.

An extremely strong life force surged around the projection of this person.

Ye Qingyu opened his eyes wide to carefully observe.

He knew, that this unmatched general was about to demonstrate his sword techniques.

As expected, after a short paused, both eyes of this general suddenly opened, radiance glimmering from within. He was about to make his move.

“【Soul stealing heaven strike】 ! ”

The light in the exceptional general's eyes exploded and overflowed.

He shouted loudly, still holding his sword with both hands, his body not moving yet. But very quickly, someone abnormal began to happen. The sword was raised high up and between the sword handle and the hands, there was an explosive golden radiance. As if some strange technique was being activated, this golden light pierced from his eyes, and with the sword raised high up, he charged forward.

Ye Qingyu felt his vision blurring.

He suddenly saw the originally still and calm figure of the general springing into motion. From still to striking out, he did so at such a quick speed that it was unbelievable. His entire person was like a streak of light, unfathomably stepping over a distance of space, the gale from the sword strike chopping down.

A fantastic sword will exploded, dispersing throughout.

This sword strike on the surface seemed ordinary and mediocre, but within this simple strike, there were some hard to understand meaning within that Ye Qingyu could not comprehend at this time. He could vaguely feel that this sword strike was not as simple as it first seemed.

“【Brave the whole world】 ! ”

The unmatched general loudly shouted again, the second technique

being shown.

This time his body did not move.

A golden sword qi emitted from his body. Sword qi after sword qi were like golden snakes dancing moving according to the formation pattern. In the time of a spark, there were three golden shields fluctuating and moving around his body. As if they were divine shields, they protected him within.

“This technique, the sword qi has transformed into a golden shield....this really is a rare change from normal!”

Ye Qingyu somewhat comprehended this.

The unmatched general shouted yet again.

He held the broad sword and struck sideways horizontally. At the same time, his body began rotating violently, becoming a revolving whirlwind in an instant. The sword began whistling like a strong wind, his entire person becoming a storm of swords. Densely packed sword shadows struck out in all directions, endlessly, the naked sword flickering.

And at the last moment, there were only the swords in the air. One could no longer see the figure of the body.

“An extremely strong crowd fighting technique.”

Ye Qingyu could not help but swallow a mouthful of saliva.

The third technique was evidently a move for fighting against a number of people.

This type of attack did not distinguish between the enemies. One man and one sword, transformed into an unblockable sword tornado. Everywhere it passed, everything was mercilessly sliced apart. One could imagine, if it was utilised in a true battlefield, such a technique was absolutely the nightmare of the opposing army.

Such a technique, even if used in single battle, possessed a destructive power.

“[Judgement of the sword]!”

After the general finished exhibiting the third move, he instantly demonstrated the fourth.

Both hands holding the sword, he abruptly stilled. In his eyes, there was a divine resplendent light. Gripping the sword hilt, he suddenly stabbed half the sword in to the ground, blossoming with a golden dazzling light.

Everything suddenly stopped.

There was a strange silence.



It was as if nothing had happened.

Or as if an omen that the most frightening thing was about to occur.

When Ye Qingyu was feeling slightly confused, in an instant, within the air, the sword screamed. The next instant, one was able to see that thousands tens of thousands of sword light was gathering, transforming into a incomparably large divine golden sword. It descended from mid air, exploding with a thud into the endless earth. In a moments time, the Earth broke apart, the golden light of the sword covering the sky and hiding the earth. Everything within a thousand metre was annihilated by this suddenly descending divine weapon.

It was as if a sword God had given his judgement from the heavens. For mortals it would not be possible for them to evade or block.

Ye Qingyu was completely dazed.

“Judgement of the sword? This technique is really the ultimate judgement from the sword path!”

Ye Qingyu was unable to contain his joy after seeing this.

And at this time, the peerless general retrieved the sword stabbed in the ground. Both hands holding on to the sword handle, he gradually returned to his original stance.

The wind rustled his short maroon hair. His entire person radiated with an incomparable solemnness and bravery. His tall and sturdy figure

was stable like a boulder. A man and his sword alone, was superior to a magnificent army with thousand of horses and soldiers. As if he was a returning general that always won, he stared far off into the distance. There was an indescribable feeling of justice and courage emitting from him. It could not help but make people admire him.

Blue and gold light rays of light circulated.

The projection of the unmatched general gradually faded, turning into radiance and returning back into the bronze book.

The sword techniques had been fully demonstrated.

It was the same as the golden armoured king, there were still only four moves.

Ye Qingyu was intoxicated.

The killing sword techniques of this unmatched general only had four moves that seemed simple. But every move contained profound essences and power, every move was as if it was the combination of the essences of countless sword techniques. As the saying goes, 'the heavy sword has no sharp edges, but was still skilfully made'. The four techniques did not seem exquisite at all, but was extremely practical.

Although Ye Qingyu had not trained in it yet, but only through seeing it once, he sensed that the four techniques of this unmatched general were different methods leading to the same result. Similar to the four moves of the golden armoured king —if the four moves were ingeniously

combined together, the power of it together would far exceed that of the solo techniques.

Such a destructive sword technique really made Ye Qingyu too satisfied.

Ye Qingyu could not wait to enter with his consciousness into this page of the bronze book. He gradually entered the state of blankness and forgetting himself. Doing his utmost, he began comprehending the secrets behind the four techniques of the unmatched general.

The same as last time, just as his consciousness entered into the bronze book, there were inexplicably information regarding these sword techniques that sprung into this mind. The tips and secrets behind these four second techniques, everything regarding it appeared within Ye Qingyu's thoughts, as if he had seen them tens of thousands of times before.

“The four techniques of the unmatched general, needs a method for the inner yuan to activate for it to work....”

“So before the unmatched general performs these four moves there will be green lights around his body following a strange pattern. This is not disordered and without mess, it was a close and intimate method for training in the way of the sword. Not only can it be used to activate these four techniques, but it can also allow the wounds of the person training in this to recover faster. Once the battle is finished, under such a method, the recovery rate of the person trained in this technique, will definitely be faster than his opponent many times over!”

“Really, the four sword techniques is not as simple as it first seems.

Especially the first move, [Soul stealing heaven strike], if it manages to hit the opponent it can temporarily freeze the inner yuan of the opponent. This will cause them to be unable to use their own yuan qi battle techniques.....The temporary freezing of their yuan qi, in the match between experts, can decide the victor and loser in an instant!”

Vast training information and the power of the battle techniques appeared in Ye Qingyu’s mind

He pondered over them in detail.

Time, in Ye Qingyu’s cultivation state where he forgot himself, flowed past quickly.

In the blink of an eye, three days had passed.....

.....

Zi-ya !

Ye Qingyu opened the door of his courtyard, walking out.

He had isolated himself in training for four days already with great results. Now, he had finally ended this period of solitary training and left the confines of his room. Breathing deep breaths of icy but fresh air, it made him instantly feel reinvigorated.

“Eh? It’s going to snow?”

Gloomy clouds still covered the sky, with the sun unable to be seen.

Ye Qingyu could feel a coldness at the back of his hand. When he closely examined, he discovered that it was a snowflake falling down.

Was this the first snow of the winter season?

Ye Qingyu let out a long sigh.

His mood, suddenly became the same as the clouds in the sky, gloomy.

The winter season of the Deer mountain range was both cold and long. Every year, the winter season was the most difficult season for the poor commoners. A snow would continue on for at least tens of days, the cold and hunger taking away the life of countless people. After entering the winter period, the security and stability of Deer city would become much worse and chaotic. Everywhere there would be fighting and killing occurring. Many people pushed to the edges by the cold, under the threat of their death, became crazy and mad. In such a time, even if there was a stale bun, it could incite a fight at any time that would reap away the lives of over tens of people.

## Chapter 095 – The Change Within The City

---

Before Ye Qingyu had even entered the White Deer academy, he had always disliked the winter.

The noble youths could wear warm soft furs and have snowball fights on the snow covered earth, enjoying the joy of the childhood on winter days. But children of the poor, in such a season, faced a test of life and death.

Ye Qingyu had also once been beset by hunger and cold.

He had seen with his own eyes that his little friends that he had made during the summer, in the long lasting winter day becoming icy corpses because of the cold and hunger and the ensuing fighting. All their dreams and visions for the future, was mercilessly buried along with their icy corpse within this field of white snow.

In these long four years of time, Ye Qingyu also did not have it easy. Losing the protection of his parents and being deserted by everyone close to him, Ye Qingyu also passed by this winter season with terrible difficulty. If not for the nameless breathing technique that his father had left behind, allowing Ye Qingyu to withstand the icy cold he would have long froze to death. Further to this, he became someone possessing herculean strength, with very little people willing to incite him. If not for this, it was likely that Ye Qingyu would become similar to many poor little children, dying in this long winter.

Even if Ye Qingyu had finally become a student of White Deer academy,

possessing an even greater strength and could escape from the suffering of this long lasting winter, he still hated the winter.

“Because the winter season, is a season of death!”

Ye Qingyu sighed with sorrow.

Within five minutes of time, the snowflakes in the air that were floating down became more and more, larger and larger. Very quickly, this chaotic white began to shroud the Earth. Every near and far scenery, was as if it was covered by a layer of white moonlight, an indescribable chill in the air.

Ye Qingyu suddenly wanted to return to the Ye mansion to have a look.

He did not know if Qin Lan, Tang San and the others had prepared well for this long lasting winter.

After having such an intention, he did not tarry any longer.

After going to the second year administration area for a leave of absence, he headed straight outside of the White Deer academy.

As he passed by the first year area, Ye Qingyu went in search of Wang Yan again, wanting to enquire about the matters about the little loli Song Xiaojun. But there was still nothing to be gained. After the last round between the two academies had ended, four days had already passed. As expected, within the fifth and final round, White Deer academy completely and utterly lost. The Azure Phoenix people, who had lost in

the fourth round, released all their rage and anger in the final round of the grand competition. White Deer academy lost tragically, not even able to obtain a single kill.

And from that day onwards, the head teacher of the first year Wang Yan did not appear within the academy again.

Ye Qingyu asked several first year teachers that could be counted as familiar, but the teachers still did not know where Wang Yan was nor how to contact her. And as for the matters regarding Song Xiaojun, after asking several people, he still did not find out anything.

In such a situation, worry began to sprout from Ye Qingyu's heart.

As he was turning things over in his mind, he came to the gate of the White Deer academy. As he handed over his absent nameplate, after confirming and walking outside of the gate, a person slowly walked towards him. If it was not the head teacher of the first year Wang Yan, who else could it be?

Ye Qingyu did not expect, that he would bump into Wang Yan in such a location

This was really travelling far and wide to look for something but finding it simply in the end.

Within the snowy wind, this head teacher of the first year seemed to be in a haste. Smoke and dust covered her body.



Her face was somewhat pale and pallid, making Ye Qingyu become curious.

With Wang Yan's strength, she had long reached the stage where dust could not come near her. Not to mention White Deer academy, even if in the entire Deer city, her strength was enough to rank in the top ten. She was an absolute expert, her inner yuan deep and profound, vigorous vitality and a bubbling bloodline. Even if she continuously battled for ten days and ten nights, she would not display any signs of tiredness. But in this short five days of time, she had obviously become tired and drained. Just what had occurred?

At the same time, Wang Yan also suddenly saw Ye Qingyu.

But she only exchanged a glance, and brushed past his shoulder.

Ye Qingyu was about to turn around and say something, when he heard Wang Yan's voice clearly sounding beside his ear: "I know what you want to ask. Xiaojun is fine, it's just that a little condition has appeared within her body. In the near future, something big is going to happen within the city. Remember, no matter what happens, you must remain outside from this and not get involved....if you want to see the little loli, then three days later, come to the [Mist Residence] in the southern district."

Secret sound transfer.

Using a vast inner yuan, and following a secret method of formation, it allowed one to compress their voice into a straight line. This could be controlled freely and could be used to enter in someone's ear, with the people beside the target none the wiser —this was only something that

experts with great inner yuan could do. At the very least, with Ye Qingyu's current three Spirit springs, it was not something he could achieve.

As the voice finished speaking, Wang Yan had already disappeared within the entrance of the academy.

In the vast and obscure snowy wind, her shadow was gone.

Ye Qingyu paused slightly, but did not turn back in the end. Not displaying any signs of abnormality, his footsteps did not stop but continued onwards within the snowy wind, heading to the Northern city district. His body covered in a snowy layer, he was no different from the other people walking in the streets.

But in reality, in his heart, he was completely shaken.

Wang Yan's words were short, but it exposed a tremendous amount of information. Firstly, she seemed to be under the surveillance of some sort of faction so she could not stop and speak with him. And a problem had occurred on the little loli's body so that was the reason she did not appear in these past days. And lastly, Wang Yan said that there would very quickly be something big going on.....

This seemed to be the most important piece of information.

What kind of major event?

That even Wang Yan would be afraid of the consequences?

Ye Qingyu's heart was full of questions, but he did not say anything at all and arrived at the Ye mansion within the Northern district.

Very quickly, the servants passed on the message that he had arrived. By the time Ye Qingyu had reached the anteroom, Qin Lan and Little Grass with faces filled with joy were there to welcome him. Their complexions compared to what they were like previously was so much better, the entire atmosphere in the mansion especially cheerful and light hearted.

“Brother Qingyu, you’ve returned. Little Grass have missed you.”

The little girl came bounding into Ye Qingyu's embrace.

Ye Qingyu intimately patted the forehead of the little girl. With a laugh: “Haha, our little princess is becoming more and more beautiful. But why have you not gone to the Taoxuan pavilion to practice martial arts? Has Little Grass been slacking off?”

“I haven't. The masters have complimented on me on my talent with rapid advancement. Today I have specially asked for an absence from the masters, to come and celebrate mother's birthday.” Little Grass stuck out her tongue and said laughingly: “Brother Qingyu, you must have come back here specially to come and pass mother's birthday with her, isn't that right? Hehe, where's your birthday present?”

Ye Qingyu was taken back and suddenly realised, that today was Qin Lan's birthday.

“That’s enough Little Grass, don’t annoy your brother Qingyu. You are a big girl now, you should be a little more ladylike.....” A blessed smile was on Qin Lan’s face. In these days, even in her dreams she would smile. Her life had completely turned on its head. Seeing that Little Grass could live on carefree and without troubles, as a mother, this made her happier than anything else.

After entering the main hall and speaking a few words, a person arriving from outside could be heard.

It was the head supervisor Tang San. He had returned.

“Young master, you’ve returned.” Tang San said laughingly and paying his respects. “I was at the [Lianfeng smithery] taking stock, when Qin Lan sent people to find me, saying old man Ye have returned, I was hurrying to come back....”

Ye Qingyu gave this person a light kick. “What old man Ye? I’m only fourteen years old, you say it like I’m seventy or eighty. You little kid, your mouth is becoming more and more slippery. It seems like I have to consider carefully, whether my decision to make you the head supervisor was correct.”

Tang San quickly had an expression of someone begging for forgiveness. “Young master, I was wrong.”

Everyone in the main hall began laughing.

In these days, everyone began to understand Tang San's personality. Apart from having a slippery mouth, his character was extremely good. The way he did things was fair and serious, with definite ideas. He was someone with ability.

After the incident in Heavenly fragrance restaurant, all the properties such as Heavenly fragrance restaurant, Taoxuan pavilion, Lianfen smithery, and Murong shop once again returned to the Ye family. There were over a thousand things to do. Even a well experienced supervisor needed to spend an immense amount of effort to put everything back into business. Tang San was only a young man, without much previous experience. But after withstanding several days without sleep, he could be said to have settled everything down correctly.

In reality, only someone like Ye Qingyu who took a off hand approach in managing things, would be so ridiculous as to give the right to handle every matter to someone like Tang San with zero experience. If it was another person they would definitely spend a large amount of money to recruit a old person with rich experiences to handle such matters.

Tang San was a extremely determined youth with ambition.

He knew such an opportunity did not come easily. In these days, he nearly did not rest or sleep. Everyday he would only take a break for a short amount of time, with the rest of his time dedicated to rushing about between these properties. After expending a great deal of mental and physical effort, he finally manage to put everything back into shape. Today, he was just checking the stock of [Lianfeng smithery] distinguishing between the old stock and the bad stock. Then Qin Lan had sent people to tell him that Ye Qingyu had returned.

“Young master, the book of accounts is here. Last time, this account was not complete. But this time, I have managed to sort everything properly. There is the list of employees of the different businesses and I’ve also marked down the places that needs your personal directions....” After joking around, Tang San became serious.

Ye Qingyu had a headache once again.

“Eh, in future, you don’t need to report such things to me.” Ye Qingyu massaged his head, distressed. After pausing, he said again: “In the areas that you need my instructions, just pass it to Aunt Lan, or you could even give it to Little Grass to have a look.”

Tang San had a even greater headache. “This.....”

“Fine, fine, lets not speak about this. Today is Aunt Lan’s birthday, we should celebrate well.” Ye Qingyu waved his hand, very quickly diverting the subject. “Speaking about this, this is my first time celebrating Aunt Lan’s birthday, I must treat it importantly. Little San, do you have any good ideas?”

Tang San began to beam with joy: “Originally I wanted to arrange this matter in a grand fashion. But Aunt Lan did not allow it, saying that the matters in the mansion had just settled down and that young master was still studying at the White Deer academy with a large expenditure. She wanted to restrict our spending and did not allow us to make a fuss over this. But since young master has spoken then rest assured, Little San I will definitely handle this matter beautifully.”

Qin Lan said in a rush: “Xiaoyu, I really don’t need it. The mansion has

only just stabilised....”

Ye Qingyu waved his hands. “Don’t refuse it anymore. It is namely because our mansion has just stabilised, that we need such a joyful event to allow everyone to relax. I think that for the entire Ye mansion, this is a good thing....Haha, listen to me, this matter is settled.”

“Wooooo, brother Xiaoyu is the best.” Little Grass hopped up and down in joy.

Qin Lan could not say anything more, and could only stand by the side and constantly pester Tang San to not spend too much.

There was an excited smile on Ye Qingyu’s face.

Perhaps this was one of the reason that he had suddenly wished to return to the Ye mansion. Only here, could he experience and sense the care of a family. Only here could he experience that warm affection. For the Ye Qingyu where both his parents had died, such an experience was far too rare for him.

Tang San rushed out with a smile to take care of matters.

And at this time, suddenly a clap of thunder sounded from outside the main hall. Silver radiance brightened the entire Deer city, and the gloomy clouds instantly disappeared. An indescribable energy undulated and engulfed the space between Heaven and Earth.

Then, the Ye family mansion began quaking and shaking.

“What’s happening? Could it be the Earth dragon turning over?”

“Quickly go to the courtyard, this building is about to collapse.....”

Everyone had pale faces. The main hall began violently shaking. Tiles began falling and cracks appeared on a pillar to the west.

In the first instant, ye Qingyu transformed into a shadow, his inner yuan activated. Everyone in the main hall, including Qin Lan, Little Grass, and several dumbfounded female servants was brought outside by him.



## Chapter 096 – The Female Sword Immortal, Wang Jianru

---

Within the courtyard, everyone was still in a panicked state.

The violent shaking of the ground stopped. In reality, that fierce vibration had only lasted for a second.

“Just what is happening?” Qin Lan embraced Little Grass. This was her first time seeing such a great commotion. Many people were affected and frightened by this, rushing out from their rooms. There was an old servant that had managed to fall and break his scalp in his panic. Apart from this, there were not any other major injuries.

Everyone was still in a panicked state.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to look at the sky, his gaze becoming serious.

It was not an earthquake.

Nor was it the wrath of heavens.

Within the air, there were martial experts fighting.

In the gloomy air, black clouds roiled, as if the galaxy had flipped around. It nearly enveloped the entire Deer city below. Within the black clouds, there were streaks after streaks of silver lightning constantly

piercing the cloud layer. Terrifying yuan qi turbulence roiled through the world. The black clouds surged like the layer of the sea, with an indescribable terror and strangeness.

They could only see the aura but not the people.

They were true experts of the martial way.

Under the activation of their inner yuan, through their will, they could hide the skies and cover the earth, flipping the heavens and trampling on the oceans. They were like gods.

Boom!

The sound like the collapse of a mountain sounded in the air.

Within Deer city, many people felt as if a fierce steel hammer was struck next to their ears. The vibration caused blood to leak from their nose and mouth, the horrifying sound waves as if they were physical objects. Transparent pattern emanated throughout the air, destroying all.

Ye Qingyu's heart madly pulsated as he watched.

A frightening power.

Even though Deer city was within the borders of Snow county it could at least be counted as a city important for military affairs. There were a five thousand strong army of the Snow country's elite, and within the

different areas of the city there were the reinforcement of formations. Although it could not be said to be as protected as a wall made of metal and surrounded by a moat of boiling water<sup>1</sup>, it was at least highly defended. It had always been forbidden for martial experts to fly above Deer city.

But at this time, both parties that were in the midst of battle in the air, not only flew above Deer city but also fought and struck out. The ripples from the battle nearly enveloped the entire Deer city. In some places within the city, cracks had begun to appear and buildings started to collapse.

What kind of person, would be so uncaring about the consequences?

The reason that the Ye mansion was shuddering and the buildings were beginning to fracture, was due to the energy waves from the two fighting within the air. Thankfully they only exchanged blows for a short instant, or else there would be injuries and death that would be hard to control within the mansion.

At this time, everyone within Deer city looked above in the skies in shock and fear.

In the mansions of some noble families, the structures already began to emit different colours of light/ Like a forcefield covering these different mansions it prevented the terrifying energy ripples from spreading past this barrier – this was a sign that their rune formations had activated.

In the direction of the White Deer academy, there were dazzling multi coloured light beams, everyone one of them tens of metre wide. At the

same time, from different directions around the academy, these beams soared from the different structures as if they were madly dancing dragons in the air. Entwining together, it combined together hundreds of metre high into a light shield, protecting the entire White Deer academy within.

Sacred formation protection!

This was the strongest formation that the White Deer academy possessed. From the beginning of the academy, this was created by the Gongfeng\* organisation of the royal family. In these sixty years since it was placed, it had undergone countless renovations and changes. It had gone through four or five generations of formation geniuses that the academy had cultivated themselves, reinforcements and improvements constantly being made. This was a formation that was the consolidated efforts of countless people. It was said that it could withstand directly the full power strike of someone of the Bitter Sea stage and above.

“Don’t run everywhere. Gather together within the courtyard, don’t panic!”

Ye Qingyu used the brass heroic badge to activate the formation protection of the Ye mansion – of course , this only reinforced the structure of the buildings. It did not have a similar effect as the noble families, with energy forcefields formation surrounding them.

After arranging everything, Ye Qingyu’s figure flashed, jumping directly on the highest roof of the entire mansion.

After seeing the reactions of the White Deer academy, Ye Qingyu

realised that the situation was even more serious than he had imagined.

After jumping higher, he discovered that in the Northern military barracks, there were rays after rays of yuan qi light soaring in the sky. Similar to fire beacons lingering in the air, the scarlet red covered the entire military barracks. Evidently the experts within the army had also released their own power and the formation of the army had begun to activate.

The factions within the city, was as if they were facing a great enemy.

“Just what has happened?”

Ye Qingyu was completely confused.

Vaguely, he suddenly thought back to the words of Wang Yan. That there would be big things that were going to happen within the city....could it be that this was what she meant? The two parties that were fighting, just who were they? Even the different factions within the city only defended, why did they not come out and stop this battle?

Xiu!

Within the air, a ray of sword light shone.

Ye Qingyu's eyes burned with a radiance in this moment, his entire consciousness submerged into this sword light.

A hard to describe sword.

A sword that could seize Heaven and Earth.

A sword that exceeded the thoughts of countless people of the martial path.

He could only see the roiling black clouds, as if they were paper thin, be destroyed by this terrifying sword strike that could cut apart Heaven and Earth. It sliced apart these clouds directly through the middle, then like a whale absorbing water, the black clouds completely dispersed.

At this moment, countless people had a sensation ——

As if the sky itself was sliced apart by this sword strike.

The cloud layers disappeared.

The snow had all fallen.

The originally inky black sky, suddenly became clear. They were a dazzling blue from the entire sky, not even a shred of a cloud left to be seen. The golden colour of the sun shone from the flat line in the west, raising the temperature of the coldness of these past days in Deer city. It was as if spring had returned.

The battle temporarily ended.

“Wang Jianru, you’ve really managed to master the [Splitting heaven sword will]” A incomparably shocked voice sounded out from a black ray of light, reverberating through the city. “Haha, but this time you can’t manage to kill me. I will return, I won’t just give up. The girl of darkness has already appeared in Deer city, her blood has been awakened. No one can block us, what does it matter if we slaughter the entire Deer city? Hahaha!”

Before he had finished.

The black ray of light disappeared in the South west direction.

But this arrogant and domineering voice, as if it was the clap of thunder, reverberated throughout the skies, not fading for a long time.

The terrifying ripples left by this battle stilled fluctuated within the skies. As if it was a heavy ancient mountain, it pressed down, stifling the hearts of everyone. Even if it was a normal person who did not practice the martial way, they felt their breathing becoming difficult. A suffocating sensation that caused the hearts to fill with fear.

Ye Qingyu still looked up at the skies.

Not only Ye Qingyu. In this instant, countless martial experts were still staring into the sky.

Because with the skies, there was one person with long hair and caressing a sword floating in the air.

A woman.

A woman wearing a mask.

Her black coloured long hair flowed with the wind. Her silver mask was like flowing quicksilver on her face. She had a palace white long dress. Lowering her head, her left hand dainty like jade, she lightly held the long sword in her hand that was shining with light. As if she was thinking of something, or as if she was remembering something. As if she was a mysterious lone fairy.

The wind blew past.

The dress moved but the person did not. An indescribable elegance.

This female immortal, was one of the parties of that great battle. She was the person that ultimately sliced apart the roiling black clouds.

His mind flickered with the images of that battle that shook the heavens. Ye Qingyu's heart was filled with shock but also a hard to suppress excitement. There was an inexpressible stimulation given to Ye Qingyu by this fight, as if it was a battle between deities and devils. He swore silently, that there would be a day, that he would also reach such a level.

The next instant——

The space in the skies seemed to distort slightly, then everything returned to normal.



The female immortal, Wang Jianru's figure disappeared, nowhere to be seen.

The battle that had shaken the entire Deer city, that had made every faction feel as if they were facing a great enemy, ended just like that.

Ye Qingyu looked around everywhere before jumping back down. He could see that the radiance from all directions had disappeared, the different formations having stop functioning. Looking in the Northern military leader, he could see that the beacon like lights were dispersing, the army formation also stopping....

The atmosphere of hostility gradually faded.

From the surface ,it was as if everything within White Deer city had become peaceful again.

But Ye Qingyu was clear in his heart, that the waves caused by this battle had just begun.

The white dressed Wang Jianru, just who was she?

And the person who had lost, that black ray of light, just who was he?

Before leaving, the black ray of light had revealed too much information. This was a heavy information that was enough to shake the entire Deer mountain range

Questions after question was asked in Ye Qingyu's heart. Jumping down from the roof, he returned to the mansion.

"Little Yu..." Qin Lan and the others looked at Ye Qingyu nervously.

Ye Qingyu gave them a smile. "It's nothing, it's only a struggle between the great people, it has nothing to do with us. Everyone has no need to worry, just go back to what you were doing. Today I have to celebrate Aunt Lan's birthday, everyone quickly go prepare. Even if the sky falls down, there will be people taller than us to support it. There are over a hundred noble families within the cities with an army numbering over the thousands. If someone dares to cause trouble within the city, they will definitely be slaughtered by the army.

The servants quickly dispersed, rushing to prepare the birthday feast.

After speaking with Qin Lan and Little Grass, Ye Qingyu returned to his own little courtyard and began training.

The nameless breathing technique, was Ye Qingyu's homework that could not be budged.

Nourishing his own body, absorbing yuan qi of Heaven and Earth, nurturing the three Spirit springs within his desert world was the most foundation method of the martial way.

Practicing techniques but not training your foundation was something extremely ill advised. In the end, all would become futile.

No matter how great the battle technique, it needed the foundation of a strong inner yuan.

Without a strong inner yuan, even if a divine battle technique was in front of you, it was only the reflection of the moon on water.

Ye Qingyu once again entered into a familiar state.

And at this time, the silly dog Big Head had awakened. Wriggling from Ye Qingyu's embrace and seeing that Ye Qingyu was training, he did not disturb him. He began inspecting the little courtyard, sniffing and smelling every little thing. Who knows what he was looking for, he seemed curious about everything.....

-----

1. term for talented people that organisations liked to keep around ↩

## Chapter 097 – The Curses Emitting From The Taoxuan Pavillion

---

Nothing else happened today.

The entire Ye family mansion that night was in the midst of celebration. Tang San had arranged the birthday feast very well; although it could not be counted as extravagant, but everyone in the mansion could share in the joy. Everyone was able to sense the special treatment Ye Qingyu lavished upon the Qin mother and daughter, completely treating them as the masters of this mansion.

Lanterns began to be lit.

The people who had celebrated for half the day began to disperse.

In the main hall, there were only Ye Qingyu and Tang San.

Seeing the unhappy expression of the young master, the head supervisor Tang San knew deeply that Ye Qingyu was in a bad mood from being forcefully held behind by him. But as the head supervisor, he knew that there were some matters that needed the personal confirmation of Ye Qingyu before it could be done. He must explain in detail the properties of the Ye family to Ye Qingyu.

Under the oil lamp.

Tang San patiently and earnestly explained.

Ye Qingyu yawned, waving his hand. “I’m really tired, isn’t it just someone causing trouble at the properties. I’ll accompany you tomorrow to have a look. Those people with no eyes, if they’re really looking to die, then I’ll crush them....Fine, are you satisfied now?”

Tang San painfully smiled.

No matter what the group there would be struggles in the beginning. Ye Qingyu when taking back the Murong Shop, Lianfeng smithery and Taoxuan pavilion could be said that these properties were returning to their rightful owner. But without the stabilisation effect of Luo Jin and the others, the surrounding forces began to show indications of acting out. Where there was people, there would be conflict. These properties began to receive the challenge and provocation of others.

Even if it was not a direct confrontation, even if they hid and did things behind the scenes, it would be troublesome. It was enough for a person with zero experience like Tang San to become troubled.

After Ye Qingyu had regained these properties, Tang San had managed to largely sort the business relationships out. But the business of these properties, could not be compared to what they were previously. Apart from the movement of employees, another factor contributing to this was due the sabotage of several other competing companies.

“I’ve also discovered, that the character of Luo Jin and the others did not change. Under the support of some noble families, they are hiding behind them and conducting quite a lot of bad deeds against us. These people were once the managers of these properties and are familiar with

the situation. We must prepare to defend ourselves.” Tang San said enigmatically.

Ye Qingyu continuously yawned. “Fine, fine. They are just a couple of clowns, tomorrow I’ll settle them all at once.”

Seeing Ye Qingyu’s absent minded countenance, Tang San felt as if he had punched into cotton, powerless and with no way to exert force. Experiencing more things meant that he had greater awareness of the whole situation. Tang San currently clearly understood to what extent the waters within Deer city had been muddied. Inwardly the factions and forces were tied together in twisted roots and intertwined joints, forming countless links. Tang San was slightly worried, that Ye Qingyu’s careless attitude would be utilised against him by some craft and cunning old fellows.

“Since young master already has a plan in his heart, then I’ll first leave.” Tang San said helplessly.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, about to say goodnight then suddenly thought of something. Beckoning with his hand: “That’s right, Little San have you heard of the [Mist residence] in the southern district before?”

Tang San thought over this carefully, then shook his head.

“Tomorrow send some people to find out about this place.” Ye Qingyu was planning something.

Tang San nodded, turning to leave.

Ye Qingyu suddenly said again. "Leave it, don't send people. This matter, just pretend you haven't heard of it."

"I understand." Tang San was taken aback but did not ask why, turning to leave.

Under the pale yellow light of the lamp, Ye Qingyu sat on the chair, holding his chin deep in thought.

Since Wang Yan had warned him to not involve himself into the conflict, then this represented that danger would appear. His relationship with Wang Yan in the academy could not be counted as intimate, but this head teacher of the first year had time and time again taken care of him. If he entered into this vortex, then perhaps there were some people that were currently secretly observing him.

If he allowed Tang San to investigate the [Mist residence], then there was a possibility of involved the Ye mansion into this matter.

After considering for a bit, Ye Qingyu decided to personally investigate that area by himself.

Returning to the [Determination garden], Ye Qingyu continued to train.

The yuan qi within the courtyard began to converge without any signs or sound.

.....

.....

The second day.

As Ye Qingyu's dawn training ended, Qin Lan had already prepared the morning meal. She directed a female servant to bring hot water, and after demon king Ye had washed, everyone joyously finished breakfast. Little Grass went to the Taoxuan pavilion to practice martial arts.

There were approximately six months till the next time that White Deer academy would recruit students. The foundation of Little Grass was weak, therefore she must put in an even greater effort than other people. The little girl had experienced hardship before, so she was determined and resolute in becoming a martial artist like brother Qingyu. She was especially enthusiastic. Everyday without the need from a reminder from Qin Lan, she went by herself to train in the Taoxuan pavilion, extremely hard working.

After they had finished breakfast, Tang San arrived.

Ye Qingyu changed into a new pair of clothes. Both of them left the Ye mansion and headed to survey and inspect the Ye properties around them.

After the battle had ended, another layer of snow had landed within the city. Floating snow was still descending from the skies, and the thickness of the snow was enough to swallow someone's knee. Thankfully



on the main road, the accumulated snow had been tidied. The places that had not been cleaned were trodden on till they were like ice. The snow did not melt, making it seem as if the city was much more cleaner.

Everywhere they looked, the scenery was wrapped in a plain unadorned silver white. The city was particularly beautiful.

There were not many people on the streets.

Perhaps it was the battle in the skies that had caused too great a shock. Normal people did not dare to appear on the various paths. On the contrary to this, the soldiers of the army patrols were often seen. Their numbers seemed much more greater than usual. On the way, Ye Qingyu and Tang San, in less than half an hour of time, had already passed five or six squadrons. Their blades and spears were glimmering with light, heavily armoured, as if they were about to face their greatest foe.

Ye Qingyu was also interrogated by several of these patrols.

Thankfully due to the nameplate of the White Deer academy, it was easily solved.

In the entire afternoon, Ye Qingyu under the direction of Tang San, first went to inspect Murong shop, Heavenly fragrance restaurant and the Miaoyu temple. He finally had a clear understanding of these properties.

The Murong shop mainly operated in the business of tea leaves, Dim Sum and fabric. He did not know what his father was thinking, the areas

of this business was disorganised and chaotic. It seemed more like a general store. Heavenly fragrance was a wine shop and a restaurant. And as for the Miaoyu temple, it mainly operated in jade tools and jade accessories. These three average sized shops, each of them had around five employees to look after it. Although the business could not be counted as spectacular, as the land was owned by the Ye family, there was no need to pay rent. They could barely manage to maintain a situation where they made neither a profit nor a loss.

Ye Qingyu was completely ignorant in regards to these businesses. He only showed himself to heighten morale.

After an entire morning of watching flowers from horseback<sup>1</sup>, they had only managed to go through three properties.

During the time of noon, finally more and more people began appearing on the streets.

After eating something in the Heavenly fragrance restaurant, Tang San brought Ye Qingyu to the Taoxuan pavilion.

Taoxuan pavilion was a martial arts dojo. In the past, Ye Qingyu's mother had personally taught and accepted students and this establishment was exceptionally prosperous. It was enough for it to place in the top three of the Northern district. It was said that there were quite a few who had come to challenge the dojo and every single one of them was beaten till they returned from where they came from. The fame of the [Hundred flower sword] also expanded as a result of this.

It could be said that this dojo was crystallised effort of Ye Qingyu's

mother.

It was a pity that after Ye Qingyu's parents had died in the battle to safeguard the city, without the stabilisation effect of an expert, the business of the dojo fell over a thousand metres. Afterwards, Nie Yan extorted and schemed the business away and managed to occupy the Taoxuan pavilion. But although he was crafty, his strength could not be compared at all to Ye Qingyu's mother. Taoxuan pavilion did not regain its former radiance.

Ye Qingyu stood at the entrance to the Taoxuan pavilion.

He slowly lifted his head to look.

The willow doors nailed up by the copper nails were brushed black, dignified and solemn. The personally written words of Ye Qingyu's father 'Taoxuan pavilion' were hung on a board above. After experiencing so many years of wind and rain, the sign already emitted an atmosphere where great changes had occurred and was mottled in appearance. And on both sides of the gate, was a low wall that was said to be personally constructed by Ye Qingyu's father. In the time of summer, it was crawling with moss but now it was covered in white snow.

The location of the martial arts dojo was in the outskirts, but it occupied nearly thirty acres of space. The little practice grounds was surrounded by clay walls, around twenty acres. Behind that, was the martial hall of the Taoxuan pavilion and several other buildings.

Out of all the properties that he owned, Ye Qingyu was most sentimental towards the Taoxuan pavilion.

Because when he was small, his mother had often brought him here.

Every grass and wood here, every stone and tile, would make Ye Qingyu remember the joyous days where his parents were beside him.

But namely for this reason, Ye Qingyu very rarely appeared here.

He did not want to recall the memories of his parents' death.

In this short period of time, Ye Qingyu was silently standing in front of the entrance of the Taoxuan pavilion. After participating in the grand competition in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], he had always felt a stifling pressure in his mood. Perhaps it was the despicable actions Xia Houwu, perhaps it was the academy's reaction that made him disappointed, perhaps it was the worry over the little loli, or perhaps it was seeing this scenery that made him remember his passed away parents.....

In the end, Ye Qingyu could not discern why he felt this way.

Ye Qingyu felt like he was a volcano about to erupt.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu could hear, behind the black doors there was sounds of intense fighting, indistinct curses and cries....

The colour of Tang San's face, instantly changed.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything, entering.

Behind the wall on the brick little practice grounds, two groups of people were facing off.

There were around five or six people in one group, wearing red coloured armour and posturing in an imposing and violent manner. They had an aggressive appearance and should be people of respectable strength. The person leading them was a sixteen or seventeen young man. Oily head and a powdered face, the smell of cosmetics enough to assault someone's nostrils. He had a jade folding fan in his hand, extreme arrogance between his eyebrows and a cold smile on his face.

Opposite.

The other crowd was evidently much shabbier, with disorganised clothing and the majority with patches.

“Sun Yuhu, just what is the meaning of this? Why have you allowed people to injure junior brother Wang?” A young man with coarse clothing loudly shouted in rage.

Next to him, several young people were supporting an injured man around twenty years of age. His chest had been struck, the palm print evident. His chest had directly sunken in, and blood flowed from his nose and mouth. His injuries were not light, and he had already fainted with a weak vitality.

“Haha, it was decided it was a spar so one must therefore use their full

efforts. Within battle, blades and spears have no eyes. Since my people have injured Wang Ying by mistake, this can only be blamed on the fact that his skills are not enough.” The powdered face of the young man, Sun Yuhu had contempt, not caring in the slightest.

“You....we agreed we would stop at first contact. You intentionally did this, this is too much.” The coarse clothed young man’s face turned red.

-----

1. Observing but not doing anything ↵

## Chapter 098 – One Must Pay For A Murder With Their Life

---

Sun Yufu shot a warning glare at Ye Qingyu and Tang San. With a gaze filled with provocation, he evaluated both of them up and down. Waving his hands: “Eh, there’s really two people here that wants to learn from you guys? There is still people coming to study from such a ragged dojo? Are you two idiots? Quickly scram, if I see you coming here again then I’ll break your legs apart.”

Ye Qingyu did not speak.

He expressionlessly went towards the young injured man that everyone was supporting.

“Sigh, not listening to my advice. It seems that this little thing did not place any importance on my words. Hey, Lu Qiang, go and persuade this little brat who has no eyes....” Seeing that Ye Qingyu completely ignored him, Sun Yufu became angry and gave a sign to the burly man wearing red armour next to him. He placed heavy emphasis on the words ‘persuade’.

Lu Qiang quickly understood his meaning.

The stout man cracked his fingers, his armour clanking and squeaking. With a sinister smile, he walked towards Ye Qingyu, glaring at him with warning from high above. Coldly smiling, “Little kid, you refuse a toast but is forced to drink in the end<sup>1</sup>, you....”

Ye Qingyu's hand slapped out.

Pak !

Accompanied by the crisp and clear slapping sound, the muscular man around one metre and ninety centimetres tall could not even react. He suffered the full force of the strike, half his face swollen up like a pig's head. Like a kite whose string had been cut, he rotated in mid air, landing on the other side of the earthen wall.

There were cold gasps of shock.

The contempt and uncaring expression gradually faded from Sun Yuhu's face.

“You...who are you?”

He stealthily took a step backwards, retreating until he was amongst his crowd of guards.

Ye Qingyu did not reply to his words but walked in front of the person that was injured. He placed his palm on the young man's chest, sensing, then his face darkened. The injury he had sustained was extremely malicious. It seemed as if it was only a palm strike on the surface, but in reality a hidden force had been emitted that destroyed the inner organs of this young man. Even if there was Spirit medicine or the like, this young man's injuries could not be healed. The dead could not be brought back to life.



“Is he a student of Taoxuan pavilion?”

Ye Qingyu stood up, looking at another youth with coarse clothing.

This young man hesitated for a bit.

“This is our young master, he’s not a outsider. Lin Tian, if your young master ask, then just answer.” Tang San quickly introduced Ye Qingyu’s identity. He could faintly feel that Ye Qingyu’s mood was not particularly well. He feared that this Taoxuan pavilion student would incite Ye Qingyu’s anger.

The young person called Lin Tian was slightly taken aback.

He had long heard of the fact that the Taoxuan pavilion had returned to the Ye family. But this new young master was extremely mysterious, and had never appeared before them in these past days. The students with the dojo had no idea what the young master looked like with absolutely no impression of him. But for many students the changes occurring within the dojo, could be counted as a fortunate occurrence so they had positive feelings towards this new master.

Seeing him today, who would have guessed that the young master would be a teenager that was fresh and inexperienced.

“So it was the young master.” Lin Tian clasped his hands in greeting, then said: “We are the students of Taoxuan pavilion, this is junior brother Wang Ying.” He pointed at the young man who had already been placed onto a stretcher by the other people.

“Haha, I wondered who was it that was so impressive. So it’s the new master of this dojo.” After hearing these words, Sun Yuhu seemed to have thought of something, his expression becoming much more free and relaxed. “Interesting. But do you know, the person you have slapped, is a person from the [Capture barracks] of the north. Haha, you are going to be trouble.....” ,

The colour of everyone’s face changed.

Ye Qingyu did not turn his head to look at Sun Yuhu. Asking Lin Tian again, “Who injured brother Wang Ying?”

Lin Tian hesitated for a moment, then pointed at another scarlet red armoured man next to Sun Yuhu.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “I know. Quickly go find a doctor, and use the best medicine.....Don’t be afraid to spend money. Every expense will be paid by me.”

Lin Tian instantly became overjoyed. “Thank you young maser.”

The students of the Taoxuan pavilion were not really formal disciples. Only when they were free, would they come to the dojo to train their bodies and practice martial arts, learning some techniques to defend against thieves and other small problems. The aim of their study was only to not be bullied by others, so strictly speaking they were not the true students of Taoxuan pavilion. According to the rules of the big dojos of the Northern district, these so called students had to pay for nearly every expense. Even if they were injured in a spar, they had to pay for the

injuries themselves.

For a young man that originated from the poor, if he was injured in a spar and wanted to recover, the expenditure was absolutely shocking. Good medicine for treating injuries was expensive. It was enough to plunge his entire family in a dire situation.

Who would have thought the new master would be so generous.

Originally Link Tian and tens of other part time students had already devised a plan to raise money for Wang Ying's injuries. They did not think that the new master would appear and promise to bear the expenses of the injuries. It seemed like the character of this new master was not too bad.

Ye Qingyu gradually turned around, his gaze regarding Sun Yuhu and the others.

He beckoned at the scarlet red armour muscular man Lin Tian had just pointed out.

The burly man laughed slightly, then walked step by step towards him. He stood in front of Ye Qingyu, blowing a breath of hot air right into Ye Qingyu's face and then spat a goblet of saliva next to Ye Qingyu's leg. Contemptuously, he coldly said: "What is it? Little brat, you want to take revenge for the poor little ants? Haha, you really don't know how high the heavens is or how deep the earth goes. I am of the capture barracks, if you dare to even harm me in the slightest, you...."

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu struck out again.

In the time of a spark, he unsheathed the sword that the burly man wore at his waist. A cold light flickered. Before the others could even react, the sword flickered with a swish in Ye Qingyu's hand, as if it had come alive. In a split second, it revolved around the head of the muscular man, then once again returned to Ye Qingyu's hand.

“A good sword!”

Ye Qingyu flicked the body of the blade, and the hum of the sword resounded throughout.

The cutting edge of the blade trembled.

At first, everyone was confused. They could only see Ye Qingyu once again placing back the sword into the muscular man's waist.

Puchi!

A streak of blood red spurted out from the neck of the burly man.

This jet of blood, instantly made the hearts of many people sink down to the valley floor.

The muscular man fearfully touched his neck, sensing the icy hand of the death god that was choking his neck. Drop by drop, it was rending his life force away from him. His identity as an soldier of the capture barracks made him proud and was the reason for his arrogance. But even this could not cause life to return to his body.

Fear and regret, completely overwhelmed him like the tide rushing in.

He look towards the silhouette of the calm and collected youth, his vision gradually blurring.

“One must pay for murder with their own life. A debt that they owe, they must pay back. No matter what the time or era, these two phrases will forever be the theme of this world.” Ye Qingyu stood calmly within the courtyard, enunciating each word clearly. “It was originally a spar, to be stopped at first touch. But you chose to kill someone because you feel you are the stronger person. You chose to act without thinking of the consequences. But you forget, according to your logic, that people who are stronger than you, can also kill you....”

Silence fell around the ground.

The body of the burly man fell.

He had destroyed the meridians of the Wang Ying. Under Ye Qingyu’s observation, he knew that Wang Ying could not live for much longer. He must pay the price for his murder with his own life.

“Crazy, you’ve gone crazy, you’ve absolutely gone crazy.....” After being

dumbfounded for a period of time, Sun Yuhu, like a alarmed chicken, began sharply screeching.

“Criminal. Everyone rush together, kill him.”

“Trash, to dare kill someone of the capture barracks, you’re looking to die!”

The leftover soldiers wearing the scarlet red armour of the capture barracks acted. After a slight hesitation, their first reaction was not fear but rage that rushed into their temples. They took out the swords at their waist and surrounded Ye Qingyu. The cold light of the swords glimmered, like the floating snow in the sky. A chilling atmosphere prevailing throughout, they attacked.

“Although you did not kill anyone yet, but you have assisted him in his oppression.”

Ye Qingyu did not move from where he stood. He extended two fingers, inner yuan activating, clamping onto the incoming sword blade. Activating his inner yuan, the skin between the soldier’s thumb and finger ripped apart. Screaming for Ye Qingyu to let go, the soldier was sent flying backwards.

Holding this sword in his hand, Ye Qingyu aimlessly swiped it about.

Without any technique or method.

The shadows of the sword was disordered.

But it was extremely fast.

Ping!Ping!Ping!Ping!

The surrounding soldiers of the capture barrack could only feel an impact on the chest. Then, their mouth opened and jets of blood flew out. The impact sent them flying backwards, falling to the floor. They struggled to get up, but their body was completely powerless. They could not even crawl back up to a standing position.

Sun Yuhu's face tragically changed. Not even emitting a single sound, he turned and ran towards the exit.

Ye Qingyu only gave him a glance, but did not stop him.

Tang San wanted to say something. His lips parted, but he ultimately did not say anything.

“Open the doors wide. I'll wait here and see just what kind of reinforcement that effeminate man can find.” Ye Qingyu sat with his feet wide apart, on the steps of the practice stage of the Taoxuan pavilion. He said to Tang San, “I suddenly want to drink some alcohol, go send someone to buy some.”

Tang San hurriedly directed someone to purchase alcohol.

“Where are the teachers of the dojo?”

“The original teachers were Nie Yan’s people. When Nie Yan left, he brought these people away with him.” Tang San came over, “There is only Master Zhou who stayed, and it was him who taught these students in these past days. I’ve already asked Lin Tian. Master Zhou brought Little Grass to purchase training equipment and he still hasn’t returned.”

As he said these, there were several part time students that came stumbling over with pale faces. They stuttered, saying that they had some matters in their families that they needed to be taken care of and that they needed to return.

“You....are you guys afraid?” Lin Tian said, his face red. He pointed his finger at them in blame.

Ye Qingyu waved his hand. “Those who wants to go, can go. This will prevent the matters of today affecting you. I can understand the thinking of everyone. I won’t blame you.”

“Young master, we are not afraid to die. Our life is cheap and is not worth much. But the way Sun Yufu does things is poisonous and malicious, we really are afraid that he’ll drag our family into this. My child has just reached one full month, and my mother is lying sick in her bed, I....” A young man spoke with an ashamed appearance.

Everyone lowered their heads.

YE Qingyu smiled, his attitude extremely amiable. “I really don’t blame anyone. From today onwards, if Taoxuan pavilion does not fall, then we welcome everyone to come back....just go.”



Tens of so called students left, the majority having departed.

Finally there were only Lin Tian and two other youths around the ages of eighteen or nineteen. Evidently they were nervous, conflict in their eyes, but ultimately they forced themselves to stand behind Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu still did not say anything.

A short time later, alcohol had arrived.

The snowflakes drifting from the sky had become greater and greater, more and more concentrated. Cold glimmers completely covered the sky, like the drifting petals from a thousand trees.

The sound of footsteps came.

A white haired old man and a little girl. They came in from the entrance.

The old man had silver hair, but a rosy light in his cheeks, evidently still possessing superb vitality. He was gasping for breath, holding onto his walking stick and white mist came from his silver white head. Evidently he had ran too fast, causing him to overheat. The little girl was as if she was carved from jade, like a fairy on the snowy ground. Beads of sweat dripped from her forehead, and she carried a medicine box around the same size as her. She was also breathing roughly.

-----

1. hesitate to do something until they are forced to do it ↵

## Chapter 099 – A Spear

---

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance. Wasn't this the old doctor, Li Shizen?

Previously in the Ye mansion when he had found someone to treat Qin Lan's injuries, this doctor had left a deep impression with Ye Qingyu. He did not expect that they would meet again today. They really had been brought together again by fate.

“Where's the injured person?”

It seems that Li Shizen had hurried here and ran. After standing straight for several breaths of time to recover and pant, he finally managed to calm his breathing down. Wiping away his sweat, he saw the six soldiers of the Capture barracks lying on the ground. This did not cause too much shock in his face and a calm expression was present throughout.

Tang San quickly rushed over and greeted him, bringing him to the Wang Ying lying on the stretcher.

The little girl with braided hair also panted after him carrying the medicinal box.

Ye Qingyu silently sat on the snow covered steps.

Tang San came over beside Ye Qingyu's ear. He went over the background of Sun Yufu with a suppressed voice.

So the powdered face of that pretty boy, was the foster son of the Liu Yuancheng of the government office. Together with the Liu Lei that had already died in Ye Qingyu's hand, they used to get up to all sorts of evil within the city. Using their position to bully others, they did small things from oppressing others tyrannically to murder and arson. Within the city, they were known as 'one wolf and one Bei<sup>1</sup>'. They had done far too many actions that offended Heaven and reason.

After Liu Lei had died at Ye Qingyu's hands, Liu Yuancheng had lost his only son. Under his sorrow, he brought Sun Yufu to be raised within his residence, adopting him and doting on him even more. As a result of this, Sun Yufu became even more arrogant and wilful and was one of the calamities of this city.

During these past days, for some reason, Sun Yufu had arrived at the Northern district and schemed together with several camps of the Northern military office. He incited and provoked trouble at every opportunity. Who knows what kind of wind was blowing today, that he had come to the Taoxuan pavilion.

After hearing everything, Ye Qingyu still did not open his mouth.

He grabbed a jar of wine, unplugging the cover and the fragrant wine instantly wafted out. His inner yuan activated and with a slight suction, the aquamarine water became a jet stream, shooting out from the jar of wine into his mouth. This caused the smell of alcohol to permeate the air.

The wine that Tang San had sent people to buy was definitely good alcohol.

Ye Qingyu fiercely drank a large gulp.

A fiery spiciness entered into his body, and he could feel a hotness in his chest. It was as if if he only needed to open his mouth to breath fire.

And at this time, there were the sounds of ordered footsteps resounding from outside.

Ta!Ta!Ta!Ta!

Waves after waves of footsteps, as if they were ordered drum beats, sounded in an extreme rhythm. As if the earth was shaking, as if they was a terrifying huge beast rushing towards them. It got nearer and nearer, and they could even hear the clink of the metallic armour. A fierce atmosphere was heading towards them.

Within the air, there was an aura of tenseness.

Worry could not help but appear on Tang San's face.

Lin Tian and his two comrades only felt their throats drying up and their calf muscles beginning to cramp up.

Undoubtedly, this was Sun Yufu bringing people here for revenge. Very possibly, these were the elite soldiers of the capture barracks, true killing machines. They were different from normal mercenaries and gangs, once the machinery of soldiers operate, it could completely crush everything in

its path.

Very quickly, the flood of footsteps stopped in front of the door.

Boom !

The black willow door exploded, wood flying chaotically everywhere.

A neat ordered row of long spears under the protection of wooden shields gradually neared, and behind them were the soldiers wielding these spears. Red armour, red masks, an endless icy glare emitting from their pupils. Without the slightest trace of fluctuations or shakiness, as if they were just icy machines. Each soldier held a spear with one hand and a round shield with the other, forming a neat orderly squadron. They slowly neared, like a scarlet red city wall. Slow but unstoppable, they advanced crushingly towards them.

The metallic bloody killing aura overwhelmed them in an instant.

In an moment's time, beads of sweat dripped down from Tang San's forehead.

Ye Qingyu did not even lift his glance up a single bit.

He opened his mouth and sucked.

The beautiful wine in the jar, again transformed into an aquamarine jet of water, gushing into his mouth.

In one breath, he had drank half the jar.

“Drinking wine like that, will hurt your body and waste the wine.” A voice came out from beside him. It was the white haired Li Shizen. After inspecting Wang Ying’s injuries, and taking care of the wounds, he came to the steps and spoke to Ye Qingyu.

“How are the injuries?” Ye Qingyu asked.

“You’ve already seen for yourself. You should be extremely clear on what the situation is like.” Li Shizen shook his head. “His organs are all injured and it is impossible to recover. You’ve already used your inner yuan to extend his last breath, but it cannot last longer than three days.”

“Even you can’t save him?” Ye Qingyu sighed in sorrow.

“Medicine and doctors cannot heal a death sickness. Only those fated can be saved.” Li Shizen stroked his white beard, “When a doctor treats a sickness, such is always so. When their life has snapped, I am powerless. I can only allow Qingqing to treat him simply. I guarantee that in these three days, he will die painlessly.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, and retreated back into his silent state.

When faced with the fierce and ominous soldiers of the capture barracks, this old doctor did not display the slightest trace of fear. In reverse to this, he had a calm and serene smile. This could not help but make Ye Qingyu evaluate him even more highly. This doctor Li really had

the manner of an old man that had separated himself from worldly affairs.

Qiang!Qiang!Qiang!Qiang!

The spears drummed on the shields, the clash of metal enough to make people's hearts palpitate.

The first three rows of the spears moved aside and a passage way appeared that allowed a person to walk through. The Sun Yufu who had swapped his clothing for armour stepped through and a two metre tall burly man followed behind him. He had black metal armour on, like a steel tower, and a killing aura swirling around him. He was like a towering divine statue coming closer step by step.

The moment this black tower burly man appeared, a pressure was evident on the grounds.

“It's him, its that little trash, that dared to kill people of the Capture barracks.....” The sharp pitched voice of Sun Yufu's throat sounded, pointed at Ye Qingyu and screeching.

The black armoured burly man coldly glanced at Ye Qingyu, then look towards the soldiers struggling to get up on the ground. He lightly waved his arm.

There were spear soldiers that came to support the six soldiers unconscious on the ground, bringing them away.



The towering burly man's palm moved, and a black steel shackle appeared within his hands.

This shackle was approximately three metres long, and was coiled around the hands of the burly man like a black python. The steel body of the shackle had dried bloodstains painted on the surface. And on the two ends of this chain, there were two sharp barbs, like the tongue from a poisonous stake. It caused one to shake with dread when seeing this.

Bang!

The towering black armoured man threw the shackles next to Ye Qingyu's foot.

“Do it yourself, and bind the soul stealing shackles behind your back and your hands. Then follow me to the Capture barracks.” The towering man's words were as if he was announcing judgement. Pausing for a moment, he coldly said again: “Don't feel lucky. As long as you obediently follow us, I can let go of your family and friends. If you dare resist, then I'll exterminate everyone that you know.”

A explosive rage and killing intent, permeated the air.

Ye Qingyu fiercely drank a mouthful of the beautiful wine and laughed. His palm sucked the black chain into his hands, and he touched it all over with his hands. Shaking his head, he said : “What kind of toy is this, that you would bring it out to threaten people....”

He clenched the shackles with both of his hand, not seeming exerting

that much force, and then this terrifying steel chain instantly transformed into scrap metal. As if an craftsman was kneading dough, he easily destroyed the chain then threw it on the stage. Landing with a bang, it suddenly made the hearts of everyone shake madly.

The colour of this towering man drastically changed. In his tiger like eyes, cold light exploded.

“When was it, that the kingdom’s soldiers defending the city, became the dogs that were privately raised by the nobles? That every dog and cat like character, could deploy as they want? When was it that they became thugs?” Ye Qingyu leaned against the platform, hugging the jar of wine, saying his words clearly and slowly.

“You little trash, you dare to be so arrogant in front of commander Zhang and dare act so recklessly.” Sun Yuhu hid beside the towering man, stamping his foot. Pointing at Ye Qingyu, he began to loudly curse at Ye Qingyu: “I’m telling you this, today you are dead for sure. Wait until you’ve been dragged into the Capture barracks, I will definitely make sport of you, making you unable to even beg for life and death!”

“Liu Yuancheng really is an idiot. His son that stirred up trouble everywhere died. Then he really adopted such a son that would invite disaster everywhere.” Ye Qingyu grabbed through the air.

A soldier of the capture barracks exhaled in shock. He could hold the scarlet red spear in his hands no longer, the spear flying out.

Ye Qingyu held the spear slightly. Without aiming or looking, he casually threw it out.

The long spear formed a long trajectory, with not a very fast speed that sailed towards Sun Yuhu.

Sun Yuhu was shocked, and instinctively wanted to retreat backwards. But then he realised he was under the many layers of protection of the soldiers of the capture barracks and the commander Zhang next to him was an expert of the martial way. There was completely no need to be afraid. Such a soft and weak spear throw definitely could not injure him.

Thinking of this, Sun Yuhu conversely did not retreat backwards anymore but rather took a step forwards to indicate his fearsomeness.

The towering commander coldly snorted and grabbed towards the incoming spear.

In his heart, he could already not determine Ye Qingyu's background anymore.

To casually knead the steel chain like dough, then this indicated that the strength of this youth was extremely strong. But this did not hold any threat towards him, because Zhang Hen had seen too many strong people in his life before. Even if he was not his opponent he was not afraid, because the people standing beside him were not only the capture barracks, but also the entire defending army of Deer city. But right now, this teenager, would dare to insult and abuse the Liu Yuancheng of the government office. This was a sign of many problems to come.

At this instant, Zhang Heng slightly regretted that he would bring people to help Sun Yuhu here in order to gain the favour of Liu

Yuancheng.

But at this moment, since Sun Yuhu was in danger, he could not abandon him.

As his hand stretched out, he had already managed to grab the icy cold spear.

Zhang Heng had confidence in his strength.

He had already planned, after receiving the spear strike of this youth, how he would handle the situation afterwards. But at this time, something that he had never thought would have happened occurred. The scarlet red spear suddenly rapidly rotated, as if inside it was a strong force that was currently exploding. It instantly shook off his hand.

“Shit ! ”

Zheng Hen shouted loudly in his heart.

The next instant——

“Ahhhh.....”

He could see Sun Yu with wide open eyes, convulsing in fear. The scarlet red spear had pierced through his left shoulder. The enormous force the spear brought sent him sailing backwards. After knocking over several soldiers, the spear finally landed with a boom, nailed Sun Yu on

an earthen wall tens of metres away.

-----

- 1. legendary wolf like creature, kind of like a hyena [↩](#)

## Chapter 100 – Go Back And Ask

---

The body of the quivered and vibrated in the air.

Sun Yu was nailed alive to the wall.

Thankfully for him, this spear did not hit any of his vitals. It only pierced through his left shoulder without reaping his life away.

But the pain originating from his shoulder, made Sun Yuhu squeal in a high pitch, like a pig being slaughtered. Subconsciously, he crazily struggled and tore the wound open even further causing fresh blood to streak out. His eyes rolled over, the whites showing and fainting directly.

Huge shock was within the hearts of the soldiers of the capture barracks when they witnessed this scene.

The first row of the spear soldiers, already had the spears ready in their hands. They held the spears above their heads. This was a sign that they were about to be thrown. Once the long spears was thrown, the soldiers of the Capture barracks would be like a well oiled machine, beginning to do battle.

“Don’t act!”

The black armoured towering commander lifted his hand, shouting.

The movement of the soldiers instantly froze, as if they had become orderly statues.

Seeing this scene, Ye Qingyu could not help but sigh in admiration.

The capture barracks was the elite army of Deer city. This type of military discipline, really caused someone to feel a whole new level of respect for this group of soldiers. Swift like the wind, gentle like the forest, motionless like a mountain. It was a pity that such an squadron, would become thugs that nobles could casually deploy as they pleased.

“Who is your distinguished self?”

Zhang Heng stared at Ye Qingyu, his tone becoming much more mild.

Being in the army for so many years, he had experienced many turbulent situations before. Zhang Heng was absolutely a man with keen insight, able to determine whether a person was a true Buddha or a scarecrow. He could indistinctly sense, that the youth sitting on the steps of the stage was calm and composed, every movement expressing a heavy self confidence. This teenager was even more complicated than what his imagination.

Ye Qingyu laughed. “You followed Sun Yuhu to smash my property aggressively. The moment you came, you did not attach any importance to me, believing that you could definitely gobble me up. Before this, did you not ask who I am?”

Zhang Hen hesitated, not saying anything.

“My young master, comes from the White Deer academy. His name is Ye Qingyu.” Tang San suppressed the fear in his heart, stepping forward to answer this question.

Ye Qingyu?

Zhang Hen paused, faintly feeling that this name was somewhat familiar. After pondering for a while, he abruptly understood. Shock in his heart, he carefully evaluated Ye Qingyu from head to toe.

“That Ye Qingyu of White Deer academy?” Zhang Heng briefly nodded his head, his tone much warmer. “Your name has been known to me for a long time. So you really are Ye Qingyu. Fine, the things that happened today, was my mistake. I did not understand the reason thoroughly before coming here. I ask for young lord Ye not to take offense. From now on, I won’t get involved again, but....One soldier of the capture barracks had died. I fear that the Northern military office will come and investigate. Young lord Ye, be careful.”

Finishing what he had to say, he turned and left.

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Heng waved his hands. Hundreds of soldiers orderly retrieved their weapons. As if they were one entity, they turned and left like the tide, gradually disappearing.

Sun Yuhu like a dead dog that was supported by other people. Plucking



out the long spear stabbed into his body, the surrounding soldiers placed him onto a stretcher. The moment the spear was pulled out, pain caused him to regain consciousness. He struggled, groaning and whining, “Where is he? Where is that damn trash? Have you captured him? I need to kill him, I need to kill his entire family....”

Ye Qingyu lifted his hands. “Wait a moment.”

The footsteps of Zhang Heng stopped. He turned his head backwards: “what is it?”

And at this time, Sun Yuhu finally understood what the situation was like. The soldiers beside him was desperately restraining him. He instinctively turned backwards, seeing Ye Qingyu’s gaze like that of a blade. His heart instantly quivered. A hard to describe fear and terror overcame him. His mouth opened and a spurt of blood flew out, fainting again.

Ye Qingyu looked at the Sun Yuhu being carried away, his face filled with malevolence. Deep in his eyes, there was an unnoticed killing intent that flashed by.

Ye Qingyu pointed to the broken willow entrance: “Who smashed the doors? Compensate me.”

Zhang Heng suddenly felt like there were black lines on his else. He thought it was for some other reason that he had been stopped. Letting out a breath of relief, he took out an inter dimensional pouch and threw it into the hands of Tang San. “There is ten thousand gold here, to repay young lord Ye’s dojo door.”

The corners of Tang San's mouth twitched, turning his head to look at Ye Qingyu.

Ten thousand gold was enough to repair and replace a willow door ten thousand times over. This was a huge sum, far exceeding the value of the entrance. Holding this sum in his hand, was somewhat scalding for Tang San.

But Ye Qingyu's eyelids did not even move.

Tang San instantly became calm, accepting naturally and storing away the inter dimensional pouch.

Zhang Heng smiled, turning to leave again.

Who would have guessed that at this time, Ye Qingyu would open his mouth yet again. "Wait a moment."

Zhang Heng stopped his footsteps, his eyebrows frowning slightly. In his tiger like eyes there was a hint of anger, but he ultimately controlled his emotions. He turned around yet again and smiled: "What is it? Could it be that young lord Ye feels that ten thousand gold is not enough to repair the doors? If it is like this, then young lord Ye just say a price. I'll see if I, Zhang Heng and the brothers of the capture barracks can afford to compensate you for the entrance."

The meaning of his words, evidently hinted that Ye Qingyu was being slightly too greedy.

Tang San also sweated, feeling that his young master had really gone slightly too far.

Under the gaze of countless eyes, Ye Qingyu lightly shook his head.

“Then what is young lord Ye’s intention?” Zhang Heng opened his mouth.

Ye Qingyu took a large mouthful of alcohol, casually rubbing away the droplets of wine near his lips. He lightly tapped the jar of wine, as if he was pondering something. After a short while, he slowly exhaled an murky breath filled with the smell of alcohol.

He looked at Zhang Heng, a faint smile on his face. Slowly, “From the moment I’ve returned to the Ye mansion, I’ve already had several contact with the people of the Northern military office. It was not particularly cheerful. Our fate together is really not light. Therefore, could I trouble you to bring a message to your superior in the military office? Go ask him, does he really want to go against the widows and orphans of the Ye family? Is the heroic brass badge, really in the eyes of the lord of the military office, scrap metal?”

Zhang Heng hesitated.

His expression, instantly became extremely embarrassed.

Zheng Heng looked at the indifferent calmness of this youth. He suddenly felt, that everything that Ye Qingyu did before, compared to this

expression of tranquillity and calmness, did not count as anything. Only at this moment could he sense the intensity of this youth from White Deer academy, could he sense the depths of this youth.

Zhang Heng abruptly felt, that he really shouldn't have come today.

He did not feel Ye Qingyu was that arrogant.

As if everything that occurred today was a matter of course for Ye Qingyu.

In truth, the moment he heard the name of this teenager, he had come to a realisation. Even if he was a commander of the capture barracks, even if his military position was not low, he did not possess the requirements to face this youth. In the entire Northern district, perhaps only the military general had the right to speak face to face with this youth.

An unyielding brass military badge. A grand competition that had spread out throughout the entire Deer city and even the entire mountain range. Without signs or sounds, it had already completely changed everything.

The wings of this youth had already been formed.

“I know, I will convey this to the military leader.”

Zhang Heng clasped his hands, retreating several steps. Then he turned around abruptly, and with a wave of his hands, the hundreds of

soldiers of the Capture barracks under his command retreated like the tide, disappearing in a distant corner far off in the street.

Within the air, the permeating tenseness and mutual hostility gradually dispersed.

Only until the last of the soldiers of the Capture barracks disappeared from his view, did Tang San let out a sigh of relief. He wiped the vast quantity of sweat from his brows while his heart drummed madly. Only after a while could he regain his composure.

Lin Tian and his two comrades, panted roughly and unevenly as if they were about to collapse. Excitement and stimulation they had never experienced before enveloped these three people. They stealthily looked towards the back of Ye Qingyu. The hearts of these three people were submerged with respect and curiosity towards the young master of the Taoxuan pavilion. One name was enough to make the Zhang Heng of the capture barracks lead his troops to retreat, what kind of power was this ?

Lin Tian clearly understood, that his choice today to stay behind was really too correct.

And at this time, around the short earthen walls of the Taoxuan pavilion, there were already quite a number of people gathered.

Every face, fat and slim, had every kind of marvellous and different expression. Curiosity and respect towards the teenager holding a jar of wine on the stage. The moment the conflict began, this news transferred through the district at the speed of a tornado. Coming from different areas all kinds of people gathered here, each holding a different aim, to

see the commotion.

Nearly everyone felt that the Taoxuan pavilion could not escape from this predicament.

In these years, the power of the army had been deeply imprinted within the hearts of everyone in Deer city. By and large, even if it was someone from an average noble family, they would not dare to offend the officers within the city. Especially for elite troops like the capture barracks, they could nearly go on a rampage without fearing the consequences.

At the instant the doors were broken down, some people laughed.

A group of people had already stealthily calculated and planned what would occur if the Taoxuan pavilion fell. Just what kind of benefits would they be able to gain? Such as from what kind of contact with the capture barracks could they use to repossess the land of the Taoxuan pavilion, using it for some other purpose. After all, the area that this land covered was not small. It had been a fatty piece of meat in the eyes of many people for a long time.....

They had never thought.....

One phrase and one name.

That the capture barracks would retreat just like that.

Sun Yuhu was beaten till he was like a dead dog. The commander was reprimanded in front of everyone....All of this was not enough to make

the capture barracks act in furious anger.

How many years had it been since the army admitted defeat so easily and quickly?

The muscular commander Zhang Heng was someone very many people recognised. He was the famous martial madman of this area, a pain in the neck for many people. The way he did things was vicious and merciless. If he fell out with you, he would not recognise anyone. If he went insane, he would not even recognise his own family. Even some small nobles, would be somewhat afraid of the consequences of angering him. But this time, when facing the young master of the Taoxuan pavilion, he apologised and paid for the damages.

What did this represent?

Thinking of the power behind the young master of the Taoxuan pavilion, everyone was completely shaken.

The hearts of the people that was scheming to gain some small benefits had already turned icy cold. They did not dare to have the slightest intention to covet the Taoxuan pavilion anymore.

And the people who had some grievances with Taoxuan pavilion, who had secretly directed people to make things difficult for Taoxuan pavilion and the other properties of Ye family, could not help but be worried. They hurried to send people to cancel their prepared plans, and began to think of methods on how to repair the relationship between them and Ye Qingyu.

## Chapter 101 – Three Days

---

Such a disturbance thus ended just like that.

Some of the students that had abandoned the Taoxuan pavilion were able to observe everything from the outside. Seeing the scene, they were so regretful that they could die. They knew better than anyone that they had missed a golden opportunity. Even though Ye Qingyu said that he would still welcome them back to practice martial arts at the Taoxuan pavilion, but compared to Lin Tian and the two others that did not abandon or leave they were found lacking. From now on, to obtain Ye Qingyu's complete trust was an impossible matter.

And some people who were not students of Taoxuan pavilion at this time, could not wait to rush in to become a disciple and learn.

Apart from the Taoxuan pavilion, which martial art dojo in the Northern district was able to do this? Who could casually sit on the steps, drinking wine and only one sentence was needed to force the Capture barracks to retreat?

This was the most naked and real symbol of strength. Entering Taoxuan pavilion was equivalent to finding a great patron. From then on, as long as they said they were the students of Taoxuan pavilion it was very likely that they would be able to walk horizontally<sup>1</sup> across the entire North city district. Even the normally tyrannical gangs and the little sects, would not dare to harm them in the slightest.

One could easily imagine at what sort of crazy rate the news of what happened here today would spread out at. From now on, Taoxuan pavilion did not need to fret over not making a living.



No matter what the place, for a business like a dojo, the best glittering character signboard was strength and background.

Ye Qingyu seemed to have fully demonstrated these two attributes in the conflict today.

“For today, close the dojo, and find someone to repair the entrance. From tomorrow onwards, the dojo will open like usual.” Ye Qingyu gave Tang San a signal.

Tang San understood tacitly. Coming to the entrance, he greeted the gathering crowd outside by raising his clasped hands in greeting. Then he announced loudly: “Everyone of this neighbourhood, friends of the same way, today Taoxuan pavilion will be closed, and will not receive visitors. Everyone should disperse, from tomorrow the Taoxuan pavilion will reopen officially. If you want to formally become a student and learn, then come tomorrow morning.....Disperse, everyone should disperse.”

The crowd gradually left.

Ye Qingyu lowered his head to look at the jar of wine in his hands. There was only a tiny bit left. He was about to lift it up and drink the last drops when the silent Li Shizen that had always sat beside him coughed. “Young man, such a way of drinking alcohol, is not good for your body.”

Ye Qingyu smiled. “I am drowning my sorrows.”

“And what sorrows do you have?” Li Shizen stroked his silver long beard and slapped his own thigh with a laugh. “Young, extraordinary innate talent, success when you are young with no need to worry about

your next meal. You don't know how many people are envious of you. For example, for a rotten old man like me, you don't know how envious I am of young people like you."

Ye Qingyu let out a loud laugh. "Fine, according to this old man's word, I really shouldn't be sad."

Li Shizen also chuckled loudly. "Of course you shouldn't."

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, considering. He turned his head and said to the Tang San beside him: "When we return, send someone to buy more alcohol like this, the taste is not bad. I've decided, from now on if someone make's things difficult for me, then I'll drink myself drunk before taking care of them. Haha, since at that time I'll be drunk and don't know anything, I'll have a excuse for going crazy."

Li Shizen and Tang San was speechless for a moment.

"Young master, such a thing, just leave it for me and my brothers. Let us run your errands." Lin Tian could not bear remaining silent any longer, stepping forwards and volunteering himself.

The young man next to him also quickly nodded his head. "That's right. Young master, let us do some things for you. Also, my father is the best furniture craftsman nearby. I'll return right now and ask my father to come and construct for a free a shining and glimmering golden entrance."

Ye Qingyu could not restrain his smile. "There's no need for it to be

glittering and glimmering with a golden light. Just do it according to what it used to look like and construct another door. For the materials and wages, go find supervisor Tang to pay for your expenditure....” Ye Qingyu paused and looked at the three excited expressions of the three. He said with a laugh. “I am very grateful that you decided to stay behind today. If you are willing , then from this moment onwards Taoxuan pavilion will become your second family. If you have matters in the future, you can go find supervisor Tang for assistance. But do not use the name of Taoxuan pavilion to swindle others outside and use your force to bully others.”

Ye Qingyu’s words were straightforward and brutally honest. He knew that these were the words that the three young people most wanted to hear so he did not have to be coy.

Ye Qingyu admired these three people very much for their ability to resolutely stay in such a situation. Especially Lin Tian. There was a staunch and bravery about him, he was a good seedling worth raising.

“Thank you young master!”

“We will absolutely not make you lose face.”

The three men hearing Ye Qingyu’s words, instantly starting cheering and rushed to slap their chest in guarantees.

After the three had left, Ye Qingyu beckoned to Tang San yet again. “Do things according to the previous rules of the Taoxuan pavilion. Don’t raise the fees. Quickly utilise the time and find more martial instructors, master Zhou will be too busy if he is left on his own. The part time

students that left today can return, but the teachers that left along with Nie Yan are not to be accepted if they return.”

Tang San nodded his head to indicate he understood.

As they were speaking, Little Grass and the teacher Zhou had returned from purchasing equipment. On the way, they had already heard of the things that had taken place. Little Grass saw Ye Qingyu and rushed into the embrace of her brother Qingyu in the first instance, excitedly jumping and cheering.

Master Zhou was a martial instructor around fifty years of age, called Zhou Xiang. His left leg was somewhat disabled, and he had a limp when he walked. His strength was around the fourth stage of the ordinary martial level and his appearance seemed honest and straightforward. Tang San had already given an introduction to Ye Qingyu regarding him. Zhou Xiang was originally an escort at an armed escort company in the city. After one of his missions where he had to protect a person, he wounded his leg in the midst of battle and created a recurring injury. His strength greatly fell and he could not help but leave the armed escort company, finding a living at Taoxuan pavilion. He had already been working here for three years of time, but he was not the confidant of Nie Yan so had never received his trust. Therefore Zhou Xiang did not follow him when he left.

Ye Qingyu smiled at him and greeted him, thanking him for not departing at such a critical time.

Such a attitude, made Zhou Xiang both embarrassed and joyous. His facial expression became conflicted and confused. This middle aged martial instructor was really a straightforward and honest man.

Ye Qingyu also had a look around the dojo.

Compared to four years ago, Taoxuan pavilion had not change much. Many items were old antiques and items belonging from the generation of Ye Qingyu's parents. After Nie Yan had taken away the Taoxuan pavilion, he did not heavily invest into this establishment. Nie Yan must have thought that there was a not a great future for this martial art dojo, so he had always remained a blood sucker, drinking away the blood of the dojo. He was waiting for the day when the business became so bad it could not continue, and planned to sell the land away and leave with his purse in such a situation.

When he walked out from the hall of the Taoxuan pavilion, Li Shizen still remained.

The little girl called Qingqing, had finally placed the heavy medicinal box down. Right now, she was sitting on the platform, speaking and laughing with Little Grass about something. The two little girls were of a similar age, and was very easily able to play together with each other. They seemed to get on together very harmoniously.

An idea was born in Ye Qingyu's heart. He sat beside the old doctor: "Doctor Li, do you have any interest, in coming to Taoxuan pavilion to become our in house medical consultant?"

Li Shizen looked at him.

Ye Qingyu: "When students are training, light wounds and injuries often appear. Some students don't really notice too much and pay proper

attention to it. This can often leave a recurring injury that is harmful for their bodies. If there is an experienced doctor acting as an in house medical consultant and is willing to treat the injuries, I think that such a scenario can be prevented to its fullest.”

Hearing this, Li Shizen smiled. Under his eyebrows, there was a piercing gaze that could completely discern Ye Qingyu’s intention. “Master Ye must have seen that it is not easy for a poor old man and his granddaughter to survive in this chaotic human society, and that we can only struggle and rely on each other. You must be pitying a poor old man like me and want to help us? That’s why you offered.”

Ye Qingyu coughed. “I do have such an intention. Don’t blame me for being presumptuous but I see that Qingqing and Little Grass is getting along so well. That’s the reason I had such an idea. Little Grass that little girl, has had a bitter life. She lost her father at a young age and does not have any playmate whatsoever. I rarely see her be so happy when she plays with other people. If we let them play and practice martial arts together, is that not a good thing for both of the girls?”

Li Shizen nodded his head in agreement. “Then I’ll thank master Ye.”

Ye Qingyu was overjoyed.

Li Shizen accepted much more easily than in his imagination.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu felt this white haired old man had an aura of like that of someone regaining their natural state. His pair of eyes was as if it was able to see through all worldly affairs. There was a quality about him that stood apart from this world, different from other people. He was an old man with a story.

The two conversed for a while.

Their topic quickly changed to Spirit herbs and medicine.

Ye Qingyu was surprised to discover Li Shizen cursory words was extremely knowledgeable and had clearly researched in depth regarding different Spirit herbs and medicines. Screening, usage, dosage, quality so on and so forth, he was very familiar with all aspects of medicine. He knew very many things, that was hard to see even within the mysterious tomes of the public libraries of White Deer academy.

He was an old man well versed in medicine.

That was the evaluation in Ye Qingyu's heart.

At this time, there was a familiar searching sound from beside him.

Ye Qingyu turned to look beside him, and black lines could not help but appear on his forehead. Without knowing the exact time, the silly dog Big Head had wriggled free from his grip and jumped into the jar of wine. Sneakily, he had licked clean the beautiful wine left inside. Big Head was now shaking the earthen jar, a perfect picture of someone not yet satisfied.

Time quickly passed to the evening.

Lamps began to be lighted within Taoxuan pavilion.

The young man really brought his skilled craftsman father over along with several of other workers. Through their work, the entrance of Taoxuan pavilion was once again constructed and established. Like what it used to be, it was still made from willow and was inky black in colour.

Ye Qingyu directed Tang San to host a feast, to thank the craftsmans for their work.

Li Shizen and the others also stayed for dinner. The stupid dog Big Head was the thing that was able to attract the most attention in this banquet. There was only one reason for this —this creature was really able to eat too much. No matter what was placed in front of him, he would completely finish devouring it in less than three breaths of time. If this little fellow did not have a tiny and cute outer appearance, the others could not help but be suspicious whether the ravenous appetite of this silly dog would activate and treat everyone here as food and consume them!

Ye Qingyu was completely speechless when facing Big Head.

Too able to eat.

The key point was that he could never be satisfied.

Demon King Ye looked at the constantly disappearing food and rubbed his somewhat painful chest. He began to seriously consider, if this continued on, whether there was really a possibility that he would be eaten poor by this stupid dog. Should he just find a location and throw this good for nothing but eating dog away? A dog without any shred of



martial power and only possessed a cute appearance, should he just chuck him somewhere far away?

At night, Ye Qingyu left Taoxuan pavilion.

In the leftover two days of time, Ye Qingyu remained within the Ye mansion to concentrate on his training.

The third day.

Ye Qingyu stealthily left alone from the Ye mansion, towards the Southern district.

He needed to see Wang Yan, to clear everything up.

The promised time, had finally arrived.

-----

1. domineering, without fear of consequences. [↩](#)

## Chapter 102 – The Back Of That Silhouette...

---

Although Deer city could not be counted as a large scale city, but the North, East, South and West four main districts each had different attributes and characteristics. The Northern district was a location with the highest numbers of poor and destitute people, with the buildings and structures being very varied and diverse. Streets and alleys of all sizes warped and weaved in deranged order. If a person who was unfamiliar with this area entered into the streets, it was alike to entering a labyrinth.

And the South district was the most prosperous business district of the city. Merchants and companies would gather here, along with different armed escort companies and factions. People from a thousand miles around Deer city would converge here, all for the sake of benefit and profit. It could be said that this district collected people from all trades, with all kinds of bad characters able to be seen at this location.

The split second Ye Qingyu entered into the Southern district, he was able to sense a dense odour of merchants that settled on him. The sensation of this district was completely different from the Northern district.

The time right now was the early hours of the morning. Fragmentary snowflakes were still drifting, and the sun far off had not yet risen fully with the eastern showing slightly the marble white sky of the dawn. But even in the most narrow of streets, there were peddlers that had claimed their position, hawking all kinds of odd and strange wares.

The air of the early winter was already extremely chilly.

Ye Qingyu wearing a large black garment and hat, travelling through the crowd.

He unhurriedly headed towards the direction of the [Mist Residence].

Originally Ye Qingyu was worried, that such an attire would be like drawing legs on a snake<sup>1</sup>, and would needlessly attract the attention of people. But only coming here, did he discover, that people wearing all sorts of attire that mysteriously covered their faces could be seen everywhere.

And just like the North district, on the streets, there were quite a few patrolling platoons.

But what was different, was that these squadrons rarely interrogated the people travelling on the streets.

After all, this area was the place with the most people from outside of Deer city. This was the place with the most complicated and diverse group of people. If they went and questioned every suspicious people on the streets, even if the entire standing army was sent to the streets, it wouldn't be enough to complete such a workload.

Ye Qingyu went through the streets without any obstacles.

He did not hurry towards the [Mist residence], and when he passed the different stalls he would eat several buns and a bowl of thin congee. Only after delaying for an hour of time, waiting until the sun had completely risen and the flow of people on the streets became greater and greater did he once again rejoin the crowd.

When he passed by some little stalls, Ye Qingyu would also stop and evaluate, admiring the wares.

And as he passed by these assorted stalls, Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that he could not see the little loli with empty hands<sup>2</sup>. Without knowing why, when he saw a white little bear hanging on one of the stalls, he felt that the little loli must like it. When he asked for the price, the peddler was a crafty fellow and asked for one gold right off the bat. Ye Qingyu was preoccupied too lazy to haggle, buying it straightout.

As he watched Ye Qingyu depart, the peddler was slightly regretful. Since the customer was so generous, he should have set the price slightly higher.

Such a situation, was able to be seen everywhere in the Southern district.

After buying the little bear and carrying in his hands, he was like a person observing flowers from horseback. After wandering in several circles, turning several times and walking backwards, he slowly neared the [Mist residence]

The [Mist residence] was slightly famous in the Southern district.

Because it was one of the ten gold residences in the Southern district.

What was called gold residence, was not a place where they sold jewellery or accessories. It was a place for your sensual pleasures, a

money squandering establishment for you to indulge in luxury. Listening to songs and watching dances, a place where you spent time satisfying your desires. In a place like the Southern district where it was densely packed with commercial activity, such establishments was not in the few.

As he walked in the old streets, he passed by very many of the old small doors that looked simple on the outside. However, if you entered into it, you would discover an amazing and extravagant degree of luxury that was enough to make one staggered.

The reason that the [Mist residence] was famous, was because in the gold residences of the Southern district, it was ranked number ten.

Apart from making Ye Qingyu shocked, this also made him feel slightly strange.

Why would Wang Yan tell him to come to such a place to meet with her.

In the subconsciousness of everyone, a woman —especially a proper woman, should not appear in a place like this. And Wang Yan was not only a proper woman, she was a person of the highest status in the entire Deer city, with a distinguished identity. She was one of the strongest woman in the city. She should even more not appear at such a place.

And for a similar reason, the little loli Song Xiaojun was the illegitimate daughter of an important person within the the Qingluo merchant company. Furthermore, she was a student of White Deer academy, she should not appear in such a place.

Bring with him many questions in his heart, Ye Qingyu arrived at the entrance of the Mist residence.

Ash grey bricks, black tiles. A little door to a little courtyard.

Beside the entrance was two stone guardian lions not even half a metre tall. The stone work was elaborate but was absolutely not the work of a renowned master, exceedingly average. The little elm door close up was crude and coarse, emitting a kind of sensation that it had undergone many years of wear and tear. The entrance did not have a sign and he was also not able to see the sign saying [Mist residence] anywhere. They did not have a doorman of any sort outside. From the external appearance, it seemed like it was the little house of a normal middle class family.

Ye Qingyu hesitated, confirming that he did not go to the wrong place. Then, he pushed and entered. The wooden door emitted light sounds of squeaking.

Inside the hall, there were around five warriors wearing black sturdy clothing. From their appearance, they seemed like guards of some sort, and they were currently drinking wine and roasting chicken. They should be warriors on the duty for the morning shift. As they heard the sound of the door opening, one of them considered Ye Qingyu for several glances, then nodded his head. Without saying anything, he brought Ye Qingyu further inside.

Behind the hall, was a brick and tile passageway.

The corridor was exceedingly serene and quiet, not a sight to be seen.

After walking a hundred metres, on both sides of the corridor there were two other paths, as if it was the web of a spider, heading to different

courtyards. With Ye Qingyu's eyesight, he was able to see the name of the different courtyards far away, and the names were particularly unique. They were the Orchid garden, Observing snow garden, Plum shadow garden and so on and so forth. But the doors to these courtyards were round, the black doors covering the inside, without any way knowing what it was like beyond.

On the way, there were not any other people to be seen.

The surrounding environment was quite and indifferent.

From the bustling and active streets from the outside, this environment was completely different. And from Ye Qingyu's imagination of a gold residence, where sensual pleasure was everywhere, dancing and music everywhere, this Mist residence was also largely different.

The leading black warrior, always remained silent. His footsteps was neither fast or slow, only after walking for around five minutes did he went in a passageway, reaching the ends of this corridor. They were in front of a scarlet red door.

"We have arrived."

The black clothed warrior stopped his footsteps.

Ye Qingyu looked at the scarlet red door.

But the black clothed warrior did not push open the door to enter. He took a seal from somewhere on his clothing and pressed it light on the left of the grey wall of the door. In the flickering glimmer, a ripple like

patten began vibrating, and there was a silver formation like that of a silver dragon activating. Light covering the entrance.

The wall was a formation.

“Young lord Ye, please.” The warrior did not enter, but greeted Ye Qingyu instead.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, than immediately said in surprise: “So you’ve long recognise me?”

“Your formation image, I have at least seen over a hundred times. So even if in the moment you entered you wore garments that covered your face, but from you atmosphere and the figure of your body, I was able to recognise your identity.” The tone of the warrior with black clothing was exceeding respectful. “Young lord Ye, please enter. Superior Wang has already been waiting for you.”

Ye Qingyu’s heart became even more shocked.

However, he did not ask too much. He took one step into the rippling wall, as if it was just like a water screen, passing straight through. A cool and refreshing feeling directly hit his face, as if he was washing in the midst of water. His body became slightly weightless, just like his first time entering the formation teleportation in the practical battle training.

After a breath of time, Ye Qingyu felt his eyes blurring. The scenery had completely changed.



As if it was another world entirely.

Pools.

Fake mountain.

Fountains.

Fragments of snow were floating in the air, and the pool and springs had already frozen.

At the end of the corridor and under the pavilion, a person wearing a white imperial dress was there. She silently stood with her back facing Ye Qingyu. A cold icy wind blew past, her blue green hair lightly swaying. As if it was a figure independent from the world. Ye Qingyu vaguely felt, that this silhouette was familiar. As if he had seen her somewhere before.

“So you’ve come.”

A familiar voice was heard.

It was the voice of Wang Yan.  
Ye Qingyu let out a breath of relief, about to say something.....

But the figure with imperial clothing turned around. Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then his mouth widened in stunned disbelief.

Because her face, was absolutely not the ordinary appearance of Wang Yan.

It was a peerless and unmatched face, an exceptional beauty.

Ye Qingyu did not know how to describe the woman in front of him. She was around twenty years of age, and was namely in the period that a woman was most gorgeous. Her skin was like white jade, without the slightest hint of imperfection. Her hair was like the clouds, her skin like jade. As if she was the creator's favourite. Every part of her face, every curve of her figure, was as if it was sculpted from the most perfect and most astounding ratio. Without exaggerating in the slightest, the woman in front of her, was absolutely the most beautiful woman Ye Qingyu had ever seen.

“What, you don't recognise me ? ” A trace of mischievousness flashed in the eyes of this imperial clothed beauty.

A very familiar voice.

It was the voice of Wang Yan.

But that face....just what was happening?

The questions in Ye Qingyu's eyes became even more.

“What? Not long ago, we had just met?” The peerless beauty said laughingly.

Ye Qingyu became even more confused.

Where had they seen before?

That's right, that figure....

Immediately, a bolt of lightning flashed by in his mind.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised, the reason for the shocking sensation of familiarity when he saw the silhouette of this woman. Because this atmosphere and figure, was evidently the unmatched expert, Wang Jianru that sliced apart the sky high above in Deer city.

That day, the cold light of the sword tore apart space and split apart the gloomy clouds. The peerless sword immortal stood alone, shocking countless lifeforms within Deer city. At the last moment, when the sky cleared, it was as if a fairy descended to the mortal realm. She was deeply imprinted within the hearts and souls of countless martial artists.

Ye Qingyu at that time was gazing into the sky, deeply storing away such a moment.

And at the time when he saw the back of this figure, his heart was as if fiercely struck by something. He subconsciously thought he recognised that figure. And at the time when he slightly recovered, he realised, the peerless beauty in front of him, was she not the person standing above all life in the sky on that day, the unmatched sword immortal?

But why was her voice, exactly the same as Wang Yan?

Could it be ?

Ye Qingyu’s heart, could not help but began beating madly.

-----

- 1. attract attention by doing something superfluous ↵
- 2. without any gifts and presents ↵

## Chapter 103 – The City Of Unmoving Darkness

---

Wang Yan was Wang Jianru?

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised this key point.

Then he could only feel a spell of dizziness. He could not believe in his own guess.

That person standing independently on the blue dome of heaven, as if she was a female immortal overlooking all living things. That person controlling the [Splitting heaven sword will], that female sword immortal that sliced apart the demonic black clouds shrouding the entire sky, that person....that person, was the head teacher of the first year of White Deer academy?

This was completely inconceivable.

If he had not seen everything in front of him with his own eyes and that Ye Qingyu would genuinely come to such a conclusion of his own volition, he would not even in his dreams connect the two together. Because the two had absolutely nothing in common.

Previously, Ye Qingyu had vaguely felt that the strength of Wang Yan was very strong. But even in Ye Qingyu's most positive estimation, even if Wang Yan's strength was greater, her level was at most at the early stages of the Bitter Sea stage. He did not think that it would reach such a stage.

“It seems from your appearance, you’ve seem to have thought through several problems. Then I don’t need to waste my breath.” Wang Jianru’s face had a faint smile as she looked at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu fiercely swallowed a mouthful of saliva, disguising the shock in his heart. Shaking his head slightly to make himself more clear headed, he asked with a bitter smile: “Then right now should I call you head teacher Wang Yan or the sword immortal Wang Jianru?”

“A name is only name. Nothing more, nothing less.” Wang Jianru said with a smile. “Ten years ago I was called Wang Jianru, and in these ten years I am called Wang Yan. What is the difference? In the end, I am me.”

Ye Qingyu seemed to have understood something. He asked again: “Then...which is your real appearance? Was the person who was at White Deer academy, the true you?”

Wang Jianru began cackling in delight. “Why don’t you guess?” Not waiting for Ye Qingyu’s response, she answered her own question. “Of course the appearance right now, is the true me. Kekekeke, you really thing a woman such as me with peerless strength, would be as ugly as Wang Yan?”

Sister, you are too self confident.

Ye Qingyu silently cursed at her in his heart.

But at this time, he able to guess just what had happened. Wang Yan should have used some sort of technique to change her facial appearance, transforming the way she looked. Because her strength was high and her method was profound, other people did not see through her disguise.

If this was known to the fellows of first year of White Deer academy, that what they normally thought as a middle aged house wife Wang Yan was Wang Jianru, what would their reaction be? If they knew that her true identity was the peerless sword immortal Wang Jianru, who knew what kind of stunned expression would they display. And those students that had nearly slept in her lessons due to her ordinary appearance, would they be so regretful that they would begin to weep?

There were still many questions in his heart.

But Ye Qingyu did not continue asking on.

Because after a short stunned moment, Ye Qingyu recovered very quickly and realised.

He suddenly realised, that the person standing in front of him, was no longer that middle aged woman of White Deer academy. It was a top expert that was enough to shake the entire Deer city.

A true top expert.

Although for some reason this top expert had hidden her true colours. But an expert possessed the temperament of an expert. As to why Wang Jianru would hide herself within the White Deer academy for ten years,

she must have her own reasons and motives. Perhaps it involved many secrets. It was not something that he was capable of interfering in – this was also the reason that he did not try to understand.

In many situations, knowing too much, was not a good thing at all.

“Where’s Xiaojun?” Ye Qingyu changed the subject. “Is she fine?”

Wang Jianru gave Ye Qingyu a glare, then said: “How can she be fine? The situation that the little girl in is very dangerous, otherwise why would I hide here? The battle on that day, did you not see it?”

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth, asking again: “The person that day controlling the black clouds that shrouded the sky, that expert, is here to kill the little loli? Then the girl of darkness he mentioned, could it be....”

“She is Xiaojun.” The facial features of Wang Jianru became serious. “The girl of darkness of the City of Unmoving Darkness has finally awakened the bloodline within her. Do you still remember, the energy that appeared within her during the [Boundary canyon battlefield]?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Xiaojun within the boundary canyon battlefield as a result of Xia Houwu’s betrayal became extremely enraged. Without any warnings, her body exploded with an abnormal and powerful energy. From a distance of over five hundred metres away, she destroyed a protector statue with just one strike. At that time Ye Qingyu was also stunned, because even if it was he himself, he could not from so far away destroy a protector statue.



The power that appeared within Song Xiaojun's body, fluctuated with a scarlet red light. As if it was a apocalyptic monster that had awakened from within the depths of the abyss, it caused one's soul to unwillingly shiver in fear. It was absolutely not a power that belonged to the light.

The Unmoving City of Darkness. This was the first time Ye Qingyu had heard such a name.

Unmoving City of Darkness.

The girl of Darkness!

Just simply these two names, made someone feel as if they were within an endless abyss of darkness. The horrifying sensation of being stifled by a terrible atmosphere made one unable to breathe.

"Someone wants to act against the little loli?" Ye Qingyu carefully asked.

Wang Jianru nodded her head. "It's not just someone.....Every righteous person in this entire world, wants to kill her. Apart from the royal family of Snow country, within Heaven Wasteland domain, every martial power within the human waste wants to destroy her, root and branch. The one school, three sects and four great ancestral families and other small and large factions all want to kill her. Even the demon court of heaven Wasteland wants to eliminate Xiaojun."

Ye Qingyu felt like heart was fiercely struck by something.

He felt his throat was somewhat dry. He could not not stop asking: “Just what kind of place is the City of Unmoving Darkness? Why would it have so many enemies?”

“A place that has left light. A place that even the demon race fears. A place that is situated between darkness and light. A place that has once travelled through countless domains. A place.....A place that is like a puzzle.” Wang Jianru seemed as if she was immersed in some sort of memory. After a while, she lightly said: “Fine, the words that I should say have already been said. The condition of the little loli is not that good, go see her. Perhaps this is the last time you will be able to meet her.”

“Our last meeting?” Ye Qingyu was frightened. “Your meaning, could it be....”

“Deer city is not a completely safe place. I need to bring her away.” Wang Jianru said in a small voice. “In truth, we should have long left. If not for the fact that Xiaojun is willing to risk such a danger to remain to see you, we would not have remained.”

When she spoke, Ye Qingyu could vaguely see in the eyes of this female sword immortal there was indecision and confusion. But in an instant, she became incomparably determined.

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

He followed along the area that Wang Jianru was pointing to, passing through a water pavilion long passageway. He came to be in front of an ordinary wooden house.

As he opened the door of the house, the dim light from outside shined

in.

Ye Qingyu saw the person he wanted to see in the first instant.

On the willow bed, the little loli Song Xiaojun was leaning against a large pillow, lying down with a delighted smile on her face. Her body was covered with thick quilts, as if she was a gentle and agreeable little kitten that was currently sick. Her eyes that were thin and pallid, brightened with surprise and happiness when she saw Ye Qingyu arriving.

Compared to their last meeting, the little loli was much skinnier.

Her previous baby fat had gone, her face so skinny that bones were able to be seen. Her temple was somewhat sunken in. The originally thick jet black hair that seemed to glimmer with light, was now somewhat yellow and dim, dried out and seeming to curl slightly. The little hand that was exposed outside of the quilts, did not possess its usual vitality. It had withered till it was like the claw of a bird, the skin tightly hugging the bones, blue veins clearly able to be seen.....

Ye Qingyu's heart at this instant tightly clenched together. He felt something painful in his chest.

Just what had happened in these few days on the body of the little body, that made her so haggard? As if her life force was about to be expended, as if she was a flower that was about to wither.

“Brother Qingyu!” On the face of the little loli, there was a joyful expression. “You’ve finally come. I’m too happy.”

She struggled to sit up.

But evidently her body was too weak, without the slightest shred of strength remaining. Only moving slightly made her once again lean back on her pillow, panting for breath.

“Don’t move.” Ye Qingyu quickly rushed beside the bed, supporting the little girl.

As his palm touched this delicate body, he felt as if this did not have any weight behind it. The heart of Demon king Ye could not help grieve. He could not even imagine, in these past days, just what kind of torture the little loli had experienced that would make a martial artist of the Spirit spring stage weaken to such an extent.

“Just what has happened?” Ye Qingyu painfully asked. “Your body....why has it become like this?”

The little loli difficultly used her head to rub against Ye Qingyu’s arm, displaying a dazzling smile. “I’m fine. Don’t be sad brother Qingyu. It’s only that a strange and hateful energy that is activating within my body, wanting to possess my body. I need to expend a great deal of strength to temporarily suppress it.....Sister Jianru once said to me, this is a good thing for me. Because once I become used to such a power, I can ascend to heaven with one step, becoming a peerless expert.”

“A strange power?” Ye Qingyu thought of something. “Is it that type of power that appeared within the battlefield?”

The little loli obediently nodded her head.

And at this time, the colour of the little loli's face suddenly changed. Her face became incomparably pale, her body suddenly started to shake.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then saw a bizarre scene——

Scarlet lines upon scarlet lines, appeared under the little loli's deathly pale skin. As if it was frantic water snakes crazily extending everywhere, more and more appeared with it becoming more concentrated. The originally blue veins became scarlet red, the peculiar lines crawling towards the little pallid face of the little loli. As if she was suffering from some kind of horrifying poison.....

A scarlet red aura, began emitting from within the body of the little loli. Ye Qingyu felt that he was facing a bottomless abyss of darkness. The humongous pressure made him somewhat unable to breath, his heart as if it was being tightly clenched by a invisible hand of darkness, wanting to reap his heart from his chest.

“Huchi Huchi!”

The silly dog Big Head immediately awakened from his sweet sleep.

As if he was a bolt of lightning, he jumped out from Ye Qingyu's embrace. His two hind legs stomped with a strange rhythm, staring at the little loli with both anger and fear. An urgent voice emitting from his mouth. He drew back the corners of his mouth, his throat moving up and

down. A ferocious appearance, as if he was about to choose someone to take his rage out on.

This was the first time that Ye Qingyu had seen the stupid dog display such a ferocious appearance.

“Be quiet, return.” Ye Qingyu was deathly afraid that this stupid dog would really rush forward and attack. He grabbed the silly dog Big Head, covering his mouth and once again bringing him back into his embrace.

## Chapter 104 – I Will Come Find You

---

The little loli seemed as if she was suffering from a huge pain.

Her delicate little body began madly shaking. Beads of sweat the size of beans dripped from her forehead. In the blink of an eye, her body was completely drenched with sweat, as if she had just been in a rainstorm. The quilts covering her was completely wet with water. This scene was too terrifying. As if a force that was indescribably powerful wanted to reap the life force within the little loli's body and squeeze every drop of it out like water.

The scarlet red lines, had already spread throughout her entire body.

The blood vessels on her skin seemed to have been taken over by some sort of energy that wanted to explode from her muscles. As if something was travelling up and down through her blood vessels, the veins began drumming and beating. Very quickly, the skin of the little loli became scarlet red.

The little loli entered into a state of unconsciousness. She could not sense anything happening around her anymore.

Ye Qingyu extended his hand towards her, then slowly dropped it.

He did not know what he could do.

Without knowing when, Wang Jianru had appeared without any signs

by the bed side.

“The power of darkness is activating with much higher frequency. Without long to go, her blood will be completely swallowed by the power of darkness and she will become the true girl of darkness.” Wang Jianru’s solemn face had a strange expression, as if she did not know whether to feel regret or expectation. “You don’t need to worry for Xiaojun. Nothing will happen to her. The bloodline of darkness is her natural born power, it will not harm her life.”

“But right now, she seems to be in great pain.....” Ye Qingyu could not bear to watch this.

Wang Jianru had a peculiar expression in her eyes as she glared at Ye Qingyu. “The reason she is feeling pain, is because she is resisting against the power of darkness. She does not want to accept such a power, she does not want to abandon her original identity. Otherwise, the little girl would not be in such a sorry state like now....The regretful thing is, even if she does not accept such a power, she will still be chased after by the entire human and demon race. Because no matter whether it is the demon race or the human race, they will absolutely not allow a descendant that holds the bloodline of the Unmoving City of Darkness to exist.”

“And if she decides to accept the power of darkness?” Ye Qingyu asked again.

“Then her strength will travel a thousand miles in one single leap. Even if she does not train, her strength will crazily grow along with time. To other people, realms that they cannot reach in their lifetime, to her is only a matter of time. Spirit spring stage, Bitter sea stage, Immortal



stage.....She can easily pass those realms.” Wang Jianru said in a light voice. “There is only one requirement and that is she has to remain alive.”

Ye Qingyu remained silent for a while. “Then let her accept the power of darkness. At least then she will have the power to protect herself.”

Wang Jianru looked at Ye Qingyu, her tone slightly surprised. “An unexpected proposal. Will you not mind, that after accepting the power of darkness, she will truly become a monster that walks in the darkness?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “In a choice to allow my friend to live and become a monster or not become a monster and be killed, I will always choose the former. Because as long as she lives on, then there will forever be hope.”

“Somewhat interesting.” Wang Jianru began laughing. “Ye Qingyu, I have always felt that you were a student different from the others. From your words right now, I was not wrong in my evaluation.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

Wang Jianru continued: “Your words just now, I have already said this to Xiaojun. But it’s a pity that the little loli does not want to become a monster. Even if ultimately she cannot decide, at least until the moment she can control her body and thoughts, she wants to remain the silly and clumsy Song Xiaojun and not the Song Xiaojun that is unstoppable and powerful.....Do you know why?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

“Because of you.” Wang Jianru sighed with regret.

“Because of me?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

“That’s right, because of you.” Wang Jianru said, slowly pronouncing each word. “After she becomes a monster, everything in the past will be broken. Everything that has happened, will disperse like clouds and smoke. She will forget everything. Once her bloodline of darkness explodes, the memories in her blood will awaken. She will know many things of the past, and will forget everything that has happened. Including you.”

Such a thing would happen.

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.

“Perhaps you do not realise, how important you are in the little loli’s life. In these many years, her first strand of sunshine was your faint smile. Apart from her mother, you are her closest family.” Wang Jianru looked at Ye Qingyu, as if she had thought of something, sighing again. “Everything seems as if it has already been predetermined in this world. Perhaps meeting you in White Deer academy, was the fated crisis of the little girl.”

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say in response to this.

He knew that when he was together with the little loli, he was very

happy. But he had never thought that he was so important to the little loli.

Even though she had only gone through ten years of life or so, but the fate of forgetting everything was still far too cruel.

No wonder the little loli did not wish to accept such a power.

But Ye Qingyu still felt, that only by living on was there still hope and possibility. What was forgotten could be remembered, but once dead there was no method of coming back to life.

“The mother of Xiaojun? Does she know the state of Xiaojun?” Ye Qingyu asked.

Wang Jianru lightly shook her head. “She is only a normal person, a very ordinary normal person. For many of the powers high up and above, such a person is tiny and unnoticeable. If not for her birthing a girl that possesses the bloodline darkness, she would not even appear in the sight of the different factions. After Xiaojun has received the power of darkness, she will even forget her own mother. From all aspects, such a woman has no value.”

“But she is the mother of Xiaojun, her biological mother.” Ye Qingyu defended against this point.

Wang Jianru remained silent for a while, then said. “Do you know, if not for Xiaojun’s stubborn insistence, you would not even appear here today. You would not see Xiaojun again. And the commoner concubine

that was bullied and disregarded by the Song family, would not receive the proper arrangements.....You need not worry. The mother of Xiaojun has already been given the proper treatment. She will safely live out the rest of her life, and will not be in any danger.”

Ye Qingyu thought for a while. “Then right now, should I leave?”

Wang Jianru nodded her head. “You really should leave. What you should know you already know, and what you should see you have already seen. The longer you stay here, the more in danger you will be. You cannot even imagine how dangerous and terrifying the enemies of Xiaojun are. They nearly exist everywhere. In this world, there is nowhere that they cannot be found. The Mist residence will not be hidden for too long, and will be exposed sooner or later.....In truth, Ye Qingyu, I have high expectations for you. Perhaps in the future, you can become an existence that can shake the entire Deer mountain range and even the Snow country. This is the reason apart from you being close to Xiaojun, that I have always treated you specially within the academy. Leave, I don’t want such a talent to be dragged into a vortex that you should not be responsible for. If not for Xiaojun’s insistence, I would not even allow you to appear here in this place.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Everything that had happened today, made Ye Qingyu feel like this was a parting between life and death.

His feet seemed to have stuck to the ground. No matter how much force he used, he could not lift them.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, landed on the frail body emitting a scarlet red radiance that was quaking frantically. His heart was dripping blood. Time and space seemed to freeze in this instant. Beside his ear a faintly discernible voice suddenly sounded with an innocent and unaffected voice: "Are you senior brother Ye Qingyu?"

These words, was said in that dazzling early morning with the air of excitement still permeating the air. Within the school grounds of White Deer academy. The little loli that because of her large robes had tripped on the ground. Her golden and glittering smile as she jumped and laughed in front of him.

It was the first meeting of these two. Their first words.

In Ye Qingyu's mind, many, many scenes constantly flashed past.

Within the black Grievance hall, the little fellow that was as lively as a rabbit appearing. As she rubbed her head, she said in a huff, I really just missed you too much, brother Qingyu.....

Under the girl's dormitory, this energetic and hopping little girl, like a swallow that did not care about anything had rushed into his embrace. Using her head to rub his arm with a laugh, asking with a delighted smile: Brother Qingyu, did you come here to look for me?

And in the boundary canyon battlefield, as she killed the demon rune soldiers while she muttered in anger: Brother Qingyu lied to me. He said he would come find us, but he still hasn't appeared.....

Also.....

The scenes of their meetings, image after image blurred in front of his eyes.

Ye Qingyu could not help but feel the corners of his eyes moisten.

The agony and anguish of completely losing a family, Ye Qingyu had already experienced four years ago. He had never thought, that four years later, after he had adjusted to his new life with difficulty, he would ever shed a tear again in his life. But right now, was he about to experience the pain of his heart drilling apart once again?

As he turned around and took a step, Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of something, turning back.

“Little girl, this is my present to you.” Ye Qingyu came over and brought the little toy bear he had bought today at the stand. He gently placed next to the hand of the little loli who had already entered into a state of unconsciousness.

If he knew that today represented their departure, Ye Qingyu would have definitely seriously chosen a better present.

As he looked at the face of the little loli, he seriously imprinted this haggard and pallid face into his soul. Using a tone akin to making an oath, Ye Qingyu said slowly, pronouncing each word to its fullest: “Little girl, live on. Accept the power that comes from your blood.....I will definitely remember you, no matter what you turn into. I will forever be your brother Qingyu. I will definitely come find you, to make you remember me once again.”

As he finished, he looked towards Wang Jianru, his tone determined. “I need to know, just where Xiaojun’s mother has been placed.”

Wang Jianru instantly understood Ye Qingyu’s intention.

She hesitated for a moment, then nodded her head. “You will know.”

Ye Qingyu said his thanks, then turned and left.

He did not ask just who Wang Jianru actually was, or why did she do her utmost to protect Song Xiaojun, or whether there were any other people. He did not even ask, from today onwards, just where Wang Jianru would bring the little loli.....these questions were completely meaningless.

Ye Qingyu knew deep within in his heart, in this world, only with strength could one ultimately solve everything.

## Chapter 105 – Surrounded In All Directions

---

The moment Ye Qingyu turned and leave, the little loli that had always remained in the state of unconsciousness suddenly seemed to sense something. Her withered little hand stretched out, wanting to grab at something. But ultimately it fell back down without any strength. A crystal clear tear, slid down from her cheek.....

“Brother Ye, don’t leave.....”

These mumbled words were said with difficulty from her mouth.

The back of Ye Qingyu’s figure, ultimately disappeared from the wooden house.

The originally white little bear that was leaning against her suddenly fell into the embrace of the little loli. As if she was trying to grab the entire world in this instant, it was unknown where the little loli found the strength to hold onto the bear. She desperately held the little toy that had been bought from the stand, her five fingers entering deep within the little bear...

Wang Jianru subconsciously wanted to pull the little bear away.

But at this time, the scarlet red pattern surrounding the little loli, seemed to crazily extend. It travelled along the little loli’s arms and entered into the toy bear. In the blink of an eye, the white bear became a dim red colour. And in the dead eyes of the little bear, it began glimmering with a flickering red light.....



.....

.....

Following the path, he went to the exit of this independent little courtyard.

Ye Qingyu took one step over the wall flickering with silver light formation.

He came back to the still and peaceful passageway. The black clothed warrior was still waiting there quietly. As he saw Ye Qingyu coming out, he nodded his head slightly without saying a word. He remained silent as always, leading the way forward.

Ye Qingyu followed behind.

His thoughts were in disarray and he was in a subdued mood. He did not want to talk too much.

The battle in the skies that shook the entire Deer city once again flashed in Ye Qingyu's mind. He suddenly remembered the words of the mysterious expert that had controlled the demonic black clouds.

From the information within his words, the black cloud expert should be someone from the city of unmoving darkness and he had come to find the little loli. But for some reason, Wang Jianru seemed like she did not want the little loli to end up in that person's hands.....

In this matter, there were far too many secrets.

Ye Qingyu still had many questions that he could not make sense of at this time.

But without knowing why, as he subconsciously handed the little loli into the hands of Wang Jianru, he was reassured, very reassured. If there was a person in this entire world that really thought from the perspective of the little loli and did not covet the secrets on her body, then that person was Wang Jianru.

He passed through the long passage.

It was as if an age had passed.

Finally they came to the exit of the Mist Residence.

At this time, the people coming to the Mist residence to spend time and find entertainment gradually began to increase. There were continuously people entering and exiting from the entrance, and the previous warriors who were drinking wine and roasting chicken had already finished eating their breakfast meal.

They were sitting on the seats conversing, occasionally raising their eyes to inspect the people entering. The guards weighed them up and observed the visitors, so they did not allow someone to enter that should not enter.

The black clothed warrior warrior returned to his seat, taking a long gulp of alcohol before laughing along with his comrades.

Ye Qingyu's footsteps did not stop, walking straight out of the Mist

residence.

The sky outside was still dim, and the floating snow had become more and more concentrated. The snow storm that had began three days ago did not show any signs of stopping. Everywhere around the streets, thick piles of snow had already been created, and the entire Deer city was shrouded in vast white blanket.

Ye Qingyu's appearance was covered by his large garments. Lowering his head, he walked slowly through the streets.

If there was no accident that occurred, White Deer academy would no longer have a first year head teacher called Wang Yan. This represented that since Wen Wan had also left, Ye Qingyu's only familiar friend would also disappear from his life.

This made Ye Qingyu once again seriously consider the path facing him.

A tremendous change was currently occurring within White Deer academy. An intention to leave was born in Ye Qingyu's heart.

But once he left the White Deer academy, just where he could go?

At this moment Ye Qingyu could not sort his thoughts out.

He step by step walked forward slowly. Step by step, he was gradually pondering.

Abruptly, came the sounds of urgent footsteps and the clanking of

armour from beside his ears. The faint friction emitted by the metal rubbing against each other resounded throughout the air drifting with snowflakes, making it seem especially jarring. Ye Qingyu lifted his head and was able to see a black armoured group of troops fifty metres away. As if they were a black tide, they broke apart the street covered in white snow, quickly nearing.

“It’s the army of the country stationed in the Southern district, [Black mountain barracks]!”

Ye Qingyu was slightly shocked.

They were a similar organisation to the [Capture barracks] in the Northern district. The [Black mountain barracks] was one of the elite armies stationed within white Deer academy and was controlled by the Southern military leader. In these days the atmosphere of the city was strange and there were often people of the [Black mountain barracks] patrolling around the streets that maintained order within the city., But this group of people, was evidently not in the same class as a patrolling squadron. There were at least a few thousand people, in full armour and with some riding horses. The people on horses were wearing the black robe of formation masters. Scouts also flew low in the sky, flitting past wearing formation armour.....

This army had the countenance of someone facing a great enemy.

Ye Qingyu moved, silently flitting to the sides of the street and moving away. He waited until this large army had passed by.

He looked towards where the [Black mountain barracks] was rushing towards.

“It’s the direction of the Mist residence.....”

Ye Qingyu seemed to have suddenly realised something.

And nearly at the same moment, Deer city began vibrating and shaking from underneath.

As if some horrifying energy was about to break through the earth. From all sides of the city, streams of saffron yellow light soared into the sky like bright resplendent meteors shooting through the air. It left long tails in the air, and finally converged in the centre of the skies, forming a humongous grid and surrounding the entire Deer city within!

“This....could it be {Million knots of Earth and Glass}?”

Legend had it that underneath the ground of Deer city, that there was a hidden formation that was extremely powerful. Once it was activated, not only did it block everything from the outside, it was also able to prevent the people inside the formation from escaping. It was a formation that was enough to rank near the top in the entire Snow country, and was known as the [Million knots of Earth and glass]. In these decades of time, no one had ever seen the experts of the city control such a formation before because every time it activated, the amount of yuan qi of heaven and earth it expended was really too vast.

Who would have thought today was the day that the legendary formation would really be activated.

As the formation was activated, streak after streak of yuan qi shot into the sky. After this, there were expert after expert that appeared from all

directions, flickering with the bright lights of yuan qi. They headed urgently towards the direction of the Mist residence, surrounding the Mist residence from all directions.

Within the snowy skies, hundreds of figures were densely packed. They towered over the Mist residence.

These were all the famous experts of the city that were of the Spirit spring stage and above.

In a instant, they had really appeared.

A terrifying yuan qi turbulence swept throughout the land. Such a scene of hundreds of Xiantian experts acting in concert had not happened for a very long time within Deer city. Every one of them blossomed with resplendent yuan qi radiance, as if every single one of them was a radiant sun. It made one unable to stare at these figures directly.

Within Deer city, everything was in disorder.

The people that were originally undergoing all sorts of activities was scared by such a abrupt and unexpected scene.

Countless people stared dumbly at the skies, not knowing what had occurred.

“The city leader office is prosecuting the demon girl of darkness. Immediately depart a thousand metres away from the Mist Residence, otherwise you will be charged with collaborating with the demon girl.” A

voice that was like roiling thunder, incomparably imposing exploded and echoed in the air.

The citizens instantly scattered like chicken flying and dogs jumping.

Ye Qingyu's face changed. His previous guess was correct.

It came far too quickly.

The little loli was right now in a state of unconsciousness. Even if Wang Jianru's strength was powerful, but she was still only one person in the end. Would she be able to defend against all the experts of the city?

"I need to go see."

Ye Qingyu's first reaction was to turn around, heading slowly back towards the direction of the Mist Residence.

Even though he knew there would be danger. There was no way that Ye Qingyu could do nothing and depart.

But he had not even travelled a hundred metres when there were six soldiers wearing the black armour of the [Black mountain barracks] that stood out in front of him. The person leading them was a person wearing a black face armour that covered his facial features, the armour imposing and his gaze glinting with a cold light. He lifted his hand: "Halt! This path is blocked, quickly return."

Ye Qingyu's footsteps slowed down.

“Hmph, seeing your sneaky appearance, could you be the spy of that prosecuted demon girl? Quickly pull apart the cloth covering your face!” Another black armoured soldier pressed step by step closer.

Ye Qingyu hesitated slightly, then grabbed the air lightly. The Little Shang sword that was within the second spirit Spring in his dantian world vibrated slightly. Between his eyebrows, a killing intent was activating. He was about to act.....

But right at this moment——

Xiu!

A bright sword light, soared into the sky from far away.

The sword light was like electricity, shrouding all the floating snow in the sky. In this instant endless light filled the space between Heaven and Earth.

A silhouette shot into the sky.

It was Wang Jianru.

A person that towered over all life, the peerless female sword immortal that sliced apart the sky.



She finally acted.

In this moment, it was as if all the light in the world, was overtaken by the radiance of this sword.

“I don’t want to begin a slaughter today. Quickly move aside.” Wang Jianru’s voice was calm and brought with it indifference. The words resounded between Heaven and Earth. Her voice like her sword, it had a type of power that was enough shake one’s heart.

“Haha, arrogance! A weak female, dares to interfere in the matters involving the two great race and the City of Unmoving Darkness.”

An conceited and tyrannical voice broadcasted throughout the skies . A muscular figure covered by armour glowing with black light, walked towards her step by step in the air. There was a terrifying yuan qi fluctuation around him, ripples visible to the naked eye expanding with him at the centre. Behind him was ten subordinates from the same army, surrounding and protecting him. He was like a War God stepping through the air, radiating ferocity.

This was the number one person of the Southern military office, military leader Chen Jiuxing.

Within Deer city, Chen Jiuxing controlled the elite army [Black mountain barracks] . His status was only under the city leader, and was above thousands of other people. He was a person with true power, a prestigious character in the city for over twenty years. It was even said that he was a relative of the royal family. A stamp of his feet was enough

to make the entire Deer city tremble three times.

## Chapter 106 – Enemies On A Narrow Road

---

The sudden change within the city immediately attracted the attention of countless people.

Including the elite soldiers that were currently blocking Ye Qingyu.

At this time, Ye Qingyu's thoughts cleared. He promptly realised that he was still immersed in the negative emotions that had been caused by bidding the little loli farewell. In that brief moment, he really had the intent to kill them. Thinking back, instantly made cold sweat drip from all over his body.

These soldiers were the elite army that protected the Snow county. They only listened to orders, without distinguishing from good or evil and was the main force when resisting the demon race. These soldiers should not die in his hands. Furthermore, there were so many martial experts in the air. Once he made a move, it could not help but attract the notice of these people. Once the criminal charge of killing a soldier was placed on him, this was not something he could laugh about.

With a brief thought, Ye Qingyu's figure flashed, disappearing from where he stood.

Once the leading soldier had recovered from the scene in the skies and turned to look back, Ye Qingyu was already gone.

“What's happened? Where is he?” Another soldier was deeply shocked. “Can this fellow really be the comrade of that demonic girl? It's a pity, we

got distracted and let him get away otherwise it would be a great merit.”

The leading soldier shook his head. “This person is strange and is definitely not weak. We may not be his opponent. It doesn’t matter if we let him escape, layers of barriers has already been placed within the city. If that person is really the henchman of that demonic girl, he will be executed sooner or later.....”

As he spoke, a tightly clustered meteor like light without any signs appeared in the skies. Then it ruptured apart. In a split second, it made the entire Deer city seem as if it was in a dream, with an indescribable magnificence and bizarreness to radiance.

“The signal to attack! Lets charge in.”

The leading soldier loudly roared, taking out the long sword in his waist. Leading his subordinates, he charged towards the Mist Residence.

And nearly at the same time, around all directions of the Mist Residence there were large numbers of soldiers from the [Black Mountain barracks] that appeared. As if they were a black avalanche, they advanced and rushed towards the Mist residence.

Countless walls of the streets and alley were destroyed by the martial experts, dust and smoke rising to the sky. When the machine of the orderly army began functioning, it was extremely cold and merciless.

Without any prior signs, hundreds of people wearing night skin tight clothing appeared in the originally empty and silent streets. Their pace was vigorous and their figures agile. Evidently they were experts of the martial path. As if they were a nest of grey snakes, they blocked the path of the charging [Black mountain barracks] army coming from all directions.

A brief exchange between the forces.

The clash of metallic weapons striking each other constantly emitted.

What accompanied this clash was the grievous screams that occurred just before a person died.

White snowflakes danced, red blood spurted.

An abrupt and unexpected battle, broke out this afternoon in the Southern district.

“Haha, no wonder you hid the demonic girl here. So you had long hidden your forces here. Hmph, a evil doer will forever be a evil doer. They are fated to die, can they overturn this fate?” Within the air, the Chen Jiuxing wearing black armour laughed loudly. With a flick of his hand, a incomparably huge hatchet appeared in his hands.

He casually swiped.

A yuan qi formation was able to be seen on the huge black hatchet.

Originally the hatchet was only around half a metre large but the moment it struck through the air, it suddenly transformed into a weapon hundreds of metres long. Glorious black light came from this weapon. As it neared the ground, the power of this yuan qi hatchet became stronger and stronger. From far away, the impact of this scene made it seem as if

even the sky was being chopped apart by this hatchet.

“You are looking to die!”

In that clear and cold voice, a vast sword light shot into the sky from the Mist Residence.

Bang!

The sword light crushed apart the yuan qi hatchet.

The terrifying residual forces from this impact travelled all around.

At first glance, it was as if a hurricane broke out twenty metres from the ground that radiated in all directions. The air rapidly circulated. The terrifying force, was enough to make all the architecture within a hundred metre collapse like paper falling with a crash. Hundreds of pounds of rubble and smashed walls flew through the air in chaotic trajectories. Dust and white snow completely enveloped the sky in an instant!

In such a chaotic commotion, a white figure soared into the sky.

Her sword was like lightning.

It was namely the female sword immortal, Wang Jianru.

Her figure was like electricity, advancing towards Chen Jiuxing.

The time had finally arrived for the battle between true experts.

A thousand metres radius from the Mist Residence was instantly transformed into an Asura battleground, incomparably chaotic.

Ye Qingyu was a like a black spirit, piercing throughout this chaotic battlefield. He carefully avoided both parties, observing in detail everything that occurred around him.

The grey clothed warriors that had suddenly appeared around him, seemed Wang Jianru's men. It was only that when Ye Qingyu entered the Mist Residence, he did not see a hint of these people so he had no way of confirming whether this assumption was correct. But recalling the way Wang Jianru handled matters this was not such a great leap to make. She was mysterious, dealing with every matter using meticulous planning and foresight. She hid herself within White Deer academy for ten years without being discovered. To privately raise a group of warriors that were loyal and willing to die for her was not a problem.

But in such a situation, where it seemed that the entire Deer city encircled them and wanted to annihilate them, would they be able to handle it? Even if Wang Jianru's strength was even more profound, would she be able to bring the little loli safely away?

Furthermore, the enemy at this time was not only the army stationed at Deer city.

There was also the person that previously battled with Wang Jianru, the person that always hid after being defeated by the Splitting Heaven sword will. That terrifying expert that controlled the black clouds permeating the air....

In his heart, Ye Qingyu was extremely worried.

That was the reason why he secretly returned and had risked coming back into the battlefield.

Even though his strength could absolutely not alter anything, but there was no way he could just leave the little loli and depart in peace.

At this time, the entire area had already become a disordered huddle. The grey clothed warriors crazily delayed the advance of the enemy. Evidently there was no way for them to come out alive of this situation so they could only fight to the death. Their resistance was grievous and critical. From the perspective of individual strength, their power was higher than the elites of the [Black mountain barracks]. But due to the absolute numbers advantage, injuries and death began to appear and the area they defended constantly shrunk.....

Within a collapsed house, there were tragic screams resounding.

It was obviously a normal citizen within the house that had not yet left and was dragged into such a battle. They suffered a calamity that had nothing to do with them.

The leader of the [Black mountain barracks], obviously did not want to rustle the grass and alert the snake so he did not move the people of Mist residence away completely before the battle. Therefore from the start, he



did not want to evacuate the people a thousand metres around the Mist residence prior to attacking. In other words, the normal citizens within this area would be needless sacrifices for this plan. Only those with true luck, would perhaps be able to retain their life in the midst of such a chaotic battle.

Ye Qingyu saw with his own eyes, the tragedies that were occurring. In a collapsed house within the battlefield, a young husband and wife was crushed to death by the shattered stone wall. From their appearance they had not yet been wedded for long, and there were still red celebratory characters in the room. An endless desolateness and pity....

Facing such a scene, Ye Qingyu could only sigh.

As he passed by more collapsed structures, if there were people injured, Ye Qingyu would drag them away from the destroyed structures and stop their bleeding.

He did his utmost to get near the Mist residence, wanting to find where the little loli was exactly. But he kept failing. The grey clothed warriors defence was extremely frantic, as long as he was not someone that belonged to their group they would strike to kill. And as for the people of the [Black mountain barracks] they thought that Ye Qingyu was an enemy, attacking him whenever they saw him.

Pak!

Ye Qingyu's fist shot out, sending a soldier of the Black mountain barracks flying.

“Continuing in such a way, is not a good method. Before I can find the little loli, I will become the enemy of everyone.” Ye Qingyu dodged a whistling long sword, ducking and leaning, entering into the embrace of the grey clothed warrior holding the sword.

He then knocked him flying, his figure flashing and concealing within a collapsed stone house nearby.

After attempting several times, Ye Qingyu finally managed to hide himself under a stone bridge a hundred metres away from the Mist Residence.

From this position, he could see the destroyed entrance of the Mist Residence. In the previous exchange between Wang Jianru and Chen Jiuxing, the residual force from this exchange had nearly completely flattened this location. Without the obstruction of high walls and passageways, he could largely see everything within the Mist Residence clearly. But right now, he still had not yet discovered the figures of the little loli and the others....

“I can only hope that Wang Jianru has already arranged everything.”

Ye Qingyu thought in his heart.

And at this time, a black figure abruptly crawled from the rubbles of the Mist residence. Shaking off the dirt and dust on his body, like a agile cat, he slowly and carefully began to act.....

It was that black clothed person.

Ye Qingyu's heart pulsed. Seeing this figure, it was the person who had recognised him with just glance in the mist residence, the black clothed person that had brought him to see Wang Jianru.

Should he call out to him?

Ye Qingyu hesitated for a moment, then heard a series of footsteps running towards them.

“Who's that? Stand there!”

“Escape? You dare escape? He must be a person working for that demonic girl. Everyone charge, the commander has an order, capturing people alive will have a heavy reward!”

Several loud shouts sounded and the urgent footsteps brought with it the clank of armour. Evidently it was the elite soldiers of the [Black mountain barracks]. They had discovered the black clothed man and charged towards him. What followed after was the sounds of swords clashing, and very quickly a grunt. With a plop someone fell, and the battle stopped.....

“Motherfucker, who let you escape, you have killed the people on our side. Little kid, you have guts. Tear his black cloth from his face, I need to see his appearance.....” A arrogant and poisonous voice was able to be heard extremely clearly.

Evidently the black clothed person could not win against the soldiers alone, and was ultimately captured.

What followed after was the sounds of flesh striking flesh. It should be the black clothed man being fiercely slapped.

Ye Qingyu originally wanted to act to save him, but hearing this familiar voice, he paused.

This voice, was really too familiar for him.

It was the voice of Xia Houwu.

Because of the matter that had occurred within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Xia Houwu had been expelled from White Deer academy. His name was erased from the register without anyone knowing where he went. Originally Ye Qingyu wanted to find Xia Houwu to settle their debts, but he did not think that he would come across him today. This was somewhat queer.

But as he thought deeper about this matter it was not so strange. The Xiahou family was one of the top noble families in the city.

Through the accumulation of generations, they possessed influence and wealth. No matter what, Xia Houwu was the son of the first wife of the head of family. Even though he was expelled from the academy, to rely on relations to enter the [Black Mountain barracks] in order to gain some experience was very possible. After all, for many nobles, an army was a passable destination to train and perfect one's skills.

“Who, who are you? Where did you hide the demonic girl?”

On the bridge, the soldiers was currently interrogating the black clothed man.

Ye Qingyu evaluated all around him. Within a hundred metres dust and snow was thick in the air, without signs of many people nearby.

Such an opportunity was hard to come by.

He prepared to act.

This time Xia Houwu was really unlucky, to appear at such a place. Last time, after he had targetted the little loli, Ye Qingyu could barely control his killing intent. This time, Ye Qingyu would absolutely not let him go.

## Chapter 107 – The Four Military Leaders

---

Ye Qingyu made his decision, not hesitating anymore and preparing to act.

He activated his inner yuan, then struck out with his fist.

Boom!

A large hole was directly created in the stone bridge he was hiding under..

The rock structure shattered immediately, dust and smoke rising in the air.

At this instant, Ye Qingyu was like a bolt of lightning flying from beneath the bridge with his palm strikes like electricity. In a split second he had struck four times. The four elite soldiers of the [Black mountain barracks] that were wearing black armoured face masks did not react to this ambush in time. They were hit directly in the foreheads. With a muffled grunt, their bodies went limp, falling down.

Ye Qingyu only knocked them unconscious, he did not kill them.

“Who is it”

On the bridge, the last soldier of the black mountain barracks holding

the black clothed person was still there. He was shocked, his mouth opened wide and loudly exclaiming.

The voice belonged to Xia Houwu

Ye Qingyu let out a cold laugh, nearing the distance in an instant.

Xia Houwu felt that this laughter was somewhat familiar, as if he had heard it before somewhere. But in this brief moment he could not investigate too deeply before he needed to defend, the long spear in his hands blocking the strike of the enemy.

Ye Qingyu still only utilised his fists.

Yong !

Within the sound of the impact, the standard weapon made from steel, was bent in a split second by this punch.

The fist completely crushed past the wailing spear, striking onto Xia Houwu's body.

The body of the spear snapped.

Xia Houwu felt his soul flying away and scattering. He could sense a vast force behind the punch entering within his chest. Afterwards, like a mountain torrent breaking out and unleashing, the force destroyed everything in its path. In this moment, he could even hear the terrifying

noise of his own internal organs shattering and crumbling apart.

This was the sound of death arriving.

The pupils of Xia Houwu dilated.

“It’s you....” He was finally able to recognise Ye Qingyu at the last moment.

The next second Xia Houwu was possessed by hatred and mad regret, incomparably alarmed. That he would meet Ye Qingyu here, could it be that was his fate had already been decided by the Heavens? This meeting was different from their last in the Boundary canyon battlefield. Dying here represented a true death, without the chance to resurrect.

“You should have long died. This time, who can save you?” A second force exploded from Ye Qingyu’s fist.

“You.....would really dare kill me, you.....” He bellowed with a dark guttural roar, his facial features covered with hatred and venom. His body was like a kite that had its string broken, landing against a stone wall. Blood spurted madly from his mouth, completely fainting.

Ye Qingyu’s hand struck out again, forming a blade with his hand and snapping the shackles of the black clothed man.

“Follow me and leave.” Ye Qingyu extended his hand to support him.



The black clothed man that was heavily injured he was able to recognise Ye Qingyu. But instead of taking a hand, he took a step backwards and shook his head.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

A bitter smile appeared on the black clothed man, determinedly shaking his head. "Young lord, quickly go. They have already seen my face, they know what I look like. Today within Deer city, everyone under the Bitter Sea stage prosecuted by the army will ultimately be found. Don't worry about me. Bringing me along, will only be your burden....."

"But....."

Ye Qingyu still could not bear leaving him behind.

Since this black clothed person was tasked with the responsibility of bring him to see Wang Jianru and little loli, then evidently he was a person that Wang Jianru trusted very much. If possible, Ye Qingyu of course wanted to save him.

"You should leave quickly, don't linger in such a dangerous place." The black clothed man took another step or two backwards. "My life is cheap, if not for my master in these past years, I would have long died. Right now I will give my life back to my master.....Young lord, quickly go. Master has already arranged everything, the little princess will definitely be unharmed. You don't need to worry."

As he finished, he grabbed a long sword lying beside him. With a slice,

quick as lightning, he mercilessly sliced apart his own face.

Ye Qingyu was greatly shocked.

He was able to see that this sword had completely sliced apart the skin of his face. His entire facial features was a bloody mess. There was absolutely no way anymore of recognising his original features. The black clothed man let out a long laugh, then stabbed the blade into his own chest. He jumped into the river under the stone bridge.

Ye Qingyu remained silent with no words he could say.

He knew the reason why this black clothed man had destroyed his facial features. He was afraid that even if he died, that the army would be able to trace his background and history. He was worried that his family in the city would be affected. Therefore, he would completely destroy his face and chose to commit suicide.

What kind of man was this to be so staunch and loyal.

In this instant, Ye Qingyu was completely shaken.

And at this time, there was the sound of footsteps coming from far away. There was a large quantity of elite soldiers from the [Black mountain barracks] that quickly rushed over.

Ye Qingyu let out a long sigh of regret, turning and heading towards another direction.

As he passed by the corpse of Xia Houwu, a thought occurred to him that this fellow may be faking his death. As he ran, he kicked a boulder, and under his inner yuan, the boulder was like a arrow released from a bow. It completely smashed and mutilated the head of the corpse. Confirming there was nothing to else to be taken care of, Ye Qingyu quickly hid in the rubble and dust far away.

Very quickly, tens of soldiers from the [Black mountain barracks] came to the stone bridge.

.....

.....

A short while later.

Ye Qingyu had successfully managed to escape from the chaotic battlefield around the Mist residence.

The experience that he had in killing and passing through the wilderness area of the Boundary canyon had given him an sensitive instinct like that of a wild beast. At this moment, it proved to be of vital use. He continuously ran into the encirclement and blockages of the Black mountain barracks, but manage to successfully break through the surrounding troops every time.

The battle in the skies was still ongoing.

Chen Jiuxing along with tens of expert of Deer city continued to entangle Wang Jianru.

This was the fight that would determine the final outcome of this battle.

The sword light was like lightning, constantly slicing apart the skies.

With every swipe of Chen Jiuxing's huge hatchet, there would be a vast energy striking out along with it. The yuan qi hatchet chopped apart space, tides of air visible to the human eye spreading out everywhere, incomparably vigorous. By Ye Qingyu's rough estimation, the strength of this person, should have already reached the thirty Spirit springs stage. No wonder he was one of the four military leaders of Deer city, his strength was indeed powerful.

But even if so, along with the cooperation with tens of Spirit spring experts, Chen Jiuxing was still at a disadvantage.

Wang Jianru seemed to be holding something in her left arm. Her right arm casually struck out, and another ray of sword light sliced apart the space. The tightly clustered sword light was like shooting stars. Although the sword light was not as vast or as large as the yuan qi hatchet but it was far brighter. The radiance was able to completely shroud the splendour of the sun and moon. In a instant, it completely broke apart the yuan qi hatchet. 。

Ye Qingyu retreated below to a restaurant a thousand metres away, mixing into the crowd. All his attention and concentration was focused on the battle in the skies. 。

The surrounding conversation was noisy and clamorous, discussing the events that were occurring within the city.

“Did you hear that the demonic girl of darkness appeared from the Qingluo merchant company? ”

“That’s right. Do you not see the woman holding the sword in the skies, her background is very great. I hear that even if she dies, she wants to protect the demonic girl of darkness!””

“It seems like this demonic girl of darkness was even a student of White Deer academy.”

“Hopefully the army can quickly eliminate that demonic girl. Otherwise, I hear that the demonic girl of darkness will bring with her a curse. If so, our entire Deer city will be plunged into misfortune.”

In such a world where the martial way was prosperous, there were some people afraid of dying. But people who were not scared and loved to spectate the excitement was in greater numbers. Not only this restaurant, but many of the structures just outside the forbidden radius of entry, was especially packed with all sorts of people. Everyone of them was observing the battle that was like a fight between deities occurring in the skies.

Characters like Chen Jiuxing had not fought with his full strength for a very long time. Even martial artists of the city had not seen such a world shaking battle for many years. Everyone of them was fascinated by what was occurring.

Ye Qingyu had already changed into another pair of clothing, pushing himself into the crowd without saying anything.

And at this time, the battle in the skies had already continued on for over an hour.

Ye Qingyu sensed that something was slightly strange, but could not say what exactly it was.

During this moment, within the air another abrupt change occurred. —

Another beam of light, came from the Western district of the city. Radiant like the sun, it transformed into a tightly clustered dots of lights. Like rain itself, it shot towards Wang Jianru

When Ye Qingyu looked carefully, it was not green dots of light at all.

It was evidently a large swathe of densely packed green sword lights. As if it was a hurricane rainstorm, it struck to kill Wang Jianru.

Another true expert had acted.

It was the number one person of the Western military office, military leader Qian Yuan.

The people all around instantly became excited.

The two great military leaders of Deer city had high status with great power and prestige. For the normal citizens of the city, they were existences where they could see the dragon's head but not the dragons's tail<sup>1</sup>. This time where the two of them united to face a common enemy, could be counted as a grand occasion that had not occurred for tens of years.

But Ye Qingyu was somewhat anxious.

Out of the so many people observing the battle, he was the only one who hoped that Wang Jianru and the little loli would be able to safely depart.

Only after a moment, could Ye Qingyu's worry lessen slightly. 。

The Western military leader Qian Yuan demonstrated a powerful strength. His sword light transformed into rain, and within the green light there was a strange and fearful energy. He was not in anyway less powerful then the Southern military leader Chen Jiuxing. but what was strange was that even after Qian Yuan entered into the battlefield, he could not change the situation at all. Gradually in the this fight, Wang Jianru still completely suppressed and controlled the experts of Deer city.

“This is strange, Wang Jianru can evidently handle there attacks with ease, why doesn't she break through?” Ye Qingyu sensed that something was peculiar undergoing.

Boom!Boom !

Accompanied by the two yuan qi radiance exploding from the Northern and Eastern city districts, there were yet more true experts appearing. Like long streaks of red light shooting through the air, they joined the battle in an instant.

Another two military leaders had appeared.

A commotion was instantly created in the crowd observing the battle.

The four great military leaders attacking at the same time!

“Haha, the four trashes has finally appeared?” The voice of Wang Jianru resounded throughout the sky, bringing with it a pride and contempt. “Qin Ying, your city leader why has he not yet appeared? To dare act against me, but not have the guts to appear in front of me. He sends scraps such as you people to your death?” ”

Before she had finished.

A sword light exploded from Wang Jianru’s right arm.

This sword was enough to shroud all the grace and colour of the world in this very moment.

No matter whether it was Chen Jiuxing’s yuan qi hatchet or Qian Yuan’s green sword light, nothing could block it. Everywhere in the sky, along with the two other great military leaders and the tens of experts,



everything was swept away. Their yuan qi attacks, facing such a sword light was like white snow meeting boiling water. It completely disappeared. Everywhere this sword light passed, space was sliced apart. The clouds were completely dispelled, an azure blue crack sweeping across Deer city.

-----

1. acts extremely mysteriously ↩

## Chapter 108 – An Unexpected Invitation

---

The splendour around the four military leaders completely shattered. Each of them gave a low grunt, then like a giant hammer striking a straw man, they were sent flying through the air. At the same time, the tens of experts attacking in concert was in an even more dismal state. They lost control of their bodies and fell with a crack from the sky.

Splitting Heaven sword will !

It was Splitting Heaven sword will yet again!

Ye Qingyu nearly started cheering out loud.

This sword, was namely the sword that had sliced apart the black clouds permeating the skies and defeated the mysterious expert. Once Splitting Heaven sword will came out, just who could compete?

In front of this sword, the four military leaders could not even withstand one single strike. The tens of experts that aided them could not even be counted as side characters.

Silence completely covered this world at this very moment.

Everyone had their state of mind completely taken away by this sword that could reap heaven and earth. They stared dumbly into the sky.

“I gave you a chance, but you have made me disappointed. You are just a group of retards being used by other people.” Wang Jianru stood independently in the skies, black hair fluttering like a divine woman surveying everything beneath her. “Qin Ying, if you don’t act, then I’m going to leave.”

Qin Ying!

This two words, was the name of the greatest ruler at this time in Deer city. A second class noble of Snow country, one of the four big players of the Deer mountain range, the name of the city leader.

The two words from Wang Jianru’s mouth, held an undisguised provocation.

But in the direction of the city leader office, there were nothing to be seen. From the start till now, it was completely silent.

The city leader whose words held enormous weight in Deer city, his existence like that of a feudal overlord, remained silent from beginning to end. He did not have the intention of acting in the slightest. Even though all the attention of the city was closely focused on the city leader office but there was not a sound to be heard in the vast architecture.

Wang Jianru stood alone in the blue dome of heaven, overlooking the entire city.

After ten breaths of time, a strange and faint smile appeared on the face of the female sword immortal.

“So you are intelligent. ”

The female sword immortal gave the entire Deer city a glance, then shot into the air.

Boom!

Using the power of her physical flesh, using brute force, she broke open a crack on the legendary formation [Million knots of Earth and Glass]. Her figure transformed into a ray of light, winking away and disappearing in the South West direction from Deer city. !

This scene made the four military leaders who witnessed this completely shaken. The faces of the four people instantly showed expressions of shock and disbelief.

Using merely the power of her physical body to break past the great formation created using the entire power of the city, this was too universally shocking. The four military leaders were clear, that if it was they themselves, even if they used all their power along with treasures to strike this great formation, it would be useless. They would be like a watermelon hitting the city wall. Their attacks would completely shatter into pieces in an instant, with absolutely no possibility of shaking such a formation.

In this instant, the four dripped cold sweat, a burst of lingering fear.

They only comprehended just now, just what kind of person that they

had been fighting with.

Especially Chen Jiuxing, he realised how dangerous he was previously. He had just taken a loop around the Gates of Hell. If not for Wang Jianru showing mercy for some reason, he would be dead right now. She could slaughter him in an instant — not only slaughter him, even if the four military leaders teamed up, there was a possibility that they would all be slaughtered in a split second.

This woman, was far more powerful and terrifying than what they originally imagined.

The four military leaders had all previously seen the battle in the skies. They saw the sword light that appeared in the sky, slicing apart the black clouds permeating the air. But they only thought that the clouds had naturally dispersed. Even if they were chopped apart, this did not represent anything. In the eyes of these people, the fluctuations coming from this sword light was not that intense so the four of them therefore had the confidence to challenge this female sword immortal.

But from what it seemed like the distance between their realms was far, far too great. Therefore at that time they were not able to sense the intricacies lying behind that sword. Only when facing her personally, could they sense that frightening Splitting heaven sword will that ravaged everything before its path.

Within Deer city, every force was shaken.

No one had expected that such a large and widespread encirclement and annihilation would ultimately become a farce. The so called four

military leaders teaming up to fight against the enemy, right now seemed more like a joke. The four great characters of the city with serious power and prestige, was played with like monkeys. In the final moment, they even lost the courage to attempt to regain their face.。

One could imagine, in a long time after, this white dressed woman holding a sword like a immortal, would become the unforgettable monster that would appear in the dreams of everyone in the city.

Ye Qingyu finished watching, then gradually retreated and disappeared within the crowd.

There were many things that he could not think through.

Wang Jianru's strength was so powerful, then why did she need to sacrifice those grey clothed warriors? She absolutely could bring them away before the four military leaders and the [Black mountain barracks] arrived. Just who could block her path? ?

But questions he did not manage understand, did not always need an answer.

Seeing Wang Jianru carrying the little loli disappearing in the horizon, Ye Qingyu's felt relaxed in his heart but also as if he had lost something in his life, somewhat regretful and disappointed. 。

By the time the sun had set, he had returned to the Ye mansion.

Qin Lan and the others anxiously waited for Ye Qingyu. Today the city

was complete chaos. They were worried that Ye Qingyu would be affected. Only seeing him safely return, could Qin Lan rest assured.

Nothing happened during the night.

In the next few days, Ye Qingyu remained in the Ye mansion without returning to the White Deer academy.

Gradually, there were all sorts of information and news that circulated.

Within these news, the one regarding how Xia Houwu died in battle during the to encircle the demonic girl attracted Ye Qingyu's attention the most.

According to the news coming from the neighbourhood, Xia Houwu had died in battle fighting against the henchmen of the demonic girl. He received the commendation of the [Black mountain barracks]. It was said that the Southern military leader Chen Jiuxing went personally to offer his condolences to the Xiahou family, expressing an apology for the fact that he failed to take good care of Xia Houwu.

In reality in this matter both Xiahou family and Chen Jiuxing was extremely aggravated. Originally Xia Houwu was to be placed in the back lines, with no need to enter the battlefield and in extremely safe position. When the moment came, they could just add a few embellishments on his military achievements and give him a military medal. In less than one or two years, he would have propitious wind throughout his journey and his career would advance. Who would have guessed that such a matter would occur. However, even if the Xiahou family felt grief and indignation, they did not dare to criticise the military leader of a district.

But a crack appeared in the relationship between the two parties.

Reportedly, the six other soldiers of the Black mountain barracks that entered along with Xia Houwu into the field of battle were all noble children of various families in the city. The six of them had only sustained light injuries. Afterwards when the Xiahou family investigated for several days, they could not discover, just who had killed Xia Houwu.....

Apart from this, there were various kinds of rumours regarding the demonic girl of darkness.ο

It had already been confirmed that the so called demonic girl, was born from a common woman in the Qingluo merchant company and that she was a student of White Deer academy. Facing the questioning of all parties, both the Qingluo merchant company and the White Deer academy, maintained a strange silence.

There were also rumours that this demonic girl had a very good relationship with a student called Ye Qingyu when she was at the academy. The direction of the wind gradually showed a tendency to blow towards Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu remained motionless from beginning to end.

He stayed within the [Determination garden] in the Ye mansion, continuing to train.



In order to find the little loli one day, to make her once again remember him, he needed absolute strength. Because Wang Jianru had once said, the strength of the little loli would grow by leaps and bounds. Even if she did not train, she would step into the ranks of the strongest of the world. Ye Qingyu did not have the bloodline or body like that of the little loli, so he could only train bitterly hard.

The strength that Wang Jianru demonstrated had completely stimulated Ye Qingyu.

The battle of the four military leaders in the skies, made Ye Qingyu realise that even the famous experts of Deer city, compared to the vast and boundless Heaven Wasteland domain, was still only ants. He was not satisfied with the current growth of his strength.

With the nameless breathing technique and the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], Ye Qingyu had the confidence to one day soar into the skies.

In the blink of an eye, half a month had passed.

Qin Lan carefully prepared Ye Qingyu's three meals a day, rarely disturbing him. Every couple of days, Tang San would report back to him regarding the different situations of the properties.

Ever since the day that Ye Qingyu had taken care of Sun Yufu in the Taoxuan pavillion, Liu Yuancheng had not made a move. As a result, the business of Taoxuan pavilion flourished. After the rumours of the Taoxuan incident spread, it led the related businesses of the Ye family to stabilise, going on the right track day after day.

Such a situation did not interest Ye Qingyu too much, so he only dealt with it a little bit. Seeing this, Tang San could only feel helpless in his heart.

That day.

Ye Qingyu was namely practicing the four moves of the unmatched general.。

Ye Qingyu had already began to grasp the basics of the four move. The last move, [Sword of judgement] really had endless mysteries. At the moment, the most Ye Qingyu could do under the direction of his inner yuan was to activate a divine sword the width of his palm. The power it displayed was enough to completely crush an opponent at the same stage of him.

At t his time, the sound of knocking was heard.

Qin Lan entered with a strange expression. “Little Yu, someone wants to see you outside the mansion.”

“Me? Who is it?” Ye Qingyu casually asked. He knew that the identity of the person wanting to see him must be special. Because otherwise, if it was the pointless people that wanted to gain information regarding the girl of darkness, or little noble families and merchants wanting to give gifts to him, Qin Lan would definitely prevent them from disturbing him.,

“It’s a young man.” Qin Lan said. “He said his name is Xu Ge. He said if you heard his name, you would definitely want to see him.”

Xu Ge? ?

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

The Xu Ge of Azure Phoenix academy? ?

What did he want from him that he would come to the Ye mansion to find him?

Ye Qingyu felt somewhat peculiar. After considering, he allowed Qin Lan to let him enter the Ye mansion. Changing into new clothing, and taking a quick wash, he headed towards the front hall. 。

As he went to the front hall, he could see the Xu Ge clothed in white, wearing a faint smile and speaking about something to Qin Lan. It seemed that the atmosphere was not bad.

Ye Qingyu could not deny, that if one was to take away the identity that they were enemies in the Boundary canyon battlefield, Xu Ge was a young man that one could easily like. Cultured and refined, possessing extraordinary talent, he knew when to advance or retreat. With a distinguished way of conversing, he was a talented person that was resplendent like a precious jade.

“That senior brother Xu would come to my place, is really unexpected.”

Ye Qingyu greeted him, questioning him openly.

Xu Ge had a faint smile, clasping his hands together. “On the first day that I saw senior brother Qingyu, I knew I would face a great enemy. Within the boundary canyon battlefield, senior brother Qingyu really displayed his divine might, making my junior brothers and I dejected and depressed.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything.◦

Qin Lan smiled and said her greetings, then left the front hall.

Xu Ge had a smile: “Senior brother Qingyu is a person that is straight and to the point. Then I won’t beat around the bush. The expedition party of the Azure Phoenix academy will leave White Deer city three days later and return to the Azure Phoenix city. Me and Elder Chen admires the performance you had very much in the Boundary canyon battlefield. We want to ask senior brother Yu, that whether you had any interest to join our Azure Phoenix academy?”

## Chapter 109 – A Shy Youth

---

Hearing this, Ye Qingyu was taken back.

That the Azure Phoenix academy would invite him to join....this, just what was happening? ?

This was an event that was absolutely outside of his calculations.

“According to my knowledge, senior brother Qingyu is already beginning to feel dissatisfied with White Deer academy due to the previous events. For at least a month, you have not returned to the White Deer academy. If so, why don’t you have a change of environments.” Xu Ge had a faint smile when he spoke. “In truth, I think that the glory of White Deer academy has already faded and old habits are hard to overcome. They are already not fit for such a genius like senior brother Qingyu. Only by becoming a student of Azure Phoenix, can allow you to become a true expert. ”

Ye Qingyu did not give a reply.

He was currently pondering the information contained within Xu Ge’s words.

Xu Ge was not impatient, silently sitting there, waiting.

After a while, Ye Qingyu asked: “I have a question, I am currently a student of White Deer academy. Can I even transfer to the Azure Phoenix

academy?”

Xu Ge became overjoyed, thinking that Ye Qingyu was seriously considering his proposal. With a large smile: “Of course this is possible. Students transferring between the ten great academies has many precedents. One such recent example, was the Blue Sky of your academy. Perhaps senior brother Ye does not realise, he was once a person belonging to the divine phoenix academy and only later did he transfer to the white Deer academy. ”

Hearing this, Ye Qingyu could not help but be stunned.

What?

How was this possible? ?

Blue Sky had transferred from the Divine phoenix academy?

Although he had previously known, Blue Sky was not a student born and bred in White Deer academy and that he possessed a special background. But he absolutely did not imagine that it was special to such an extent. That person, had really came from the divine phoenix academy.

This was slightly unbelievable.

The name of the Divine Phoenix academy, for any martial artist, was equal to thunder piercing through the ears.

For the simple reason that the Divine Phoenix academy was number one in the rankings of the ten great academies.

This academy was the academy with the longest history and the greatest depth of resources. It was said that it was founded by the people who created Snow country. At the start, Divine Phoenix academy would not accept anyone not of the royal family. But then it gradually loosened the requirements, accepting geniuses that were from common and noble background, making it so that anyone could enter Divine Phoenix academy.

For any young boy or girl, entering the Divine Phoenix academy, was no different from ascending to Heaven in one step.

Who knows how many young geniuses cried and wept, wanting to enter the Divine Phoenix academy. How many noble families had expended their entire family wealth to allow their children to enter the Divine Phoenix academy.

But that monster Blue Sky, really left the Divine Phoenix academy to come to the White Deer academy? ?

His brain, was it kicked by someone?

Ye Qingyu had never thought that Blue Sky possessed such a tale.

There must be many stories behind him.

After considering slightly for a while, Ye Qingyu finally shook his head. “Such a matter, I can’t give you an immediate answer. I need to think over this carefully” ”

Xu Ge nodded his head. “Of course. Elder Chen said, the doors of the Azure Phoenix academy will forever be open for geniuses like senior brother Qingyu. We will leave Deer city within three days. In these three days, if you make an decision, you can come find me at any time. You should know where the temporary residence of the Azure Phoenix academy is located, right?” ”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Xu Ge turned around and bid farewell.

Ye Qingyu did not try to make him stay, seeing him off.

As he was seeing Xu Ge off at the entrance of the Ye mansion, there was a noisy din outside the entrance with short burst of curses mixed in.

Ye Qingyu’s eyebrows knitted together.

When he arrived at the entrance, he could see there were tens of people tensely packed at the door.

“He’s come out, he’s come out, Ye Qingyu has finally came.”

“Hmph, so he came.”



“The person surnamed Ye, since you’ve come, then you should explain to us.”

“That’s right, it’s no use hiding. If you are a man, then explain it full and well to us.” ”

Seeing that Ye Qingyu had come out, the crowd surged violently. They completely pressed close and surrounded him. The people leading the crowd, seemed to be around twenty years of age. They were young and vigorous, anger on their faces. They pointed at Ye Qingyu’s face, saliva sputtering everywhere with several fingers nearly touching Ye Qingyu’s face.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He did not understand just what these people had come for.

He did not recognise these people, having never seen them before. From their appearance, they were also not people of White Deer academy. Their clothing was very ordinary, and did not seem like it belonged to the nobles in the city. They looked more like local ruffians who idled about. He did not know why they surrounded him here and why they demanded an explanation.

Seeing this scene, Xu Ge was somewhat bewildered.

But he only had a brief smile: “Since senior brother Ye has business to attend to, then I’ll first leave. If senior brother Ye makes a decision, you

need only to let me know. I very much hope, that I am able to attend the same academy as a genius like senior brother Ye.”

Finishing saying this, he clasped his hands and left.

Ye Qingyu clasped his hands in farewell.。

After seeing Xu Ge off, Ye Qingyu stood on the steps, staring down from a high position. He remained silent for a while, lowering his head and looking at the unfathomable people filled with righteous indignation. “Fine, who is going to tell me. Just what do I need to explain, make it clear.”

The leading young man was around twenty seven or eight years old, wearing ragged and coarse clothing. Crossing his arms across his chest, he coldly laughed: “Of course what you need to explain is the situation regarding the girl of darkness. I hear that your relationship with her is the best at White Deer academy. Even if you are not her comrade, you are linked together in countless ways. Say it, just where has that demonic girl escaped to?”

Ye Qingyu was shocked, then a trace of killing intent appeared on his face.

So it was for this.

His gaze, passed by the crowd, remembering every single face in the crowd. Then he nodded his head without saying anything, heading back towards the entrance.。

“Eh? Stand there!” The young man panicked, a trace of maliciousness appearing within his eyes. He jumped and grabbed Ye Qingyu’s shoulder. “To leave is not so easy. First you must make an explanation for yourself.”

Ye Qingyu did not turn back, his shoulder jolting slightly.

“Ah....” The young man could only feel a pain in his arm, as if it had broken. Then his body flew backwards and knocked into the crowd, causing a loud crashing sound.

Bang !

The entrance of the Ye mansion was firmly locked.

“If you make me see you guys near the entrance again, then don’t blame me for being merciless.”

Ye Qingyu’s voice seeped out from the crack of the doors, bringing with it a icy chill that permeated their bones.

Outside the doors.

The young man and the people behind him stared blankly.

This was not the result that they had expected.

After remaining stunned for a moment, a malicious expression appeared on the face of the young man. “I don’t believe, that he dares to make the entire city as his enemy. If wants to kill someone, haha, just who is he threatening?”

.....

.....

After returning to the Determination garden, Ye Qingyu’s mood was not positive in the slightest.

Even an idiot could tell, that this group of people were just idle ruffians from the streets. He did not know just whose instructions they had received to make an issue out of this. This kind of method was really too insidious.

The little loli Song Xiaojun, was a untouchable dragon’s scale on Ye Qingyu’s heart.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu’s will to kill was invoked.

But he managed to barely suppress it. 。

Only after practising in the nameless breathing technique, did Ye Qingyu’s heart gradually settle down.

Training until night fell, Ye Qingyu then came towards the entrance to

have a look. He discovered that this group still had not departed. But they were not as noisy as before. It seemed like the threat he had made in the day proved to be somewhat effective. He did not pay attention to this matter anymore. After returning to the mansion to eat dinner, he returned to his room and began to seriously consider the proposal that Xu Ge had made to him during the day.

In truth, Ye Qingyu had really began to consider leaving the White Deer academy.

Wen Wan and Wang Jianru had both left the White Deer academy and such a matter had occurred on the body of Song Xiaojun. Ye Qingyu felt that his sense of belonging towards the White Deer academy had already become indistinct. Especially after obtaining the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], Ye Qingyu felt that to stay at White Deer academy to continue to compete with people such as Han Xiaofei and Qin Wushuang was already meaningless.

Going to the Azure Phoenix academy?

Perhaps that was a choice.

But Ye Qingyu did not know the atmosphere of the Azure Phoenix academy, and just what it was like.

Perhaps it was only the difference between a mud pit with another mud pit?

Thankfully during this time, he did not need to rush to make a

decision.

The entire night, was spent in training.

.....

The second day.

Ye Qingyu appeared in the school grounds of the White Deer academy.

He did not know why he suddenly wanted to have a look at the school grounds.

Could it really be that the time for a decision to be made had arrived?

After making a complete loop around the school grounds, Ye Qingyu only just discovered, that the most familiar place he was in White Deer academy was not the demonstration martial grounds, practice grounds nor was it the dormitories. It was the public libraries and the canteen. And the students of the academy were evidently extremely unfamiliar with Ye Qingyu.

In such a large academy ground, Ye Qingyu discovered that he did not have any friends here.

The intention to leave, became even stronger.

By noon, Ye Qingyu still went to the canteen like old times.

Because of the stupid dog Big Head, Ye Qingyu could not help but greatly spend money once again. One man and one dog nearly managed to completely consume two thirds of the entire food provided by the canteen for the students. Thankfully there were not many students in a canteen where food was freely provided, otherwise it would cause a scene where people lined up and protested.

Seeing Big Head devour tub after tub of food like a cyclone passing through the clouds, swallowing it into his endless hole of a stomach, Ye Qingyu did not react. From the initial stunned shock, Ye Qingyu had now gotten numb to such a sight.

After finishing, he was about to leave when a figure appeared next to the table.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to have a look.

A young White Deer student, seemingly around eleven or twelve stood next to the table. He should be a first year student. With clear facial features, and bringing with him a faint shyness as if he was a girl, there was a spiritualness about him between his eyebrows.

“You are senior brother Ye Qingyu?” The White Deer student said with some reservations.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “You are?”

The young boy laughed. “You might not recognise me, but great teacher Hon Kong told me to pass a message on. He said before you leave the academy, you should go see him. ”

Great teacher Hon Kong?

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Fine, thank you.”

“No need, no need for thanks, I am only passing on a message. It’s what I should do.” The shy youth quickly waved his hands. “Senior brother Ye, you are my hero, I admire you very much.””



## Chapter 110 – A Letter Coming From The Front Lines

---

After the shy youth finished speaking, his face abruptly became red. He seemed at a loss of what else to do, not knowing what to say next. He turned around, his face covered with excitement and ran away.

The silly dog Big Head, after consuming a large tub of food lifted his head to look at the departing figure of the youth. Then he looked at Ye Qingyu. The atmosphere was slightly peculiar.

Ye Qingyu shook his head with a bitter smile, then slapped Big Head who had a strange gaze. He did not say anything.

He pondered in his heart, just what matter Hon Kong wanted him for. Hon Kong was a teacher who had once given him pointers during the examination process of the academy. Ye Qingyu had very good impression of him. Although since entering the academy, he did not have too much interaction with this teacher, but overall within White Deer academy Hon Kong could be counted as one of the teachers he respected.

If he really was going to depart, then he really should notify this teacher that had such high expectations for him.

Afternoon.

Ye Qingyu went to the public library of the fourth year to research completely regarding the little problems about his martial cultivation

that he had encountered in the past days.

In reality until now, Ye Qingyu had already completely read the variety of tomes and books stored in the four public libraries. This was equal to deeply imprinting the contents of these books deep within his mind due to his eidetic memory.

And as for the secret martial libraries in White Deer academy, these were places that were seriously guarded and possessed tight security. Only teachers of the academy were allowed to enter. Within these martial libraries, there were high class yuan qi techniques contained within. It was nearly impossible for a student to enter. Only if they made a great contribution for the academy or if they ranked top three in the great competitions, would they obtain an opportunity to gain a yuan qi secret technique.

But for Ye Qingyu, this already held no meaning whatsoever.

As he came out from the martial library, the time was already evening.

He stood on the platform of the martial library, surveying the school ground all around.

The White Deer academy shrouded in twilight still had a beautiful scenery. But Ye Qingyu found that he could no longer become immersed into such beauty like he could the first time he took a step into the White Deer academy.

“It’s time to say farewell to great teacher Hon Kong.”

At this moment, Ye Qingyu abruptly made his decision to depart.

Before the sun had set, Ye Qingyu had arrived at the office of great teacher Hon Kong.

As he knocked and enter, the golden light of the setting sun shone through the coloured glass in the depths of the room. Behind the large red wood table, a tall and thin figure stood in front of the window, his hands clasped behind his back and his back facing the room. As if he was in a deep reflection.

This room had a strange tranquillity about it.

“So you’ve come?” The voice of great teacher Hon Kong held a trace of fatigue.

Ye Qingyu was slightly puzzled, then respectfully greeted him. Coming to the front of the large red wood table, he said: “You’re looking for me?”

Hon Kong stood where he was without turning back. After remaining silent for a while, he said: “I’ve heard that the people of Azure Phoenix academy, came to look for you in your mansion?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Hon Kong still did not turn around.

“Little fellow, don’t be mistaken. I did not send someone to monitor you but to monitor the people of Azure Phoenix academy. Only through this did I realise, that the people of Azure Phoenix did not seem to follow the rules when staying here.” Hon Kong faced the window displayed the golden setting sun outside, and sighed yet again. “They should have invited you to go to Azure Phoenix academy, is that right?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head again. “That’s correct.”

“I have always had high expectations for you. From the first moment I laid eyes on you, I was able to see the terrifying potential hidden within your body. And this was proven true. From your cultivation speed afterwards, you did not disappoint me. It’s a pity, a pity.....” A tone of regret was within the words of Hon Kong. “It’s a pity that the White Deer academy today, is no longer the White Deer academy of the past. I won’t blame you if you go. A pond cannot raise a dragon, leaving is fine.....Ai!”

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

The words of Hon Kong held an unprecedented gloominess and exhaustion. It was completely different from the image of the great teacher that was normally dauntless and ferocious.

“Azure Phoenix academy within the ten great academies, is placed at the third position but they have always wanted to overtake the second place. They often consider themselves to be the second place, and is sometimes a bit too egoistical. But for you, perhaps this is not a bad choice.” Hon Kong silently stood there, his silhouette emitting a feeling of indescribable melancholy. “But you must be careful of the person leading the party this time, that Elder Chen. He does not have any

upright intentions. The moment he came into Deer city, he caused the entire Deer mountain range to be restless and chaotic. He caused chickens to fly and dogs to leap and the wind and rain not to stop ever since coming here. I fear the matter is not as simple as the fact that he has high expectations for you.”

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly.

He understood Hon Kong’s meaning.

After the great competition in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the news that he might possess a treasure on his body had already spread out all around. There were many people coveting after this ‘treasure’. It was very likely that they would act against him secretly.

“I won’t go to Azure Phoenix academy.” Ye Qingyu said with determination. “Even if I leave white Deer academy, I won’t go to Azure Phoenix.”

“Eh? Why?” Hearing these words, Hon Kong finally turned around. On his face that was like a jade stone, there was a trace of surprise. With a smile, “Could it be that what you are really interested in, is the Divine Phoenix academy? The difficult is very great.”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “It’s not the Divine Phoenix academy. The reason I don’t want to go to the Azure Phoenix is because I do not like what they have done during their stay in White Deer academy. As the saying goes, a master for one day is a father for the rest of you life. Even if I depart from here, I will forever remember the fact that I walked out from the White Deer academy.”

Hon Kong after hearing this, began to chuckle loudly.

“Good! Well said. Little fellow, I am beginning to appreciate you more and more.....Then have you thought about where you want to go?”

Ye Qingyu hearing this, lightly shook his head. “I have not yet made my decision regarding this matter.”

Hon Kong looked at the youth that he himself had allowed to enter the White Deer academy, his mood unprecedentedly turning for the better. “As the new Dean of the White Deer academy, I am really gratified to hear such words. Little kid, you are the most exceptional student I have ever seen. I suddenly want to say these words: Today you might be proud because you came from White Deer academy, but perhaps one day, White Deer academy will be proud because of you.”

Even with Ye Qingyu’s thick skin and vanity, he felt embarrassed after receiving such praise. He began laughing: “I’m not as great as you make me out to be.....oh, that’s right, from what you just said, you are the Dean of the White Deer academy right now?” As he said, Ye Qingyu’s jaw could not help but drop.

“En, you’ve guessed right. A change has occurred within the academy. The decree of the Emperor of the country has already been passed down. Three days later, I will become the fourth Dean of this academy.” Hon Kong nodded his head.

Ye Qingyu’s heart was extremely shaken.

Then Hon Kong continued: “Fine, let's not speak of such messy things. Let's speak instead about things regarding you. In truth, there's a letter for you that I received half a month ago. I have always hesitated whether I should hand it over to you, but from the current situation, this does not seem like a bad choice.”

As he said this, a golden ray flashed by.

Ye Qingyu's hand stretched through the air, grabbing that streak of golden light.

It was a pale yellow letter written in the military style.

On the letter, in the recipient's position, there was Ye Qingyu's name written on it.

“A letter coming from the army? That's strange. When did I have friends within the army?” Ye Qingyu was slightly confused, but he thought of a name in the next instant. He abruptly became overjoyed, his heart could not help but be emotionally moved.

Wen Wan!

It must be Wen Wan!

Wen Wan was stationed at the Youyan pass, he must be a military officer by now.

This letter, must be written by that conceited and vane person, that crude fellow.

Ye Qingyu could not wait to tear open the letter. Under the light of the setting sun, he began to read it.

After ten breaths, Ye Qingyu had finished reading the letter. His expression became strange.

“Old Wen is really trying to sway me to enlist in the army in the letter?”

Although this fellow talked about many things without getting to the point in the letter, but there was only one central meaning. It was to invite Ye Qingyu to give up learning from the White Deer academy and to head towards the Youyan pass, to defend the borders along with him. The letter had many enticements and temptations, firmly believing that if Ye Qingyu headed towards the border he would receive far more opportunities to temper and grow.

“What about it, have you finished reading?” Hon Kong had a smile on his face. “Little fellow, what is your thinking?”

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then nodded his head. “I want to go.”

“You really want to go?”

“I really want to go.”



“You have to consider carefully. Once you enter the Youyan pass, without any incidents, you cannot leave without serving for at least eight or ten years.” Hon Kong said with a serious expression.

Contrary to expectations , Ye Qingyu was unprecedentedly calm and tranquil. “I’ve already decided.”

Wen Wan’s letter, had allowed Ye Qingyu to suddenly feel that the path before him had brightened up.

He believed that this was absolutely a good choice.

Seeing Ye Qingyu’s gaze was becoming more and more determined, Hon Kong knew that the youth had in such a brief moment, already made his decision.

Hon Kong began chuckling loudly. “Half a month ago, when I received this letter that came from the borders, I had already guessed what Wen Wan wanted to do. At that time, I felt that the Youyan pass was not a very good choice for you. So I have always kept this letter stored away without handing it to you. But things change with the passage of time. From the situation right now, perhaps Wen Wan’s way of doing things is correct. Your martial heart, is the path of the Asura. In your life, you will experience much killing and slaughter. Perhaps going to the army, is a good choice.”

Ye Qingyu was able to sense a dense care for him contained in the words of Hon Kong. With appreciation in his heart, he bowed in thanks.

Hon Kong smiled. “No need to thank me. Since you have decided to go within the military, then this matter is settled. In recent times with the war occurring the way it is, the Youyan pass is hard pressed. The country wants to enlist more and more men to serve in the army. The first batch of enlistees should leave in approximately ten days. I will help you manage all procedures. You should return and prepare well, and also settle the matters within your house. Ten days later, you will be setting off.”

After Ye Qingyu said another round of thanks, he left the room.

He stood at the steps of the entrance, surveying in the distance. The setting sun of the horizon had finally sunk into the endless darkness, with the last of the faint dark red still able to be seen. The age of intersection between darkness and light, was about to descend.

## Chapter 111 – Before Leaving (1)

---

In the next few days after this, Ye Qingyu really rushed to settle everything within the Ye mansion.

Three days later, the decree of the Emperor that Hon Kong would become the fourth Dean of White Deer academy was formally announced to the entire city. This caused an commotion that was neither large nor small. This represented, that the previous great teacher of the first years, would completely become one of the three major players of Deer city.

For those well informed influential and noble families, they had nearly digested the news of this appointment, the initial shock close to gone. Everywhere around the city, there were many people who was unable to understand this appointment. Why was it that a great teacher of the first years became the Dean, and not the great elders who already possessed a high position and status?

The city became more and more restless.

Hidden currents moved.

Such news from Ye Qingyu's perspective, was unquestionably a great and fortunate incident.

Entrusting the safety of the Ye mansion, as well as the various properties of the Ye family to Hon Kong who was now one of the three big shots of the city, represented that there was basically not a need to worry anymore. Originally Ye Qingyu was thinking of a method to to

settle Registrar Liu Yuancheng and Sun Yufu, these two calamities. But from the current situation, there was not such a need any longer.

Hon Kong did not refuse Ye Qingyu's request.

“You don't need to thank me right now. If there's one day that the White Deer academy encounters trouble, I hope that the you in the future will be able to come to our aid. That will be thanks enough.” Hon Kong said with a smile.

Ye Qingyu naturally promised to do so.

If there really was such a day, then of course he would extend his aid.

Ye Qingyu also thought of an unresolved matter. It was regarding that old fellow who had appeared in the Grievance Hall and in the living quarters of the second year area, that tall and thin teacher. With a violent disposition, every time he appeared he gave Ye Qingyu a beating that caused lumps to appear all on his body. But he had helped Ye Qingyu to combine his body and his inner yuan without any imperfections. He was a strange person that Ye Qingyu had not seen during this period of time. Before leaving, he wanted to at least see him and say his thanks for what he had done for him.

Ye Qingyu had originally thought, that regarding this old fellow, Hon Kong would at least have some idea as to who he was.

But who would have thought that after considering for a while, Hon Kong shook his head. “Perhaps you have remembered wrongly. I can very

responsibly say to you, that there is not such a person in White Deer academy.”

“What?” Ye Qingyu was greatly surprised. “How is this possible?”

Hon Kong said: “These days, because of that fact that I am taking over various matters of the academy, I have completely tidied up the roll of register for every teacher in the academy. My memory cannot be wrong. On the list, there is absolutely not such a person. ”

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.

Just what was this?

That tall and thin old teacher was evidently wearing the robes of the academy’s teachers when Ye Qingyu met him. And in a place like the Grievance hall where security was extremely tight, he could come and go as he wanted. Was he really not a person belonging to the White Deer academy?

This was something that was far too peculiar.

“I will investigate this matter in detail.” Hon Kong was able to sense the seriousness of this matter. To think that there would be such a strange person in the academy and that even he was not aware of this existence.

Afterwards, the two discussed about some other matters, then Ye Qingyu said farewell.

On the way back to Ye mansion, Ye Qingyu thought about the dates and realised that tomorrow was the day that the expedition of Azure Phoenix academy would leave Deer city. Remembering what he had promised Xu Ge, that no matter what his final decision was he would notify him of his choice. This was the most basic courtesy.

The temporary residence of the Azure Phoenix academy was right next to White Deer academy.

As Ye Qingyu came to outside the entrance, he coincidentally bumped into the Xu Ge walking out of the residence.

“Eh? Senior brother Ye, you’ve come. This is too great, I was just about to go and find you.” Seeing Ye Qingyu, a delighted expression instantly appeared on Xu Ge’s face, quickly rushing forwards to say his greetings.

“Junior brother Xu, I have come here looking for you.” Ye Qingyu saw this was the opportune moment, and that he no longer needed to go in search for Xu Ge. He notified Xu Ge of his final decision.

A evidently disappointed expression crept on Xu Ge’s face. “This is really such a pity. I was originally hoping that I would be able to drink and discuss martial arts with senior brother Ye.” One was able to see that after the battle of the boundary canyon battlefield, heartfelt admiration had really been born within Xu Ge for Ye Qingyu. “But since senior brother Ye has made his decision, then we shall not force you. We will definitely meet again later if we are fated. ”

Ye Qingyu expressed his thanks with a smile.

Xu Ge asked again: “Then does senior brother Ye prepare to stay at White Deer academy?”

“No, I’ve decided to answer the enlistment of the country, to head towards Youyan pass.” Ye Qingyu did not hide anything from Xu Ge. For such a matter, the country would very quickly transmit this news through official military papers and channels. If there were people that used their heads to inquire about this information, they would very quickly find out. Concealing this information was pointless.

“Entering the army?” Xu Ge was shocked. Evidently he had not expected that Ye Qingyu would make such a decision.

Compared to the peaceful environment of the academy, the army was much harsher with the military rules much more strict. And the Youyan pass was a dangerous place where battles went unbroken year after year. The human race and the demon race would often kill and slaughter each other, all kinds of different forces snapping at each other. There was an extremely high mortality rate. Nearly every moment, every minute, every second there would be a expert falling.....Xu Ge possessed a high opinion about himself. But even he absolutely would not have the courage to enter such a location.

“En, perhaps the environment within the military will be more suitable for me.” Ye Qingyu smiled, expressing his thanks yet again and turned to leave.

Xu Ge stood at the entrance, seeing Ye Qingyu off until he disappeared in the crowd far away. There was a hard to describe feeling within his

heart.

He shook his head and prepared to return. Just as he turned around, he nearly knocked into a figure standing behind him.

“Elder Chen?” Seeing this figure, Xu Ge rushed to say his greetings.

The person called Elder Chen, seemed to be around sixty years of age and had grizzled hair. A gold silk hair band held his hair together. His long eyebrows were like blades, with long oblique eyes and possessing a tall and sturdy body. His entire person radiated with a hard to describe baleful and biting cold atmosphere. Like a naked blade, there was an extreme imposing feeling emitting from him. He was namely the highest person in charge of the visiting expedition of the Azure Phoenix academy this time.

He was looking at the place Ye Qingyu disappeared, as if he was thinking of something.

After a short while.

“He declined?” Elder Chen asked.

Xu Ge nodded his head. 。

Of course he understood, who the ‘he’ in Elder Chen’s words was.

Elder Chen gave a faint smile. “It’s a pity. A pity that a genius will be



lost.”

.....

.....

The next few days after, Ye Qingyu stayed within the residence to focus and train.

In these several days, Ye Qingyu had once again managed to successfully consolidate a yuan qi kindling. He was able to plant within his body the fourth yuan qi kindling. It only needed the accumulation of a period of time, absorbing yuan qi of heaven and earth during this duration. Once the yuan qi in his body had concentrated to a certain level, then he could begin to excavate another Spirit spring. The days where he would enter the realm of four Spirit springs, were not far off.

It was only that in these days, the crowd surrounding the Ye mansion began to increase.。

It was unknown where the young man in charge had managed to find so many men. They nearly completely covered the outside of the Ye residence, causing the surroundings of the Ye residence to be jam packed.

The patrols of the [Capture barracks] had already chased them away several times without too much effect. They would simply disperse and gather, disperse and gather again. By Ye Qingyu's estimate, there were at least around three or four hundred people. All of them were idle ruffians with many beggars wearing ragged and incomplete clothing mixed in.

Once the winter season set in, cold and hunger was enough to make many people take risks. Even for half a bun, they were willing to place their life in danger. Normally there were very little people who dared to surround a residence in the wealthy district because there was a danger of being captured and executed. But once winter hit, there were simply far too many people who were not afraid of dying.

There were several times that Ye Qingyu's killing intent nearly struck out again.

But after seeing the faces, that due to hunger and the biting cold, had become completely apathetic, he abandoned such a thought. The beggars only wanted to earn a little bit of food to feed their family, even if he had the Asura killing martial heart, at this time his heart could not harden.

They were only a pitiful group of people forced to do this by the bitterness of life.

Ye Qingyu managed to restrain himself for the moment.

Qin Lan and the servants of the residence was somewhat frightened and scared.

In these past days, there would often be scenes of people throwing dead cats and dogs over the walls of the residence, scaring the little servant girls so much that they began crying.

The guards of the residence were only five or six people. Even if they did not sleep, they had more work than they could handle.

Ye Qingyu's instructions were for the others not to pay attention to such matters. He told the others to burn the dead rats and the like that were thrown over and just ignore the commotion.

But after several consecutive days of this occurring, everyone was enraged in the mansion. If not for Ye Qingyu's obstruction, perhaps they would have rushed out in anger.

Another several days passed.

Hon Kong sent someone to inform Ye Qingyu, that the matters regarding the Youyan pass had nearly been settled. But because Ye Qingyu was the inheritor of the brass heroic badge, there were some special procedures that would cause the whole process to be slightly delayed. Perhaps he would not set off with the first batch of recruited soldiers. The departure would be delayed for several days, telling Ye Qingyu to patiently wait.

Ye Qingyu was not in a hurry.

He utilised every minute and second in the residence to train, absorbing yuan qi of heaven and earth. He was preparing to excavate the fourth spirit spring.

Another two days had passed.

Another great snow had fallen in Deer city.

The Ye mansion was still surrounded by the surging crowd. Such chaos had persisted for such a long time that even the patrols of the [Capture barracks] did not pay attention to this commotion anymore. After all, time after time of them coming had no effect whatsoever. The disordered citizens were like flies; after chasing them off for a while, they would disperse but very quickly flock back yet again.

The time was midnight.

Ye Qingyu had his eyes closed. He stood with his legs apart in the Determination garden, displaying his naked torso. The steam emitting from his flesh was like a jade pagoda, an intangible mist lingering around his body.

The clouds within the skies were dark and gloomy.

Without any wind.

The world was completely dark.

As the practice of the nameless breathing technique ended, Ye Qingyu opened his eyes. 。

Sensing the increasingly vigorous inner yuan within his body, a satisfied expression appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.。

The nameless breathing technique his father had passed down had an incomparable efficacy in regards to the growth of his inner yuan. Compared to the inner yuan cultivation techniques passed on in the

White Deer academy, it was many times more profound. Ye Qingyu trained relentlessly every day, and his inner yuan grew extremely rapidly. If things continued on at such a rate, in approximately twenty days time, he would be able to excavate his fourth Spirit spring.

He gradually exhaled a breath of murky air.

A clamour and din indistinctly emitted from outside the residence.

A cold light streaked by within Ye Qingyu’s eyes.

“The time is about right. It’s about time I took care of this group of clowns.””

He returned to his room and changed into clothing fit for acting in the night. Wearing the bronze Asura devil mask<sup>1</sup> that he had prepared before, he walked out of the Ye mansion without the slightest of sounds. Like a wisp of green smoke, he disappeared in the night.

-----

1. What I imagine the bronze Asura mask to look like Mask [↩](#)

## Chapter 112 – The Shadow Of The Bronze Asura

---

Outside the Ye residence.

Several hundreds of people were gathered on the streets where the accumulated snow had turned into ice. They encircled the streets all around the Ye residence.

Some people even went as far as to erect crude tents to shelter themselves from the snow. A couple even lit fires, huddling and discussing in low voices beside these fires.

The crowd grouped together in twos and threes. Snowflakes drifted floated through the black night. The air was extremely chilly.

The clothes that these people were wearing was simple and thin, ragged and shabby garments covering their body. Every one of them was as thin as a match, malnourished and sickly in appearance looking like beggars. There was a lack of life in their eyes, as if they were simply walking corpses. They had already surrounded the Ye residence for several days, so had made the decision to just to camp here instead of leaving during the night.

Between the crowd, there would occasionally be a young man who was wearing thick cotton clothing. He seemed much more vigorous from his appearance than the other people, his status not as dire as the other people. There was a smell of alcohol wafting from his body. From time to time, he would loudly order people to throw dead rats, bricks and the like over the wall.

Further from this.

A thousand metres in a Western direction.

In a seemingly normal stone house of a commoner, the candles and lamps were lit inside.

Between the seams of the wooden window of the stone house, there was the fragrance of alcohol and meat wafting out.

There were five or six people sitting within the house wearing bright clothes, their thick garments isolating them from the frigid cold. They sat on the ground, surrounding a low table covered with wine and meat. They were currently loudly playing drinking games, everyone of them with red faces. Drinking and gambling, the house was bustling with noise and excitement.

“Hahaha, now that I think back, its enough to make me laugh to death. Your father I was nearly scared to a halt by that little bastard in the Ye family.” The leading young man, with furrowed brows and blazing eyes, was namely the person sent flying by Ye Qingyu that day. He was called Tao Mocheng and was a famous trouble maker in the Northern district. As he said this, he gulped down a large mouthful of alcohol. “Saying he would kill someone. I peh! Like I would be afraid of him. Haha, who doesn’t know how to tell lies. To dare kill someone in the streets, he wouldn’t do so unless he is a retard.”

“The little thing called Ye Qingyu, only did this to scare people off.” Another young man said with a cold smile. “We have surrounded his

residence for so many days, the little thing doesn't even dare to let out a fart. I don't even know how many dead rats we have thrown over, yet he is still suffering in silence.”

Hahahaha!

The group began roaring with laughter.

“This time, we are on the side of morality and righteous. Just how many eyes of the entire city are looking into this matter? This little brat himself has an unclear background, being involved with that demonic girl of darkness. The crotch of his trousers is covered with shit<sup>1</sup>, just what can he do to us? Especially for those rich nobility, the thing most important to them is their face. Hehe, as long as we grab at his seven inch spot<sup>2</sup>, even if Ye Qingyu is a poisonous snake, he does not dare to do anything to us. ”

Someone said with a large guffaw.

The leading young man Tao Mocheng also chuckled loudly, excitement written in his face. “In reality, this really is a great business transaction for us. We are only exploiting those beggars and the poor to risk their lives for us, and we can so easily and openly obtain money from those noble families. Hehe, as long as we give those stinky beggar some buns, they will do their utmost to work for us.....”

Another person said: “I wonder just how can the money of young long Sun and the other nobility's last?”



The young leader of the group Tao Mocheng replied with a grin. “What are you afraid of, we can definitely earn a large sum. Sun Yufu and the other nobilities, right now hates the little brat surnamed Ye awfully much. They will not give up till they finish playing with him to his death. From this matter, I think that it is not only Sun Yufu that is involved in this plan. Otherwise why doesn’t the [Capture barracks] truly interfere? In these days, they have only pretended to act to put up an appearance, otherwise they would have long started to arrest people.....Therefore we do not need to worry at all and think about other matters. If this situation continues on, what we can obtain is money. ”

“Hehe, that little brat dares to offend young lord Sun. I think that he is dead for sure.” A robust and prosperous fat person began to snicker. “There are several women in the residence, that are damn tender and delicate. If we are able to taste such fresh delicacies.....hehe, I am willing to become a ghost if so.”

The group of people immediately began laughing heartily .

“I think that his matter is possible. Hehe, once Sun Yufu and the old masters of the noble families play with this little brat to his death, we can do whatever we want with the women in that residence. Haha, after we are done with them, we can sell them to a low grade brothel, and we will also be able to obtain a large sum.” Tao Mocheng began chuckling loudly.

“Boss, speak a little quieter. Young lord Sun and his people is about to arrive, don’t let them hear this.” A young man reminded Tao Mocheng in a low voice.

The group nodded their agreement.

At this time, there was the sound of footsteps coming from outside. Mixed in with this, was a strange whimpering. As if someone wanted to scream loudly, but their mouth was covered.

Then three or four people were able to be seen, sneakily carrying two coarsely woven sacks.

The strange whimpering sound, namely came from the rough burlap sacks.

“Chen Er, you guys have returned? Did you manage to get them?” Tao Mocheng eyes brightened, rushing to ask .

“Boss, I’ve managed to grab a hold of them. Haha, this time it’s a bountiful harvest, I guarantee you’ll be satisfied. It’s two young girls. After we have washed them up, they’ll be fresh and vivid. Who would have thought that in this group of stinky beggars, there would be such high class goods.” The person called Chen Er was a crafty looking man. He untied the strings of the burlap bags.

Two shivering and quivering figures, rolled out from the coarse sacks.

It was two kidnapped girls in the prime of their youth. Their hands and feet were tied and their mouth gagged.

Under the muddled yellow light of the fire, the two young girls with ragged clothing panicked and struggled. Their cheeks because of their alarm had practically morphed into a different shape. Under the light of

the blaze, there was a certain lovely pitifulness about their appearance. They looked to be around fifteen or sixteen years of age. Their physique was already extremely exquisite, and the places where the ragged clothing did not cover, glowed with a white jade like brilliance under the light, the skin being considerably white.

Tao Mocheng and the others had a good look, their eyes going wide.

“Hahaha, who would have thought that within a group of beggars, there would be such goods. Chen Er, you have done well.” Tao Mocheng broke out into loud laughter.

Chen Er had a face filled with pride, and said with a flattering smile. “Not to hide it from boss you, I have already observed them for several days. These two girls are people from outside the city, and hid within the crowd so they could not escape easily. They are really pretty. They thought that by covering their faces with ashes, they would be able to fool me. This is far too innocent. During the day, I’ve already scouted out the place, and during the night I found two of my brothers to kidnap them. Haha, boss, what about it. This two little girls are not bad. After you have tasted them, you should let us brothers enjoy them too.”

Tao Mocheng began laughing loudly, walking forward and directly lifting one of the girls. “Good, good, your father I have not touched a woman for three or four days now. These two girls is just perfect to allow everyone invigorate themselves. Old rules goes, after we’ve finished with them, we are going to sell them to a low class brothel. They can fetch a good price too. You bastards, dont be too crazy and be light. Don’t completely ruin these two young girls.”

Everyone in the room began to hoot with laughter.

The men surrounded them, everyone one of their eyes glinting with a depraved and lustful light.

“Wuwuwu.....”

The two young girls struggled for their lives, despair written in the bright and large eyes glinting under the light of the fire.

“Hehe, your father I will be the first one to savour them.....” Tao Mocheng grabbed the young girl in his hands. Accompanied by a ripping sound, he tore apart the clothing. There originally was not much on the body of the young girl in the first place. Snowy white skin was exposed.

The entire room was filled with an extra layer of gorgeous moonlight.

The people in the stone house felt their eyes widening.

Just when had they seen such a woman with jade like bones and icy skin?

There was practically no difference from the young ladies of the noble families.。

Chen Er and the others' throats shook, swallowing their saliva. They could already not wait to rush forward. After waiting half a moment, they unexpectedly saw the Tao Mocheng that was consumed with desire did not have any further actions. He stood dumbly, transfixed where he was,

not even moving in the slightest. As if he was trapped within a formation. His gaze was fixed in the direction of the door, shock and fear written clearly in his eyes.

What had happened?

Everyone turned their gaze towards the door.

Who knew when, but a silhouette wearing the bronze mask of the Asura had appeared at the doors.

The main killing Asura.

The bronze mask of the Asura in the colour of the night illuminated by the burning firelight in the house seemed to be a Death God here to reap life away at first glance. The black tight fitting clothes in the pitch black night made him seem like a ghost walking through the night. The dancing snowflakes in the air brought with it a icy chill that seeped into their bones, directly attacking them.

No one knew, exactly when this black shadow appeared.

He was like a spirit that came from the depths of hell.

The people with little bravery in this crowd, after seeing this Asura ghost shadow immediately began sharply screeching.

And such a scream, after just sounding, halted in a moment.

A ray of sword light floated, piercing through his throat.

The taste of blood, began spreading in this narrow and cramped stone house.

“You.....are you a man or a ghost?” Another person asked trembling, nearly scared out of his wits.ο

What answered him, was still the ray of sword light.

Blood blossomed through the air.

The figure of the man fell.

“Motherfucker, what wild ghost is this that they would act against me and my brothers. There is no need to afraid everyone. Rush forward all at once, and slaughter him.” Tao Mocheng had finally recovered, his eyes flickering about. Biting his teeth, he kicked the wooden table in front of him. ο

Peng!

The wooden table flew, the liquid on it splattering everywhere.

The other three people woke from their nightmare, Taking out the sharp blades at their waists, cold lights flickered within the stone house. Everyone of them had ferocious expressions on their faces , charging

forward.

And at this time, the leading Tao Mocheng had already left. Turning around to run, he ducked and charged out from the windows. He absolutely did not dare to fight with this monster directly. He wanted his comrades to attract the attention of the bronze Asura ghost shadow so that he could escape. From his perspective, even if everyone fought together, they would not be the opponent of that person.

Xiu!

Another ray of sword light brightened in the house.

The wooden table was sliced apart without any sounds.

The figures of the five or six people that had rushed over had also frozen.

The bronze Asura shadow waved his hand.。

Tao Mocheng felt that he had lost control of his body, an invisible force dragging him back. He heavily landed on the ground, crashing onto the broken bowls on the floor. With a bang, his waist nearly snapped apart. The pain was so great that he could not even scream. He had a sensation that his body did not belong to him.

Tao Mocheng watched with wide eyes as the bronze Asura ghost shadow walked closer and closer, step by step. It sat down on the chairs of the stone house, not saying a word.

This action made it seem as if it this really was a ghost that came from hell.

Putong. Putong.

The Chen Er and others who had their bodies frozen suddenly trembled. Blood spurted from them, everyone of them falling down.

So they had long been struck by the sword, completely dead.

Tao Mocheng felt a fear that he had never experienced before. Like a tide, it completely drowned him.

-----

1. in trouble himself [↩](#)
2. mythical weak point of a snake [↩](#)



## Chapter 113 – The Useless Words Are Finished; Go On Your Way

---

As an infamous troublemaker in the North city district, Tao Mocheng had performed many bloody atrocities in his life before. He had also experienced many dangerous situations, with many situations that his life was hanging by one thread. But even at the most dangerous of times, he had never been so frightened like he was now.

He felt like his heart had been seized by this infernal evil spirit, infinite terror making him have difficulty breathing.

But the bronze Asura devil did not seem like it any any intentions to strike from the beginning. He did not even give Tao Mocheng a passing glance.

He was only sitting there silently.

The fire in the house flickered and faded incessantly.

As the pale yellow light of the firewood shined on his figure, there was a horrifying shadow behind his shadow.

Time passed second by second.

The two young girls that were kidnapped had never experienced such a situation before. Terrified and frightened, they had long fainted after seeing blood.

Tao Mocheng did not dare to move in the slightest. He felt as if he was in a long lasting nightmare, pain and fear gripping him. Cold sweat dripped down like starch paste, completely drenching his entire body. From his perspective, time passed by exceedingly slowly. As if this everlasting night would never end and dawn would not arrive.

Ten minutes later.

The sound of footsteps came from outside the door.

Tao Mocheng eyes brightened.

He knew that this was definitely Sun Yufu arriving.

The young master of the Registrar office had finally arrived.

In the three days previous to this, Sun Yufu would always appear. At the time of midnight, this young lord Sun would bring his guards to the stone house, bringing the payment along as well as enquiring about progress. According to the time right, it was about the moment he should appear tonight.

He must have brought experts to accompany him. Was it possible that he would be able to defeat the bronze Asura?

Tao Mocheng was finally able to see a glimmer of hope.

As he thought of this, he was about to open his mouth and scream for help.

And at this time, as if the bronze Asura was able to read his mind, the mask turned around and gave him a glance.

Without knowing why, when Tao Mocheng saw the smile that was not a smile behind the bronze Asura mask, he abruptly shivered. He did not dare emit another sound again.

Ziya !

Accompanied by the light noise, the door of the stone house was pushed open.

Three people walked in.

The leading person was namely Sun Yufu.

After a month had passed, the shoulder injury of Sun Yufu had already pretty much completely recovered. Perhaps due to the reason that he had lost so much blood in that incident, his face seemed somewhat weak and pallid compared to his first appearance. The body that was already weak because of alcohol and women seemed even weaker now. But he still had the appearance of someone with a heavily powdered face, a fragrance of orchid lingering on his body. Even in the cold icy night where there was heavy snow, he was still carrying a jade folding fan in his hands.

This rich young master, was namely laughing about something with

the people beside him. He had completely recovered his arrogant and despotic disposition.

But as he entered through the door, he saw the scene. Looking at the state of the house, he was dumbfounded.

“Just what has happened?”

The two experts that were like guards standing behind him, immediately went forward and blocked the front of Sun Yufu.

These two people were the two experts that Liu Yuancheng had organised to be placed beside Sun Yufu.

After Sun Yufu had met with mishap last time, Liu Yuancheng because of some other reasons did not take revenge on Ye Qingyu. But he had planned ahead for a rainy day, using a large amount of money to hire two experts of the Spirit spring stage to follow beside Sun Yufu and not leave him unattended at all times. This was all done to protect his adopted son. Liu Lei had already died; if Sun Yufu was to meet with an accident, the descendants of Liu Yuancheng could be said to be completely exterminated.

“Who is it”

The two guards, one left and right , pressed forward with a chilly expression.

As the saying goes, those who came did not have good intentions and

people of good intentions would not come. The sensitive instincts of the the two who had experienced hundreds of battles told them that their was a treacherous danger in the stone house.

Fire !

Corpses !

Fresh blood !

Half naked and unconscious young girls.

Under the light of the fire, the bronze Asura was like nothingness, as if there was nothing there at all. He sat there without breathing, without heart beat, and also without the fluctuation of yuan qi.

If their eyes did not tell them of his existence, they would not be able to realise such an existence was there. Just by using their yuan qi to sense, they really would not have been able to feel such a person. The two bodyguards was overwhelmed with shock, extremely alert and vigilant. With their strength, they were not able to smell the bloody stench in the house, nor sense the yuan qi fluctuation within the house before entering. This was evidence that the power of this bronze Asura was vaguely higher than theirs.

Sun Yufu also at the first instance took several steps backwards in retreat.

At this time, the Bronze Asura slowly stood up.

And the Tao Mocheng lying on the ground, was able to see under the bronze Asura mask. In the apathetic eyes, there was a shred of a strange smiling expression.

This type of feeling was as if ....

The beginning of the feast of massacre!

Everyone felt their vision blurring. 。

The bronze Asura took a step and arrived in front of the two body guards, simply punching out both his fists.

Such an attack, simply could not be counted as any sort of technique. Because when the bronze Asura attacked, he did not have any intentions of defending, his entire body open to counter attacks. There were weak points present all around his body.

“Looking to die! ! ”

“Arrogance!”

The two body guards roared in rage at the same time.

Such a method of attacking, was far too conceited.

Yuan qi activated and fluctuated around the two of them, lights flickering. A powerful force exploded, strong winds whistled in the stone house. Long blades unsheathed from their waists and in the dreadful friction sound of the blade and the scabbard, the tips of the cold blade shot through the air like electricity, instantly twisting apart the dim light of the fire.

The house was completely covered with the light of the chilling blades.

And what met them was only a pair of fists made from flesh.

Boom!

The long blades and the fist impacted against each other without any techniques to speak of.

Peng!

The silver tips cracked.

The two blades that had been tempered over a hundred times were shattered.

As the fragments of the blade shattered in the air, there was a beautiful scenery like that a silver firework bursting apart.

The fist was not injured in the slightest, and did not even pause at all, striking the chest of the two bodyguards.

Kala! Kala!

It was the sounds of ribs cracking.

The two bodyguards gave a grunt, only able to sense a vast power exploding from their chest. In an instant they were sent soaring backwards, landing on the stone wall behind them, breaking apart the wall and continuing to soar outside. Who knew how many bones had been broken in their bodies.

“How is this possible. I.....have already entered into the second Spirit spring stage, you can use one punch.....to defeat me.....just who are you?”

“You are [Two fists striking the Heaven] Lin Yilong? Within Deer city, only Li Yilong has such a power contained within their fists. It must be you!””

The two guards sank to the floor.

The bodyguard on the left spurted blood madly, struggling to look towards the Bronze Asura. He and his comrade's power had long entered the realm of the two Spirit springs. Within the entire Deer city, apart from those experts that were long famous, who would be able to so easily defeat them with just one step and one fist?

Within the list of famous experts, only Lin Yilong had such a strength contained in his fists.



The bronze Asura did not make any sort of response.

His gaze, gradually moved and ultimately fell on Sun Yufu's body.

The light of the gaze was ruthless, like a cat catching a mouse.

“You.....” Sun Yufu was not an idiot. Seeing that the situation was not going well, he turned to run.

An invisible huge suction came from behind him, stopping in his tracks and dragging him backwards through the air. As he struck the half broken wall with a crash, it was unknown how many pieces his bones were broken into in that instant. He was so scared that he was nearly driven mad, not even feeling the pain. Screaming madly, “No, don't kill me. I am the son of Liu Yuancheng, don't kill me....There must be some mistake, a mistake, we are not acquainted.....””

“Haha.....”

A icy mocking tone sounded.

That was the first sound that had come from the mouth of the bronze Asura. 。

“Hush ! ” He performed a gesture that told them not to speak. A very special sound came from behind the mask, as if it was a voice used to coax little children. Lightly said, “Be obedient. First don't speak, let me speak. When I finish, you can speak.””

Tao Mocheng in this instant, had a strange sensation. As if the bronze Asura had suddenly dropped his killing aura, completely changing into a different person. From a ferocious ghost of slaughter, he became a ruffian. Within his words, there was a similar sense of pride from a crafty prank succeeding.

“No, no.....don’t kill me, don’t.....Save me!” Sun Yufu was scared witless, beginning to scream nonsense.

The bravery of this wealthy young lord, was so small that it was pitiful.

“You are really not obedient in the slightest. The bronze Asura mumbled in dissatisfaction, then casually kicked out.

Xiu!

In the sharp piercing sound of air being broken, a little rock shot out, shooting directly into the mouth of Sun Yufu.

Sun Yufu let out a wretched cry, feeling his mouth going numb, then completely lost all sensation. He wanted to speak, but the sounds coming from his mouth were meaningless low and hoarse syllables. He absolutely could not say any complete words.

“I’ve already said, don’t speak. Listen to me. Why are you not obedient in the slightest?” The bronze Asura seemed to be angry.

Sun Yufu wanted to scream but he could not.

Tao Mocheng was even worse, his entire body quivering, not even daring to let out a fart.

The bronze Asura walked over, towards the two bodyguards that had fainted. After observing for a moment, he supplemented them each with a strike on their foreheads, confirming that both of them were unconscious and would not hear his words right after. Then he picked up a broken blade discarded on the ground, adding a extra slice on the corpses of Chen Er and the other ruffians, confirming that they were completely dead. He then threw away the broken blade.

He dragged Tao Mocheng up, throwing him beside Sun Yufu.

Afterwards, he crouched in front of the two. Ye Qingyu saying slowly and orderly: “Someone once said, that when the times is right to act, you should just act, and you must not delay foolishly for no purpose. So I originally didn’t want to speak these foolish words, and just crisply slaughter you with one strike. But after considering, I spent so much effort dressing up as a god and playing the devil for half the day that seems such a waste. Without being able to see your regretful and suffering expression, and enjoying the pleasure of my plan succeeding, how meaningless is this.....So lets speak, let us discuss the entire process of development.”

Sun Yufu whimpered and struggled madly, as if he had something he wanted to say. But it was a pity that his mouth of teeth and tongue was crippled, not able to form words.

“No, no, no, you must have recognised the wrong people, we did not offend you before.....” Tao Mocheng was so frightened that snot and tears flowed down together from the front of his face.

The bronze Asura began chuckling grimly. “Recognise the wrong people? How is this possible, I remembered your face very well on the first day. Things that act recklessly, you’ve already surrounded my residence for over twenty days, would I be mistaken?”

The colour of Tao Mocheng’s face completely changed.

He finally realised who the person in front of him was.

“What about it? Are you scared? Do you think that I am still threatening you with empty words?” The Ye Qingyu wearing the mask began to laugh out loud. “Hahaha, look at your face, you are so scared that you are crying. Weren’t you very arrogant beforehand....this is too invigorating, such a feeling is really too invigorating.”

“I.....I .....I.....” Tao Mocheng was so frightened that he bowed down, his head kowtowing like pounding garlic, not even able to utter another word.

At this time Tao Mocheng was so regretful that he could die. He hated the fact that he could not hack Sun Yufu into pieces for dragging him into this.

Was it not said that the most important thing for wealthy people was face?

Was it not said that a little child like Ye Qingyu, that brute was very easy to handle ?

Was it not say that this plan was absolutely safe with no possibility of failure?

Was it not said.....

He did not think, that Ye Qingyu would use such a direct method to solve the problem.

“In truth, from the start, I did not really want to kill you.” Ye Qingyu waved his hands. “I originally thought, a ruffian like you, is everywhere in the city. Receiving money and acting for someone, thinking nothing but personal gain, that is your way of living. Even if this is wrong, you do not deserve to die.....”

“Yes, yes, yes, yes. What you said is right, absolutely right. I am only a ruffian, please be magnanimous, spare me.....” Tao Mocheng felt delight in his heart after hearing such words. Following the flow, he started kowtowing like grinding garlic.

Ye Qingyu patted him on the shoulder. “Wait, don’t be so happy so quickly. Wait until I finish speaking. If bowing is any use, then Snow country would have been long peaceful.....I originally didn’t want to take your life, but when I saw them.....” Ye Qingyu pointed at the two pitiful young girls that were fainted on the ground. He continued: “And hearing your words, I suddenly felt that scum like you, is better dead than alive.””

“Don’t, I don’t want to die, I.....” Tao Mocheng was horrified, his mouth opened wanting to protest.....

“And those girls that were sold into a living hell, they all said they don’t want to. Just how did you treat with them?” Ye Qingyu smiled, lightly saying. “Look, I’ve already said so much. Do you now understand why you’re going to die? Be obedient, listen to my words and go on your way in peace.”

Before he had finished.

With a strike of his palm, he struck the trembling Tao Mocheng. Like a nail, he was firmly and deeply embedded like a nail onto the soil.

This time, he thoroughly and completely stopped breathing.

Then Ye Qingyu turned his head to look towards the terror stricken Sun Yufu, taking off the bronze Asura mask from his face. Slowly walking over, with a type of smile that Sun Yufu thought was even more frightening than the devil: “It’s your turn.....En, I’ve already said so much useless words. I don’t want to make any more explanations. Seeing my face, I guess you can already die in peace.”

White foam vomited from Sun Yufu’s mouth, his eyes filled with pleading.

“The man has no intention to hurt the tiger, but the tiger has the mind to injure the man.” Ye Qingyu slowly wore his mask again. “The matter

previously, I originally did not want to pursue it anymore. But who would have thought you would look for your death by yourself and personally came to my doorsteps. I am about to leave Deer city. To leave a tumour like you behind, it will very likely affect my friends and family.....Haha, then please go on your way!”

Ye qingyu slowly lifted his hand.

At this time——

PuChi !

A light noise, then an indescribable stench emitted from Sun Yufu’s crotch.

He loudly spurted white foam, a shred of green liquid at the corner of his lips. Unexpectedly, he had taken his last breath. His courage had broken down. He was scared to his own death.

## Chapter 114 – Before Leaving (2)

---

He was so frightened he died?

He really was a complete trash.

Seeing this, Ye Qingyu could neither laugh nor cry.

He did not expect that Sun Yufu would act so arrogant and despotic, but was in reality so cowardly. But dying like that was fine too, it saved him the trouble of acting himself.

This time, it could be considered that Sun Yufu's death ended all trouble. Originally Ye Qingyu was slightly worried that after he left, Sun Yufu would act against Qin Lan and the others in the Ye residence. But at that moment, he did not have a good method to handle him. Who would have thought that this guy would come and look for his death himself, presenting himself on Ye Qingyu's doorsteps. Tonight, he had completely severed this calamity and he would not leave any concerns behind in Deer city. As for the other miscellaneous matters, there should not be any major problems with the newly appointed big player Hon Kong looking after the situation.

With a will of his heart, Ye Qingyu beckoned his hand to the corner twenty metres away.

Faint light flickered.



A pole of the [Sentry guard] flew through the air and returned to his hand.

In the page of the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], as long as enough inner yuan was inserted, then four poles of [Sentry guard] could be created. The [Sentry guard] that had returned to Ye Qingyu's hands had already been placed here for over twenty days.

Only by utilising this [Sentry guard], could Ye Qingyu be well acquainted with the coming and going of this place.

According to his previous surveillance, he knew that tonight Sun Yufu and the others would definitely come and meet up with Tao Mocheng and the others to discuss their strategy after this. Therefore Ye Qingyu had attacked this evening. As the saying goes, to shoot the horse before the man and to capture the leader before the underlings. After he had killed Tao Mocheng and Sun Yufu with a thunder like method, the beggars and ruffians surrounding the Ye residence were only a direction less mob. They would slowly disperse on their own.

The moment he turned around, Ye Qingyu thought of something.

His gaze, fell on the two unconscious young girls.

If he left them here, these two pitiful girls would definitely be brought away by the Registrar office or perhaps the [Capture barracks]. They would be tortured and interrogated. Losing two sons consecutively, one could easily imagine how crazy a state Liu Yuancheng would be. He would absolutely not let go of the two girls.

Ye Qingyu shook his head, bringing the two unconscious girls away.

The colour of the night, became darker and darker.

The heavy snow drifted in the skies.

No one noticed what had happened here.

.....

.....

The second day.

There was fine weather after the snow, the morning sun illuminating the entire city.

It was a clear day that was hard to come by.

Ye Qingyu finished his morning training then went to the front hall to have breakfast along with Qin Lan, Little Grass and Qingqing.

The granddaughter of Li Shizen had already utterly become the best friend of Little Grass, their relationship progressing exceedingly well. They nearly spent every day sleeping and eating together. The two little girls possessing a similar fate, finally got to experience the joys of being around someone of their own age. Last night the little girl had followed

Little Grass back to sleep in the Ye residence, and they had already done so previously. This quickly became a custom, and Qingqing was not unfamiliar with this place anymore.

“Young master, Grandfather told me to pass on a message.” After Qingqing had finished breakfast, she abruptly came to in front of Ye Qingyu. Very seriously, she said: “He’s been enlisted to head towards the Youyan pass. It’s possible that he has to leave Taoxuan pavilion.”

“What?” Ye Qingyu was greatly shocked. “There’s such a thing occurring?”

Qingqing nodded her head. “It’s already been decided tens of days ago. Grandfather is going to go to the front lines as a medical officer, and he told me not to tell you. Today all the enlisted men will set off from Deer city. Grandfather instructed me to notify you and to thank you for all the care you have shown these days.”

“But.....” Ye Qingyu did not know what he should say. The news had came too suddenly.

Li Shizen was already over seventy years of age, and he had not practiced martial arts before. The foundation of his body was extremely poor. The Youyan pass, was a place famous for its barren lands saturated with bitter cold. For a old man to go to such a place, could his body and bones really withstand it?

Ye Qingyu was somewhat worried.

Just what were the military thinking, that they would choose such an old person to become the medical officer?

This was just simply ridiculous.

“It’s Grandfather that wants to go.” Qingqing seemed to know what Ye Qingyu was thinking, lowering her head and saying: “Grandfather said that the soldiers’ pay is very high in the front lines. He wants to use the last moment of his life, to earn some of my dowry.”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Qingqing continued to speak: “I’ve tried to persuade him for so long, but it was no use. I wanted to follow my grandfather along, but Grandfather said that if I did not listen to his words, he would immediately die in front of me.....I had no other way. Young master, I heard that you’re also going to the Youyan pass. You.....at that place, could you take care of my Grandfather a little bit?”

The information that Ye Qingyu was preparing to leave Deer city had been privately passed on to Qin Lan, Little Grass and Tang San. It seemed like Qingqing also knew.

Ye Qingyu did not what to say.

Since the matter was already decided, he was too late to change anything at this moment.

Ye Qingyu did not know what Li Shizen was thinking at all. If he stayed

in Deer city, the Ye residence would definitely not mistreat him. Staying in the Taoxuan pavilion as a doctor would definitely hold many benefits for him. He would be able to stay beside his granddaughter, and enjoy the joys of family bonds. If he needed money, then Ye Qingyu would have absolutely supported him. But if he went to the front lines at Youyan pass with his body condition, he would definitely be in a situation that he would most likely die in. This would absolutely make Qingqing feel pain so great she would not want to live anymore.

It was a pity that nothing could be changed anymore.

From the simple description of Qingqing, Ye Qingyu was able to feel that Li Shizen had already made up his mind and determination. Even if he went to persuade him right now, there would absolutely be no effect.

A strange old man.

A stubborn old man.

“Rest assured, I will do my utmost to take care of him.” Ye Qingyu could only say such words to Qingqing.

Qingqing seriously and deeply bowed.

.....

At noon time, the city began to heat with excitement.

The first batch of reinforcements heading towards the front lines of Youyan pass were setting off.

A crowd was completely packed In the main road of the Northern urban area, seeing the soldiers off.

The military and the city leader office had organised an activity to see them off, as well as some age old ceremonies.

The entire Deer city attached extreme important to the enlistment —— in truth, according to the historical traditions of Snow country, the soldiers heading towards the front lines would receive the greatest possible respect. Because no one knew whether these people would have the opportunity to return alive. Many people understood, that the people headed towards the dangerous areas in order to protect the right of survival for their race, were heroes. They were the true warriors of this race.

Ye Qingyu was also present during the seeing off ceremonies on the street.

He brought along Qingqing to see Li Shizen off.

The old man was wearing a light chain mail, carrying a walking stick. It seemed his vitality was not bad.

After embracing his granddaughter and giving her a kiss, Li Shizen looked towards Ye Qingyu and smiled. “Young master, from now on I will have to trouble Qingqing with you. If possible, please could you take care

of this little child.....”

Ye Qingyu did not wait for him to finish. Saying straightforwardly: ”Don’t worry, from now on Qingqing will be as my sister.”

Li Shizen gave a small smile. His ancient eyes containing wisdom became much more tranquil. He patted Qingqing on her head, reluctant to part with her at all but ultimately leaving. His figure entered the flow of the army departing the city, holding his staff and setting foot on his long journey.

Such a scene of departure was occurring at every moment on both sides of the street.

The composition of the reinforcement army was slightly disordered. Not only commoners and wandering martial artists were recruited, many noble members were also enlisted.

Even though noble families had many special privileges, but when facing the recruitment of the country’s military they could not escape. According to the traditional thinking of the country, the nobles who enjoyed much more rights and power than the commoners should also accept much more responsibility. Therefore, there was an even greater reason for them to answer the call of enlistment, to head to the front lines and kill the enemy.

When the yuan qi bomb on the city gate rang three times, the seeing off ceremony had officially finished.

Under the gazes of everyone, a army that had been constructed hastily set off. No more than three thousand people, they majestically walked out the city gates of Deer city. Stepping on the vast and thick accumulated snow, they disappeared in the white horizon.

No one knew, just how many of the three thousand would be able to return.

Perhaps they would never come back.

Such scenes occurred not only in snow country, not only in the Heaven Wasteland domain. In the countless domains of the three thousand worlds to obtain their right to survive, to obtain space to live and resources, the human race had to fight. Every moment was spent in battle, every moment they were bleeding. At all times, there were countless people dying. No matter how many internal strife and conflicts there were in the history of the human race, they were always able to unite together for this purpose.

Qingqing stood next to Ye Qingyu, staring and seeing off till the army disappeared.

She did not say anything. She did not cry.

Ye Qingyu was able to feel that this little girl, had a frightening tranquillity and staunchness.

.....



The next few days, the entire Deer city was immersed in a rare peaceful state of affairs.

Ye Qingyu also undertook his last preparations to leave.

He heard that a great matter had occurred with the Registrar office. Liu Yuancheng had gone crazy and beaten to death his two most loved concubines. He was so angry after this that he had spat blood and fainted. The entire Registrar office was consumed by a mood of mourning and urgency. The reason for this was that the adopted son of Liu Yuancheng had mysteriously died.

There were all sorts of rumours in the city; that the bad deeds performed by Liu Yuancheng were too many and he had therefore received his karmic punishment. He was punished with the fate of all his descendants being exterminated.

Such rumours, made Liu Yuancheng greatly lose face within the noble families. He was somewhat not able to lift up his head in front of the nobles.

And at the same time, the beggars and ruffians gathered outside the Ye mansion began to disperse. Without the financial support and directions of Tao Mocheng and the others, the poor beggars had to spend every day in a busy state just to survive on. Just where did they have the time and effort to waste on surrounding the Ye residence.....

Contrary to expectations, the Ye residence forgot past enmities and began offering food relief outside the residence. They helped the needy, winning a large amount of public praise. The refugees who had once

threw the corpses of animals over the wall, began weeping bitter tears and admitting their mistakes. In this period of time, the prestige and reputation of the Ye family rose and grew sharply among the common people. And as for the rumours that Ye Qingyu had relations with the girl of Darkness, these gradually ceased.

“This is a good thing. The money to used to hand out food relief, were all taken from the bodies of Sun Yufu and Tao Mocheng that night. This can be considered as making the most of everything. The rumours had been suppressed and the Ye residence could be said as having completely stabilised, firmly planting its roots within the city.

Ye Qingyu could begin to feel assured.

And at this time, Hon Kong sent over someone to give news that the matters regarding Ye Qingyu had been arranged.

Different from the recruited commoners and normal nobles who headed to the front lines, Ye Qingyu was the inheritor of the heroic military medal of the country. He had a special status, and had some abnormal privileges that even nobles did not possess. Without even heading to the front lines, he was appointed as the patrolling sword envoy.

Such news, was completely outside of Ye Qingyu's calculations.

Without heading to the front lines, he was already an officer ?

Demon King Ye began laughing excitedly.

This was a good incident, a great incident.

The heroic brass badge really had such a status. This also greatly exceeded Ye Qingyu's imagination.

But as to just what kind of position the patrolling sword envoy was, or the power it possessed, Ye Qingyu was not too clear.

The second day, the official appointment of the royal court of the country arrived at Deer city.

Ye Qingyu received this appointment within White Deer academy, and finally became a person truly belonging to the country's military.

According to the instructions of the royal court, Ye Qingyu had one day to arrange things within his family. He was to set off the day after that onto his journey.

The next two days, Ye Qingyu could not be counted as too busy. The matters in the Ye residence had already been utterly arranged already. He strolled and visited all parts of the city, and again went to the White Deer academy to see teacher Hon Kong, reminiscing about former times, Hon Kong nagged and repeatedly urged about many matters. Only after that, would he let Ye Qingyu go.

And at the time he walked out from the office of Hon Kong, he coincidentally bumped into Song Qingluo. He conversed with her for a while.

After the matter regarding the little loli, there was a significant impact on the Qingluo merchant company. The business fell by a thousand metres. Because of the troubles of her family, Song Qingluo did not have the graceful bearing of she previously possessed. Her entire person became much more stable and reserved.

By the time he returned to the residence, evening had already descended.

Qin Lan had prepared a small scale midnight feast, something to see Ye Qingyu off.

All around the residence, everyone did not wish to part with this amiable young master. There were several female servants that secretly wiped away their tears. The appearance of Ye Qingyu had changed the fates of everyone. For this, he received the gratitude of everyone in the mansion.

Including the two pitiful girls that Ye Qingyu had brought back.

That night if not for Ye Qingyu's appearance, the two would definitely suffer under the poisonous hands of Tao Mocheng and the others. Their ends would have been incomparably miserable. After Ye Qingyu came, they fainted from fear and did not realise what had occurred. Ye Qingyu brought the two of them back. Qin Lan said that the residence was coincidentally lacking in people, and their appearance could be counted as a fortune, taking them in. After the two had awakened, using a little trickery and explanation, they managed to make both of them stay.

The two girls did not know that Ye Qingyu was the bronze Asura ghost shadow. They thought that it was really as Qin Lan had told them, that they had fainted in front of the entrance of the Ye residence and were rescued. With utmost gratitude, they naturally wished to stay within the Ye residence out of their own will.

After considering for a while, Ye Qingyu also agreed.

He was able to tell, that the two girls were not normal ruffians off the street. Perhaps they had some other background, and had never suffered hardship before. Their living ability was extremely poor, as if they were young ladies from a wealthy family. But they did not know any martial hearts, and was really pitiful. If he did not let them stay, they would most likely be devoured by the other ruffians until not even a scrap remained.

Time quickly passed.

The evening feast ended.

The Qingqing who had returned along with Little Grass, suddenly went in search of Ye Qingyu. 。

“This is something my grandfather told me to hand to you.” Qingqing passed over a half metre long dark red wooden box. “He said the things inside will be useful to you.”

“What is inside?” After slight surprise, Ye Qingyu took the box and asked with a grin.

Qingqing shook her head. “I also don’t know.”

This made Ye Qingyu feel that something strange was up.

As Qingqing finished, she turned and left just like a little adult.

Ye Qingyu shook his head with a faint smile, lightly opening the wooden box.

A peculiar fragrance emitted from the wooden box, accompanied by a faint golden radiance.